PUBLIC
S.P.
LIBRARY

STACKS

MAIN LIBRARY

Literature Dept.

~~REF~~ 7
270.6 S789 147458

GENERAL COLLECTIONS

NOT TO BE TAKEN FROM THE LIBRARY

FORM 3427

SAN FRANCISCO PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1223 06467 7397

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/annalsofreformat0007john

ANNALS

OF

THE REFORMATION

AND

ESTABLISHMENT OF RELIGION,

AND OTHER VARIOUS OCCURRENCES

IN THE

CHURCH OF ENGLAND,

DURING

QUEEN ELIZABETH'S HAPPY REIGN:

TOGETHER WITH

AN APPENDIX

OF ORIGINAL PAPERS OF STATE, RECORDS, AND LETTERS.

BY JOHN STRYPE, M.A.

A NEW EDITION.

VOL. IV.

OXFORD,
AT THE CLARENDON PRESS.
MDCCCXXIV.

X270.6
St89 1

147458

3 1223 06467 7397

THE

PREFACE.

MY store of authentic papers, transcribed by me from the originals, are sufficient to furnish me with matter to carry on my Annals to the end of queen Elizabeth's reign in the same method with the former volumes, and to be digested into a just and methodical history; a thing which many of my learned friends and readers have desired to see. But my great age, and infirmities accompanying it, require me to forbear. And yet, that those papers might not be quite lost, or remain in obscurity and of no use, I have at last, in intervals of better health, prepared a great number of the most important and useful of them, as I took them by my own pen at first from the originals, and have now digested them into a course of historical matters, succeeding year by year, as they fell out. By which means a knowledge of the affairs both of the church and state may be attained, until the access of king James to the kingdom, and some years after. Wherein will be discovered divers remarkable occurrences during the latter part of her reign. Which consisted chiefly of the king of Spain's formidable attempts against this realm, plots of popish seminaries and Jesuits, and the endeavours of the disaffected to the establishment of this church, and the episcopal government of it; and the judicial proceedings taken with them. All which these collections will give a great light into; none of them as yet having been published to the world.

So that this following large number of records will want nothing to render it a complete history of those times of

the queen, (all very communicative of the chief matters transacted,) though not compiled into a formal history.

And let me add, (which will give a sufficient credit and estimation to these papers,) that they were for the most part found by me among the manuscripts and state-papers of that great and wise counsellor of the queen, lord Burghley, lord treasurer, the Nestor of his age, as he was styled. Under the year of whose death some peculiar and curious remarks in this work are given of him.

Since the publishing of the former volumes of the Annals, I have met with many material papers, which may improve and illustrate the said history; and therefore have added them by way of Supplement at the end of this book, as they fell out yearly.

J. STRYPE.

THE CONTENTS.

NUMBER I. Reports sent from sir Edward Kelly in Bohemia, Anno 1589. June an. 1589, of one Parkins a Jesuit: brought by Robert Tatton and George Leycester. Thus endorsed on the paper by the hand of the lord treasurer Burghley, as followeth, viz.

Certain articles of the discovery of high treason, made by sir Edw. Kelly, baron of Bohemia, unto certain English gentlemen, which came to visit him at Tribona in the said kingdom, the latter end of June, 1589, whose names are here subscribed. Page 1.

To which may be here subjoined two letters wrote to the said Kelly by the lord treasurer Burghley, as a remaining memorial of the same famous man, sometime of this nation a native; viz. P. 2.

Number II. The lord Burghley, lord treasurer, to sir Edward Kelly, written ann. 1591, declaring the value he and others had of him, upon the account of his great knowledge and virtue; and inviting him to return to his own country: and begging a medicine from him for his old enemy the gout. P. 3.

Number III. Another letter from the lord Burghley to sir Edw. Kelly, in answer to a letter from him, brought by Mr. Dyar. Exhorting him earnestly, and that by command from the queen, to come over into his own country; that they might receive the honour and service that his great wisdom and knowledge deserved. Written by that lord's own hand. P. 4.

Number IV. Sir Francis Knowles, knt. treasurer of the queen's chamber; to the lord Burghley, lord high treasurer. A letter of some sharpness against the superiority of bishops. P. 6.

Number V. Sir Francis Knowles to the queen, upon some displeasure she had taken against him. Occasioned by his controversy about the superiority of bishops. P. 9.

Number VI. One Mrs. Dyer had practised conjuration against the queen, to work some mischief to her majesty; for which she was brought into question. And accordingly her words and doings were sent to Popham, the queen's attorney, and Egerton, her solicitor, by sir Francis Walsingham the queen's secretary, and sir Tho. Heneage, her vice-chamberlain, for their judgment of her case; whose opinion was, that Mrs. Dyer was not within the compass of the estatute touching witchcraft; for that she did no act, and spake certain lewd speeches, tending to that purpose: but neither set figure nor made pictures. The attorney's and solicitor's letter in answer follows. P. 9.

Number VII. Sir Francis Drake to the lord treasurer; concerning the fleet landing at Caskays with don Antonio, for his recovery of the kingdom of Portugal from the king of Spain, who had taken it. P. 11.

Number VIII. A discourse of Anthony Coppley, dated the 6th of January, 1590, (of his abode and maintenance beyond the seas, written to Mr. William Wade. [Who was one of the queen's secretaries.] He seems to be the son of Tho. Coppley, a principal popish fugitive in Q. Elizabeth's reign, and was made great master of the Maes by the king of Spain; and afterwards knighted by the French king, and the title of baron given him; as Camden, under the years 1575 and 1577 of his Annals, writes. P. 12.

Number IX. Whitgift, archbishop of Canterbury, to the justices of peace in Kent: for release of the clergy from composition-corn. An original. P. 14.

Anno 1590. Number X. The bishop of Winton to the lord treasurer. Upon a contest between the president and fellows of Corpus Christi college, Oxon: deferred to their visitor the said bishop, with his sense of it, shewed to the said lord treasurer; who had sent to him to put an end to it. P. 16.

Number XI. Merick, bishop of the Isle of Man, to the lord Burghley, lord treasurer. Complaining of his being charged above his ability. Shewing his needy condition. Writ April, 1590. P. 18.

Number XII. Hutton, bishop of Durham, to the lord treasurer, that his lordship would be a means to satisfy the queen con-

cerning his bestowing of Sherborn hospital, the queen having granted it to another. Writ in March, 1590. P. 19.

Number XIII. Harberd, bishop of Hereford, to the lord treasurer; informing him of one brought before him for seditious words. P. 21.

Number XIV. Ann. 1590. Mémoire à monsieur le grand tresorier, pour Geneve. The paper following so endorsed was drawn up by Le Lect, agent here for Geneva; shewing their present miserable condition, and craving his interest with the queen on their behalf. P. 22.

Number XV. The magistrates of Geneva to queen Elizabeth, thanking her for a collection sent to them, and craving further aid in their distress. P. 25.

Number XVI. Thomas Cartwright, the puritan, to the right worshipful Mr. Puckring, one of her majesty's sergeants at law; being sent for by a pursuivant, now deprived of his hospital at Warwick. P. 27.

Number XVII. Some account of the trial and condemnation of John Udal, a minister, concerned with Martin Marprelate in publishing several schismatical books. Taken from the MSS. of sergeant Puckring; before whom and baron Clark the said Udal was brought to his trial, at the assizes held in Surrey. P. 28.

Number XVIII. Articles delivered to the judges by Mr. Udal, shewing reasons why they should not proceed in judgment against him, notwithstanding the verdict given against him. This paper consisteth of nine articles. P. 29.

Number XIX. Udal's submission: sent to baron Clark and sergeant Puckring, November 18, 1590. P. 32.

Number XX. After sentence given against Udal in the Lent-assizes, Feb. 1590, sergeant Puckring wrote this letter to the lord chancellor Hatton about their proceedings with him. P. 34.

Number XXI. The copy of the submission required by the judges, to be made by Udal. P. 36.

Number XXII. The last offered submission of Udal, Feb. 19, 1590. P. 37.

Number XXIII. Dr. Bancroft, chaplain to the lord chancellor, to Mr. Sergeant Puckring, to stay execution of Udal. ibid.

Number XXIV. Udal to sergeant Puckring, after his return

from the assizes to his prison in the White Lion, November 11, 1590. In which letter may be observed his lofty and unrelenting behaviour: his justifying his innocency: calling for execution, or deliverance from his imprisonment. Resenteth the disgrace that was done him; &c. P. 38.

Number XXV. November 18 following, Udal writ both to the baron and the sergeant: who had told him that upon his submission they were willing to become means to her majesty for his pardon. He sent this letter. P. 40.

And Nov. 25 he wrote to them again another letter: upon their sending him a messenger, that his former submission did not content them. ibid.

Number XXVI. Udal's belief. Drawn up to pacify the queen, who conceived an high displeasure against him, for asserting, that the prince had nothing to do in spiritual matters, and that she was subject to their censures. P. 41.

Number XXVII. Thomas Cartwright to the lord treasurer Burghley, June 23, 1590, concerning the bad estate of his hospital at Warwick, upon the death of the earl of Leicester, their founder. ibid.

Number XXVIII. The lord treasurer lord Burghley to the chancellor of Scotland, lord Maitland; to persuade the king his master to suppress the professed enemies of the gospel in his kingdom, and the adversaries of the common amity. P. 44.

Number XXIX. The lord treasurer Burghley to count Figleazzi, with the duke of Florence; that he would acquaint the duke with the queen's kind acceptance of his good-will towards her, and in his offer to mediate a peace between her and Spain: and the causes of contention between her and the king of Spain stated at large. P. 46.

Number XXX. A certificate under the hands of several of the lords of their allowance of one Edge, an espial, employed into the camp of the duke of Parma, for intelligence. Drawn up by the pen of the lord Burghley. October 9, 1590. P. 52.

Number XXXI. Richard Topclyff, a discoverer and taker up of popish seminaries, and other papists, his discourse of them in a letter sent to the lord treasurer; about the year 1590, in this time of danger. P. 53.

Number XXXII. A prayer composed for the good success

of the French king; printed anno 1590, with this title: A Prayer used in the queen's majesty's house and chapel, for the prosperity of the French king and his nobility; assailed by a multitude of notorious rebels, that are supported and waged by great forces of foreigners, August 21, 1590. P. 57.

Number XXXIII. Spanish advertisements, delivered by Thomas Willys, a Leicestershire man. Thus endorsed: The declaration of Tho. Willys; taken 21 Feb. 1590. P. 59.

Number XXXIV. An office to be deputed. In a suit to be a general register of all christenings, marriages, and burials, within her majesty's realm of England and Wales: with reasons for the same. To the lord treasurer Burghley. P. 62.

Number XXXV. Inconveniences of parish clerkships. P. 63.

Number XXXVI. Sir John Smyth's letter to the lord treasurer, May 1590, upon the suppression of his book of directions concerning military discipline. P. 64.

Number XXXVII. Tho. Cartwright to the lord treasurer. Liberty granted by the lord archbishop of Canterbury to him and other puritan ministers in prison. That he is falsely charged about a purpose to excommunicate the queen. P. 66. Anno 1591.

Number XXXVIII. Mr. Cartwright to the lady Russel. Moving her to intercede with her relation, the lord treasurer, for his liberty, and for other ministers in prison. Writ in Aug. 1591. P. 68.

Number XXXIX. Cartwright to the lord treasurer, dated October 4. Cited before the commissioners, and apprehensive of great troubles to follow upon the queen's displeasure with him. P. 72.

Number XL. The bishop of Bristol, and Dr. Aubrey, to the lord treasurer: in answer to his order to them to take into their examination certain crimes, laid to the charge of one Matthew Heton, minister. And found by them to be scandals. P. 74.

Number XLI. Overton, bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, to the lords and others of the privy-council: complaining of a practice of abuse in the loan and subsidy, by subsidy-men. And his advice how to reform it. P. 75.

Number XLII. A declaration of great troubles pretended against the realm by a number of seminary priests and Je-

suits, sent, and very secretly dispersed into the same, to work great treasons under a false pretence of religion. With a provision very necessary for the remedy thereof. Published by her majesty's proclamation. With certain notes set in the margin. This is very briefly and imperfectly mentioned in Stow's Annals and Camden's Eliz. P. 78.

Number XLIII. Articles annexed to the commission, for a farther instruction to the commissioners how to proceed in the execution thereof. P. 86.

Number XLIV. Anthony Fitzherbert, a popish gentleman in the gaol at Darby, to the earl of Shrewsbury; relents, and prays favour from his imprisonment. P. 89.

Number XLV. The earl of Darby, from the court at Greenwich, to the earl of Shrewsbury: concerning preparations for war; and the execution of two seminaries. P. 90.

Number XLVI. The confession of Boord before the lord treasurer, anno 1591, being in the Gate-house, Westminster; who was a spy, as it seems, for seminaries. P. 91.

Number XLVII. Colleges of Englishmen in Flanders. Boord and Tusser, whither they went. P. 94.

Number XLVIII. Designs and attempts of Hacket, Coppinger, and Arthington, anno 1591, to dethrone the queen, and overthrow the government, upon pretence of *revelation*. Being collections from a book entitled, Conspiracy for pretended Reformation. Printed 1592. P. 95.

Number XLIX. Some remarks of Hacket, and his two prophets, Coppinger and Arthington, whose great pretence was the Spirit. P. 97.

Number L. A petition of divers prisoners, puritans, in the Fleet and other prisons, to the lord treasurer, for the furtherance of their humble petition to the lords of the council for their enlargement. Dated December 4, 1591. P. 101.

Number LI. The heads of the colleges in Cambridge to the lord Burghley, their high chancellor: concerning Legate their printer, who was hindered the printing of the Bible and Psalms in metre by the stationers in London; whose part the heads took as their printer. P. 103.

Number LII. Hugh Broughton, the learned Hebrician, to the lord Burghley; occasioned by Bishop and Newburgh, sta-

tioners, who had seized his books newly printed, and taken them out of his chamber. Desiring his lordship's order to have them restored. P. 105.

Number LIII. Anno 1591, Nov. 16. A note of the Indian fleet of king Philip, dispersed and cast away. Sent to the lord treasurer. On this paper is written, by the lord treasurer's own hand, *Sir Tho. Gage*, as from whom this information came. P. 107.

Number LIV. The queen's charter of *Quietus est*, with her broad seal appendant, to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley, discharging him from attendance on her, to enjoy his beloved Theobalds, anno 1591. Drawn up by the queen herself in a facetious style, to cheer the said lord, who was, it seems, melancholy, and desirous to retire to a private life at his beloved seat at Theobalds. It is dated at Theobalds thus: *Teste meipsa apud Tybolles.* P. 108.

Number LV. Advertisements from Spain to the lord high treasurer of England, so endorsed: A brief of such news as I, Henry Carminck, of Droushed, a merchant, could learn in Spain; arriving there the 1st of March 1590, and departing thence home the 21st of April 1591. P. 110.

Number LVI. The cardinals to the city of Paris, from Rome; giving the news of pope Gregory's death, anno 1591. P. 112.

Number LVII. *Londino-Gallica ecclesia.* John Castel, minister there, in the name of the members of that church, upon occasion of a supply to be sent to the French protestants in France. Writ to the archbishop of Canterbury and the lord treasurer, sending to this church to make their contribution for them under persecution. Castel gives account of the members of this congregation, and their poor condition, in a Latin letter to this import. P. 114.

Number LVIII. Robert Beal, clerk of the council many years, now in some employment in York: his letter to the lord treasurer, upon the queen's sending for him to wait again, after some long absence, about the year 1591. P. 115.

Number LIX. Mr. Beal's voyages and embassies: which he writ and sent to the lord treasurer, to manifest his public services and good deserts. P. 117.

Number LX. A letter of the Puritan ministers in prison, to her Anno 1592.

majesty, in vindication of their innocency. Dated April 15, 1592. P. 120.

Number LXI. A petition to the lord treasurer from another rank of puritans, that were separatists: presented near this time: endorsed thus: This humble petition was put up of many poor Christians, imprisoned by the bishops in sundry several prisons in and about London. P. 127.

Number LXII. The humble supplication of the faithful servants of the church of Christ, in the behalf of their ministers and preachers imprisoned, to the lords of the council: the separatists shewing at large their case and reason in breaking off communion with the church established. P. 131.

Number LXIII. James Yong, a Jesuit, taken 1592. His confession Aug. 27. the same year, before the lord keeper Puckring, lord Buckhurst, and Mr. Fortescue, chancellor of the exchequer: being his letter under his own hand. P. 137.

Number LXIV. The lord treasurer to sir John Puckring, lord keeper, to the lord Buckhurst, and Mr. Fortescue, chancellor of the exchequer: upon Yonge's declaration sent by them to the treasurer, to be read to the queen, now in her progress. P. 147.

Number LXV. Thomas Christopher, alias George Dingley, that came from Rome: committed to the counter about mid April 1592. His confession. MSS. lord keeper Puckring. P. 148.

Number LXVI. The lord treasurer Burghley's speech in the house of lords, anno 1592. Containing the causes of the queen's entry into a defensive war with Spain. With an account of the queen's extraordinary charges by the said war. All writ with his own hand; and transcribed thence. It beareth this title on the top of the page: The causes of the queen's entry into these defensive actions. P. 149.

Number LXVII. The queen's extraordinary charges by means of the war, moved by the king of Spain. Set down by the lord treasurer in the same paper. P. 156.

Number LXVIII. Thomas Markham to the lord treasurer: concerning his affliction for his son Robert Markham, going beyond sea for his conscience. ibid.

Number LXIX. Robert Markham to his father, upon his departure beyond seas. P 157.

Number LXX. The queen in her progress, now at Sudley. From thence sir Tho. Heneage, her vice-chamberlain, writes to the lord keeper Puckring; relating the queen's kind expressions towards him. P. 160.

Number LXXI. Sir Thomas Heneage, vice-chamberlain, to the lord keeper Puckring; signifying from her majesty, how well she took his assistance at the celebration of the 17th of November, the day of her access to the crown. ibid.

Number LXXII. March the 5th, 1592. Notes for the inspection into charitable gifts. Set down by the lord treasurer. This being a time of great dearth. P. 161.

Number LXXIII. A fleet of Spaniards ready to invade England. Signified in a letter from the lord Howard, lord admiral, to the lord treasurer. Endorsed by the said treasurer's own hand, Aug. 29, 1592. Thus superscribed: To the right honourable, my very good lord, the lord treasurer. For her majesty's service. C. Howard. Haste, haste, posthaste. P. 162.

Number LXXIV. Another letter writ by the lord admiral to the lord treasurer: shewing his advice, judgment, and diligence upon this dangerous juncture. Thus endorsed by the lord treasurer, Ships to be put to the seas; with his marginal notes in some places of the letter. September 1, 1592. P. 163.

Number LXXV. Sir Roger Manwood, lord chief baron, to the lord treasurer: his submission upon several abuses: committed, and under restraint. P. 167.

Number LXXVI. The lord chief baron's submission to the lords: by whom he had refused to have his causes tried. P. 168.

Number LXXVII. Another letter of the lord chief baron to the lord treasurer: upon divers complaints and lawsuits against him. P. 170.

Number LXXVIII. A case of Thomas Diggs, esq. against Manwood, steward of the chancery and admiralty court at Dover, in the ports; afterwards lord chief baron. Found among the lord treasurer's papers. ibid.

Number LXXIX. The bishop of Lincoln to the lord high treasurer of England; shewing the true state of the vicarage of Hocknorton; endeavoured to be alienated from the church, upon pretence of concealment; John Williams, B. D. then vicar. About the year 1591 or 1592. P. 172.

Number LXXX. Instructions for the speaker's speech; drawn up, in several articles, by the lord treasurer Burghley. P. 174.

Number LXXXI. Some remarkable letters of sir Walter Raleigh, admiral of the fleet, concerning the great Spanish carack, richly laden from the East Indies, taken by some of his ships. This huge carack was called, *The Mother of God*; seven decks high. P. 177.

Number LXXXII. Sir Walter Raleigh to the lord treasurer; to send down a commission for examination and inquiry concerning the robbing of the carack, Sept. 17, 1592. P. 178.

Number LXXXIII. Sir Walter Raleigh's cause for the carack. Drawn up by himself. P. 179.

Number LXXXIV. Sir Walter Raleigh to the lord treasurer; concerning the carack, worth 200,000*l*. How much thereof came to the queen's share. Now under restraint. Dated Sept. — 1592. P. 180.

Number LXXXV. Sir Walter Raleigh to the lord treasurer. His advice for the division of the treasury of the carack. Sept. 16, 1592. P. 182.

Number LXXXVI. Henry earl of Derby to the lords of the privy-council; concerning the papists in Lancashire; and direction for dealing with them. Bell a seminary, his informations. ibid.

Number LXXXVII. The earl of Derby to sir Tho. Heneage, vice-chamberlain, and chancellor of the duchy. With a copy of the former letter to the council enclosed. The bearer, Mr. Fleetwood, parson of Wigan. Papists, temporizers many. P. 184.

Number LXXXVIII. The earl of Derby to the lord treasurer; that upon the directions of the lords he was in prosecution of the recusants. ibid.

Number LXXXIX. Friar Robert Southwel, a dangerous conspirator, taken. Richard Topcliff writ to the queen a letter in June concerning him, and his taking and keeping; and concerning Anthony Coppley, another refugee of note. P. 185.

Number XC. An inscription upon the coffin of Roger Rippon, a Barrowist, who died in Newgate this year, 1592. P. 186.

Anno 1593. Number XCI. Francis Johnson, a Brownist, in prison, his letter to the lord treasurer, Jan. 18, 1593. upon his being to be indicted for a Brownist. P. 187.

Number XCII. Francis Johnson's paper, enclosed in the letter above to the lord treasurer, had this title: "That F. J. for "his writings is not under the danger of the statute of 35 "Eliz. ca. 1. made to retain the queen's subjects in their due "obedience." P. 192.

Number XCIII. Some books printed and set forth this year, 1593, against the new disciplinarian model of the church government. P. 194.

Number XCIV. Two kinds of schismatics, and the danger of their opinions, either directly or by necessary consequence gathered to be holden by those who urge a new church government, commonly called *puritans*. These be of two sorts. First, some that will communicate with us in prayers, sermons, and sacraments. Secondly, others that will not. The first sort hold opinions dangerous; first, to her majesty and the crown; or, secondly, to the state, and to the policy of the realm. This paper seems to have been drawn up by the lord keeper Puckring, to be produced against them in the Star-chamber, after their examination before him. P. 197.

Number XCV. Cardinal Allen, from Rome, to Richard Hopkins, fugitive, August 14, 1593. So endorsed by the lord treasurer's own hand.

This letter of the cardinal was in answer to one from Hopkins, at Antwerp; upon report of a treaty between England and Spain; to endeavour a liberty of religion for the catholics. P. 203.

Number XCVI. Holt, a Jesuit, to cardinal Allen: writ from Brussels, January the 6th, 1593. Resolution to follow his grace's opinion. Found among the lord treasurer's papers. P. 206.

Number XCVII. Thomas Bell, a convert, to Mr. Young, a justice of peace in London: concerning printing his motives to renounce the Romish faith. Writ from Jesus college, Cambridge. P. 208.

Number XCVIII. Bell to the lord treasurer, from the north; where he preached at the desire of the earl of Huntington, lord president: who was desirous of his abiding there, for the instruction of ignorant people. He is ready so to do, or to return to Cambridge, according to the lord treasurer's directions. P. 210.

Number XCIX. Pierse, archbishop of York, and Henry, earl of Huntington, of the council of the north, to the lord treasurer; concerning an hospital and school, founded by Oglethorp, sometime bishop of Carlisle. P. 211.

Number C. Queen Elizabeth's letter to the emperor of Germany; answering slanderous reports of her; especially, that she should stir up the Turk to have war with Christian princes. Sent by Dr. Parkins. P. 213.

Number CI. The letter of the great Turk to the queen, (who had interceded by her agent to him in behalf of the king of Poland,) mentioned in the foregoing letter. Writ in Latin. P. 220.

Number CII. A commission to Mr. Chery, a merchant, from the lord treasurer, and others of her majesty's principal counsellors, with her letter to the great duke of Muscovy: vindicating the queen against false and scandalous reports and libels spread abroad, of assisting the great Turk; and in behalf of her merchants trading in those parts. Being minutes drawn up by the lord treasurer. P. 221.

Number CIII. A memorial of sundry necessary things to be put in execution for the service of the realm, now toward the spring of the year: upon the formidable preparations of the Spaniard. Dated Jan. 8, 1593. Drawn up by the lord treasurer Burghley. P. 224.

A memorial for the border of Scotland. P. 225.

A memorial for the navy of the realm. P. 226.

Concerning recusants of the realm. P. 227.

Number CIV. The vice-chancellor and heads of the university of Cambridge, to their chancellor, the lord Burghley: touching restraint of plays and shows; especially at that infectious season. P. 228.

Number CV. A certificate of certain principal traitors, given in by Diaper, [now a prisoner,] the 25th of September, 1593. So endorsed by the lord treasurer. P. 229.

Number CVI. Anthony Hall, a messenger and officer of the queen: his services and deserts, shewed in a letter to the lord treasurer. And moving for a favour on that account to be obtained for his son. And his abilities in heraldry for that end. Feb. 12, 1593. P. 232.

Number CVII. Strangers, Flemings and French, in the city of

London: and complaint made of them by many, and libels scattered against them, ann. 1593. P. 234.

Number CVIII. A rhyme set up upon the wall of the Dutch churchyard on Thursday May the 5th, between eleven and twelve at night: and there found by some of the inhabitants of that place, and brought to the constable and the rest of the watch. Beginning,

You, strangers, that inhabit in this land, &c. P. 235.

Number CIX. A notable Jesuit taken up, namely Ogylby, alias Bourn, but his true name Ingram. Certified in a letter from the earl of Huntington at York to the lord keeper Puckring. Feb. 12, 1593. P. 236.

Number CX. Another letter from the earl of Huntington to the lord keeper: concerning his examination of Ogylby, and Walpole, and Lingen, seminaries, concerning Ogylby's true name. March the 8th. And Ingram sent up. P. 237.

Number CXI. Concerning Walpole the Jesuit, Walpole his brother, and Lingen, thus the earl of Huntington to the lord keeper in a former letter, dated Jan. 10. P. 238.

Number CXII. Henry Barrow, a separatist, now in prison for sedition, (and soon after executed,) requireth a conference; in a letter to Egerton, attorney-general. P. 239.

Number CXIII. This petition of conference was considered of by the bishops and others; and not thought convenient upon certain reasons against public disputations with Barrow. MSS. Whitg. archiep. Cantuar. P. 240.

Number CXIV. Another address of Barrow for a conference (as it seems) to the council, entitled, A Motion tending to Unity. P. 241.

Number CXV. A meeting of Barrowists at Islington: where many of them were taken and committed; and afterwards examined before some of the queen's justices. MSS. lord keeper Puckring. P. 243.

Number CXVI. Penry, [or Martin Marprelate,] his indictment. Being expressions taken out of the printed books: reflecting upon England, and the general state; the archbishops, bishops, judges, and council. From the lord keeper Puckring's papers. P. 246.

Number CXVII. Observations upon Penry's tracts and writings;

as, his Protestation of his Loyalty; his Confession; his Treatise unto the Queen's Majesty. Ubi supra. P. 248.

Number CXVIII. Advertisements out of Portugal, by one Graye, (a merchant, as it seems,) lately come from thence, of some Irish, and other English there; with other intelligence. P. 251.

Number CXIX. A note of evidence of all the prisoners for popery in the several counties; as the lord keeper Puckring collected, and writ it down for and against the persons hereafter named, ann. 1593. So endorsed by his own hand. P. 254.

Number CXX. One Whitfield's information concerning one Francis Dacres going to the king of Spain. Whose two brothers were papists, and in the rebellion in the north. Discovered by John Whitfield (who went in his company) to Mr. Henry Dethick, a justice of peace, October 1593. The confession whereof was brought to the bishop of Durham; and by him delivered to the lord president of the north. Found among the lord keeper Puckring's papers. P. 264.

Number CXXI. Whitfield's declaration voluntary, of his own handwriting, concerning Dacres, Nov. 8, 1593. So endorsed by the lord keeper Puckring. P. 265.

Number CXXII. Mr. Francis Dacre indicted. The particulars of his indictment: anno 1593. MSS. of lord keeper Puckring. P. 267.

Number CXXIII. Whitfield, a spy; his letter to the lord keeper, offering service, Nov. 16, 1593. P. 268.

Number CXXIV. Whitfield's intelligence, Dec. 2, 1593, of English Jesuits and pensioners in Spain. P. 269.

Number CXXV. An examination of John Whitfield, Nov. 6, 1593, before sir John Puckring, lord keeper. P. 271.

Number CXXVI. Another examination of John Whitfield, Nov. 8, 1593. P. 272.

Number CXXVII. Names of prisoners now in the Tower. Some that intended to kill the queen. Others for other treasons. Lord keeper's MSS. ibid.

Anno 1594. Number CXXVIII. Cardinal Allen's letter to Mr. Mush, a priest, to pacify the disagreements between the priests in England. Writ anno 1594. In which year the cardinal died. P. 273.

Number CXXIX. Advertisements of the ill estate and order of the Jesuits and seminary priests, in the prison of Wisbich castle, [and their manner of living there.] Lord keeper Puckring's MSS. P. 273.

Number CXXX. Then follow the names of the priests remaining in the castle of Wisbich; and of such boys as are attending on them. Jan. 1595. With their countries. P. 275.

Number CXXXI. Three gentlemen condemned in Middlesex for treason, when the Spanish fleet was on the sea, and passed Calais. And had their trial at the Old Bailey. Sir George Bond, mayor. Ubi supra. ibid.

Number CXXXII. Names of recusants, with their several sums of money paid into the receipt, from Michaelmas last to March the 10th, 1594. P. 276.

Number CXXXIII. Matthew Hutton, bishop of Durham, to the lord treasurer, Dec. 1594; upon the queen's purpose, on the death of Pierse, archbishop of York, to prefer him to that see. P. 277.

Number CXXXIV. Another letter of bishop Hutton, upon his being nominated by the queen to the see of York. Written to the lord treasurer, Feb. 14, 1594. ibid.

Number CXXXV. Part of two letters of the bishop of Durham to the lord treasurer: in behalf of the lady Margaret Nevyl, daughter to the unfortunate earl of Westmerland, for her pardon from the queen. P. 278.

Number CXXXVI. Part of the said bishop's second letter. Writ in February following, when he was removing to York. ibid.

Number CXXXVII. The humble submission of Margaret Nevyl to the queen's most excellent majesty, enclosed in the former letter. P. 280.

Number CXXXVIII. Tobie Matthew, D. D. dean of Durham, to the lord treasurer. His information of Scotch matters, and of the Scots king. P. 281.

Number CXXXIX. The death of Pierse, archbishop of York, and the queen's almoner; who died Sept. 28, 1594, at his seat of Bishopthorp. Some account of him in the sermon preached by Dr. King, his chaplain, at his funeral. P. 282.

Number CXL. Cooper, bishop of Winchester, (who died also this year, 1594,) his monument and epitaph. P. 286.

Number CXLI. William Wickham, upon his nomination from Lincoln to the bishopric of Winchester, his letter to the lord treasurer; in gratitude, and concerning long leases designed of the revenues of that bishopric. P. 286.

Number CXLII. Fletcher, bishop of Worcester, his letter to the lord treasurer. Desires a remove to the see of London: and why. P. 287.

Number CXLIII. Adam Loftus, archbishop of Dublin, and lord chancellor of Ireland, to the lord treasurer. His troubles; his integrity; displayed to that lord: and his application to him. Wrote from Dublin, May the 27th, 1594. P. 289.

Number CXLIV. John bishop of Limrick, from York, who was, it seems, of the council there, to the lord treasurer: concerning some dangerous papists taken in those parts, and sent up: and now going to his bishopric in Ireland, he desires to be one of the council there, and his service promised. P. 292.

Number CXLV. The said bishop to the lord treasurer: for leave to transport things from York into Ireland: where he was going to live, being required residence. P. 293.

Number CXLVI. The plague, dreadful storms and unseasonable weather in this and the former year, gave occasion to Dr. J. King, in one of his lectures at York, to use very affecting words. ibid.

Number CXLVII. Francis Bacon, (afterwards the learned lord Verulam,) son to sir Nicolas Bacon, keeper of the great seal, deceased, to the lord treasurer: concerning the solicitor's place, which he had endeavoured by friends to obtain from the queen. P. 295.

Number CXLVIII. Anno 1594. Sir Tho. Mildmay moved to keep a register of all strangers coming into the realm. (Hitherto refused out of a compassion, as it seems, of the poor people, that came over hither for the sake of their religion and their lives.) P. 296.

Number CXLIX. The lord treasurer to the queen's secretary: concerning certain rents and revenues to be assured to the queen, upon the vacancies of the bishoprics of Winchester and Durham, by the two bishops that should succeed the former. MSS. D. Joh. episc. Elien. (Now in the royal library at Cambridge.) P. 301.

Number CL. A prayer of queen Elizabeth, upon the going forth

of her majesty's army against the enemy. Found among the lord Burghley's papers. P. 302.

Number CLI. The archbishop of York, and council in the north, to the lord treasurer: signifying their receipt of the queen's commission; with certain instructions for authorizing the government of that council. Anno 1595. P. 303.

Number CLII. Matthew Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: concerning recusants in those parts. A great revolt there. P. 304.

Number CLIII. The aforesaid archbishop to the lord treasurer: concerning one Wright, a dangerous man; dismissed, and sent down to York. P. 305.

Number CLIV. Newal, a messenger of the queen's chamber, sent by the privy-council into Derbyshire, to apprehend certain seminary priests there: with directions under their honours' hands, unto which houses they should go; and the names of the justices that accompanied him. P. 307.

Number CLV. Prisoners for religion: their prisons, and numbers, sent up from the ecclesiastical commission. P. 308.

Number CLVI. October 30, 1595. A memorial for defence of dangerous places of the land in several counties: wrote by the lord treasurer; upon apprehension of an invasion from Spain. P. 309.

Number CLVII. Young, bishop of Rochester, to the lord treasurer: upon a malicious report, that he was covetous, and kept a miserable house: together with an account of his incomes mentioned. P. 315.

Number CLVIII. Tho. Bilson, warden of Winchester college, to the lord treasurer, soliciting his interest for the bishopric of Worcester. P. 318.

Number CLIX. Mr. Henry Savile to the lady Russel; praying her interest with the lord treasurer for the provostship of Eaton. P. 319.

Number CLX. The vice-chancellor and heads of the university of Cambridge to the lord Burghley, their chancellor: complaining of doctrine preached by P. Baro, D. D. Lady Margaret professor, in his clerum at St. Mary's. University Regist. ibid.

Number CLXI. Dr. Goad, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to their chancellor, the lord Burghley. Complaint

of Mr. Covel's sermon. Charging a crime upon some noblemen and bishops. P. 323.

Number CLXII. The lord Burghley, high chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to the president and fellows of St. John's college, being divided among themselves; strictly forbidding them from the queen to proceed to the election of a master of the college; Dr. Whitaker, last master, being lately dead. P. 324.

Number CLXIII. The chancellor of the said university to the vice-chancellor and heads of the said university, to enjoin the fellows of St. John's, divided among themselves, in the queen's name, to proceed to the election of either Dr. Claiton or Mr. Stanton for their master. Dated Dec. 19, 1595. ibid.

Number CLXIV. A speech of the lord treasurer Burghley to the queen and privy-council: for commissioners to be appointed by her majesty for reforming abuses. The year when spoken by him not inserted, but probably near this year, or not long before. The queen had required a copy of it from him, and it was as followeth. P. 326.

Number CLXV. Queen Elizabeth falls sick, being in her climacteric. The great apprehensions and fears arising hereupon; but recovereth. Related in a letter of Mr. Camden to sir Robert Cotton. Camden's Letters. P. 331.

Number CLXVI. Edmund Nevyl, [calling himself lord Latymer,] a prisoner in the Tower: his letter to N. Ramberd, steward of the Tower, containing information against the lieutenant of the Tower. Nov. 9, 1595. MSS. Burghlian. P. 332.

Number CLXVII. Another letter of Latymer to Mr. Ramberd; setting down the articles of information against the lieutenant of the Tower. P. 333.

Number CLXVIII. Another letter of Nevyl to Ramberd, Nov. 13. P. 334.

Number CLXIX. A fourth letter of Nevyl: containing the words spoken by the lieutenant of the Tower. ibid.

Number CLXX. Lord Cobham and lord Buckhurst, of the privy-council, to Mr. Wade, clerk of the council: to examine Nevyl, whether he gave not occasion to the lieutenant to speak those words as above. To this question Nevyl wrote to Wade. P. 335.

Number CLXXI. N. Ramberd, steward of the Tower, to the lord chamberlain. His confirmation of the articles, Nov. 19. P. 336.

Number CLXXII. Dr. James, Dean of Christ's Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring; concerning a stint of bread to be used in that college. ibid.

Number CLXXIII. The dean and prebendaries of Christ Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring; sending the copies of letters written in times past by the lord chancellor to that college, for reducing a stint of bread. P. 337.

Number CLXXIV. Then follows an original paper, endorsed, Christ's Church endowments and expositions: declaring the state of that college. Sent to the lord keeper Puckring. P. 339.

Number CLXXV. Robert earl of Essex to the lord keeper Puckring, July 1595; for his retainers, put away because he would not offend the law. And that for the cause of retainers they may not be put out of the commission of the peace. P. 340.

Number CLXXVI. The earl of Essex to the lord keeper: in behalf of Buckridge his chaplain. Jan. 12, 1595. P. 341.

Number CLXXVII. The earl to the lord keeper for Dr. Meyrick his chaplain. Feb. 1595. ibid.

Number CLXXVIII. In the behalf of both the above-mentioned clergymen, his chaplains, the said earl of Essex writ to the lord keeper the year before, viz. Jan. 29, 1594, with mention of their deserts. His letter for Dr. Meyrick. P. 342.

Number CLXXIX. His letter for Mr. Buckridge. Feb. 17, 1594. P. 343.

Number CLXXX. Sir John Puckring, lord keeper, his petition to the queen, for a lease of part of the possessions of the bishopric of Ely: a motion to fill that vacant see. MSS. D. Puckring. About the year 1595. ibid.

Number CLXXXI. Another discourse of the said lord on the same subject; viz. that the placing of a bishop in the see of Ely will be as profitable to her majesty as now the vacancy thereof is: besides divers reasons for the which, also it appeareth to be very expedient. P. 345

Number CLXXXII. Another paper of the said lord keeper: soliciting the queen for a lease of some part of the revenues

of the abovesaid bishopric: that he sought only to be the bishop's fermour. P. 346.

Number CLXXXIII. Sir Edward Wotton to the lord treasurer; suing to be treasurer of the queen's chamber, upon the death of sir Francis Knowles. ibid.

Number CLXXXIV. Sir Robert Cecil. knt. made secretary of state: son to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley. A familiar letter to Mr. Michael Hicks, his friend, secretary to the same lord: avowing his principle, chiefly to serve the queen. P. 347.

Number CLXXXV. A book came forth this year, 1595, called, The State of the English Fugitives under the King of Spain and his Ministers: containing besides, a discourse of the said king's manner of government, and the injustice of many late dishonourable practices by them committed. P. 348.

Number CLXXXVI. The visitation of Fletcher, bishop of London, Octob. 2, ann. regin. 37. In some articles of inquiry, chiefly respecting the clergy. MSS. D. Johan. episc. Ely. P. 350.

Number CLXXXVII. The archbishop of Canterbury to Chaderton, bishop of Lincoln; removed thither from Westchester, anno 1595. Touching relief of the poor in that time of dearth. P. 351.

Number CLXXXVIII. Matthew Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer, in behalf of the lady Margaret Nevyl, reclaimed from popery. P. 352.

Number CLXXXIX. The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer. Against certain concealers, to deprive him of certain church lands in Rippon, upon pretence of concealment. P. 353.

Number CXC. The council in the north to the lords of the privy-council: giving notice of the death of Henry earl of Huntington, president of their council. P. 354.

Number CXCI. The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: desiring a pardon for Nelson, a priest, a prisoner: now reclaimed. ibid.

Anno 1596. Number CXCII. A memorial: containing the lord treasurer's advice concerning the Spanish preparations. Nov. 4, 1596. P. 355.

Number CXCIII. A publication of the queen's majesty's commandment to the generals of her navy, to offend no manner of person of any nation, but the subjects of the king of Spain, her majesty's enemy; or such as shall manifestly aid the said king, for the intended invasion of the queen's majesty's dominions. Thus endorsed by the lord treasurer's own hand: the whole being of his drawing up.

On the other side by another hand, thus written:

A declaration of the causes moving the queen's majesty to prepare and send a navy to the seas, for defence of her realms against the king of Spain's forces. To be published by the generals of the said navy, to the intent that it shall appear to the world, that her majesty armeth her navy only to defend herself, and to offend her enemies; and not to offend any other that shall forbear to strengthen her enemy; but to use them with all lawful favour. May — 1596. P. 361.

Number CXCIV. A prayer of thanksgiving for the queen's success against Spain, in the year 1596: composed by the lord treasurer Burghley, July 3; and printed in a sheet of paper. This transcribed from his own MSS. P. 364.

Number CXCV. Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: advising what is necessary to be done in this time of great danger: and for an ecclesiastical commission for those parts. P. 366.

Number CXCVI. Part of a letter from a person unknown of the clergy, to a person of quality; shewing the rigour of judge Anderson towards the clergy and preachers of Lincolnshire, when he went the assizes there, in charging them with Brownism. Writ from Alford. P. 367.

Number CXCVII. Day, bishop of Winton, deceased this year: whose last will bare date Sept. 11, 1596; and was acknowledged by the testator as his last will, September 15: and was proved by the executors Oct. 2. Which will the pious bishop in his preface thus began. His children and relations, and legacies to them, are added. P. 372.

Number CXCVIII. This year put an end also to the life of Fletcher bishop of London, who seems to have died under the queen's displeasure: the occasion whereof was his marrying a lady not long before his death. See some account of it in Archbishop Whitgift's Life, book iv. ch. 13. His letter to

the lord treasurer in behalf of his brother Dr. Fletcher, to be made an extraordinary master in chancery, as Dr. Cæsar was. P. 373.

Number CXCIX. Hugh Broughton, a very learned man for all Jewish learning in those times: his high commendation and character of Henry earl of Huntington, president of the council in the north, his patron, now deceased. And Ockland, a poet in these times, his verses of him. P. 375.

Number CC. Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to their high chancellor, concerning the lectures to be read at Gresham college in London. Jealous of those lectures, and the injuries they might occasion to the university. P. 376.

Number CCI. William Lambard, a justice of peace in Kent, a learned antiquarian, that wrote the Perambulation of Kent, and Eirenarchia, his letter to the lord treasurer Burghley, concerning the last will of the lord Cobham, (who died this year,) and some of his legacies. He was constable of Dover castle, and lord chamberlain to the queen. ibid.

Number CCII. The copy of a letter, written by Ribadineyra, the Jesuit, to D. Juan de Idiaque. Bearing date the 10th of March, 1596. Translated out of Spanish. Upon the defeat of the Spaniard at Cales. It seems to be a letter intercepted. P. 378.

Number CCIII. Anthony Coppley, a popish gentleman, now a prisoner; some time in service abroad: his informations after his return, concerning affairs in Flanders, Spain, &c. To Mr. William Wade, 1596. Addressed to the lords. P. 379.

Number CCIV. Another letter of Mr. Coppley to the lords of the council, concerning English gentlemen abroad. P. 385.

Number CCV. The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer, to appoint speedily a president and lieutenant for the north parts. P. 393.

Number CCVI. The archbishop of York and the council there to the lord treasurer: their reason why they stopped all suits commenced in chancery by those within their jurisdiction. P. 394.

Number CCVII. A proclamation against such as took upon them to be messengers, entitled, A proclamation against sundry abuses practised by divers lewd and audacious persons

falsely naming themselves *messengers* of her majesty's chamber; travelling from place to place, with writings counterfeited in form of warrants: as also, against another sort of vagabond persons, that carry counterfeit passports, wherewith to beg and gather alms. P. 396.

Number CCVIII. To the lord treasurer. Capt. Price's account of the expedition of Cales, anno 1596: concerning the taking of it, and damages done to the Spaniards. Writ in June. P. 398.

Number CCIX. This letter was enclosed in another from Anthony Ashley to the said lord. And his was to this tenor. P. 400.

Number CCX. Sir Anthony Ashley, secretary to this expedition, and commissioner; his letter to the lord treasurer Burghley: concerning the action at Cales, in a relation drawn up by him, by his lordship's order. ibid.

Number CCXI. Dr. Pye's information of popery in Sussex, anno1596. P. 401.

Number CCXII. Vagabonds and rogues in Somersetshire increase: and why; signified in a letter to the lord treasurer, from Edward Hext, some eminent justice of peace in that county. The calendar of the assizes there, anno 1596. P. 404.

Number CCXIII. With the calendar as above, Mr. Hext sent this letter to the lord treasurer at the same time. P. 405.

Number CCXIV. The false certificate before mentioned. P. 412.

Number CCXV. Sir John Smith, (the queen's ambassador to Spain,) committed to the Tower, for words spoken by him to the militia that were training near Colchester under sir Tho. Lucas: which Smyth was cousin-german to king Edward VI. by the lady Jane Seimour's sister; a man of Spanish comportment, and well known to the king of Spain. And before that a volunteer in the wars of Hungary against the Turk. P. 413.

Number CCXVI. Part of a letter from sir John Smyth to the lord treasurer, in excuse for his disordered words spoken at Colchester; and to be a means to her majesty in his favour: and offering his submission in the star-chamber. P. 414.

Number CCXVII. A letter of sir John Smyth to the lord treasurer, touching his submission in the star-chamber; the at-

torney-general, and Mr. Solicitor, and Mr. Francis Bacon being sent unto him, Feb. 6, 1597. P. 415.

Number CCXVIII. His letter of gratitude to the lord treasurer; being now at liberty from the Tower. Dated at his house at Badow, under confinement there. Dated July 1598. P. 417.

Number CCXIX. Edward lord Crumwel, to the lord treasurer: a protestation of his unfeigned love and service, by his father's commandment, late deceased: who was Henry lord Crumwel. Dated September 6, 1596. P. 418.

Number CCXX. Articles annexed to the commission for recusants. This was a second commission for their examination, that was issued out some years before to the justices of every shire: occasioned (as it seems) upon the holy league of the pope and king of Spain to invade the realm. These articles seem to be drawn up by the lord treasurer, lord Burghley. They were printed, and thus entitled: Articles annexed to the commission, for a further instruction to the commissioners how to proceed in the examination thereof. MSS. of the lord keeper Puckring. P. 419.

Number CCXXI. Notes taken out of the new commission for spies, recusants, missionaries, and such like, about London or ten miles of it. P. 423.

Anno 1597. Number CCXXII. Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: for a pardon to be obtained for Dawson, a priest, converted by the said archbishop. His converting also of Richard Stapleton, constable, &c. Recusants in those northern parts. P. 424.

Number CCXXIII. The archbishop of York, and the rest of the council in the north, to the lord treasurer; informing of the execution of certain papists. The plague in the north. P. 426.

Number CCXXIV. Sir Edward Coke, the queen's attorney-general, to the lord treasurer: concerning his examination of Gerard, a Jesuit. P. 427.

Number CCXXV. The examination of John Gerard, a Jesuit, before Coke, attorney-general, and others, May the 13th, 1597: concerning an oath. So enclosed in the letter above. P. 428.

Number CCXXVI. Adam Loftus, archbishop of Dublin, in

Ireland, to the lord treasurer: concerning Mr. Rider's case: who had a mandamus for the deanery of that cathedral church of St. Patrick, being no member thereof. 429.

Number CCXXVII. William, bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, to the lord treasurer: to suspend his opinion of him, upon a false information of him, as if he were a maker and maintainer of incestuous marriages. P. 430.

Number CCXXVIII. Rogers, suffragan bishop of Dover, and dean of Christ's-church, Canterbury, died in the month of May this year, 1597. A letter of his (the year uncertain) was written to Mr. Bois, a learned civilian: concerning the validity of his leases. P. 431.

Number CCXXIX. Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, and the rest of the heads, to the lord Burghley, their high chancellor: complaining of their privileges infringed by the town; that they shall be forced to seek relief extraordinary. P. 434.

Number CCXXX. Dr. Jegon, the vice-chancellor of Cambridge; in answer to the said lord their chancellor: who had advised him to carry himself temperately to the mayor of the town and his company. P. 435.

Number CCXXXI. Questions disputed at a commencement in Cambridge in the year 1597: of law, divinity, and philosophy. P. 437.

Number CCXXXII. *Charisma, sive Donum Sanationis:* A book in quarto, written in Latin, by William Tooker, the queen's chaplain, and dedicated to her; dated prid. id. Jan. 1597: treating concerning her cures in the king's evil, by this miraculous gift of healing, imparted to her. Some account of this book and the queen's cures. P. 438.

Number CCXXXIII. A book of prayers printed this year 1597; being certain prayers, set forth by authority, to be used for the prosperous success of her majesty's forces and navy. They were eight in number. The first whereof was of the queen's composing. P. 440.

Number CCXXXIV. The captain-general of the king of Spain's armies: his commission Englished; this year, May 1597. P. 441.

Number CCXXXV. Dr. George Abbot, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, this year, read theses upon six questions in the

divinity schools of Oxford: *pro forma discussæ, et discutiendæ.* P. 443.

Number CCXXXVI. A relation of the stirs in Wisbich castle among the secular priests and Jesuits. A book set forth 1597. ibid.

Number CCXXXVII. Dr. Elie's notes. Some things set forth in the end of those notes by Dr. Bagshaw. Both seculars. Which notes related to the controversy in the business of Wisbich. P. 444.

Number CCXXXVIII. The former of these, John Collington, one of the contending parties, afterwards wrote a book of this matter, entitled, An Appeal to Rome. P. 445.

Number CCXXXIX. Dr. Mey, bishop of Carlisle, deceased at Dalston Feb. 15, 1597: and interred in the cathedral the same day in the evening. From the register of the parish of Dalston in Cumberland. P. 446.

Number CCXL. The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: touching the loan; which some of the wealthier clergy were assessed to lend. ibid.

Number CCXLI. The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: upon directions for keeping sir Robert Car, lord Sesford, an hostage from Scotland. P. 447.

Number CCXLII. The archbishop to the lord treasurer's answer. P. 448.

Number CCXLIII. Otto duke of Brunswick and Lunenburgh to the lord Burghley. Salutation. Wishing success to the queen's fleet, preparing against her enemies, in Latin. ibid.

Number CCXLIV. The said duke of Brunswick to the said lord Burghley, upon the queen's declaration of sending forth her fleet against Spain, anno 1597. P. 449.

Anno 1598. Number CCXLV. The said duke of Brunswick's letter to the lord Burghley, writ the following year, 1598, upon the return of the queen's agent, Lesieur, sent to the electors and princes of Germany. P. 450.

Number CCXLVI. Considerations of a motion for a treaty of peace with the king of Spain: upon a motion of the emperor: drawn up by the lord treasurer Burghley, at a good length, by his own hand: and seems to be some of his last writings. P. 451.

Number CCXLVII. The lord treasurer, lord Burghley, slan-

dered by one Johnson, the queen's farmour of Claxby; whereof one Savyl was the bailiff, and Dobby and Goodwin two of the tenants, June 1598, that is, about a month or two before that lord's death. The examination of this slander. P. 464.

Number CCXLVIII. The lord Burghley, lord high treasurer of England, was born the 13th of Sept. 1521, and died the 4th of Aug. 1598: and was interred at Stamford, under a fair monument. The pious preface to his will, bearing date October 20, 1579, and revised afterwards, April 7, 1580, and June 1, 1580, and Feb. 22, 1582, was as followeth. From his Life, MS. at Burleigh house. P. 466.

Number CCXLIX. August the 3d, 1598. *Oratio expirantis Domini.* So is the title of the prayer, made by Mr. Thompson, that lord's chaplain, the night before he died. P. 468.

Number CCL. The character that Mr. Lambard gave of this great and good statesman, to his son sir Robert Cecil, in his epistle dedicatory to his learned book *Archion.* P. 470.

Number CCLI. Another writer, that translated the history of France out of French, about the latter end of queen Elizabeth's reign, in his dedication thus styled the lord Burghley. ibid.

Number CCLII. A large inscription in Latin upon a fair monument of this nobleman: composed by himself soon after the deaths of the countess of Oxford, his daughter Anne, and his own lady Mildred. P. 471.

Number CCLIII. The lord Burghley's instructions to his son Robert Cecil, when young. P. 475.

Number CCLIV. Lord Burghley to his son, sir Robert Cecil, being the last letter that ever he wrote. P. 479.

Number CCLV. Toby Matthew bishop of Durham to the lord treasurer Burghley: concerning his apprehending the lady Katharine Gray, widow, one of the daughters of the earl of Westmerland; and other harbourers of popish priests in those northern parts. P. 480.

Number CCLVI. Regin. Elizab. anno 35. A warrant to the lord keeper Puckring, [a rough draught, corrected with some additions, by the lord treasurer's hand,] to grant commissions for visiting hospitals, almshouses, colleges, &c.; the revenues having been abused and swallowed up by evil men.

The effect, as it seems, of that statesman's former speech made to the queen, in the year 1594. P. 483.

Number CCLVII. A remark upon this statesman, who was principal secretary of state in king Edward's reign; upon a consultation at that king's decease of altering the succession to the crown, and advancing the lady Jane Gray thereunto. Being a private letter to the lord Burghley by Roger Alford, one of his ancient servants in the office of secretary in that king's reign. Written at the said lord's desire. Which letter is thus endorsed by that lord's own hand: Octob. 4, 1573: Roger Alford, concerning his knowledge of the times, 1553. Cotton Library. Titus, B. 2. P. 485.

Number CCLVIII. *Anno Eliz.* 40. 1598. *regia authoritate fuit convocatio.* Notes taken by one of the ministers of London, then present. MSS. D. Johan. D. episc. Elien. In which convocation these canons were made and printed. P. 490.

Anno 1599. Number CCLIX. Martin Heton, D. D. was preferred to the bishopric of Ely this year 1599. vacant from the year 1581. when Cox the last bishop deceased, being about nineteen years. Heton was consecrated bishop Feb. 3. Of whose family, studies, and preferment, and death, some account follows from a reverend person his relation. ibid.

Number CCLX. Sir Robert Cotton's writings in Emanuel Demetrius the historian his album, remaining in the registers of the Dutch church in S. Augustin Fryars, London. P. 492.

Number CCLXI. The queen's council to the lord mayor of London. In behalf of the strangers, Dutch and French, forbidden to exercise their trades in the city. Upon their petition to the queen. ibid.

Number CCLXII. To which letter is subjoined another, being of the same subject, though writ a year or two after. Lord Buckhurst, lord high treasurer, to Mr. Attorney-general; in behalf of the strangers. P. 493.

Anno 1600. Number CCLXIII. Anno 1600. This was the year of the earl of Essex his plot. Which gave occasion to the setting forth a book, by public authority, called, A Declaration of the Practices and Treasons attempted and committed by Robert late Earl of Essex, and his Complices, against her Majesty and her Kingdoms; and of the Proceedings as well at the Arraignment and Conviction of the said Earl and his Adherents, as

after. Together with their confessions. Printed 1601. The cause of this declaration. P. 494.

Number CCLXIV. After the rebellion under the earl of Essex were certain prayers, fit for the time, set forth by authority, to be used thrice a week on the prayer days in the churches. Five in number. Occasioned by a great deliverance of the queen and kingdom from a dangerous rebellion. Composed upon her entrance into a new century, viz. the year 1600. The first prayer followeth. P. 495.

Number CCLXV. The second prayer on the same deliverance. P. 496.

Number CCLXVI. A private letter of Francis Bacon (afterwards sir Francis Bacon, lord Verulam) to Robert earl of Essex: upon that earl's motion to come into his party, as the means for him to rise. P. 497.

Number CCLXVII. James king of Scotland to lord Hambleton, one of his servants now in England; to assure the English people of his steadiness in religion. The writing of which letter was occasioned, as it seems, from two breves sent from the pope that year to the popish priests and people, to admit none to succeed to the crown of England, but such as were Roman Catholics. This from the Harleian library. P. 498.

Number CCLXVIII. *Ann. regin.* 43. The preamble of a grant of the clergy of the province of Canterbury, in a convocation, to the queen. Which was four subsidies of 4*s.* in the pound. Anno 1601. P. 499.

Number CCLXIX. The conclusion of the year 1602 concluded the last year of queen Elizabeth's life. Some short account of her life and reign from a few words of Dr. George Abbot, (afterwards archbishop of Canterbury,) in his book against Hill, a Jesuit. Anno 1602. P. 501.

Number CCLXX. The mighty esteem and value had of this queen and prosperous government, will appear further, from part of the sermon preached at St. Paul's Cross by Jos. Hall, D.D. dean of Worcester, (afterwards bishop of Norwich,) March 24, 1613, being the anniversary solemnity of king James's access to the crown. P. 502.

Number CCLXXI. Richard Master, M. D. physician in ordinary to the queen: concerning the causes of diseases: upon occasion of her majesty's question to him on that subject. P. 506.

Number CCLXXII. Charnock, a great philosopher, presented her majesty with a book, richly gilt, of the *philosopher's stone*, and of the true way and art to obtain it. All written (as it seems) with his own hand.

The title it bore was: A Book dedicated unto the Queen's Majesty by Master Thomas Charnocke, Student in the most worthy Sciences of Astronomy, Physic, and Philosophy: concerning the work of natural philosophy.

Nihil est opertum, quod non reveletur, et occultum, quod non sciatur. Matth. x.

Anno a Virgineo partu 1565.

Then follows the epistle. P. 508.

Number CCLXXIII. To which may be added a third book in manuscript of the subject of *divinity*, (as the two former were of *physic* and *philosophy*,) viz. concerning the doctrine of *justification*, by Richard Beard, some learned divine; writ, perhaps, for the queen's satisfaction in that great disputed point in those times. The title whereof and the writer's dedication follow.

De vera justificatione Christiani hominis coram Deo, præcipuæ doctorum et patrum sententiæ;

Et etiam

Harmoniæ evangelicæ..... P. 512.

Number CCLXXIV. A proclamation by the nobles of England, upon the death of queen Elizabeth, of the succession of king James. March 24, 1602. P. 516.

Number CCLXXV. The valuable apprehension had of king James of Scotland, upon his first coming into this kingdom; in an address to him by William Covel, D. D. in his answer to a book that now came forth, called, A Plea for the Innocent; written in behalf of the puritans. P. 519.

Number CCLXXVI. Anonymus (the queen's physician, as it seems) to Edmund Lambard; a letter writ the day after the queen's death, concerning her sickness and departure. Writ in Latin. P. 521.

Anno 1603. Number CCLXXVII. The university of Cambridge to the vice-chancellor and others of the university of Oxford, concerning that university's answer to the petition of the thousand ministers. October, 1603. P. 522.

Number CCLXXVIII. A proclamation for the king's coming from Barwick. April 10, 1603. P. 523.

Number CCLXXIX. A proclamation for all magistrates and officers under the late queen, to keep their places. April 5, 1603. P. 524.

Number CCLXXX. A proclamation for uniting both kingdoms. May 19, 1603. P. 527.

Number CCLXXXI. A proclamation against monopolies and protections. P. 528.

Number CCLXXXII. A proclamation commanding all Jesuits and seminary priests to avoid the realm before the 19th day of March following. Dated Feb. 22. P. 532.

Number CCLXXXIII. A proclamation declaring at what values the certain monies of Scotland shall be current within England. April 8. P. 535.

Number CCLXXXIV. A proclamation touching a meeting for the hearing and determining of things pretended to be amiss in the church. *Given under our hand at Wilton, the 24th of October,* 1603. This may be read in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. chap. 31. Which proclamation produced the famous conference at Hampton-court. P. 536.

Number CCLXXXV. Proclamation for calling a parliament. Jan. 11, 1603. ibid.

Number CCLXXXVI. King James his answer in French to the members of the Dutch church in London; upon their address to him at his first coming to the crown. *Ex minore MSto archivorum eccles. Belgic.* Ann. 1603. P. 538.

Number CCLXXXVII. A proclamation, authorizing commissioners concerning the union of both kingdoms. Anno 1604. P. 540.

Number CCLXXXVIII. A proclamation for coins of gold and silver, with their mottos and figures. And with this proclamation was printed a table, expressing the true value and weights of the coins, according to the accounts of the mintmen of both nations. P. 41.

Number CCLXXXIX. Upon the remove of bishop Bancroft from London to Canterbury, anno 1604, the Dutch and French congregations made, to Dr. Vaughan, his successor, the address following. *E MSS. eccles. Belgic. London.* P. 543.

Number CCXC. Cecil lord Cranborn, secretary of state, to Hutton, archbishop of York, concerning orders from the privy-council, for putting in execution the laws against puritans, &c. P. 545.

Number CCXCI. The address of the Dutch church in London to Bancroft, bishop of London, upon his remove to Canterbury, when monsieur de la Fontaine, preacher of the French church, made this speech to him in Latin. P. 549.

Number CCXCII. The speech of monsieur de la Fontaine to Dr. Vaughan, now the succeeding bishop of London, anno 1604. P. 550.

Number CCXCIII. The bishop of London's answer. P. 551.

Number CCXCIV. De la Fontaine's present reply to the bishop's speech. ibid.

Number CCXCV. A convocation, *ann. primo Jacobi regis*, 1603, collected and taken from the registers of the upper house. P. 552.

Anno 1606. Number CCXCVI. A proclamation for Jesuits, &c. to depart the realm: upon a second warning given, after the gunpowder plot. P. 557.

Anno 1607. Number CCXCVII. King James's letter to the lords; desiring their advice, in order to the better improving his revenue. P. 560.

Number CCXCVIII. An address to king James from certain of his subjects. In answer to a letter from him. P. 562.

Anno 1612. Number CCXCIX. Abbot, lord archbishop of Canterbury, to king James; informing him of secret treasonable practices of Sunega, the Spanish ambassador. Writ in the year 1612. P. 564.

THE

CONTENTS OF THE SUPPLEMENT.

Anno 1568. NUMBER I. Strangers in London, anno 1568. Appointed by the lords of the council to Thomas Row, mayor, to be searched out in each ward; and a certificate thereof sent in to them: which accordingly was taken by him at large, and entered in a warrant book: with his letter to them. P. 569.

Anno 1571. Number II. A proclamation against retainers: for restraint of

multitudes of needless servants, by wearing gentlemen's livery badges, and other ensigns and tokens. P. 577.

Number III. Minutes of a letter from the privy-council to the queen's officers at Chester, to stop all ships immediately, dated May 1571, upon apprehension of some treacherous and seditious persons passing that way. P. 579.

Number IV. Upon the massacre at Paris in France, the protestants fly into England: whereof a brief account was sent up, of those that escaped to Rye in Sussex from Roan and Diep, to the number of 641 persons. Anno 1572. P. 580.

Number V. The chaplains and fellows of the Savoy to the lord Burghley, lord treasurer of England, to help them in the miserable condition of their hospital; and that Mr. James of Oxford might be appointed by the queen to be their master. Ann. 1573. Anno 1573. P. 581.

Number VI. To which address of the fellows of the Savoy may be added a more particular relation of the state of that hospital, as represented Nov. 29, 1575, bearing this title: *A brief declaration of the state of the hospital of the Savoy, as it was found by her majesty's visitors, anno* 1570. Anno 1575. P. 582.

Number VII. Thurland admitted again to be master of the Savoy, anno 1574: his subscription to certain rules and orders for the government of the said hospital: and his oath for performance. P. 584.

Number VIII. Mr. Whitgift of Trinity college in Cambridge, and the senior fellows of that college, to the lord treasurer; in behalf of one of their society: he and the lord Bacon being their only patrons. P. 585.

Number IX. Dr. Gabriel Goodman, dean of Westminster, to the lord treasurer, anno 1577. for Westminster college; there being then thoughts of reforming some things therein. Anno 1577. P. 586.

Number X. Mr. Robert Bertie to the lord Burghley, anno 1580: concerning his son Peregrine's title of lord Willoughby, and right thereto by his mother, the duchess of Suffolk. Anno 1580. P. 588.

Number XI. To which may be added a letter to the same lord by Peregrine Bertie, son and heir to the said Robert: claiming the title of lord Willoughby, a man well known in the queen's reign for his courage, and valour, and wit: who was

now going into Lincolnshire, to his estate there. Writ March 1575. P. 589.

Anno 1583. Number XII. A letter of sir Walter Raleigh to the lord treasurer, ann. 1583. concerning the earl of Oxford, under a cloud at court; for whom he had spoken favourably to the queen; being desired so to do by the said lord, whose beloved daughter Anne that earl had married. Occasioned by some quarrel between the earl and some other noblemen. P. 590.

Anno 1580. Number XIII. Francis Bacon, son to sir Nicolas Bacon, lord keeper, his letter, written in the year 1580, to the lord treasurer Burghley, who had recommended him to the queen's favour for some place under her; and her majesty's gracious answer in his behalf.

This F. B. was sir Francis Bacon, afterwards lord Verulam, viscount St. Alban's, and lord chancellor of England. P. 591.

Anno 1583. Number XIV. The bishop of Ross his letter to Mary queen of Scots, abbreviated in the Annals, vol. iii. p. 104. thus went on at large, being the continuation of it. P. 593.

Anno 1586. Number XV. A letter of Edwin Sandys, archbishop of York, May the 22d, 1586, to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley: justifying himself against certain accusations laid against him, and complained of to the queen by the dean of York, for leasing out the church lands by reversion; which had brought him up to court to vindicate himself. P. 595.

Manuscript Notes of the Rev. Thomas Baker. P. 599.

BRIEF

ANNALS

OF

CHURCH AND STATE,

UNDER

QUEEN ELIZABETH.

Number I.

Report from sir Edward Kelly in Bohemia, June 1589, *against Parkyns a Jesuit: brought by Robert Tatton and Geo. Leycester. Thus writ upon the backside of the paper following, by the lord treasurer Burghley, viz.*

Certain articles of the discovery of high treason, made by sir Edward Kelly, baron of Bohemia, unto certain English gentlemen, which came to visit him at Tribona in the said kingdom, the latter end of June, 1589, *whose names are here subscribed.*

I. THAT fourteen days before the feast of Pentecost last past, one Parkyns, born in England, and now a Jesuit, came from Rome to the city of Prague in Bohemia. And there coming into an inn, where the said sir E. K. was, and uttering divers novelties, among others he plainly (but as it were in great secresy) opened to the said sir E. K. this horrible conspiracy against her majesty: ANNO 1589.

I. That there were now seven such ways or means, concluded and agreed upon by the pope and his confederates, for the murthering of the queen, that if the first, second, third, fourth, and fifth failed, yet were the [plots] &c. in

ANNO 1589. such sort to be executed, that the sixth or seventh should take effect: yes, if all the devils in hell thereunto say nay.

2 II. And further Parkyns declared, that those ways and means were by him and his coherents to be executed against her majesty's own person: for the performance whereof he declared also, that he would forthwith go into England by the way of Danzige. And so from thence, in the habit of a merchant, into England.

III. That when the said sir E. K. declared the same strange news to the lord Rosenburgh, viceroy of Bohemia, the said Rosenburgh told sir Edward, that the said Parkyns was the right hand, or chief man to the king of Spain and the pope, in all their treacherous enterprises against England.

IV. At the same time and instant the said L. Rosenburgh shewed unto sir E. K. a letter, written by one of the chief of the states of the Low Countries with the emperor, requesting the emperor to be a means to take up the matter between them and the king of Spain. And also requesting this emperor to send them some aid, to help them away with the English that were in those provinces.

V. That the said sir Edward, at his faithful disclosing those things (thus by divine Providence come to his knowledge) to these subscribed gentlemen, did furthermore much marvel and wonder, how it was possible that the strangers of the Low Countries, dwelling in England, would or could lend and send unto the emperor or king of Spain a million of gold at any time or times, to his or their helps: which he of his certain knowledge assured to be done. But he well hoped, that the treason therein by this time was come to the knowledge of some of her majesty's most honourable privy-council.

" We Robert Tatton, and George Leycester, gentlemen, " do witness these articles, and the effect of every part of " them, to have been declared unto us, and Edmund Hil- " ton, servant to the rt. worshipful John Dee, esq. by the " within named sir E. K. at our being with him at Trebona " in Boeme in the end of June last, 1589."

To which may be added two letters to the said Kelly,

wrote by the lord treasurer Burghley, as a remaining memorial of the same famous man, some time of this nation a native. ANNO 1589.

Number II.

The lord Burghley, lord treasurer, to sir Edward Kelly, written ann. 1591, *declaring the value he and others had of him, upon the account of his great knowledge and virtue; and inviting him to return to his own country: and begging a medicine from him for his old enemy the gout.*

MY most hearty commendations premised. I have cause to thank you, and so I do very heartily, for your good, kind letter sent to me by our countryman, Mr. Royden: who maketh such good report of you, (as doth every other man that hath had a conversation with you,) as that I am com-3 forted to hear their reports. Yet I have the same mingled with some grief, that none of them can give me any good assurance of your return hither; the thing most earnestly desired of all well disposed persons to the queen's majesty, and to their countrymen: and what may be the stays thereof, I may rather guess, than judge them of moment, to retain a person of such a value in knowledge and virtue, (as I take you to be,) from the consummation of your felicity in your own native country: and so having writ to Mr. Dyar more largely, I refer myself to his dealing with you: wishing such success without further delay, as may be to the satisfaction of us all here, that love and honour virtue and knowledge in whomsoever we may find it. And I hope to hear from you to have something of your approbation, to strengthen me afore the next winter against my old enemy the gout: which is rather by a cold humour than a hot, and principally by a rheumatic head. Which I also think receiveth the imperfection from a stomach, not fully digesting the food received. But to affirm what I take is the most direct cause is, oppression of affairs, and lack of liberty: against the which no medicinal receipt can serve.

ANNO 1589. And yet I will be glad to make much of any receipt you shall send me, with your assurance that it shall do me no harm.

And so I pray God to direct you to bestow your gifts that God hath given you, rather upon your own prince and country, than upon strangers. From the court now at my house of Theobalds, the of May, 1591.

Number III.

The lord treasurer Burghley to sir Edward Kelly, in answer to a letter from him, brought by Mr. Dyar. Exhorting him earnestly, and that by command from the queen, to come over into his own native country; that they might receive the honour and service that his great wisdom and knowledge deserved. Written by that lord's own hand.

Good sir Edward Kelly,

I HAVE received your letter, brought by my very friend, Mr. Edward Dyar: with the style whereof, and wisdom well mixed, and with a natural dutiful regard to your country and sovereign, I have been both much delighted and fully satisfied. And for any particular answer to the parts of your letter, I need not otherwise to write thereof, but in this general sort, that I like of all that you have written; although I should have best of all liked of your own access. I will not enter into argument of the misliking I have in that you cannot. For without more particular knowledge of the impediments, I may not give any
4 such censures, as some inconsiderately, yea, uncharitably may do. I conceive by your writing, that you confess a desire to return to your native country; which is very commendable in you. I perceive also by your own words expressly, that your mind draweth you toward your gracious sovereign; whom above all worldly majesties you desire to serve and please: which intent you also desire me to further. And what can be required of any Christian subject

beyond this offer? No Momus can reprehend this sincerity. And yet, nevertheless, I would not have you ignorant, that sundry men, being not acquainted with these your faithful offers and purposes, let not in some sort (since it is seen that you came not with Mr. Dyar) to divine variously of your stay. Some saying, that you do forbear to come, because you cannot perform that indeed which hath been reported of you. Some, that you are inticed by such as bear not the queen nor this realm any good will, (not to come to benefit her majesty.) Some allege, that your own profession of religion doth not agree with ours here. Yea, some, that are maliciously disposed, say, that you are an impostor with your sophistications, as many heretofore, both here and in other countries, have been proved; and that you would fear to be proved such an one here, because of usurers severe punishment. ANNO 1589.

Now, good knight, though I write thus plainly to you, yet such is my credit in Mr. Dyar; such is my allowance of your loyal profession; such opinion I do firmly conceive of your wisdom and learning, expressed in your letters; such also is my persuasion of your ability to perform that which Mr. Dyar hath reported, by reason of the estimation, honour, and credit I see that you have by your behaviour; as I rest only unsatisfied in your delay of coming: and again expressly commanded of her majesty to require you to have regard to her honour, and accordingly to the tenor of her former letters to assure yourself to be singularly favoured; yea, in respect of the benefits that you may, by the gifts that God hath given you, bring to her majesty, to be honoured, to the comfort of yourself and all yours. And here I need not to use any further arguments to persuade you to this effect, considering natural reason may draw you to be assured of any worldly reward convenient for you, that is in a prince's power, whom you shall make so happy for her surety, as no subject that she hath can do the like.

Good knight, therefore let me end my letter with God's holy name: by which I do conjure you, not to keep God's gifts from your natural country; but rather to help to make

ANNO 1589. her majesty a glorious and victorious prince against the malice of her and God's enemies. Let honest glory move your natural heart to become honourable rather in your own country than a strange; and to leave a monument of your name at home to all posterity. Let no other country bereave us of this felicity, that only, yea, only by you, I say, is to be expected. And now let no time be more driven off and lost; considering we are all mortal; you that should be author hereof, and this noble queen that should be the receiver thereof.

All this letter is by me written, as an answer to your letter sent by Mr. Dyar. And now I may not omit to thank you for the mountain or rock that you sent, and was safely brought to me from Stoden: which I will place in my house, where I do bestow other rare things of workmanship; and shall be a memorial of your kindness. Wishing I might enjoy some small receipt from you, that might comfort my spirits in mine age, rather than my coffers with any wealth: for I esteem health above wealth.

Number IV.

Sir Francis Knolles, knt. treasurer of the chamber to queen Elizabeth; to the lord Burghley, lord high treasurer. A letter of some sharpness against the superiority of bishops.

I HAVE received your lordship's letter of the first of August: wherein I have received very small comfort, and small hope of the good maintenance of her majesty's safety, consisting in the sincere maintenance of her majesty's supreme government, against the covetous ambition of clergy rulers. For your lordship saith, the question is very disputable, whereof I wrote unto your lordship. And I must needs confess, that Campion's disputation against the humility of Christ's doctrine, and for the advancement of Antichrist's doctrine, was not only allowed to be disputable, but also it was very plausible in the minds of all those that fa-

voured the worldly, pompous rule of Christ's government. For the nature of covetous ambition in church governors hath always despised the humble and base style of Christ's doctrine and government. For the high priests and governors of the church of the Jews, when Christ came unto them, they made it disputable, whether Christ were worthy to die, or not. But their disputation lasted not long: for the proud ambitious rulers of the church resolved quickly that Christ was worthy to die. And Christ himself bewailing the proud ambitious government of the Scribes and Pharisees, burst out and said, *O Jerusalem, Jerusalem*, &c. Whereby appeareth, that the church governors in all times, that are once stuffed with the ambitious pride of worldly rule in the church, could never away with the humility of Christ's heavenly doctrine and spiritual rule in the church. ANNO 1589.

And as touching the *superiority* of bishops to be disallowed, as a false claim, it seems to me, that Christ himself hath plainly decided the matter, at what times as the apostles at two sundry times did seem to murmur and strive, who should be the greatest after Christ's departure from them. Where it seems to me, that Christ condemned plainly all claiming superiority among his apostles: the which rule if our bishops would follow, as no doubt they would, if her majesty's supreme government were stoutly stand unto, then they would be contented to forbear their claimed superiority of government in the church, which Christ condemned in the apostles; and they would be satisfied with 6
that equality which Christ left to the church among the apostles.

But here you must not take me, that I do deny that bishops may have any lordly authority or dignity that they have enjoyed, so that they claim it not from a higher authority than directly from her majesty's grant. But I do not mean hereby to contend with your lordship, through whose assistance I have always hoped that her majesty's safety (consisting in that thorough maintenance of her majesty's supreme government) should be jealously preserved;

ANNO 1589. but yet your lordship must pardon me, although I do not think that her majesty's safety is any thing the better preserved, because our bishops dare not oppose themselves and their credit against her majesty's supreme government. For it is the Jesuits, and not our bishops, that must bring her majesty's safety into peril, if this maxim may be allowed unto the same Jesuits, that our bishops of England are not under-governors to her majesty of the clergy, but that they are superior governors over the said inferior clergy by God's own ordinance, [i. e. *jure divino.*] Whereupon it must needs follow, that her majesty is not supreme governor over the clergy, if so be that our said bishops be not under-governors to her majesty, but superior governors by a higher claim than directly from her majesty.

But my trust is, that the cause of your lordship's writing unto me, that the question is very disputable, is not for that your lordship is of that opinion, but rather for that your lordship would bridle and stay me from running too fast before your lordship in the matter of her majesty's safety. But although I have always been and must be plain with your lordship, in the matter of her majesty's safety, yet if it shall please your lordship to set all the bishops and all their favourers against me, to prove me a disturber of their government in their suppressing of preachers, or otherwise, your lordship shall find, that none of them shall be able to prove any substantial matter against me, since the time that long since her majesty at Windsor did command me, that I should not deal with the puritans, as then her majesty called them, because her majesty did commit the government of religion to her bishops only. Since which time I have dealt no more with matters of religion than doth appertain to her majesty's safety, consisting in the true preservation of her majesty's supreme government. The which may best be called matter of her majesty's policy, and not matter of religion; although the Jesuits do call all their treasons matter of religion.

Thus fearing that I have been too bold with your lordship, although I do know your lordship doth love to hear all

men's opinions, that your wisdom may the better judge thereof, I do most humbly take my leave. ANNO 1589.

Your lordship's to command,

At Ewelline Lodge, the 4th of August, 1589.

F. Knollys.

Number V.

Sir Francis Knollys to the queen, upon some displeasure she had taken against him. Occasioned by his controversy about the superiority of bishops.

My most gracious sovereign,

ALTHOUGH I be unworthy to be trusted, yet I am not unworthy to be tried, or false in matters concerning the safety of your majesty's crown and dignity. I found my old error, that is to say, that I have not heretofore (in weighty matters) used such temperancy of speech as wiser men have done to your majesty. Neither have I suppressed mine abundance of affections, (in so weighty causes,) as wiser men have done or should do. Now to avoid these my old errors, I do most humbly crave at your majesty's hands at this present, that it will please you, that my lord treasurer may be pleased to be a faithful reporter and true dealer between your majesty and me, and also between me and such as I shall accuse for injuring your majesty's safety, and your majesty's supreme government, so sore presently assaulted by the pope and the king of Spain, and their Jesuitical adherents.

This writ by another hand, being a copy sent to the lord treasurer Burghley, and found among his papers.

Number VI.

One Mrs. Dier had practised conjuration against the queen, to work some mischief to her majesty; for which she was brought into question for it. And accordingly her words and doings were sent to Popham, the queen's attorney,

ANNO 1589.

and Egerton, her solicitor, by Walsingham the secretary, and sir Tho. Heneage, her vice-chamberlain, for their judgment of her case; whose opinion was, that Mrs. Dier was not within the compass of the estatute touching witchcraft; for that she did no act, and spake certain lewd speeches, tending to that purpose: but neither set figure, nor made pictures. The attorney's and solicitor's letter in answer follows.

OUR humblest duty done unto your honours. It may please you to be advertised, that we have perused the several examinations which your honours sent us concerning Mrs. Dyar. Where we find very lewd and undutiful speeches
8 by her concerning her majesty, and of very bad practices intended towards her highness. Which matters would require, in our opinion, farther examination. Whether any thing concurring with her purpose; and the times thereof would be directly set down. Which we may guess at by Hamelton's letter. But it would be plainly set down, where every thing was done or spoken. And for other matters of her witchery intended, it appeareth not by any the examinations, that any action of witchcraft was put in use; but a speech used of such a purpose: which doth not bring them in danger of the law in that behalf made. Therefore it would be well looked into whether any thing were done, as picture, figure set, and such like. And the times would be set down plainly, when and where every thing was done. We have also here returned unto your honours the several examinations sent us concerning that cause. And so do humbly take our leaves. The 7th of Jan. 1589.

Whether any thing attempted.

The times to be directly set down.

No action of witchcraft put in execution.

Your honours humbly,

Jo. Popham.

Tho. Egerton.

Number VII.

ANNO 1589.

Sir Francis Drake to the lord treasurer, concerning the fleet landing in Caskays with don Antonio, for recovery of his kingdom of Portugal.

Right honourable, my very good lord,

SINCE my last letter sent to your lordship from the Groine, we have landed our army twelve leagues from Lisborn, and passed with a navy to Caskays, which is within five leagues of Lisborn, where we landed such forces as we might conveniently spare. The long contrary wind at the Groine, and the continuance of the same in all our passage from thence hitherwards, hath been the cause of their intelligence so long before, of our coming with don Antonio. By which means the enemy had gathered their whole strength out of Portugal and Gallicia into three several places. The first and greatest they continued at Lisborn. The second in a fort of very great strength, in the very entrance and mouth of the haven of Lisborn. And the third in twelve galleys.

Our first army remained three days in the suburbs of Lisborn, and our other troops at Caskays remained there six days.

All this time there never repaired unto us of Portugal soldiers above two hundred, or thereabouts. They have taken of the second sort of Portuguezs, their wives and children for their pledges and assurance, that they should be loyal to king Philip: and sent the gentlemen, and men of best account in Portugal, either into Spain, or kept them in prison.

We are all of opinion, that if we had comen first for Lis- 9
bon, the city had been ours: and that being once won, the whole country might well, and would have comen in unto don Antonio. The numbers of our soldiers and mariners are greatly decayed by extreme sickness happened in the army, to the great discomfort of the rest. We have not yet altogether concluded of our resolution for any farther service, although we have often sat to determine it: because we

ANNO 1589. hear not of our supply, which is to come out of England. But mind, God willing, to determine it very shortly; and then to advise your lordship of the particulars thereof.

Thus I humbly take my leave of your lordship. From aboard her majesty's good ship the Revenge, in the road of Caskaiz. This 2d of June, 1589.

Your lordship's always ready to be commanded,

Fra. Drake.

Within these three days we have taken threescore sail of hulks and bottoms; all, or the most part of them, laden with rye, wheat, and all manner of provisions, and bound to discharge at Lisbon.

By which means we have letted him of his purpose to come with an army this year.

The country, in all places where we came, is in great want of corn, yet the king's store-houses full of all manner of provision. Which they caused to be burnt in every place where we came.

Number VIII.

A discourse of Anthony Coppley, the 6th of January, 1590, (*of his abode and maintenance beyond the seas,*) *to Mr. William Wade.* [*Who was lieutenant of the Tower.*] *He seems to be the son of Thomas Coppley, a prime popish fugitive in Q. Elizabeth's reign, and was made great master of the Maes by the king of Spain; and afterwards knighted by the French king, and the title of baron given him; as Camden, under the years* 1575 *and* 1577, *writeth.*

THAT being fifteen years of age, and a young student of Furnival's Inn, under the charge of a kinsman, Mr. T. Southwel, (now himself beyond seas,) he stole away, (him unwitting,) and got over to Rome, to his father and mother; who were dwelling there at that time, viz. 1582. And continued there two years, or thereabouts. Brought up by them and instructed in the knowledge and certainty

of the faith I profess. Afterwards it was obtained by a lady of the prince of Parma's court, that I might, if I would, be his page. But my father, supposing that a place not convenient for my younger years, albeit it were a place of honour, and a ready way, in time, to further preferment, either in court or camp, (as it is daily seen,) yet my father, perceiving in those my younger years a desire rather to travel, than any good liking I had of that condition, condescended to my own choice of the two. To be short, I rather chose to journey to Rome: whereunto my father the rather willingly condescended, by reason that at that very time a kin of my own, Mr. Rob. Southwel, a Jesuit in Rome, brother to the president Tho. Southwel, hearing of my being beyond sea, had of his own accord and love towards me procured ten crowns pension of pope Gregory for my better maintenance there, in case my friends would allow of that course. And herewithal by his letter to my father, then fled, advertised him of the whole. ANNO 1589. 10

Whereupon I was sent to Rome, where I remained the space of two years, having my chamber and table in the English college, as Mr. Gilbert and Mr. Cha. Basset, and others in like manner had before me: living upon my pension of the pope at that while. And at last the pope died; and his nephew, the cardinal Sixto, likewise; (of whom I had confirmed my said pension unto me, while he lived.) These being dead, and so my pension lost, I returned again into Flanders; where I found my father was likewise dead, and my mother and elder brother returned into England. Only my brother Stanihurst I found there; who by Hugh Owen's means got me forth twenty crowns pension of the prince of Parma.

So that since that time, till now that I am returned into England, I have served the king of Spain in his wars in Flanders. For which I humbly crave pardon of her majesty and my country; hoping now hereafter, and (protesting it) always to deserve better, in reparation of this my offence.

As for my religion, I protest unto you, sir, I will so behave myself therein, as no scandal shall be given. Neither will I refuse conference with any learned man, minister or

ANNO 1589. other; to the end to be resolved in another faith, in case they can of certainty prove it unto me, that I believe amiss.

And, good sir, I beseech you, let my honourable good lords of her majesty's council, namely my lord treasurer, be satisfied in my faith and truth to my prince and country; and to make proof thereof in whatsoever they shall please to employ me. Surely, sir, I am not returned to enjoy lands nor livings in any country: for fortune hath not so assigned me: only to the duties of a true and sincere subject I am returned: to stand with my prince and country to my life's end. It grieveth me to hear abroad of Spanish preparations yet once again against England; namely, under pretence of title to the same. Which doubtless importeth in the enemy a mind resolved in a conquest of the realm, if ever they get on shore; which God defend. Namely, I beseech you also, good sir, to move Mr. Vice-chamberlain in my behalf. His honour is long since privy to my return. I hope, therefore, that upon information of my present state, I shall, by your good means, find him my
11 honourable good lord: which I humbly crave. Perchance my father's and my brother's demerits may make against me, but I refer myself to the favour of my good lords.

Anthony Coppley.

This seems to have been wrote by him in the Tower.

In the year 1603, Anthony Coppley was proclaimed to be apprehended, as likewise sir Griffin Markham, Watson, Clark, priests. *Stow's Annals.*

Number IX.

Whitgift, archbishop of Canterbury, to the justices of peace in Kent: for release of the clergy from composition-corn. An original.

Epist. Whitg. To my very loving and assured good friends the justices of peace in the county of Kent, assembled at the sessions of Canterbury.

AFTER my right hearty commendations. I am given

to understand by sundry ministers of East Kent, that for some years last past (by what means I know not certainly) they have been assessed among others to the provision of corn, &c. for her majesty's most honourable household. It is conceived that this hath first grown, when as heretofore most part of the benefices there were in the occupation of laymen, as fermours, or otherwise; whereby they were contributaries. But seeing that it is not unknown unto you, that by the most ancient laws all ecclesiastical persons are freed from this and like charges, that the ministers thereabouts are both of very mean ability, and also deeply charged to other public services and contributions; and that there is no reason, that they more than the ministers of other parts of this shire (perhaps upon some former negligence or mistaking) should endure this burden, which you of the commission of peace that have the yearly assessment thereof may easily remedy. I do therefore very heartily, upon these considerations, pray you and every one of you, to whom this may appertain, to have a friendly and pitiful regard for their release herein: and that the rather by your good means and furtherance they may without discouragement go forward in their vocation; enjoying but the benefit of law and of other subjects of their sort. Which exception, when all things shall be well weighed, will not be (as I persuade myself) any whit prejudicial to her majesty's due provision, being a matter which, according to my bounden duty, I do otherwise greatly tender, and am most willing to prefer and set forward in all good and lawful manner I may. ANNO 1589.

And so I commit you all to God's holy protection.

Your very assured friend,

Jo. Cantuar'.

From my house at Ford,
the 21st of July, 1589.

ANNO 1590.

Number X.

12 *The bishop of Winton to the lord treasurer. A contest between the president and fellows of Corpus Christi college, Oxon: deferred to their visitor the said bishop, with his sense of it, shewed to the said lord treasurer; who had sent to him to put an end to it.*

MY duty considered, right honourable. Upon the sixth of February, I received from your lordship a letter in behalf of the seniors of Corpus Christi college in Oxford. It may please you to understand that the controversy, which they move for the election of their officers, and for any other griefs, was never brought unto me until the 8th of January last. And yet had they before Christmas, contrary to their statute, sought remedy at other places; never making me privy of any thing. At which time, and ever since, I have had business of great importance, very nighly touching myself, my office, and charge. And yet did I not delay their cause, but presently bestowed an whole day and more in conference of their allegations: which were so difficult as I could not presently make my resolution, except I should have done it without just ground of conscience. Therefore I presently wrote to the president and them, [the seniors,] that for this time only they would quietly condescend to some indifferent election, until I could so peruse both their statute and the statutes of other colleges, that I might with safe conscience make my resolute interpretation. This counsel would not be accepted; but five of them without the president confirmed their former election. Yet did I plainly signify unto them, that as I stood then persuaded, I thought, that neither the president alone, nor five without the president, could make a just election.

Whereupon I wrote again unto them, to the end the business of the college might proceed, that they would suffer those persons, that were officers chosen by them the last year, to continue; and to execute their office, until they received my full resolution, which I would send them with as much speed as I could. Which direction, I understand, at

Candlemas-day last, was accepted of: and therefore my hope is, I shall in reasonable time so end their controversy, that I shall in good part take away the factions that have been among them these six years. ANNO 1590.

I heartily desire your honour to have this persuasion of me, that I do more tender the good state of a college in Oxford, than I do mine own particular house and commodity. And it grieves me to see these places, which were ordained to be schools of good learning, modesty, and obedience, to be turned to be nurseries of discord, dissension, and stubbornness towards superiors, as that house hath been almost this seven years; seldom without questions, but never without factions and parties, one striving against another; and commonly raised and maintained by Leonard Taylor, 13 the principal follower of these matters. For he hath wrought himself to be chosen bursar by these five: and therefore will willingly admit no moderation for the mean time. He hath of late years more studied to maintain wrangling interpretations of their statutes, than to increase his learning. I do not defer my resolution without great cause and sincere meaning. For I am prescribed by their statute to make no other interpretation, but *secundum literalem et grammaticalem sensum*. Which, by the interpretation of both parts, is made very intricate for me to declare what the founders meaning was, unless I did throughly peruse their statutes, and the statutes also of other houses. Which I cannot do in such haste as they would have me; unless my resolution should go before the judgment of my conscience.

Moreover, if I should resolve that five young men of small experience should choose all the officers in the house, and thereby overrule, and, as some of them have spoken, curb or bridle the president, I should plainly, against honest conscience, establish and allow (to a very hard example) a pack or conspiracy against the head, and also hazard the good estate of the house. For, as I see, that inconvenience may follow, if the president, being but one man, should have all in his own hands, (which I do not like in any wise;) so I do foresee great inconveniences may come, if

ANNO 1590. four or five young persons, without or against their head, should do what they list, without some bridle to restrain them. I have been too well acquainted with the factious dealing of young scholars. And I know what is the root and first beginning of this faction against the president, and to what end it will come, if they be not stayed. I have known him head there these 23 years. And this I dare say upon my credit, that for scholastical government and order in that house, he hath so ruled it, as few in Oxford have done the like. But whatsoever he be, I will neither for him nor for any other man, God willing, determine any thing that shall be against the good state of that house, if the clamorousness of these men do not overbear me.

But I trouble your honour too long. I pray God preserve the same in health to his glory. This 8th of Feb 1590.

Your honour's in Christ assured to his power,
Thomas Winton.

14 Number XI.

Merick, bishop of the Isle of Man, to the lord Burghley, lord treasurer. Complaining of his being charged above his ability. Shewing his needy condition. Writ April, 1590.

Right honourable,

PARDON me. I am forced to be troublesome. I came the last summer to Wales: having been the year afore in Man: as I am commonly between both: not of my own choice or will; but things are so, and causes I might allege to satisfy the wise, but too long for your honour's affairs. Neither hath any bishop, my predecessor, been otherwise this [hundred] years. My living is but LXXXX*l.* in money: wherewith I travail by sea and by land. Landing here seven years since, and finding my friends in prison, I lent them my stock for that year, and borrowed them as much more: I have lacked it ever since, and would give the one half to be paid the other: and am in debt to others at that while: and

did afore the last parliament assign the same money to others for my discharge. ANNO 1590.

Yet in respect of this the cessers for the temporalties in Anglesey, envying my friends that benefit, have rated me in goods worth more than all this isle is besides. And of truth, as I shall prove, I have neither house nor home here. No other debts, goods, but such as I carry about for my necessary expenses, and to bring me over again; no kind of benefit ecclesiastical or temporal, but three travelling nags, to carry me to and from the water-side. Where lying sick and waiting for passage, being loath to continue subject to process, or to be thought fraudulently conveyed, or of not loyned my goods, I am well willing to be tried. And am constrained thus to signify to your honour; humbly beseeching your lordship, that I may not be wrongfully vexed; as I shall pray the Almighty God to give your honour abundantly *de rore cæli et pinguedine terræ;* increase your spiritual and temporal gifts; to prosper your public doings, and bless you and your posterity.

Anglesey, the 4th of April.

Your honour's most humble,
Jo. Meryck, of the Isle of Man.

Number XII.

Hutton, bishop of Durham, to the lord treasurer, that his lordship would be a means to satisfy the queen concerning the bestowing of Sherborn hospital. Writ in March, 1590.

My most humble duty remembered, &c.

I AM now to crave your lordship's favour more than ever in my life. For I understand by Mr. Secretary, that her majesty is much offended with me for the bestowing of Sherborn house. The matter is this. Immediately after the decease of Dr. Dale, I bestowed the hospital of Sherborn house upon a kinsman of mine, one Mr. Hutton, a bachelor of divinity, and one of the senior fellows of Trinity

ANNO 1590. college in Cambridge, and this year head-lecturer in that house. But because the living chiefly consisteth upon husbandry, and he a mere scholar, I was content, at his suit, to bestow that hospital upon Dr. Bellamy, an honest man, a preacher and a physician, to have charge both of the souls and bodies of the poor, impotent, sick persons of that hospital, and Dr. Bellamy to give over one of his benefices, and his prebend in Durham, to Mr. Hutton. This was done in November and the beginning of December last. For after I did receive a letter from Mr. Secretary, that her majesty's intention was to qualify sir Henry Lee with a dispensation, and to bestow upon him the said house, I did answer, that I being patron by statute, (whereunto her majesty had given her royal assent,) with best advice, had already given it as fully and effectually as I could.

So the matter slept from that time until the beginning of March, when I did receive, to my great grief, another letter from Mr. Secretary, that her highness was greatly offended with me for the bestowing of it; because I, knowing her majesty's determination, had presumed to bestow it without her leave. I answer that which was most true, as I shall answer before the living God, that I had given it before Mr. Secretary's letter, signifying her majesty's pleasure, did come unto my hands; and that I did it with the testimony of a good conscience, to bring into this ignorant country two godly preachers by two benefices which Dr. Bellamy did resign.

But this week I did receive a third letter from Mr. Secretary, signifying, that he had acquainted her majesty with my answer. Wherewith her highness was nothing satisfied; but that her majesty's resolution was, that I should restore Dr. Bellamy to all his former livings, and he to give over the hospital; and that I should send up forthwith to the court Mr. Hutton, to compound with sir Henry Lee for the hospital; and then he to have the same. Which thing, if it please your good lordship, lieth not in me to do. For I am not patron of all Dr. Bellamy's livings, and he refuseth to give over the hospital which he doth lawfully

possess. And Mr. Hutton was instituted and inducted into the benefice and prebend in the beginning of December last; and, as I hear, hath already compounded for first-fruits. Yet have I sent my servant to Mr. Hutton at Cambridge, where he is preparing for his removing to his benefice, now at Easter, and willed him to make his present repair thither, and to answer for himself. ANNO 1590. 16

Thus standeth the matter. Now my humble suit is unto your honour for your accustomed favour. First, That Dr. Bellamy and Mr. Hutton be not compelled to give over their livings, which, as I take it, they do lawfully possess. Secondly, That the hospital appointed by her majesty and the whole parliament to a preacher, and the relief of the poor, may not be converted to worse uses; which is like to be, if sir Henry Lee be compounded withal. Thirdly, That her majesty be not offended with me for doing that which I thought I might do lawfully, and did with the testimony of a good conscience. I beseech your honour, that as you and my lord's grace of Canterbury were the means, without my suit, for my placing in this country, so at my earnest humble suit you will be a means to defend me in my well and lawful doings. Thus with humble thanks to God for restoring you to health again, and to your honour for your great favour towards me at all times, I humbly take my leave. Aukland, the 30th of March, 1590.

Your lordship's most bounden,

Matth. Dunelm.

Number XIII.

Harberd, bishop of Hereford, to the lord treasurer; informing him of one brought before him for seditious words.

Right honourable and my very good lord,

WHEREAS William Wier of Middleton Scriven, in the county of Salop, yeoman, coming before me for a cause ecclesiastical, was accused; for that he, in the hearing of

ANNO 1590. three others, (who have also certified the same,) had said, "that priests' wives were whores, and their children bastards. "And that it was pity they were unburned. And that he "did hope the true law should shortly be restored. And "then they should be either hanged or burnt. And that it "was pity the queen did reign, to suffer them unhanged or "unburnt." And I thereupon have sent him to her majesty's council in these parts, notwithstanding the said party in very vehement sort denied the speaking of any such words, and said, that because of controversy with them, they did bear him malice; I thought it my duty in this wise to certify your honour thereof, that such further order might be taken with him as to your wisdom shall seem convenient. And so I humbly commend your good lordship to the protection of Almighty God. From Whitburne, the 4th of October, 1590.

Your honour's to command,
Harb. Hereford.

Number XIV.

17 *Mémoire à monseigneur le grand tresorier, pour Geneve. A paper following so endorsed was drawn up by Le Lect, agent here for Geneva; shewing their present miserable condition, and craving his interest with the queen on their behalf.*

Monsegneur,

JE n'insisteray point à vous représenter le pauvre estat de la ville de Geneve, ni les dangers et necessitez qui l'environnent: lesquelles vous avez peu voir par les lettres de mes superieurs; et qui est assez notoire à un chacun, &c. *To this tenor in English;*

That he would not insist to represent to him the poor estate of the town of Geneva, nor the dangers and necessities that compassed them about; the which he had seen a little by the letters of his superiors, and which was sufficiently notorious to every one. But he should beg him only in all humility and reverence, and pursuing the new

charge which he had from them, as he [the lord treasurer] had seen by the same letters, that he would please to make them finally perceive and experiment the effects of his zeal and compassion, favouring them (against their malice) toward her majesty. So that it might be her good pleasure to succour them with some portion of her good means. He proceeded; ANNO 1590.

My lord, you see us before your eyes, a church none of the least signalized, and of importance, and which hath always been very affectionate towards this realm, to sustain for fourteen months intire God's two most terrible scourges, war and famine; having to do with the most powerful and obstinate enemies of the religion, the king of Spain and the duke of Savoy; except that they might not yet any ways perceive the issue of such assaults; which yet now began again more than ever.

In the midst of which, the hope which comforts and relieves my superiors and all our people, is the assistance of her majesty and this realm; which they wait for from day to day, not seeing to shine any appearance of comfort, neither from France, nor from Swisse, nor elsewhere.

In the mean time, my lord, I am in this realm seven months with so little fruit of my solicitation, and daily pains of body and mind, [a collection was granted for them February last; and the governors of Geneva, in a letter dated that month to the treasurer, did thank him for the same, as Le Lect had signified to them. But it seems the collection was not yet finished,] that I know no more to whom I may turn; being in truth such delays did not proceed (as he proceeded) from a disfavour or want of good affection of her majesty, or of the good will of her council towards their poor town; not knowing nevertheless to whom to attribute the causes of it. That his lordship saw, that poor Geneva had not been preserved, and subsisted to that present, but by an extraordinary, miraculous assistance of God, and 18
against all human appearance. Yet his superiors, through extreme want of money, whereof they were exhausted, were constrained to keep together their soldiers, and to keep

ANNO 1590. themselves close within their walls. And that the same almighty power and mercy of God could save them immediately without man. But his [the lord treasurer's] prudence might easily judge how long it would be easy in human appearance for the enemy to oppress them; having also yet more forts and garrisons in one or two places near them. By means whereof it fell out (alas!) that they attacked them at their gates.

It remained, that in all appearance her majesty would more easily send them succour than they could ask it, since the war was made and conducted principally by the king of Spain and by his expenses; that is, by the capital enemy of this realm [of England.] Who being employed and detained thereabouts, [at Geneva,] and not being able to prevail over their weakness, without doubt he should not be able so easily to disquiet her said majesty in the Low Countries, nor in other places. That they knew the charges of her majesty, [*mere nourrice*,] the mother nurse of the church, both near and far off. They knew also the ancient obligation which they owed her. But extreme necessity compelled them to implore again once more her aid, and not such or so large as might bring any prejudice or discommodity to the rest of her affairs upon all this happy peace which it had pleased God to give her. In sum, it lay in the power and good-will of her majesty to save, by a moderate beneficence, a city and church, by the loss and ruin whereof she would receive great displeasure, and France and other churches no little damage like to come. And, in a word, they alleged the most strait and sacred tie of religion and Christian charity, which could not be frustrate of blessing in respect of God, and perpetual praise in respect of men.

He added, [addressing to his lordship,] that every one knew how much of weight her majesty attributed to his good advice: and he hoped also so much of her kindness and clemency accustomed, and of that good affection which it pleased her to declare to him some months ago from her own mouth, towards their town, that she would not be in-

exorable to the most humble and most instant request towards their poor estate, so much afflicted, and as it were reduced to beggary. Nevertheless, if his lordship pleased also to give him [the agent] access to her said majesty, to represent to her matters further, as from his superiors, it would be a singular happiness and contentment; praying him, in the name of God, (of whom his lordship was an excellent servant in this realm,) not to hinder him in a cause so urgent, so pious, and so favourable; and if you would oblige more and more his superiors, and a whole Christian people, to acknowledge him for their father and benefactor; and to pray to God for his preservation, and to render themselves wholly at his service. From London, the 7th of June, 90. Subscribing, ANNO 1590.

Your most humble and most affectionate servant, Jacobus Lect, in the name of the senate and town of Geneva.

This Lect was a man of great learning and esteem at Geneva; a lawyer, an orator, and a poet; and died about 1612. *Spondan.* 19

Number XV.

The magistrates of Geneva to queen Elizabeth, thanking her for a collection sent to them, and craving further aid in their distress.

A la serenissime royne d'Angleterre, de France, et d'Irlande.

Madame,

NOUS avons entendu par les lettres du sieur Lect, nostre bien aymé frere, conseiller et deputé, tant le gracieux accueil, quil a pleu à votre majesté luy faire, qu'aussi l'ottroy d'une cuillette en vos pais. Et combien que nous aions eu desja paravant conçu certaine esperance de n'estre point esconduits d'une si pitoyable et Chrestienne princesse, toute-fois, madame, nous nous sentons tellement chargez et

ANNO 1590. des obligations ancienes et de la presente, que nous aymons mieux les avouer et recognoistre meurement en nos esprits, que d'entrer en une ennuyeuse prolixité pour les representer en papier. Or puis qu'ainsi est, que comme nous sçavons tresbien notre petitesse nous rend du tout incapables de faire jamais service à vostre majesté qui responde en quelque sorte à tant des bienfaicts, nos successeurs toutefois qui paraventure jouiront d'une meilleure condition, et ausquels nous en lairrons la memoire, se reputeront tres heureux, si Dieu leur faict la grace de pouvoir aumoins paier leur arerages des dettes crees par leurs devancieurs. Et nous aurestes avec tant d'autres qui près et loing seront temoins de vostre charité, ferons devoir de prier ce bon Dieu tout puissant d'accomplir et ratifier en vostre personne les promesses excellentes qu'il a faictes aux princes et princesses nourricieurs et nourrisses de son Eglise, comme aussi des longues années tout le monde voit clairement les rares et admirables benedictions qui accompagnent vostre couronne. Quant à nostre estat present, et à ce qui s'est passé depuis nos derniers, nous ne pourrions brievement le discourir; mais en escrivons plus amplement à nostre deputé avec charge d'en faire sçavoir les particularités à vostre majesté, s'il luy plaist s'en soucier. Bien dirons nous que si ville subsiste oncques par une misericorde de Dieu extraordinaire et totalement miraculeuse, c'est une povre Geneve. Ce qui comme certaines arres nous faict esperer, que non obstant l'obstination et orgueil de nos ennemis, et tant de playes en apparence incurables que nous sentons par cette longue et miserable guerre, nous pourrons encores cestefois eschapper l'extreme ruine que le Pape et ses adherens nous ont machiné depuis si long temps. Supplians vostre majesté comme tant la guerre que la disette de deniers, la famine et plusieurs autres povretés continuent, voire nous menacent de plus fort, vouloir aussi nous continuer de plus en plus vostre faveur et bonté, afin qu'au plustost, et le plus amplement que faire se pourra, nous puissions percevoir les fruicts de vostre beneficence tant attendus, et du

long sejour de nostre deputé par dela. Et en cest endroict nous prierons Dieu de tout nostre cœur qu'il luy plaise, ANNO 1590.

Madame, veiller toujours à vostre conservation, et affermir vos sceptres et couronnes de plus en plus. De Geneve ce viii. Feburier, 1590.

Par messeigneurs syndiques et conseil.

Les tres humbles et tres affectionnés serviteurs de vostre majesté.

Les syndiques et conseil de Geneve.

Number XVI.

Thomas Cartwright, the puritan, to the right worshipful Mr. Puckring, one of her majesty's sergeants at law; being sent for by a pursuivant, now deprived of his hospital at Warwick.

THAT having received Mrs. Puckring's letter upon Wednesday, I came no sooner with it, the cause hath been in part a strain in one of my legs, and in part the importunity of my friends, by the way, lying upon me to stay, until I had gotten some stability of my leg to travel with more commodity. And now I am come to town, that I bring not my letter myself, the cause is, for that being sent for by a pursuivant, I was loath to be attached before I had made my appearance without attachment, and that I might be mine own pursuivant, as it were; and partly also, because I was loath that your favour towards me should any way appear to any manner of hurt of yours, and no good of mine. And now, good sir, confessing myself greatly beholden unto you in my behalf, and in the behalf of my wife, my humble desire is, that I may yet further be beholden unto you in the behalf of the poor church of Warwick, that likely enough may be deprived of all manner of tolerable ministry, both for the good of your own family, which is great, and in regard of other poor souls there. That if the times will not bear us that are there present now, yet there may be such provided, as differing in judgment from

ANNO 1590. us, may notwithstanding, both in some good skill and care, proceed in the edification of the church without bitterness of spirit against other poor men, which are otherwise minded. Which I am the bolder to crave at your worship's hands, as I understand, (and was glad of,) that the town hath chosen you to the recordership, which may be singular means of doing much good unto the town. And among other, that good that it pleased you to talk with me of.

This I was bold to write, in fear of being severed from doing any more service there; and yet not aknown to myself of any breach of law, whereby I may be touched, saving only that I fear to be committed for refusing the oath *ex officio mero*. And thus I humbly commend you to the gracious keeping and blessing of God in Jesus Christ. May the 20th, anno 90.

Yours to command in the Lord,
T. Cartwright.

21 Number XVII.

Some account of the trial and condemnation of John Udal, a minister, concerned with Martin Marprelate in publishing several schismatical books. Taken from the MSS. of sergeant Puckring; before whom and baron Clark the said Udal was brought to his trial, at the assizes held at Surrey.

The indictment against John Udal, late of London, clerk.

DEUM præ oculis suis non habens, sed instigatione diabolica seductus, et seditiose intendens et machinans ad rebellionem movend. et suscitand. infra hoc regnum, &c. ult. die Octobris, anno regni dict. dnæ regin. 30, at East-Mouldsey; then and there set forth, in English, a certain wicked, scandalous, and seditious book, entitled, *A demonstration of the truth of that discipline which Christ hath prescribed in his word for the government of the church*, &c. in all tymes and places, until the end of the world.

The passages alleged against him in this indictment,

found in it, were these: "Who can, without blushing, "deny you [speaking to the bishops] to be the cause of all "ungodliness? seeing that government is that which giveth "leave unto a man to be any thing save a sound Christian, "in retaining that popish hierarchy first reigning in the "midst of the mystery of iniquity, and that filthy sink of "the canon law, which was invented and patched together "for the confirming and increasing of the kingdom of "Antichrist; *ad magnum scandalum dict. dnæ. reginæ, et "subversionem legum hujus regni, et incitationem rebel-"lionis infra hoc regnum Angl. contra pacem et in con-"temptum ejusd. dnæ, reginæ nunc, coron. et dignita-"tem suas, et contra formam statuti, in hujusmodi casu "ordinat. et provis.*" ANNO 1590.

Number XVIII.

Articles delivered to the judges by Mr. Udal, shewing reasons why they should not proceed in judgment against him, notwithstanding the verdict given against him. This paper consisteth of nine articles.

I. IT seemeth my cause is not esteemed felony by the judges of the land, seeing they do usually sit in the high commission court, where the printing and dispersing of the same, or such like books, are usually inquired after, as transgressions of another nature.

II. No judgment by law ought to be given in case of fe- 22
lony, but upon a party first found guilty thereof by verdict of twelve men. But I am not so. For proof whereof I pray you it may be remembered, that your lordships gave the jury in issue only in trial of the fact, whether I were author of such a book, and freed them of inquiring of the intent; without which there is no felony.

III. I humbly pray you to call to mind by what means the jury was drawn to give that verdict they did. Whether they were left wholly to their own consciences, or were wrought unto it, partly by promise; assuring, that it should

ANNO 1590. be no further danger to me, but tend to my good; and partly by fear, as it appeareth in that it hath been occasion of grief unto some of them ever since. And then I pray you to consider, whether upon such verdict drawn from twelve simple men, Christian judges, in a good conscience, may proceed to the sentence of death.

IV. In case the verdict were never so free, yet your lordships (being men of knowledge and wisdom) are to consider whether the statute whereupon I am indicted do agree to my case in the true meaning of it, there being nothing in the book spoken of her majesty's person but in duty and honour; and whether that drawing of it from her royal person to the BB. [bishops,] as being a part of her body politic, be not a violent depraving and wresting of the statute. Which if it be, you, being Christian judges, cannot in any good conscience, upon such a ground, proceed to sentence, contrary to your own knowledge.

V. But if the statute be to be taken so as it is urged, it ought to be considered, that without malicious intent against her majesty's person the statute itself maketh no act forbidden by it to be felony. Wherein I appeal first to God, and then to all men who have seen the whole course of my life; and to your lordships' own consciences. Wherein I pray you to examine yourselves in the sight of God, whether, either by yourselves or by the just report of any others, you can find me guilty of any act in all my life that savoured of any malice or malicious intent against her majesty, or of any other behaviour, than standeth with the allegiance and duty of a most dutiful and Christian subject. Of which malice, if your consciences clear me before God, the act wherewith I am charged not being felony without such an intent, I hope you consider that you cannot with a good conscience proceed to judgment.

VI. Yet in case the statute and intent thereof were such as it is said, in case of life the evidence ought to be pregnant; and all living witnesses, I am sure by the word of God, (and I trust also by the laws of the land,) were to be produced face to face, to charge me. But I have no such

against me, neither any other things, saving only the papers and reports of depositions taken by ecclesiastical commissioners and others. The which kind of proofs the judges cast away in case of lands, and by no means allow to be sufficient. And therefore are much less to be allowed in a case of life. The which being so, your lordships ought to have a consideration, that upon so weak evidence sentence of death be not pronounced. ANNO 1590.

VII. But if the same that hath been given in for evi- 23
dence by writing had been testified by men living, standing out in the presence of the court, and of me accused, I trust your lordships will consider, that none of the evidences do directly prove me to be the author of the book in question. Which, as it was, hath little force in it. As appeareth by this, that the author of the chief testimony is so grieved, that he is ashamed to come where he is known. Wherefore howsoever the jury hath not discerned thereof, yet you, being men of skill and understanding, are to have regard of it; and not upon so weak and impertinent proofs to proceed to judgment of death.

VIII. If all these things were such as in this case they might be, yet your lordships are to consider, (supposing me to be the [author] of the book in question,) that the said book, for the substance of it, containeth nothing but that which is taught and believed to be a part of the gospel of Christ by all the best reformed churches in Europe. Wherein nothing being diverse from them, I cannot be condemned for it without condemning in me all such nations and churches as hold the same doctrine. In which if there be no error in them, the offence can only be in some circumstance and manner of writing: the which some may think worthy an admonition; some, more severe, worthy correction or amercement. The sharpest cannot judge it to deserve more than some short time of imprisonment. But death for an error of such a kind, in terms and words not altogether dutiful, of certain BB. [bishops,] cannot but be extreme cruelty. The which seeing it ought to be far from any Christian man that hath the bowels of Christ in him,

ANNO 1590. surely Christian judges professing the gospel, for a service of the gospel, ought not to proceed against one that hath endeavoured to shew himself a dutiful subject and faithful minister of the gospel, to give sentence of death.

IX. My offence not being aggravated, but remaining as it was the last assizes, when my submission was accepted, and judgment thereupon stayed, I trust your favour will be the same towards me now also, seeing I am ready to do the like.

If all this prevail not, yet my Redeemer liveth, to whom I commend myself, and say as sometime Jeremiah said in a case not much unlike; *Behold I am in your hands to do with me whatsoever seemeth good unto you. But know you this, that if you put me to death, you shall bring innocent blood upon your own heads, and upon the land.* As the blood of Abel, so the blood of Udal will cry to God with a loud voice; and the righteous Judge of the land will require it at the hands of all that shall be guilty of it.

24 Number XIX.

Udal was cast, but not condemned in the summer assizes, anno 1590; *but in the Lent assizes after, he was; his submission not being sufficient. The sentence was forborne after he was found guilty in the summer assizes by favour, because he promised to make a submission. And a form of submission was sent November* 18, 1590, *to Mr. Baron Clark and Sergeant Puckring. And this in these words.*

Udal's submission.

Most gracious sovereign,

THE present lamentable estate wherein I stand, having against me the verdict of twelve men, that have found me guilty in their conscience of such matters, as the law having its course, I am to die for it; I most humbly prostrate myself at your majesty's feet, submitting myself in most humble manner, as becometh a dutiful subject, to such order as

it shall please your highness to appoint; to whom God hath given so high and sovereign a power as is able both to kill and to quicken, to bring to the gates of death, and to cause to return from thence to the comfort of life again. Before whom standing thus convict, I am not now to plead mine innocency, although I most humbly desire it may not offend your excellent majesty that I protest of the truth. Whereof I call God to witness, who knoweth the secrets of all hearts, and will judge both the quick and dead, that I have been always, not only far from any malice to your majesty's royal state and person, but so dutifully affected towards both, in conscience of the ordinance of God, and in regard of many benefits, especially of the true knowledge of God, which I have attained unto under your gracious and happy government; that I was always ready by all means, and with the loss of my life, if it had been needful, to defend and maintain the same; and from my heart have instructed all those to whom my ministry appertained in like dutiful love and obedience. ANNO 1590.

But this defence being taken from me by course of law, and such proceedings as have passed against me, I do now only fly to your majesty's gracious mercy; most humbly desiring your highness, of your merciful compassion, to grant me your gracious pardon, for remitting both the offence and the punishment which is now laid upon me. Other hope than this I have none, but the trust I have in God according to his promises, that your majesty, by a special gift of God, is gracious and merciful, and hath vouchsafed to shew mercy even to such as were not only by imputation of law, but indeed malicious and mortal enemies unto your highness; and therefore I hope that the same goodness of so princely a nature may be moved, and will shew forth itself in like gracious compassion on my behalf. Which gracious pardon, upon my knees, I most humbly crave of your excellent majesty to grant unto me. By which special favour being raised as from the dead, I promise and vow to lead the rest of my life in all humble and dutiful obedience unto your majesty; praying continually

ANNO 1590. for the preservation of your highness's precious life and happy government; to the honour of Almighty God, and the comfort of all obedient and dutiful subjects.

In another form of submission there was this material clause added; (otherwise agreeing in substance with this;) *being found guilty by verdict to be the author of a book entitled,* The demonstration of discipline, &c. *and being, without your gracious pardon, to die for the same.*

Number XX.

Sentence was given upon Udal, February , 1590, being in the Lent-assizes. After which sergeant Puckring wrote this letter to the lord chancellor Hatton about their proceedings with him at the Lent-assizes.

Right honourable,

IT was late on Saturday before it came to the time we were to give judgment on the prisoners. So as I could not before this make certificate of our proceedings. According as we were directed, we sent upon Thursday in the afternoon by sir William More, Mr. Dr. Forth, and Mr. Parker, unto Mr. Udal the submission prescribed, for him to consider of, and caused those sent in private to deal with him in the same. We also caused the same submission to be left with him all night, further for him to consider of. And on Friday forenoon we sent sir Will. More and Mr. Boyes, justices of peace, (Mr. Forth and Mr. Parker being absent,) further to persuade with him, and to bring his answer. But none of these prevailing with him, ourselves, on that Friday in the afternoon sent for him, and conferred with him privately by the space of an hour, (sir Will. More being only present;) and not prevailing with him to the form of submission prescribed, nor to the like effect, we willed him to write what manner of submission himself best liked to make. Whereupon he hath wrote to us a manner of submission, such as we not allowing of, (the copy whereof here enclosed I send to your lordship,) we after, on the Sa-

turday in the afternoon, when we came to call the prisoners to judgment, called him among the rest, asking him what he could say why judgment should not be given: he spent an hour with us, debating to and fro; but no matter yielded unto for any submission, such as we could like of, (albeit in that public place we moved him thereunto.) We therefore proceeded, and gave sentence against him; and commanding openly of execution of all that were adjudged, (he being one.) But in private this morning we commanded the respite of his execution, (as by Mr. Dr. Bankrot's [Bancroft's] letter I understand your honour's pleasure was we should,) till her majesty might understand of these our proceedings, and her highness further pleasure known. ANNO 1590. 26

And to end, we have, as was appointed, written all this to my lord chamberlain, and sent our required submission, and also his last offered submission, enclosed in that letter, that her majesty may be informed of the same; and have sent the same to the under-sheriff of Surrey, ourselves being presently going towards Sussex: otherwise we should ourselves have waited on your honour with the same, and to have made relation at large of all the manner of our and his dealings and speeches together, which were too large to write.

At the last, when we charged him, that he had written in his petition to her majesty, that he did submit himself to such order as it should please her highness to appoint, and now by us her highness's justices of assize that manner of submission which we prescribed him was thought meet to be required of him for her highness; he answered, that those words in his said petition he meant only as to abide her order for life or death, as her majesty should appoint, and not otherwise to yield to any thing that might concern him in conscience in that doctrine which he had taught, as by the words before and after the sentence, he said, it might be so understood. But offered in his last speech that that submission which he had made to her majesty, and any other submission that he had made, he would perform.

ANNO 1590. Marry, he and we did differ what was the manner of the submission he had made by words at Croyden assize.

So as, my very good lord, we are not able to get of him such a submission as was prescribed for him to make, nor to like effect, we have proceeded as aforesaid; leaving him now at her majesty's pleasure. This Sunday morning, the 21st of Feb. 1590.

Number XXI.

The copy of the submission required by the judges, Feb. , to be made by Udal.

I JOH. UDAL have been heretofore by due course of law convicted of felony for penning or setting forth a certain book, called, *The demonstration of discipline.* Wherein false, slanderous, and seditious matters are contained against her majesty's prerogative royal, her crown and dignity, and against the laws and government ecclesiastical and temporal by law under her highness, and tending to the erecting of a new form of government, contrary to her said laws. All which points I do now, by the grace of God, perceive to be very dangerous to the peace of this realm and church, seditious in the commonwealth, and infinitely offensive to the queen's most excellent majesty. So as
27 thereby I now seeing the grievousness of mine offence, do most humbly, on my knees, before and in this presence, submit myself to the mercy of her highness; being most sorry, that so deeply and worthily I have incurred her majesty's indignation against me. Promising, if it shall please God to move her royal heart to have compassion on me, a most sorrowful, convicted person, that I will for ever hereafter forsake all such undutiful and dangerous courses, and demean myself dutifully and peaceably. For I do acknowledge them to be both lawful and godly, and to be obeyed by every faithful subject.

ANNO 1590.

Number XXII.

The last offered submission of Udal, Febr. 19, 1590.

CONCERNING the book, whereof I was by due course of law convicted, by referring myself to the trial of the law, and for that by the verdict of twelve men I am found to be author of it; for which cause an humble submission is worthily required and offered of me: although I cannot disavow the cause and substance of the doctrine debated in it, which I must needs acknowledge to be holy, and (so far as I conceive of it) agreeable to the word of God, yet I confess the manner of writing of it is such in some part as may worthily be blamed, and might provoke her majesty's just indignation therein. Wherefore the trial of the law imputing unto me all such defaults as are in that book, and laying the punishment of the same in most grievous manner upon me, as my most humble suit to her most excellent majesty is, that her mercy and gracious pardon may free me from the guilt and offence, which the said trial of the law hath cast upon me; and further of her great clemency to restore me to the comfort of my life and liberty; so do I promise, in all humble submission to God and her majesty, to carry myself in the whole course of my life in such humble and dutiful obedience as shall befit a minister of the gospel and dutiful subject, fervently and continually praying for the good preservation of her highness's precious life and happy government, to the honour of God, and comfort of her loyal and dutiful subjects.

Number XXIII.

Dr. Bancroft, chaplain to the lord chancellor, to Mr. Sergeant Puckring, to stay execution of Udal.

To the rt. worshipful Mr. Sergeant Puckring, justice of assize in the county of Surrey.

Sir,

MY lord's [lord chancellor Hatton] advice is, that, if Mr.

ANNO 1590. Udal's submission do not satisfy you, that you should proceed to judgment. But that you should stay his execution: 28 and forthwith this day to write to Mr. Vice-chamberlain [sir Tho. Heneage] of his obstinacy, desiring him to inform her majesty of it, and to know her pleasure for the execution, whether it shall be further stayed, &c. And so in haste I take my leave. At Ely-house, this 20th of February, 1590.

[*This following enclosed, in the same hand.*]

You must then command execution. And after defer the same, until her majesty's pleasure be known.

Number XXIV.

Udal to sergeant Puckring, after his return from the assizes to his prison in the White Lion, November 11, 1590. *In which letter may be observed his lofty and unrelenting behaviour: his justifying of his innocency: his calling for execution, or deliverance from his imprisonment. Chargeth sin upon his judge: resenteth the disgrace that was done him; and such like.*

AFTER that it pleased God (as I trust, for my good) to return me from the assizes unto the prison, loaden with such a burden as never was, (so far as I can learn,) in the time of the gospel, by Christian magistrates, for such a cause, laid upon any minister of the word; I settled myself unto my former condition of imprisonment, waiting for that issue (as I do yet, and I trust to do ever) which it shall please the Lord to give thereunto: hoping that your lordship and your associate, [baron Clark,] by whom so deep disgrace was inflicted upon me, would have been the means to have wrought my release. But when I heard of those speeches which each of you uttered in several places of public judgment, tending further to my disgrace than I (through God's mercy towards me) gave any cause of; and more to the delighting of yourselves in the court holden against me, than (if you rightly esteem of it) you had just occasion, I persuaded myself rather to look for perpetual imprison-

ment, or other further severity, than any sense of relief by your means. ANNO 1590.

Yet at length I have resolved with myself (seeing your lordships do profess the same religion whereof I have been a teacher) to call to your remembrance my hard estate, the discourse whereof I pray you to accept, as proceeding from him that wisheth so well unto you as to his own soul. I need not offer unto your lordship's consideration into what miserable estate I am brought, not only by being deprived of that living, whereby myself, my wife, and children, should have been maintained, and spending of that little substance which God had given me, in this tedious state of imprisonment; but also in the exposing of me and them unto utter beggary in the time to come. Only I pray you to call to mind in your private meditations, (and that in the presence of God,) by what course this misery was enforced upon me. 29 And if you find by due consideration, that I am worthy to receive (from the sentence of upright justice) the penalty which I do at present undergo, I pray you to hasten the execution of the same. For it were better for me to die than to live in this case; being irksome to myself, grievous to my friends, chargeable unto many, and profitable unto none. But if it appear, (as I hope your conscience will testify,) that no malice against her majesty can possibly be in me, being of the same religion that her highness professeth and maintaineth, and praying daily for the increase of her grace's prosperity and happiness, both of soul and body, then do I humbly and heartily desire you to be a means that I may be released. So shall you give me just occasion, (which I hope to do, howsoever it fall out,) not only to forget that hard opinion conceived of your courses against me, but also to pray heartily unto God to bury the same, with the rest of your sins, in the grave of his Son Christ Jesus. Thus trusting to receive the comfortable effect hereof, which I, minister of the gospel, have just cause to look for from the hands of a Christian magistrate, I humbly take my leave. From the White Lion, Nov. 11.

Yours to command, in the Lord Jesus Christ,

Jo. Udal, prisoner.

ANNO 1590.

Number XXV.

November 18 *following, Udal writ both to the baron and the sergeant: who had told him that upon his submission they were willing to become a means to her majesty for his pardon. Hereupon he sent his letter;*

IN as humble and dutiful a manner (he said) as he was able to express it: praying their honours' favourable mediation unto her, that he might be discharged of the miseries and dangers wherein he was.

Nov. 25, he writ to them both again, upon their sending to him a messenger, that his former submission did not content them: whereupon he had drawn another. Which albeit, he said, it did not in so many words satisfy their lordships, as peradventure they desired, yet he humbly prayed them to be contented therewith, seeing it was both as much as he could yield, and as he trusted her right excellent majesty would lay upon him. He trusted that they would favourably accept of that his last and furthest relenting, and to esteem of him, as one that had a care (whatsoever became of his outward state) to keep a good conscience even unto his death.

Jan. 1, 1590, Udal writ yet another letter to the sergeant, one of the justices of the assize of Surrey; to vouchsafe him his lawful favour in a matter that might be very comfortable unto him. That since God had pleased so to dispose of him, that he had been almost a year in prison, and was like, for any thing that he could discern, still so to continue; that he found such a sickness of body approaching upon him by reason of corrupt air, and want of exercise, as must needs endanger, if not take away his life; unless it would please God to move his lordship with compassion towards him.

And besides, that he had been so long deprived of the holy exercises of religion, as he found himself much vexed and grieved, and his soul to hunger after the same, as the hunted hart desired the water-brooks: wishing that some corner of the church were in his prison; and esteeming, with the prophet David, the bird happy that built in the

roof of that place, where they might hear the voice of God sounding in the ears, and his praises coming with so holy a harmony from their mouths. In regard whereof he craved of his lordship to grant him thus much favour, that he might go with his keeper to the sermons within the borough, for the comfort of his soul, and into the fields to take the air, for the relief of his body. ANNO 1590.

Number XXVI.

Mr. Udal's belief. Drawn up to pacify the queen, who conceived an high displeasure against him, and such as he; in asserting that the prince had nothing to do in spiritual matters, and that she was subject to their censures. Therefore in this paper he represents himself as favourably as he could with respect to his subjection to her, or the temporal magistrate.

" I DO believe, and have often preached, that the church " of England is a part of the true visible church of Christ." —This published in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, under the year 1591, page 375.

Number XXVII.

Tho. Cartwright to the lord treasurer Burghley, June 23, 1590, concerning the bad estate of his hospital at Warwick, upon the death of the earl of Leicester, the founder. Writ from London.

Rt. honourable, and my singular good lord;

I MAKE conscience of troubling your lordship with particular causes, whose strength of body and mind (for longer continuance among us) I could desire were consecrated to the general and state causes of the whole realm; yet the case I bring before you pressing so greatly, and your honour being, as I am informed, the only person by whose means relief may be obtained, I am even as it were con-

ANNO 1590. strainedly drawn, in most humble suit to appear before your honour at this time, first and principally in behalf of the poor hospital at Warwick; and after, in the second place, in mine own behalf.

31 The cause, if it please your lordship, is as followeth: The rt. honourable the earl of Leicester endued the hospital in Warwick with 200*l.* by year, whereof 150*l.* are to the use of the twelve poor men, and the other fifty for the stipend of the master, which he requireth to be a preacher. For performing whereof he giveth certain lands in Warwick and Lancaster shires[a], whose rents, raised unto the highest, amount unto that sum, and no more. These lands, about a three years before his death, he conveyed by deed to his hospital; which, because it was not enrolled within the year, according to trust, he put in one Mr. Sutton, from Lincoln; which was esteemed, in strict construction of law, insufficient. Whereupon the house was compelled to take a second grant of the like honourable earl of Warwick, or of his heir.

Further, the earl of Leicester, over and above the other stipend of the master, gave me, by letters patent, other 50*l.* during my life; not charged indeed out of any certain lands, but payable by him and his heirs, receivers general. Which, notwithstanding, is agreed by the learned in the laws of the land to be good as long as the heir hath assets, or otherwise wheresoever the land should become, if I had brought a writ of *annuity* at any time before the lands had come into the hand of a stranger: which I might indeed have done, (the rent being one whole year behind,) but that it was not meet for me, a man of so low degree, to call such honourable persons into question of law, especially such as I was so greatly bound unto.

By the earl and his heirs.

Now it is said constantly, that her majesty's *extent* shall go forth upon all the lands that the earl of Leicester was seized of, either at the time of his death, or in the 24th year of her majesty's reign. Whereupon not my stipend only

[a] Warwic. Shuton. Napton parsonage. Hampton parsonage. Lanc. Woleston, Puleston, tithes. Wroteby. *Lord Treasurer.*

will fall, but, which is more lamentable, the whole college of his twelve poor, old, impotent men, for the present, shall be constrained to beg; and for the time to come shall be in danger to be utterly scattered and overthrown. ANNO 1590.

Besides this, considering that the hospital cannot obtain of the countess of Leicester any whit of the legacy of 200*l.* which the earl of Leicester devised by will in the name of a stock unto it, the master is constrained to lay forth the charges of one half year, before he receive one penny of the rent appointed unto his hospital's maintenance. All which he should liese, if the *extent* should lie upon all the earl's lands without exception, before the half year's rent be due.

Hitherto also belongeth, (the rather to move commiseration towards the hospital,) that of the 200*l.* of yearly rent, 20*l.* have been demanded from the death of the earl of Leicester by the unjust dealing of one Mr. Ugnol, a rich citizen of London, and one, who comparing his great wealth with the extreme poverty of the hospital, thinketh to defraud the hospital of that 20*l.* for ever.

I speak not here of my continual labours and suits in the behalf of the hospital, ever sithence the death of the earl of Leicester; whereby, contrary to my disposition and bringing up, I have been driven to give attendance here at London in the term-time, and contrary to that my poor 32
state doth afford, I have been constrained to be at great charges for the hospital. And for to make me satisfaction again, having no manner of stock. Which truly, but for the continuance of so good a work to posterity, and duty toward the deceased lord, that the good work he honourably and faithfully proposed might not be dispurposed, I would never have endured until this time. I pass by also, that the living my lord of Leicester took me from, to bring me to this, was for profit much better, in regard of the charges that this place casteth upon me, which the other did not.

Having thus nakedly laid down the cause before the eyes of your honourable compassion, besides my most humble suit only in behalf of the poor, and of myself, I mean not

ANNO 1590. to labour your lordship's affections with such reasons, as the pitifulness of the cause will yield; as that which might be offensive to your honour, because of other your most weighty affairs; and hinder us also, while the reasons by us alleged would be short of that which your lordship of your own accord will conceive for us, better than we can lay down for ourselves, &c. London, the 23d of June, ann. Dom. 1590.

Your honour's humbly to command,

Tho. Cartwright.

Number XXVIII.

The lord treasurer Burghley to the lord chancellor of Scotland, lord Maitland; to persuade the king his master to suppress the professed enemies of the gospel in his kingdom, and the adversaries of the common amity. This letter was occasioned by commendations brought to him by the earl of Worcester, sent in the year 1590 *ambassador to that king, to congratulate his marriage; and withal to put him in mind betimes to suppress the popish faction, which grew strong in Scotland.*

My very good lord,

THERE are too manifest causes to move me to write to you in all kind manner, as every one of them alone is sufficient to me to write, and your lordship to receive the same in friendly sort. The old familiar acquaintance, in a very strict amity with your elder brother, the young laird Lethington, he a secretary to that crown, and I then to this crown, was so beneficial to both these crowns, by restoring them by our ministry into such a brotherly peace as never had been in many hundred years before; as the memory of the same is very agreeable to survive towards you his bro-
33 ther and a secretary by office, as he was, though now also placed in an office, being chancellor, which I account the principal secretary of that realm.

Next to this, the amity professed and accorded by treaty between the princes of both these realms, require conjunc-

tion of good-will in such ministers as are known to have credit with their superiors. Wherein, as I know you are with the king almost the only counsellor for managing of those affairs, so, without presumption, I may affirm, that I find myself, with some others interested, to be acquainted with the affairs of this realm: and in that respect I am the more willing to have intelligence with you for the furtherance and continuance of our sovereign's amity. ANNO 1590.

And to add some more cause of my present writing, by receiving of your kind letter at the hand of sir John Carmichel, and by report of the earl of Worcester of your kind acceptance of my commendations sent to you by his lordship, I am to render your lordship thanks for the same. And to end our letter with that which might be the ground-plat of a long letter, I do in God's name, and for the surety of your good king, require your lordship to advance the good intention of the king, testified by his majesty to the earl of Worcester, for the suppressing of the professed enemies of the gospel, by name Jesuits and seminaries, and the civil adversaries to the common amity, by name Spanish conspirators. And these being thoroughly suppressed, the king shall prosper in the sight of Almighty God, and shall be beloved and honoured of all honest men in the whole island. And joining in this manner of accord with the Christian princes that profess the gospel, he shall be feared as a potent prince of the adversaries, I mean papists: who truly, my lord, I know, being straitly pursued, are but cowards, like their father the pild priest at Rome. And in this act *facies hominis* will do in your young lusty king *facies leonis*. And so I leave all the rest that I might write of this argument to the bearer, sir John Carmichel, one very ready to serve with your lordship in this action, and one that honoureth and esteemeth your lordship worthy the place which you hold.

ANNO 1590.

Number XXIX.

34 *The lord treasurer Burghley to count Figleazzi, with the duke of Florence; that he would acquaint the duke with the queen's kind acceptance of his good-will towards her, and in his offer to mediate a peace between her and Spain: and the cause of contention between her and the king of Spain stated at large. Occasioned by a letter sent to secretary Walsingham, since deceased.*

Sir,

I CANNOT otherwise think, but you have afore this time heard, or else I am sure you shall hear before this letter can come to your hands, of the death of Mr. Secretary Walsingham; who left this world the 6th of April, as we account by ancient custom. Whereby, though he hath gained a better state, as I am fully persuaded, for his soul in heaven, yet the queen's majesty and her realms, and I and others, his particular friends, have had a great loss for the public use of his good, painful, and long services, and for the private comfort I had by his mutual friendship. But since it hath so pleased God, we now that are left in this vale of earthly troubles are to employ ourselves to remedy the loss, by applying ourselves to supply such defects as the loss of him hath brought; and for grief of the want of him that is dead, not to neglect actions meet for us, whom God permitteth still to live.

Wherefore, upon this action, the queen's majesty hath recommended to me the consideration of such things as have passed between you and him divers months past. And for that purpose I have gathered together such letters as of late time have been sent from you to the said master secretary, and of such minutes as have been sent from him to you. And perusing of such as were found extant, and making her majesty acquainted therewith, (for in truth, Mr. Secretary had before his death always from time to time imparted all that passed between you) but yet since his death some of your letters directed to him were brought to me, by means of Philip Corsini, an honest merchant, and a du-

tiful subject to the great duke. Whereof I have also made her majesty privy. ANNO 1590.

And upon consideration of all things contained in these letters that passed between you and him, her majesty hath thought it very meet, yea, necessary, for the first, that the great duke should understand how thankfully her majesty accepteth his sincere and friendly disposition towards her and her state; and also that the intelligences begun between you and Mr. Secretary should not be let fall or broken off by his death, but continued by the interposition of me, being of her council, of her affairs, and matters of state of longest continuance here, and also of inward acquaintance with the said Mr. Secretary in all his public actions, since he came first to public service. And therefore by commandment of her majesty, I do require you to give the grand duke knowledge, that her majesty hath conceived of long time very good opinion first of the grand duke his father, of noble memory, as one that always by his friendly demonstrations deserved her majesty's reciproke good-will to him and his noble family. Which mutual good-will now the present duke hath also not only continued, but, as it appeareth manifestly by sundry your letters, hath sought to increase. And therefore her majesty requests his excellency, that he would make such account of her majesty's good-will and honourable opinion of him as she meaneth to deserve upon any first occasion that may be offered to be shewed by her towards him.

And where it appeareth that he hath had an earnest disposition to be a mediator, to compound the differences between her majesty and the king of Spain, she doth allow the same in him, as an office very Christian and honourable: and of her own part she never hath shewed any repugnancy to incline thereto; as well for the quietness of Christian peace, as for the avoiding of much Christian blood, and the ruin of the subjects of both their dominions. But yet her majesty wisheth that the grand duke might understand (which cannot be expressed in one letter) how long her majesty hath been urged to her long continuance of

ANNO 1590. defensible forces for the safety, not only of her own life, (which she esteemeth not so much as the state of her kingdom and faithful subjects,) but for preservation of her noble crown, and the lives and liberties of her people. Against the which the king of Spain hath ever almost, since God called her to this crown, (being now almost thirty-two years,) moved matters, partly by practice of his ministers within this realm, and sustentation of secret rebellious actions within her realm against her person; partly by open hostilities with pretence to conquer her dominions. For withstanding whereof, when her often ambassadors, by persons of great honour sent into Spain divers years, could not prevail to move him to renew the form of the ancient amity that had been aforetime between their two fathers, the emperor Charles V. and king Henry VIII. both of most noble memory, with offer on her part to live to perfect amity with him, and in peace with all his subjects; her majesty was moved by the law of nature, and according to the power that God had given her, to defend her kingdom and subjects, finding no other remedy, to make all preparations requisite to be able to defend herself and countries. As hitherto God hath blessed her actions in the sight of the world, rather in a sort miraculous, as by his divine favour, than natural by the work of men's hand, if the forces, riches, greatness of countries, and multitudes of subjects at his commandment, out of very many his kingdoms and dominions, be compared with her majesty's small portions of her kingdoms of England and Ireland, two small isles.

And howsoever her majesty's actions, by having some of her forces in the Low Countries, are calumniated on the king of Spain's part, yet her majesty doubteth not, but all such as are wise in matters political, and are not blinded with partial affection, will judge her majesty's actions in
36 that behalf most necessary, and therefore not unjust. In one action both to keep her enemy out of her own country, and to succour her neighbours, being by tyranny oppressed; as by ancient alliances and compacts, not only with her majesty, as the supreme prince of this crown, but with her

subjects, and most of her particular cities, who are especially bound to the city and every town of the Low Countries, by mutual solemn bonds remaining in force, to maintain them in their freedoms and liberties. As also the like may be truly said for defence of her actions in suffering her subjects, having been spoiled of their ships and goods in Spain, in times of all outward appearance of free traffick, to be revenged upon the seas against the subjects of the king of Spain, as well in the continent countries as in the islands. ANNO 1590.

But for a full satisfaction in defence of her majesty's intention to prove her Christian disposition to desire peace, what can be of more force than this, which is most true, and publicly known, that she refused not in the year 1588, now past, to send sundry noblemen of great birth, and of her council, to Flanders, to offer and to treat of peace with certain of the king's part. Where long time was first spent on the king of Spain's part, by delay of a sufficient commission, and of commissioners well authorized; and afterwards by other dilatory cavillations, during many months; until even when the king's commissioners were directed from Spain; and coming to some likelihood to conclude an accord, wherewith her majesty was very glad, the king of Spain's monstrous navy and great mighty army was come to the sea, and was come to the sea-coast in sight of the queen's commissioners, (that expected a conclusion of peace,) near Calais; ready there to have come and landed in England, if a navy, which her majesty had, far inferior to the Spanish, had not valiantly attempted to stay them from landing. And so, partly by the force thereof, and partly stricken with fear, the said mighty navy gave place; and was, partly by fire, and partly by the courage of the English navy, forced to flee away in all haste from the coast to the north of Scotland. And so they were led by God's mighty hand to their ruin, the west coast of Ireland; and by the savage people of that land spoiled, and very cruelly handled; whereof it is too well known in Spain what losses the said navy and army sustained, and what great number of prisoners came to the commandment of her majesty, both

ANNO 1590. in England and Ireland; and the same sent home into Spain upon small ransoms, without loss of their lives, although their set purpose was to have spared no man's life; no, not the life of old or young, nor of any sex, as they have confessed.

But of this matter I mind not to treat any longer in the body of a letter; neither meant I in the beginning of my letters to have treated hereof; but entering into some consideration how her majesty's actions are depraved by her rebels and her adversaries, and knowing how false the reports are made thereof, even by printing of public false libels, I could not stay my pen, being in the hand of one that in my heart and conscience do know how false the same are. But now to make an end hereof, leaving the consideration hereof to your judgment, either to keep the same to yourself, or to impart the same to the grand duke,
37 or to any other prince or person of public vocation, I do affirm unto you, on my honour, and in the faith of a Christian, that all that I have written hereof is true, and to be proved many ways for just and true.

Now followeth that which I am commanded to report to yourself, which is, that her majesty finding your private disposition to follow the natural affection of the grand duke, your lord, her majesty commandeth me to give you her hearty thanks, and assureth you, that following and furthering the grand duke's disposition, of his love and goodwill towards her majesty, you shall never find cause to repent yourself. And as for the matter of mine, to reduce her majesty and the king of Spain to accord and to live in peace, her majesty knowing how inculpable she is, either for any beginning or for continuing these troubles, she cannot devise how to reform her course; but as the king of Spain hath and shall shew himself either contented to live in peace, or to make proof of his great power by using that hostility against her majesty, her people, and countries, so she must and will be answerable to the one course or other; that is, most willingly to live in peace with the king, if he so will yield thereto; and if not, then she findeth the favour of God to be ready for maintenance of her rights, with such

powers as God hath given her: as she will never yield to his threatenings, nor, by God's grace, will be unready to defend herself and her dominions against the king of Spain, how mighty or strong soever he shall be by sea or land. And though this be her majesty's princely resolution, yet she will not refuse any friendly advice of so noble a prince as the grand duke is. But if he shall attempt by any means to become a mediator for peace between her majesty and the king of Spain, she will always incline to follow his advice, as of a person of state and dignity, knowing what belongeth to the honour and reputation of monarchs: among whom, although she is a woman, yet she esteemeth her honour as worthy to be regarded as the honour of any man, being an emperor or king. ANNO 1590.

When I had written thus far, and looked back to the quantity of the lines written, I began to mislike the length thereof, as not convenient for a letter; but considering how the matter led me to that length, being of that nature as I could have continued much longer therein, in respect of the multitude of writings published in sundry countries by men, partly malicious, partly ignorant of truth, to deprave and condemn her majesty's actions, necessarily and justly taken in hand, for defence both of her own person and country.—But this being my first letter to you, I do now rather choose to break off, and retain in silence a great deal of matter that might be revealed, than to breed loathsomeness or mislike, either in yourself by reading, or in the grand duke by your report; and do conclude as I began, to require you, that the grand duke may be most assured of her majesty's kind acceptation of his good-will, and that she can be well content to remit to his wisdom to deal between her and the king of Spain, to have all controversies cease, and to resort to love: but with condition of peace for themselves and their subjects, as their fathers of most noble memory did during their whole lives. Whereunto the queen's majesty will be found most ready to yield to 38
any reasonable conditions, so as the same may be treated upon with more respect of her honour than was used by

ANNO 1590. the treaty in Flanders, in summer 1588, when the king's navy came violently, and broke up the treaty in such sort as her majesty found herself thereby dishonourably used, although the goodness of God turned the same, by the destruction of the king's navy, to her good and honour.

Number XXX.

A certificate under the hands of several of the lords of their allowance of one Edg, an espial, employed into the camp of the duke of Parma, for intelligence. Drawn up by the pen of the lord Burghley. October 9, 1590.

WHEREAS John Edg, gentleman, in the county of Lancaster, serving the queen's majesty in Berghen op Zome, as a gentleman in the horse band of sir John Pooly, knt. hath offered, by such familiarity as he hath with some gentlemen, his countrymen, that do serve in some bands under the duke of Parma, to discover some things in the said duke's army profitable for her service, and there to perform some special service, allowable, and worthy of commendation and reward: and lest he might incur some danger or reproof for his familiar conversation with any of his said countrymen, he hath required us to allow of his offer, and to preserve his credit against such as might maliciously, or ignorantly, and for lack of knowledge of his good intent to do such good service to her majesty, condemn or reprove him:

We, to whom the said John Edg hath declared this his good intent and offer of service, do allow thereof. And if he shall, by his conversation with any his countrymen in the said duke's army or retinue, discover any thing worthy of knowledge, and shall perform any action laudable, and profitable for her majesty at any time, within the space of here after the date hereof, we will acquit him against any that shall accuse or reprove him for his absence from his place of service at Berghen, and for his familiarity and conversation with any of his countrymen, serving under

the duke of Parma. In witness whereof we have signed this writing with our hands, and are content that it shall remain secretly in the custody of sir Robert Sydney, governor of Flushing. ANNO 1590.

Number XXXI. 39

Richard Topclyff, a discoverer and taker up of popish seminaries, and other papists, his discourse of them in a letter sent to the lord treasurer; about the year 1590, *in this time of danger.*

SEEING it hath pleased you to use me heretofore as a watchman, and thereby am of some experience of the natures, properties, and subtle conditions of those unnatural subjects the papists, &c. He therefore sent a discourse to the said lord, entitled, *A simple opinion of a diligent scout or watchman in my country, suddenly done, as the time gives occasion, touching the most perilous and dangerous recusants and dissembling papists throughout England.*

First, he treats of the persons to be shut up, and of what sorts and degrees, in this time of danger now expected.

Secondly, where and how they are to be shut up and guarded.

For the first, I do perceive your lordship is very resolved to shut up under safeguard and keeping all the principal recusants within this realm, lest that (as traitorous priests have confessed) they should join with the catholic enemy; for so the enemy expecteth, or else he would never presume to come, especially, to invade. And the plain and bold papists do, both in their open confessions and in their secret speeches, avow so to do, whensoever they find fittest time.

But I know that there is a great danger in many others, who sometimes do come to the church, and yet be papists, both in their inward hearts and in their outward actions and conversations, refusing to receive the communion; and

ANNO 1590. in every thing else as ill as the worst. Of which there be also two sorts. The one goeth to the church for saving of the penalties of thirteen score pounds a year, yet his wife and whole family, or most of them, continue resolute recusants, and harbour traitors. The other sort go to the church because they may avoid suspicion of the magistrates the better; and is dispensed withal by some secret dispensation of a delegate, or such a great priest as hath episcopal authority, to the end they may the better, and with the less suspicion, serve the turn of their cause catholic, in receiving and harbouring the most notable priests and intelligencers, in consulting with them and others, in conveying to and from letters and advertisements; or, if they be either great of power, wit, knowledge, courage, or desperation, (termed *resolution* by father Parsons,) to serve the turn, any way, when their day of Jhesus cometh, as the traitors Jesuits call it, &c. Dr. Parry is my witness, taking the oath in the parliament-house. The traitorous dissimulation of that vile person is not forgotten, nor the memory of the friars; one being the death of the prince of Orange, and the other of the late French king.

There be also ladies, gentlewomen, as well married as widows, needful to be shut up, in effect, as much as men.
40 —And, though they cannot go to the field, and lie in camps, (for the sex and shame,) yet they want no desire nor malice, every one being furnished with a lusty priest harboured in her closet, who shall serve as her lieutenant, when that holy day of Jesus cometh. Or else she is prepared of a lusty catholic champion, servant, tenant, or neighbour, or son, for her purpose: command her purse, horse, armour, and tenant. And whether she be wife, widow, maid, or whatsoever, harbours, receives, and relieves priests and traitors fugitives, or else ready to assist foreign invasion.

And seeing far greater is the fury of a woman once resolved to evil, than the rage of a man, I humbly beseech your lordship, that that sex of women be not overlooked: the rather, seeing Gregory Martyn, the translator of the Testament, in his English book, entitled, *The treatise of*

schism, wisheth, "among all the constant catholic gentle- ANNO 1590.
"women of England, one constant Judith, to cut off Holo-
"fernes head, to amaze all the heretics, that they might
"never defile their religion again, by communicating with
"heretics in any sort. And severely one constant Judith
"would make many like servants. A thing much to be
"wished for the catholic bringing up of young gentle-
"women, who otherwise be in danger of Holofernes, and
"his ungracious enemies." And so goeth on, teaching how a Judith may dissemble, until she strike off Holofernes head.

Of these patronesses of priests, it is incredible how great a number there lurketh in and about London.

There is also a third sort, of mean gentlemen in degree, franklings, head yeomen, artificers, husbandmen, &c. whose malice be hot and barbarous. And how great or small soever their wealth and power be, their credits be grown big among country people and papists; and some of their powers and knowledges, to kindle a rebellion, as much as captain Cobler in Lincolnshire, or captain Ket in Norfolk, were.

These mean papists, now, in the absence of the grand papists and landlords, from their strength and countries, shall have authority, or else without authority, by the love and credit among common people, papists and malecontents, to will and command the servants, tenants, freeholders, and people of all sorts, as much, and many of them more, than the grand papists, lords, masters, might do, if they were at home, and had liberty.

My wish is, not to have all papists to be shut up; for the prisons of all England cannot retain them. But if the worse spirits be regarded, it will not be amiss.

For the place where, and how, all sorts should be shut up.—Where the persons may be kept most surely, and their counsel and power to do least harm.

Then it is sure the prisoner, being committed far off, in distance from his own country, friends, and power, shall be

ANNO 1590. most sure, and do least hurt. As for example, the papists in Yorkshire to be committed in some strong house in Kent or Surrey, from the sea-side; and, for exchange, the papists in Kent and Surrey to be committed in Yorkshire: and so the papists in Cornwall and Devonshire, of the west parts, to Norfolk, Kent, or in the east parts; and, con-
41 trary, they in Norfolk, Suffolk, to go westward.——The papists not to be near their own habitations, living, strength, or power: for who doubteth that a resolute papist, especially the son, the next heir, a loving servant, or kind tenant, or near neighbour, tied by natural or kind bonds, but chiefly bound by bondage he hath avowed to the catholic church of Rome, when he was received into it, as a true child and member thereof, and whereof he received his God, to his damnation, if he continued not obedient, will not adventure, if he hear news of the catholic power, or of a civil rebellion, to ride in a secret or stormy night, or two night journeys, with 40 or 50, or more, desperate and resolute catholics, kinsmen, servants, friends, or tenants, to redeem and set at liberty his father, master, landlord, or friend, by some stratagem, murder, or policy, out and from the place where a plain bishop or gentleman hath as many gentlemen in hold as prisoners, wanting nothing to set themselves at liberty but sharp weapons, as the number of these persons amounteth unto who guard those prisoners.

And I well remember, that when the Spanish fleet was upon the seas in summer in 88, at what time the papists were restrained, and a number of them sent to Ely, I know some three or four of them, who in that place were within two nights and two days journey of their habitations, servants, tenants, kinsmen, and friends, who among them had been able to have raised near an hundred able men; and most of their own affection.

Then it is dangerous and disputable, whether it be convenient or not, to have any multitude of papists in one place together; especially in such a place as the Isle of Ely, where the tenants, servants, and friends of all those papists

so restrained, once gathered together by one and by two, (as going to some fair,) they might have troubled all England. Such is the trouble of the place. ANNO 1590.

Number XXXII.

A prayer composed for the good success of the French king; printed 1590, *with this title:* A Prayer used in the queen's majesty's house and chapel, for the prosperity of the French king and his nobility; assailed by a multitude of notorious rebels, that are supported and waged by great forces of foreigners, August 21, 1590.

O MOST mighty God, the only protector of all kings and kingdoms, we, thy humble servants, do here with one heart and one voice call upon thy heavenly grace for the prosperous state of all faithful Christian princes; and namely, at this time, that it would please thee of thy merciful goodness to protect by thy favour, and arm with thine own strength, the most Christian king, the French king, against the rebellious conspirations of his rebellious subjects, and 42
against the mighty violence of such foreign forces as do join themselves with these rebels, with intention to deprive him most unjustly of his kingdom; but finally, to exercise their tyranny against our sovereign lady, and her kingdom and people; and against all others that do profess the gospel of thy only Son our Lord Jesus Christ.

Now, O Lord, is the time when thou mayest shew forth thy goodness, and make known thy power. For now are these rebels risen up against him, and have fortified themselves with strange forces, that are known to be mortal enemies both to him and us. Now do they all conspire and combine themselves against thee, O Lord, and against thy anointed. Wherefore now, O Lord, aid and maintain thy just cause; save and deliver him, and his army of faithful subjects, from the malicious, cruel, bloody men; send him help from thy holy sanctuary, and strengthen him out of Sion.

ANNO 1590.

O Lord, convert the hearts of his disloyal subjects. Bring them to the truth and due obedience of Jesus Christ. Command thy enemies not to touch him, being thy anointed, professing thy holy gospel, and putting his trust only in thee. Break asunder their bands that conspire thus wickedly against him: for his hope is in thee. Let his help be by thee. Be unto him as thou wast to king David, whom thy right hand had exalted, the God of his salvation, a strong castle, a sure bulwark, a shield of defence, and place of refuge. Be unto him council and courage, policy and power, strength and victory. Defend his head in the day of battle. Comfort his army, his true, faithful noblemen, the princes of his blood, and all other his faithful subjects. Strengthen them to join their hearts and hands with him: associate unto him such as may aid him to maintain his right, and be zealous of thy glory. Let thy holy angels walk in circuit about his realm, about his loyal people; that the enemies thereof, though they be multiplied in number, though they exalt themselves with horses and horsemen, though they trust to their numbers, to their shields, and glory in strength, yet they may see with Elizeus the unresistible army of angels which thou canst send for the defence of thy inheritance; and that thy enemies may know and confess that thy power standeth not in multitude, nor thy might in strong men: but thou, O Lord, art the help of the humble, the defender of the weak, the protector of them that are forsaken, and the saviour of all those who put their trust in thee.

O merciful Father, we acknowledge thy gracious goodness in our own former deliverance from the like kind of enemies and rebels against thy anointed, our sovereign lady and queen, professing thy gospel. So will we do in this, and be as joyful of it, and no less thankful for it; and make the same to be for ever an occasion unto us of our more faithful subjection to our own dread sovereign. Whom, Lord, we beseech now and evermore most mercifully bless with health of body, peace of country, purity of religion, prosperity of estate, and all inward and outward earthly

happiness and heavenly felicity. This grant, merciful Father, for the glory of thine own name, and for Christ Jesus' sake, our Mediator and only Saviour. *Amen.* ANNO 1590.

Number XXXIII. 43

Spanish advertisements, delivered by Thomas Willys, a Leicestershire man, Feb. 2, 1590. so endorsed.

The declaration of Tho. Willys; taken the 21. of Febr. 1590.

HE saith, that he set sail from Cales in Spain the 2d of February, and arrived at Portsmouth on Tuesday, at night, the 17th of the same.

The news at Spain, at his being at Port St. Maria, is this: He saith, that at Gibraltar the admiral of the galleys, called don Martin de Padila, had two galleons now building. The king gives him the wood and the nails. The report of some is, that they shall go of merchandise to the Indies; and some say, they are made to keep the Straits, that the English may not pass into Barbary.

There is lying in the bay of Cales a great galleon of Florence, of the burden of 1500 ton. To what purpose he knoweth not: but, as they say, she is dismissed from the king's armada. There is a report that the king of Spain is fallen out with the duke of Florence. The reason is this; the duke having lent the king one million of treasure, the king required to borrow another of him: which he refused to do, and desired to send him back his galleon, and that which he already ought him: and then he would lend him another million.

He saith, that a Fleming coming into Cales, being a great hulk, was seized for the king's service, as he thinketh, for carriage of masts and provisions to the king's armada.

He saith, that there are six men of war, furnished by the king, and appointed to keep at the Cape of St. Vincent.

ANNO 1590. He saith, that there be twelve new ships building in Biskay after the English fashion, as the report is, and do lack nothing but masts. These ships are accounted to be the best and most principal that the king hath.——The report is at Cales, that there are at the Groin and at Ferrol about 50 or 60 great ships, which went to the sea in August to meet their fleet coming from the India, and fearing they were to stay that——and not come away, they returned back to Ferrol, with the loss of two ships, and the dispending of one——

That day on which he came from Cales there were six captains of galleys to be beheaded at the Port St. Mary by the king's express commandment. For that in August last they met two English ships between Lishbone and the Port St. Mary, and durst not set upon them, being in the whole fourteen galleys.

He heard that the Indian fleet is in the Havana, and did determine to set sail for Spain about the first of February; accounting to be at home about the end of March next.

At his coming from Cales there was a certain report that the earl of Cumberland had besieged the Havana with 150 sail of ships, and had driven the Spaniards to that extre-
44 mity, that they must deliver up all their ships, and whatsoever they had, unto him and his fleet. This was so generally bruited at Cales, that the people did cry out against the king, saying, that he had robbed them, and both they and were undone. And that they gave him their money, but could not have any remedy.

He saith that in the Indies there are six or seven new builded, and do come along with the fleet; and there are fifty ships more which do coast them home; and sixty laded with treasure. And he saith this is the whole number of the fleet, as he heareth.

There is a report that at the Groin there are a great number of soldiers: some say 14,000; some say 10,000; and he never heard under 8000. And those are very good and old soldiers, which are belonging to the ships that are

there. Some say that there are 30,000 soldiers; whereof 10,000 horsemen enpressed to go for France. ANNO 1590.

He saith that the impost which the king doth levy of the people is so great, as that they cannot sustain them. And he understood, a little before his coming away, by one Hugh Leton, an Englishman, and a merchant of Sevil, who told it him in secret talk, that the president of Sevil had told him, that their king could not hold out one year longer, as he did begin, except there were some great remedy.

He saith that the king hath taken this order, that what Spaniard soever shall put himself forth for a gentleman, and is none, shall find him a man and an horse, to the maintenance of the war. And because they are of a proud nature, rather than this shall be a question of their gentility, they have offered a great sum of money, (which he heard and named.) But at this time they are compounding with him for it. Moreover, the king hath the tenth of all things that are sold. So as if it be sold ten times, he hath the price of the thing itself.

He saith also that there is one that goeth up and down all Spain, requiring a gathering of free gift (without enforcing) of all dukes, condies, and the nobility, and also of all the chief cities and towns, for the king's wars.

He saith, that there is an Englishman come to St. Mary Port, and so is gone to the king; and hath 50 crowns a month of him, as a pensioner: he calleth himself Williams, alias Morgan; a little short man, with long black hair. There are five or six Englishmen which serve in the galleys under Martin de Padilia; and have pay of the king: whereof there is one called captain Crippes; who hath fifty crowns a month; and the rest, some 10, some 8, some 4 crowns a month. And those who have four crowns a month have their meat and drink.

He saith that the Scots which brought him home had a Scotchman with them, a pilot, who had once served the king in his armada, and by some means got away; had come now with them into Andaluzia, thinking he should

ANNO 1590. not be known. But notice was presently given to the admiral of the galleys of his being there. Whereupon he was sent for, and put into the galleys.

He hath also brought a note of the names of all the English which are now slaves in the galleys.

45

Number XXXIV.

An office to be deputed. In a suit to be a general register of all the christenings, marriages, and burials, within her majesty's realm of England and Wales: with the reasons for the same. To the lord treasurer Burghley.

THE benefit that will grow to her majesty and her successors thereby: 1. An annual rent of an 100*l.* by year to her majesty and her successors for ever. 2. That it will be much profit to her majesty, for the explaining of the ages of her wards, being now greatly abused by excheaters and feodaries, in the benefits and commodities which may thereby grow to her subjects. 3. That it shall tend to the great good of many, which shall have occasion to have certificates, either for lawful copplement in matrimony, or in case of bastardy. 4. That it shall clearly avoid all cosenages made by those under age, either in levying of fines, suffering recoveries, acknowledging statutes or recognisances, or doing any other matter of record. 5. That the entrance of the baptisms, as it shall be provided for, will be a clear deciphering of all half bloods, or controversies daily happening under colour of half or whole blood. 6. That it will be a curb for those who pretend to be sundry times married. 7. That it shall much tend to the deciding of many controversies, which daily grow by reason of the life or death of persons. 8. There shall be also yearly delivered unto your honour, and unto every lord treasurer, from the time being, a summary of the whole. Whereby it shall appear unto you and them, how many christenings, weddings, and burials be every year within England and Wales, and every

county particularly by itself, and how many men children and women children in either of them severally set down by themselves. ANNO 1590.

A patent for this was sent from the lord treasurer to the archbishop of Canterbury, for his judgment.

Number XXXV.

Inconveniences of parish clerkships.

WHEREAS about the year 1590, somebody had endeavoured to obtain such an office to appoint all parish clerks, whether in the city of London only, or of greater compass, appeareth not; but there was a paper shewing the inconveniences thereof, drawn up by archbishop Whitgift, as it seems; for it is his secretary's hand; and found among the lord treasurer's papers: who had desired the archbishop's thoughts of such an office, which some had made suit for.

Inconveniences in the petition moved for a grant of the parish clerkships, or for surveying them. 46

1. Law and custom hath in all parishes established the appointing of the parish clerk and sexton in the minister and in the parishioners. 2. Their service is to the minister in church matters, for the use of all the parishioners; therefore fittest to be chosen by them; as it is observed every where. 3. They receive their fees and accustomed wages of the parishioners; therefore a stranger cannot be obtruded well upon them: for if any of another's appointment be their clerk, they will think it hard measure that they should be forced to maintain him. 4. He that is no way beholden, either to the minister or parishioners, nor in any awe of them for his office, will neither perform duty nor diligence. 5. If the grantee shall do the office in his own person, then can he have but the employment of one parish: for he must be attendant thereon upon all occasions, early and late. If by a deputy, such one will hardly leave his wages,

ANNO 1590. when their common servant is appointed by another: besides, the grantee will for his own commodity reserve some part for himself. And so the service will be either performed by an insufficient man, or at least be very greatly neglected. 6. The office of surveying all parish clerks is but a shift to pick out money from the poor men, and in no respect requisite or needful: for the reformation of them, being negligent or faulty, is by law already settled in the ordinaries. 7. These and such like grants, as they are very extraordinary, so are they burdensome to the queen's subjects, and unprofitable for the commonwealth, and serve only for the private gain of private persons: which nevertheless prosper not when they have them. [A secret check to these suitors, whereof there were many in these times.] By the copy of the patent, which your lordship sent unto me, there is granted the buying of books, clappers of bells, and other necessaries for the use of the church, at the parishioners' cost and charges: a matter most unreasonable. For so he may still poll them, and make what accounts he list, and they have no remedy. 9. Besides, the laws and her majesty's Injunctions lay this trust upon the churchwardens of the parish, being of the substantialest men, whom the rest think good to trust; and therefore do make choice of, to disburse their money in that behalf.

Number XXXVI.

Sir John Smyth's letter to the lord treasurer, May , 1590, upon the suppression of his book of directions concerning military discipline.

Right honourable, &c.

WHEREAS I certainly understood, that the book I composed, and was lately printed, is now forbidden to be sold, greatly to the hinderance of the poor printer; certain-
47 ly, if the said suppression do still continue, it will (although unjustly) greatly redound to my reproach and shame. That the world shall imagine that I have been of so small fore-

sight and consideration, as to compose and set forth a book containing so disordered matters, that it should be extinguished almost at the first coming out of the same. ANNO 1590.

Besides, that it will hereafter not only be a great encouragement upon employments military unto our such men of war again to follow such detestable courses as are contained in my proem, to the great evil of the realm.

How good an intention soever I have had, to the uttermost of my power, done beforetime, to the honour and service of her majesty and my country, it hath been very little or nothing regarded; and therefore labour lost. —Neither employed at home nor abroad; but only in the mustering and training of the regiments of this shire of Essex in the year 1588. Which by the malicious and false reports of Leycester, that I did was all turned to my disgrace. And now since his death, I mean the last summer, I was here in the shire, I was to my disgrace put out of the commission of subsidy. And in the ever since I came to keep house here, I have been made inferior in all affairs of the shire to divers that are but of the same calling which I am, and that were but boys, and went to school, when I had spent some time in the service of some princes, &c.

I have at this present above 100*l.* land by the year less than I had when her majesty called me from beyond the seas. Besides that, I am at this present seeking, by all the means that I can, to sell a great deal more of my patrimony, partly to pay her majesty, and other my debts,——

All men may see, that sir Roger Williams, [a great captain in the Netherlands,] in a little book that he composed of late, doth in the beginning thereof in terrible sort touch some chieftains of ours, such men of war, as I call them, that had served in the Low Countries. And the same he hath so plainly set down, and with such signs and tokens, that, in the opinion of divers gentlemen that have served in these parts, he doth, as it were, evidently shew whom he meaneth. And besides, in the latter end of his discourse, he doth in some sort touch and disable the opinions of the

ANNO 1590. old men of war, or silently, yet living of our nation. All which notwithstanding, his book hath been very well allowed of, and never called in question for any suppression.

Because I have been no ways employed in so many years, and that I have no skill nor desire to follow hunting and hawking, but do live almost continually retired in my house, (except when I go further, to the court;) I, for lack of other things to do, have given myself to compose four or five little books, all treating more or less of matters of arms. And that I have done with intent, that in time to come the same might some ways profit the crown and realm.

See something more of this gentleman's quality, and of his troubles, being committed to the Tower, under the year 1590. *Entered in the star-chamber.*

48 Number XXXVII.

Thomas Cartwright to the lord treasurer Burghley. Liberty now granted by the archbishop of Canterbury to him and other puritans in prison. He is falsely charged about a purpose to excommunicate the queen.

Anno 1591. WHEREAS I have been and continue an humble suitor to your good lordship, that by your honour's mediation I may obtain some relief of my long and tedious imprisonment, it may please your lordship (for better furtherance of it) to understand, that my fellow-prisoners in the Clink and White-lion have all from his grace this degree of liberty granted, upon their own bond of 40*l.* only, upon this condition alone, to return to their prison at night; that they may go to church upon the sabbath day; and to such as allege special cause of business for it, any other day in the week; namely, to Mr. Fenne, Mr. King.

Further also it may please your lordship to be informed concerning the rest of the def. [defendants,] myself, and the deponents in our cause, according to the note which I have here enclosed. [This note wanting.]

Moreover, what I hear, that some misinform against me, that I should both write something undutifully, touching the excommunicating of her majesty, and also be in a plot for the execution of the same, I beseech your lordship to hear my true answer to as unjust an accusation as ever was devised against any. For I unfeignedly protest to your lordship, in the presence of Almighty God, the searcher of all hearts, that I am so far from being any party, or privy to any such execution, as that such a thing never entered so much as once into my thoughts. ANNO 1591.

As for the rest, how meanly soever they that have so informed esteem of my discretion, yet I assure myself it shall never be proved by true note of my writing or speech, that I have undutifully and in unseemly manner treated at any time of excommunication; or ever applied it to the person of a prince, much less precisely to her majesty's royal person. Wherefore I assure myself, that when this private surmise shall be examined, (which I most humbly desire it may be to the uttermost,) it will fall out to have no more truth than the public accusation, that I had given over my ministry, and taken a new and truer ministry in my hands, was in Martin's libel, where I of the clean contrary part both maintained my ministry against some excepting unto it, as no ministry, and was ever an enemy to Martin's disordered course.

Such doctrine also as I taught of excommunication, either by writing many years ago, or sithen by preaching, is no singular opinion, but the same which the universal church of God, and particularly this our own church of England both now alloweth, and always heretofore; as in our most humble supplication presented unto her majesty in all our behalfs is more fully declared: except it be in the excom- 49
munication of the emperor Theodosius. Where I maintain that it was neither done, nor to be done by any one man, Ambrose or other, but by synod or council. And his grace affirmeth it to have been done by Ambrose only; yea, and setteth forth the commendation of the same; as may appear in our books. Other difference, I know none. Which

ANNO 1591. being so, I humbly beseech your lordship, as to your wisdom shall seem convenient, to use your honourable means for my liberty or bail, as it may be obtained, for ease of this heavy affliction, and for dealing in such business as I have to do; which greatly importeth both mine own estate and some of my friends; especially the hospital, whereof I have charge, and which is diversly defrauded by men that pull from it, &c. Fleet, the 15th of January, 1591.

Your lordship's humbly to command,

Thom. Cartwright.

Number XXXVIII.

Tho. Cartwright to the lady Russel. Moving her to intercede with her relation, the lord treasurer, for his liberty, and other puritan ministers in prison. Writ in August 1591.

I AM glad, right honourable, that that which I might truly do, I did also agreeable unto your honour's liking, touching the mention of your worthy father, [sir Anthony Cook,] in my letters I wrote unto you. Howbeit, to commend you by your father is ἀπὸ τῆς σκιᾶς ἐπαινεῖν τὴν ἀνδρίαντα, ἢ ἀπὸ τῶν ὀνύχων τὸν λέοντα: which is a slender praise, when there are better notes than these are. For beside the mark of learning in yourself, rare in your sex, that is also worthy commendation, that you favour those which are learned, or rather (meaning myself) which desire to be learned; yet this is not that wherein your praise doth or ought to consist, as that which already of all other parts of the flower of the grass tarrieth longest, yet fadeth it away, and is no better than a summer flower, not able to resist the scythe of death, if by the winter storm of sickness or of old age it be not before prevented. So that the fame and report that riseth from thence hath no more steadiness, than the voice which is committed to the air, or writing engraven in the water. Godliness only is that which endureth, and maketh to endure such as have gotten possession

of it. For which, although I might persuadedly commend your honour, as having heard somewhat of others, and some experiences myself; yet I had rather exhort you to a further increase therein, than enter into the praise of that which the Lord hath already begun. For that beside it wanteth not peril in slacking our course toward the goal of the crown of glory, when we are established into opinion of some good advancement that way, the praise of that which is good in us is seldom safe, unless it be mingled with the reproof of that which remaineth still amiss, and shall remain as long as we be compassed with this body of sin. Which latter, when it belongeth not unto me, that know not your honour's wants, as I have been made acquainted with the good things which the Lord God hath planted in you, I easily see a law of silence laid upon me in that thing which my suitors especially do willingly pursue. ANNO 1591.

Albeit here I cannot pass by your singular and very rare favour towards me, whom it pleased to become after a sort a suitor unto me, that your honour might do me good, by preventing, through your honourable offer, that which partly my poor estate, and partly the small means of access, by any duty of mine sent before, did shut me from. Yet forgat I not your honourable and kind usage of me, when I was with you some five years past: so far as it pleased you to call in two noble plants, your daughters, and in my hearing to tell them, that I was a man whom for good reports you favoured, and willed them for the same, in respect as any occasion might serve to righteousness. But, alas! good madam, what encouragement could I take thereby, when looking into myself I see so little that might bear out that opinion you had conceived of me. Howbeit, seeing it pleaseth you in your honourable disposition thus to break upon me, and after a sort to enforce your honourable assistance towards me, it were too foolish and rustical a shamefastness to refuse so honourable a hand reached forth unto me.

Wherefore, with very humble and thankful acknowledgment, I lay hold of your honourable favour; which, although

ANNO 1591. it should come alone, and unaccompanied, yet is it that for which I will take myself greatly beholden unto your honour. Then I lay hold of the fruits of your favour, so far forth as the same may be convenient for your estate in your honourable mediation towards such as you shall think good; especially towards my singular good lord, the lord treasurer. Of whom, what to desire, I know not. His honour knoweth the pitiful case wherein we stand. I trust also he knoweth how innocent we are of the things we stand charged with, if for his great and weighty affairs it had pleased him to inform himself of the proceeding with us. We thought the suit of ministers, upon reasonable bail, to return to their houses, (among whom some of us have preached the gospel xxx years of her majesty's reign,) would not have been refused: being that which oftentimes is yielded unto felons; but hath been often to recusants, papists. We being therefore refused herein, I know not what we should make suit for.

Again, it astonisheth me, that we are not easily suffered to come to her majesty by our most humble supplication. In the empire of Rome there was not the vilest servant to whom the emperor's image, standing in the midst of the market-place, was not a good sanctuary, if he once laid hold of it. And with us it hath always been far better; that by supplication the poorest subject might come, not to the
51 image of our most gracious prince, but unto the prince herself. These things make me, that, as I said, I know not what to desire. But if I might understand what were likely to be granted, although it were never so little, and whereof it would please his honour to be an honourable means, there is no ease so small, but we would gladly and thankfully embrace.

Now, besides the common calamity of us all, mine hath something by itself. For all the other prisoners for this cause having access to them from all their friends, the warrant of the high commission restraineth me from all, saving my wife, and such as have necessary business with me. Which thing I would be well contented with, if it were

afforded me accordingly. For if I might, I would not, for divers causes, have many come unto me. But the warden [of the Fleet,] whether esteeming thereby to gratify the bishops, and others whom he thinketh this will be pleasing to, or of his own hard disposition towards me, construeth it more strictly against me than the meaning of the high commission was. For I take that upon experience of the multitudes that visited me the last time I was in prison, (as much to my misliking as theirs,) they sent the warrant of this restraint. Yet dare I not complain of the hard usage of me more than other keepers to their prisoners, lest he might use that for a mean to cause the BB. [bishops] to restrain them also of the access of their friends. But it is a thing which I can, I thank God, well bear. And therefore will not trouble your honour with the suit of so small a matter. ANNO 1591.

Again, if I should make suit in regard of my infirmities, the gout especially, which gaineth on me, it is like that the council is informed that I complained of them without a cause. For the bishop of London speaking openly, that I had therein abused her majesty's privy-council, they would not, although I humbly beseeched him to suffer me to answer one word unto it. For if he would, I could have alleged the testimony of the physician, who had witnessed it under his hand: which the archbishop taking from my wife, would not restore again. I could also have brought good testimony, how having but small comfort from the physician that physic would do me good in prison, (as that which the air itself would give the check unto,) yet was I fain to take divers strong purgations, one within three or four days of another, to such a pulling down of my body, as I was scarce able to bear mine own clothes. Now to do all this without cause of disease, I think, might be rather judged phrensy than hypocrisy. And surely I was far from being ambitious in laying down my infirmities before the board of her majesty's most honourable privy-council, that I did not once make mention of the sciatica, wherewith I have been exercised many years.

ANNO 1591.

But I perceive I have too much given the reins to the grief of my mind; out of the which my pen hath been very liberal to utter my complaint unto your honour. Wherefore I will make an end, leaving all to your honourable consideration, what to keep to yourself, and what to communicate to his lordship, what to ask, or what to leave unasked: that is to say, what you think his lordship can conveniently and with his good liking effect, making no doubt but that his honour standeth favourably inclined toward
52 me. If I obtain nothing else, yet I most humbly pray his lordship that I may remain still in his good opinion that he hath conceived of me; at least so far as to be free from those misdemeanours which the L. BB. do surmise. And thus with my humble thanks for all your honourable favour and care of me, I commend your honour and your whole household, and children especially, unto the gracious keeping and blessing of God in Jesus Christ. Fleet, the 13th of August, an. 91.

Your honour's humbly to command,

T. Cartwright.

This letter was sent to the lady Russel, who had offered to Cartwright to intercede (for any request he had to make to the lord treasurer) for him. And she sent the whole letter to him, with these words of her writing set in the superscription; "Good my lord, rede this thorow; and do what "good you can to the poor man."

Number XXXIX.

Cartwright to the lord treasurer, dated October the 4th. Cited before the commissioners, and apprehensive of great troubles to follow upon the queen's displeasure with him.

SO it is, if it please your good lordship, that with much grief of mind I have understood of her majesty's heavy displeasure against me, in whose gracious favour, next under God, the comfort of my life and of all those that depend

upon me doth consist. Wherefore it may be, that at this time I stand under the arrest of her high commission, in causes ecclesiastical, for appearance upon Thursday next: when what matters may be objected I know not. But this I well know, that from the writing of my last book, which was thirteen years ago, I never wrote, nor procured any thing to be printed, which might be in any sort offensive to her majesty or the estate; much less had any hand, or so much as a finger, in the books under Martin's name. ANNO 1591.

And although there have been divers books of Antimartin printed, and read by all; wherein I have not only been contemptuously derided, as unlearned, but my good name most slanderously rent and torn in pieces; as, to be a dicer, to have thrust one through the leg with a knife; also, that I love a cup of sack and sugar, and other such like; (whereof, I thank God, there is not the least suspicion;) yet am I able to make good proof, that from the first beginning of Martin unto this day I have continually, upon any occasion, testified both my dislike and sorrow for such kind of disorderly proceeding.

For my ministry also, which I have exercised now almost five years sithence my return out of the Low Countries. [When he was at Antwerp.] Notwithstanding, there have 53
been directed to the place of my abode, twice or thrice, men that have made whole arguments and invectives against me, yet have I as sparingly spoken of any matter in controversy between us and our brethren as any whatsoever in the country having the same judgment which I have.

Wherefore my most humble suit unto your lordship is, that it would please you either by counsel, favour, or both, which the Lord hath so plentifully bestowed upon you, to relieve me against the troubles that are coming upon me; especially against her majesty's heavy displeasure, &c. This Sunday morning, October the 4th.

ANNO 1591.

Number XL.

The bishop of Bristol, and Dr. Aubrey, LL. D. to the lord treasurer: in answer to his order to them to take into their examination certain gross crimes, laid to the charge of one Matthew Heton, a minister. And found to be scandals.

OUR duties to your good lordship most humbly remembered. Where it pleased your lordship to refer the examination of certain articles preferred by one William Marsham, gent. against Matthew Heton, minister; we took the same to be as here followeth.

I. That the said Heton being charged that his father was punished for incest, he answereth, that he is not to be charged in reason with his father's faults: adding thereunto, that though his father were accused and punished for the same, yet by the order of law he cleared himself of the same crime by the sworn testimonies of seven ministers, graduates, of London; whereof Mr. Crowley was the foreman.

II. That where he was charged with an untruth suggested unto her majesty, touching the benefice of Langham in the diocese of Norwich, to have two benefices besides; it doth not appear unto us, that he had any full title unto the same of Langham; but had only a bare presentation, without any institution or induction.

III. That he was indicted of buggary in Sussex. It doth appear, that the matter was maliciously procured by his father-in-law three years after his departure thence.

IV. Likewise, where he is charged with the same indictment in Sussex, returned into Devonshire, three years again after that indictment; we find, that the same could come to no trial, because there was a general pardon followed after, wherein the same crime was remitted, so that he could not clear himself that way. But it appeareth, that he was so careful of the preservation of his credit, that he brought the said matter before the commissioners ecclesiastical: who, upon deliberate examination, found him clear, and freed

him from the said offence, and all the circumstances thereof, and decreed unto him letters testimonial under their hands and seals of office in that behalf, as we have seen. 54 ANNO 1591.

V. That he was accused of the like heinous crime at St. Andrew's in Holbourn. We have seen testimonials from the bishop and mayor of London for his clearing, upon examination of the boy and his mother.

VI. To that, that he is charged with a letter of the bishop of Exon, written to the bishop of London, that he was vehemently suspected and defamed for the selfsame crime in that county of Devon, his answer is, (which we find to be true,) that the said bishop of Exeter, upon a later examination of that matter, by authentic testimony under his seal of office, did certify, that he took him for clear, notwithstanding his former letter.

This is the sum of the chiefest points which appeared unto us of the matter so objected by Marsham against Heton. And so we humbly take our leaves, the 20th of March, 1591.

Your good lordship's most humbly at commandment,

Rich. Bristol. Ant. Aubrey.

Number XLI.

Overton, bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, to the lords and others of the privy-council: complaining of a practice of abuse in the loan and subsidy, by subsidy-men. And his advice how to reform it.

Right honourable,

I AM bound, as well in regard of my duty to the queen's majesty, as also of my dutiful and faithful service to the realm, to open unto your lordships (if it be not already opened unto you by some others) a certain strange kind of practice long time used, as it should seem, among the people of these parts, and now of late come to light, by sending abroad of the privy seals. Such a practice, indeed, as

ANNO 1591. I cannot but think to be the very chief original cause, that the said privy seals take no better place than they do.

So it is, my honourable good lords, that the subsidy-men, which is one of the chief grounds that you work upon in these loans, are for the most part poor and needy persons, suborned by the richer sort to bear the name in the subsidy-books, and to take the matter upon them, that the others might escape: and yet in the mean time are borne out and supported of the others by privy contribution with some advantage. And which is more, not only one for one, but one oftentimes for many, is suborned to take the matter in hand: whereby the subsidies are greatly impaired, and the queen's majesty very much defrauded. Surely an evil practice, and a very unnatural part in the rich to suborn the poor, to blind the commissioners' eyes, and to de-
55 fraud the queen of her right. For by this means both we are notably deluded which are in commission for the subsidies, and the queen's majesty is wonderfully defrauded, to whom the benefit of that service doth appertain: especially when many rich contributors shall join together to suborn one poor man to serve all their turns. And yet this practice, as it now appeareth, hath not been only to serve their turn that ways to deceive the queen, and to ease themselves in the subsidies, but also to keep their names out of the subsidy books: whereby they might prevent all other afterclaps that might follow, as now in these privy seals they hope will come to pass.

But if it please your lordships to give me leave to interpose my simple opinion and advice, I doubt not but that this practice of theirs, the light of their covert dealing being now come abroad as it is, will not only not at all hinder the good purpose of those privy seals, but also further them very much, when two or three or four abler men shall be found out, to make double or treble supply of every unable man's defect; which, by your commissioners [sent] down into the country for that purpose, ye may easily work, if it so please you. Or if this practice shall not fall out so ge-

nerally true as is supposed, (for in some places peradventure it may happen to be otherwise,) yet if it please you to direct your commissions down to every shire unto such careful and skilful men, as by your authority may allot, according to their own knowledge and good discretion, some contributors to those that are overcharged in these privy seals; or, if need be, to discharge them clean, and to take others in their places that are better able to bear the burden; ye shall see, that the whole proportion of money that was first meant in these loans will rise well enough, and be performed without any great ado. ANNO 1591.

For mine own part, I seek no discharge, although how weak my state is some of yourselves do well enough know. But yet, because by mine example I will give no man occasion of drawing back, I am content, and have taken order that my privy seal shall be satisfied; as also I will have a care that the rest of my clergy, that are of the abler sort, shall do the like. Of whom I understand, that some, though most able of all, have by false suggestion gotten themselves unconscionably released and discharged. But in this, or any service else, as it shall please you to impose the charge upon me, and not otherwise.

Thus much I thought good to disclose unto your lordships of the practices here in these parts, upon the occasion of many that have been with me, and have detected the same; being the parties themselves that have been suborned, and now seek relief in this new burden that they have drawn upon themselves by their own folly. And so, leaving the further consideration thereof to your own honourable gravity and wisdom, I humbly take my leave. From Eccleshal, the 4th of May, 1591.

Your honour's humble to command,

W. Coven. and Lich.

ANNO 1591.

Number XLII.

56

A declaration of great troubles pretended against the realm by a number of seminary priests and Jesuits, sent, and very secretly dispersed into the same, to work great treasons under a false pretence of religion. With a provision very necessary for the remedy thereof. Published by her majesty's proclamation. With Notes set in the margin.

This is very briefly and imperfectly mentioned in Stow's Annals, and Camden's Elizabeth.

ALTHOUGH we have had probable cause to have thoughts, that now towards the end of 33 years, being the time wherein Almighty God hath continually preserved us in a peaceable possession of our kingdoms, the former violence and rigor of the malice of our enemies (especially of the king of Spain) would, after his continuance in seeking to trouble our estate, without any cause, so many years, have waxed faint, and decayed in him; and also others depending on him, and been altered into some peaceable humour, meet to have disposed him to live in concord with us, and other Christian princes, his neighbours; and by such good means to establish an universal peace in Christendom, now by his wars only, and no otherwise disturbed: yet to the contrary we find it by his present mighty actions, (great as he never before attempted the like,) whereby it so pleased the Almighty God of hosts, as we are persuaded, to suffer the ruin or correction of such as will not be content to live in peace with their own: and to that end, to permit the said king, now in his declining years, (meetest for peace,) and when he ought to be satisfied without seeking of more kingdoms by violence and arms, (seeing he possesseth at this day more crowns and kingdoms and countries, and more earthly wealth than any of his progenitors, or any other prince Christian ever had,) now to begin a most unjust and a dangerous war for all Christendom against the French king; as in like manner he meant two years past to have done the like against us, by invading of our kingdoms in the very time of a treaty of peace with us; whereof God gave him and his whole army a just cause of repentance.

The king of Spain's malice.

Possesseth more crowns and kingdoms than any Christian prince ever had, and not satisfied.

The French king.

ANNO 1591.

And therefore seeing we do now manifestly understand, that he hath of late (to fortify these his strange violent attempts with some new colour) procured a Millanois, a vassal of his own, to be exalted into the papacy of Rome, and hath seduced him, without the consent of the college of cardinals, to exhaust the treasures of the church, and therewith to levy forces in Italy (which had no sound of war in it these many years) and in many other places, to be guided by his nephew, and sent to invade France, a kingdom that hath been always a maintainer of that church in all their oppressions. And for that this war, so generally and mightily against France, concerneth our state very greatly, and cannot but be directly very dangerous to our dominions; and that it is also known to us by sundry means, besides the preparation of other great forces for his seas, 57 against our crown and dominions, the same be greater for this year to come than ever he had before: and for furtherance thereof hath also lately, by colour of this his peculiar pope's authority, which he hath now hanging at his girdle, practised with certain principal seditious heads, (being unnatural subjects of our kingdom, but yet very base of birth,) to gather together with great labour upon his charges a multitude of dissolute young men, who have, partly for lack of living, partly for crimes committed, become fugitive rebels and traitors; and for whom there were in Rome and Spain, and other places, certain receptacles made to live in, and there to be instructed in school-points of sedition; and from thence to be secretly and by stealth conveyed into our dominions, with ample authority from Rome to move, stir up, and persuade as many of our subjects as they dare deal withal, to renounce their natural allegiance due to us and our crown, and upon hope, by a Spanish invasion, to be enriched and endued with the possessions and dignities of our other good subjects. For which purpose they do bind our subjects upon whom they practise, (by oaths, yea, by sacraments,) to forswear their natural allegiance to us, and yield their obedience, with all their power, to this king of Spain, and to assist his forces.

A vassal of Spain made pope.

Invades France.

Vast preparations in Spain.

English fugitives hired by the pope.

Their receptacles.

ANNO 1591.

And for the more forcible attraction of these unnatural people (being weak of understanding) to this their bend, these scedmen of treason bring certain bulls from the pope: some of indulgences, pretending to promise heaven to such as will yield; and some of cursings, threatening damnation and hell to such as shall not yield to their persuasions. And though this manner of popish attempts have been of long time used, yet in some sort also they have been impeached by direct execution of laws against such traitors, for mere treason, and not for any points of religion, as their fautors would colour falsely their actions, which are most manifestly seen and heard at their arraignment, where they are neither executed, condemned, or indicted, but for high treason: affirming, among other things, that they will take part with any army sent by the pope against us and our realm. And of this, that none do suffer death for matter of religion, there is manifest proof, in that a number of men of wealth in our realm, confessing contrary religion, are known not to be impeached for the same, either in their lives, lands, or goods, or in their liberties, but only by payment of a pecuniary sum, as a penalty for the time that they do refuse to come to church. Which is a most manifest course to falsify the slanderous speeches and libels of the fugitives abroad.

Bulls.

Not for religion.

That it is now certainly understood, that these heads of these dens and receptacles, which are by the traitors called seminaries, or colleges of Jesuits, had very lately assured the king of Spain, that though heretofore he had no good success with his great forces against our realm, yet if he will now once again renew his war this next year, there shall be found ready, secretly, within the queen's dominions, many thousands (as they make their account for their purpose) of
58 able people, that will be ready to assist such power as he shall set on land: and by their vain vaunting they do tempt the king hereto; who otherwise ought in wisdom, and by his late experience, to conceive no hope of a safe landing here; shewing to him in Spain, by the special information of a schoolman, named Parsons, arrogating to himself the name of the king catholic's confessor, and to the

Fugitives excite Spain.

Parsons.

pope at Rome, by another scholar, called Allen, now for the treason honoured with the cardinal's hat, certain scrolls, or bedrolls of names of men dwelling in sundry parts of our countries, as they have imagined them, but especially in the maritimes, with assurance that these their seedmen, named seminaries, priests, and Jesuits, are in the sundry parts of the realm secretly harboured; having a great part of them been sent within these 10 or 12 months; and shall be ready to continue their reconciled people in their lewd constancy to serve their purpose, both with their forces and with other traitorous enterprises which the Spanish powers shall be ready to lend. ANNO 1591. Allen.

Upon which impudent assertions to the pope and to the king of Spain, (though they know a great part thereof to be false,) they have now very lately advertised into divers parts by their secret messengers, (whereof some are also very lately taken, and have confessed the same,) that the king, upon their information and request, hath promised to employ all his forces that he could by sea this next year, to attempt once again the invasion of this realm; wherewith, because some of his wisest counsellors doubt that he shall not prevail, therefore he is otherwise persuaded, that if that his purpose shall not take place here, yet the same may be well employed against France or the Low Countries, or against some part of Scotland, into which realm there hath some number of the like brood been sent. History of the fugitives.

Wherefore considering that these the intentions of the king of Spain are to us in this sort made very manifest; and although we doubt not but Almighty God, the defender of all just causes, will (as always hitherto he hath) make the same void, yet it is our duty, as being the supreme governor under the Almighty hand, to use all such just and reasonable means as are given to us, and therewith to concur, or rather attend upon his most gracious favour, by the help of our faithful subjects, both to increase our forces to the utmost of our power, and by execution of laws, and our other public ordinances, to impeach the foresaid practices of these seditions and treasons. The queen's resolution thereupon.

ANNO 1591.

And, before all other things, we do first require of the ecclesiastical state, that the like diligence be used by the godly ministers of the church, by their diligent teaching and example of life, to retain our people steadfastly in the profession of the gospel, and in their duties to Almighty God and us; as it is seen a few capital heads of treason are continually occupied with their seminaries, in withdrawing of a multitude of ignorants to their enchantments.

Ecclesiastical state.

And, secondly, for having sufficient forces in readiness by sea, we hope, by God's goodness, and with the help of our good subjects, to have as great or greater strength on the seas than at any time we have had, to withstand these puffed vaunts from Spain. And for our forces by land, our trust is, that seeing we have distributed our whole realm into several charges of lieutenancies, that they by themselves, when they may be personally present, and otherwise by their deputies and assistants of other our ministers, will now, after the general musters which have been by our special order lately taken, consider of all things requisite to perform and make perfect all defects that shall appear necessary, to make the bands both of horsemen and footmen fully furnished with armour, weapons, and munition, and with all other things requisite for their conduction to the place of service; and there also to continue, as time shall require, to defend their country. And so we do most earnestly require and charge all manner of our subjects, with their hands, purses, and advices, yea, all and every person of every estate, with their prayers to God, to move him to assist this so natural, honourable, and profitable a service; being only for defence of their natural country, their wives, families, children, lands, goods, liberties, and their posterities, against ravening strangers, wilful destroyers of their native country, and monstrous traitors.

Forces by sea,

59

And by land.

To withstand the seminaries.

And, lastly, to withstand and provide speedy remedy against the other fraudulent attempts of the seminaries, Jesuits, and traitors; without the which, as it appeareth, his forces should not now be used, the same being wrought only by falsehood, by hypocrisy, and by undermining of our

good subjects under a false colour and face of holiness, to make breaches in men's and women's consciences, and to train them to their treasons; and that with such a secrecy, by the harbouring of the said treacherous messengers in obscure places, as without very diligent and continual search to be made, and severe orders executed, the same will remain and spread itself as a secret infection of treasons in the bowels of our realm; most dangerous, yea, most reproachful to be suffered in a well ordered commonweal. ANNO 1591.

Therefore we have determined, by advice of our council, to have speedily certain commissioners, men of honesty, fidelity, and good reputation, to be appointed in every shire, city, and port-town within our realms, to inquire, by all good means, what persons, by their behaviour or otherwise worthy to be suspected to be any such persons, or have been sent, or that are employed in any such persuading of our people, or of any residing within our realm, to treason, or to move any to relinquish their allegiance to us, or to acknowledge any kind of obedience to the pope or to the king of Spain; and also of all other persons that have been thereto induced, and that have thereto yielded: and further to proceed in the execution of such their commission, as they shall be more particularly directed by instructions annexed to their commission. Commissioners to inquire for seminaries.

And furthermore, because it is certainly known and proved by common experience, upon the apprehension of sundry of the said traitorous persons sent into the realm, that they do come into the same by secret creeks and landing-places, disguised both in names and persons; some in apparel as soldiers, mariners, or merchants; pretending that they have heretofore been taken prisoners, and put into galleys, and delivered. Some come in as gentlemen, with contrary names, in comely apparel, as though they had travelled into foreign countries for knowledge. And generally all, for the most part, as soon as they are crept in, are clothed like gentlemen in apparel, and many as gallants; yea, in all colours, and with feathers, and such like, disguising themselves; and many of them in their behaviour Creeks. Disguised. 60

ANNO 1591.

as ruffians, far off to be thought or suspected to be friars, priests, Jesuits, or popish scholars.

And of these many do attempt to resort to the universities and houses of law; from whence, in former time, they departed many into services of noblemen, ladies, and gentlemen, with such like fraudulent devices, to cover themselves from all apprehension or suspicion. And yet, in process of time, they do at length so insinuate themselves, to get themselves credit, with hypocrisies, as they infect both the masters and families; and consequently adventure also, yet secretly, to use their offices of priesthood and reconcilement: whereby all such as do retain them are worthy to be suspected, and may be charged by law, to their great danger.

Discovery of them.

For avoiding whereof, and either to discover these venomous vipers, or to chase them away out of the realm from the infecting of many more, we order, and strictly charge and command our temporal noblemen, gentlemen, lord, lady, master or mistress, or owner whatsoever of any house, family, lodging, yea, the very officers of our own household, and governors of any societies, to make a present, due, and particular inquisition of all manner of persons that have been admitted or suffered to have usual resort, diet, lodging, residence, in their houses, or in any place by their appointment, at any time within the space of one whole year now past and ended at March last; or that from thenceforth have or shall be admitted or suffered so to resort, enter, lodge, reside, or attend. And by such inquisition and examination to be duly and particularly informed of what condition and country any such person is, and by what kind of means he hath heretofore lived, and where he hath spent his time for the space of one whole year before. And likewise to know whether he hath used or doth use to repair to the church at usual times to divine service, according to the laws of the realm. And to cause those inquisitions, with their answers, to be put into writing particularly, and the same to be kept in the manner of a register or calendar, to be shewed when they shall be demanded.

That upon case of suspicion of any such person, the same may be further tried by the commissioners above-mentioned of those places, whether the same persons so examined be loyal subjects or no. And if any such shall be found unwilling to answer to such inquisitions, or shall be found by his doubtful answer not likely to be an obedient subject, the same person shall be stayed by the householder, or him that ought to have examined him, and shall be sent to any of the commissioners above-mentioned next adjoining. And if any person having government or command over such servant or resiant, shall be found not to have performed the points of the foresaid inquisition, as is above limited, the same shall be called to appear before the said commissioners, or before our privy-council, if the quality of the person shall so require; and shall be further used and ordered for such default, as the said commissioners or our council shall have just cause to deal with such a person. ANNO 1591. 61

Command to detect.

And, finally, we admonish, and strictly charge and command all persons that have any intelligence with any such so sent, or come from beyond the seas to such purpose, to detect them to the commissioners, in that behalf to be assigned as aforesaid, within twenty days after the publication hereof, in the shire-town, or city, or port, within the precincts of the said commission, upon pain that the offenders herein shall be punished as abettors and maintainers of traitors. Wherein we are resolutely determined to suffer no favour to be used for any respect of any persons, qualities, or degrees; nor shall allow, nor suffer to be allowed, any excuse of negligence for not detection, or for not due examination of the qualities of such dangerous persons, according to the order hereafter prescribed, being nowise contrary, but agreeable to the most ancient laws and good usages of our realm; devised for the good order of all manner of subjects in every precinct of any leet, to be forthcoming, to answer for their behaviour towards the dignity of our crown and the common peace of our realm. Given at our manor of Richmond, the 18th of October, 1591, in the 33d year of our reign.

ANNO 1591.

Number XLIII.

Articles annexed to the commission, for a further instruction to the commissioners how to proceed in the execution thereof.

Certain questions to be administered to such as are to be suspected will adhere to the pope, or the king of Spain, if he should invade the realm.

FIRST, you, to whom the commission shall be brought, shall, without delay, notify to the rest of the commissioners that shall be in the country, or that may shortly repair thither, the receipt of the said commission, with some signification of the contents thereof; and shall require them to meet at some convenient time and place, to consider of the contents thereof; and thereupon to accord upon sundry days and places in every quarter of the shire, ordinarily to meet about the same. So as now at the beginning, the oftener they shall meet, the same shall be the better. And after your first meeting, you shall, according to the quantity of the shire, make some partitions among yourselves to execute the commission with more ease: and yet you shall every forty days, for this present year, assemble all together, to confer upon your several proceedings: so as you may once every quarter give knowledge to her majesty's council of your actions.

62 *Item*, You shall send to the bishop or ordinary of the diocese, and to the chancellor or official, and to the archdeacon of the same, to certify you of all persons, with their dwelling-places, whom they shall know to have been presented to them as recusants, and that do so continue in their recusancy. And the like certificate you shall require from the *custos rotulorum*, or the clerk of the peace, and from the clerk of the assize of the county, to know such as have been presented and indicted as recusants, as well women as men; and what process hath been sent forth against them. And likewise you shall by any other means inform yourselves of all such as within your county are commonly noted to be receivers or comforters of persons that are suspected to have come from beyond seas, as seminaries, priests, Jesuits, or fugitives. And after that you shall be duly informed, by these or any other means, of such persons so to be

suspected, as principal offenders or accessaries, you shall retain to yourselves secretly the names of the same, without any publication thereof, until you shall afterwards find probable and good cause to warn any of them to come before you, or otherwise to apprehend and examine them according to the contents of your commission. ANNO 1591.

Item, In your examination of any persons by virtue of this commission, you shall not press any one to answer to any questions of their conscience for matter of religion, otherwise than to cause them answer whether they do usually come to church, and why they do not. And if you shall perceive that they are wilful recusants, then you shall examine them upon any matters concerning their allegiance to her majesty, and of their devotion to the pope or to the king of Spain; or upon their maintenance of any Jesuits, seminaries, priests, or other persons, sent from Rome, or from any parts beyond seas, to dissuade any subjects from their obedience to the queen's majesty.

And to give you some particular instructions in what sort you may conceive convenient questions, whereupon to examine persons that are to be suspected to adhere to the pope or to the king of Spain, contrary to their duty of allegiance, you may observe the form of these questions hereafter following.

The questions ensuing to be answered by oath, by such as shall be verily suspected to have been moved to give assistance to the forces of the pope, or king of Spain, when they shall happen to invade this realm; whereby such wicked seducers may be discovered.

Whether have you been moved by any, and by whom, and when, and by what persuasion, to give aid or relief, or to adhere to the forces of the pope or king of Spain, when they should happen to invade this land for any cause whatsoever?

The questions following to be ministred without oath; to discover such as shall be suspected to be priests, seminaries, or fugitives, dangerous to the state.

Whether have you been at Rome, Rheimes, or in Spain,

ANNO 1591. at any time within these five years? When returned you last into this realm? And to what purpose? And where have
63 you been ever since your coming from thence?

Be you a Jesuit or priest made after the Romish order? Where and when were you so made? And by whom? Have you been at the seminaries or colleges for the English, Welsh, or Irish nation at Rome, Rheimes, in Spain, or elsewhere? How long were you in any of them? And where were you last sent from any of them into England or Wales? And to what end?

Item, Where, by her majesty's late proclamation, whereof you shall take knowledge, it is ordered, That all manner of persons, of what degree soever they be, without any exception, spiritual or temporal, and so forth, shall make particular inquisition of all manner of persons that have been admitted, or suffered to have resort, diet, lodging, &c. within the space of one year past, &c. if you shall be informed of any such person so lodged, or comforted, &c. as in the proclamation is at large expressed; in such case you shall require the party that is appointed to make such inquisition, to deliver the same his inquisition to you in writing. And thereupon you shall do your best to try out, if there have been any suspected person so lodged or comforted; and further used according to his deserts.

Item, Because the like commission is sent into all other shires of the realm, and like instructions annexed thereto, as these are, and that you may percase be informed of some persons meet to be apprehended or examined, which are gone out of that shire in some other parts, or do remain in places out of the jurisdiction of your commission; in such cases, we require you to send secret knowledge thereof to the commissioners of the counties where you shall think such suspected persons do remain; requiring them, in her majesty's name, to use all diligence for the apprehension of such, and by such information as you shall give them to examine the parties, and to proceed against them according to their commission.

Item, You shall do well to make choice of some persons, of honest behaviour, and loyal in religion, in every quarter of the shire, and especially in every port-town, market-town, or great large parish; and where the parsons or vicars are faithful and careful of their cures, to join them together, with charge to observe all such as refuse obstinately to resort to church. And such persons you shall call before you, and, without dealing with them for their recusancy, (for which they shall be otherwise by law punished,) you shall, as in your direction think meet, (respecting the quality of their persons,) require them to answer to the two former questions, or to either of them: for that by their recusancy they do give cause to suspect to be disloyal in their duties to the queen's majesty and the state, or to favour the common enemies. ANNO 1591.

Number XLIV. 64

Anthony Fitzherbert, a popish gentleman in the gaol at Darby, to the earl of Shrewsbury; relents, and prays favour from his imprisonment.

Right honourable, and my very good lord,

I MOST humbly beseech your honour to commiserate my poor and distressed estate, remaining here a prisoner within the gaol of Darby, by your lordship's commitment and direction from the lords of her majesty's most honourable privy-council. Forasmuch as I have been examined before your lordship of divers articles, and have answered thereto; so as, I trust, your honour doth well perceive me no meddler in matter of state, but only misled in points of religion; wherein I have been nursed up from my infancy, never tasting any other grapes. But now more and more weighing with myself, and daily considering your most honourable admonitions and sage counsels, wherewith your lordship did persuade me; which have taken deeper root in me, and moved me more than any durance of imprisonment or terror of law could ever have done. So that now, my good

ANNO 1591. lord, I well perceive mine own blindness, and acknowledge myself to have too too long wandered in the darksome night of ignorance, never escrying a daylight before.

Wherefore, I most humbly beseech your lordship, for charity sake, to be a means to the most honourable lords of her majesty's privy-council for my enlargement. For my trust is, their honours will be as merciful to me as they have been to others, in like case as great offenders as I am. And if your honour will this once be compassionable, you shall be an eyewitness that I will conform myself, and come to the church, as I promised your honour, and avoid the company of all such dangerous persons as your lordship gave me warning of, and bear myself hereafter like a most loyal, obedient subject. Pardon me, my honourable good lord, I humbly beseech you, my importunate boldness, in the straitness of this place, and most odious for many causes, with the loathsome and unsavoury smells, and the cumbersome companions which be here committed for all vices, (wherewith I am pestered,) do so daily increase the many infirmities of my weak body, with some other more special and particular causes, which I made known to your honour at my being with you, as, unless I find your honour to stand my good lord, I shall rather wish a short and speedy death, than so wearisome and consuming a life. My real confidence is, your honour will not be unmindful of me: and I shall pray to God for your honour's happy felicity and daily increase of all honour. From the gaol of Darby, the 21st of May, 1591.

Your lordship's most bounden in all duty,
Anthony Fitzherbert.

65 Number XLV.

The earl of Darby, from the court at Greenwich, to the earl of Shrewsbury: concerning preparations for war; and the execution of two seminaries.

My very good lord,

THIS place of late hath afforded little worthy letters

for your lordship's view; which hath been the reason I have forborne to write unto you: yet now some discourses being come hither of exploits and services in Britain, not long ago performed, I thought good to send them to your lordship here enclosed. My lord of Essex is furnishing and preparing himself towards the king of France, attended with sundry of account; namely, the earl of Lincoln and his son, and these captains contained in the enclosed; as also 4000 soldiers. ANNO 1591.

This morning two seminaries, Beisely and Scot, were executed in Fleet-street: who, among other their bad opinions, traitorously affirmed, that if her majesty had an army against the pope here, they would fight with the pope against her majesty; or if the pope should command them to lay violent hands upon, or kill her majesty, (whom the Lord of heaven long preserve to reign over us,) they would willingly do it.

And so for this time, till further occasion of writing be proffered, with my most hearty commendations to your good lordship, I wish the same as to myself. From the court at Greenwich, this 1st of July, 1591.

Your lordship's assured loving cousin,
and faithful friend to use,
H. Derby.

Postscript.

My good lord,

ONE of these seminaries was at the high race at Croyden, all in green and velvet, well mounted upon a good gelding, having also a pistol at his side; insomuch as it was conceived he meant ill toward her majesty, if she had been there.

Number XLVI.

The confession of Boord before the lord treasurer, anno 1591, *being in the Gate-house, Westminster; who was a spy, as it seems, for seminaries.*

EDWARD BOORD, a soldier in France, goeth thence

ANNO 1591. to the prince of Parma with one Tusser; there offereth his service to the king of Spain. And at Brussels, Hugh Owen and Mr. Dennis, desirous to know what service they could do for the king; to whom Dyer made answer, That he came to do the king service, and that he would be willing to hazard his life, and any thing whatsoever. Whereupon they asked him, Whether he would undertake to burn the queen's ships? Which sudden motion made my heart ache, saith Boord. But remembering my pretence, and the cause of my coming, [which he had said before was to endeavour to discover what they could, and so to come over into England and declare it,] he told them, That so they would give him [i. e. Boord] reason for the performance thereof, he would do his best. [Thus Boord said.]

66

Their means were these. They would have built two vessels to row with oars; and in them they would have had room for seven or eight small boats; every boat should have had fifteen or sixteen men apiece in them; and with a device made to break the chain, they would have rowed into the harbour; and the first small boat should pass so many ships as there were boats before she began to give fire; and by that time the last boat would be with the first ship in the river, and set them afire at one instant; and to row to their ships as well as they could, though it were with the loss of some of their men and boats. This will be adventured when the prince is gone.

Upon this motion I went to Mr. Paget, because I would be sure to have his love, and told him what matters there were in hand, and how they would use me as an instrument in the cause; and withal entreated him to give me the best counsel he could: so that he took this so kindly at my hand, that he told me, that if he could do me any good, or give me advice, I should be as bold to use him as any man whatsoever. This counsel I took to enter into him, and to make myself familiar with him, who afterwards used me very kindly; for I knew that Owin and he did not affect either one another, &c.

Now having the knowledge of these men coming over,

we devised with ourselves [Tusser and himself] how we should give your lordship [lord treasurer Burghley] intelligence hereof, [by our getting into England.] We went to Owin, and told him, that if he would procure us a passport, we would go into England, and make all the money we could, and bring a ship with us; which made him have a very good opinion of us, and told us, that if we did the same, we should do the king very good service. But when we heard him say so, we told him we feared that when we returned that should be taken from us. And then he did give us his word, that he would procure us a commission to serve the king by sea; and because he could not do it presently, he procured a letter from the counsellor in the causes of the admiralty to the governor of Dunkirk, that if we should come in, to use us very well. By this means I brought over this gentleman: for I told him, if that he would go, he might procure him money to live in good surety. This was our persuasion unto him; for we knew he could bring us to divers masses; by which means we might cause many seminaries to be apprehended. For if I had not been brought to your lordship, my meaning was to have come unto you, and to have made your lordship ac- 67
quainted with our proceedings, as by Mr. Tusser's course and mine we had proceeded; who, if your lordship please to speak with, I will send for him. For he stays to be directed by your lordship, whom I humbly entreat to have a care and regard that he perish not in the hands of those vile and wicked persons, who seek the blood of our people and ruin of our country. ANNO 1591.

By the means of a ship, I will tell your lordship how you may either take Dunkirk or burn all their ships with very little charge, and no loss of men; to which end Tusser is gone thither.

I have a direction to find out a priest, whose name is Southwel, and the chief dealer in the affairs of our state of England for the papists.

Mr. Paget's persuasions to Mr. Tusser and myself was,

ANNO 1591. that whether we brought a ship or nay, or whether we brought money or not, that we should not fail to return again: for, saith he, you shall know of the effecting of greater matters than you know of or can imagine. Whereupon he wished your lordship's head upon London-bridge: for, saith he, there is no prince in Christendom hath the like statesman.

And thus I beseech your lordship to have so much pity of me, and not to let me lie in prison, unless it be the better to effect the causes above-mentioned: for if they think I am a papist, my friends will do nothing for me. This gentleman knoweth of none of our proceedings; for we brought him only to discover seminaries and Jesuits: for he told us he would bring us every day to mass.

Subscribed, Edward Boord.

Number XLVII.

Colleges of English in Flanders.

BOORD and Tusser, whither they went. Boord, in his foresaid relation, sheweth, how they went from France to Erre, [Arras,] where they were directed by Harrison, principal of the college, to Apavile, [Abbevile,] to one Anthony Denham, friar, and born in Exeter.

At Abbevile we found Michael Richardson, a northern man, and dealer for the transporting of money for the scholars of Erre, [Arras,] who told us, that within six weeks he would go into England. There is one Richard Owin, an Irishman, that serveth mons. Rambares.

We went to Arras, where we found Clement Hanmer, servant to the abbot.

At Doway, Somerfield, Dr. Web, Dr. White, Chambers, Tayler, Edwards, and Baily, who is dead.

At Valensine, [Valensienne,] Pilkington.

68 At Mounts, Dr. Sanderson. Then we came to Brussels; when Hugh Owin and Mr. Dennis came to them, to know

what service they could do for the king of Spain [as before mentioned.] ANNO 1591.

Upon the back-side of this paper is writ, by the lord Burghley's own hand, XI. N°. 1591. Boord in the Gate-house.

Number XLVIII.

Designs and attempts of Hacket, Coppinger, and Arthington, anno 1591, *to dethrone the queen, and overthrow the government on pretence of* revelation. *Being collections from a book entitled, Conspiracy for pretended Reformation. Printed* 1592, *in divers articles.*

1. THEY intended to appeach two great and honourable counsellors, [the lord treasurer and lord chancellor,] whom they thought would stop the course they had taken, and hinder their purposes, as if they intended some wicked practice against the queen's person.

2. A conspiracy of the death of certain lords of the council, when they should be at the Star-chamber, in case they should give a judgment against certain that were sometime preachers, and then prisoners for misdemeanours, [viz. several puritans,] perilous to the peaceable state of the realm. So Coppinger wrote in a letter to Lancaster, "That if the "lords should give a hard censure against those parties, "the next day, if God shewed not such a fearful judgment "against some of those lords, as that some of them should "not go alive out of that place, then never trust him."

3. They prepared the minds of the people, to stir them up to be in a readiness, and this done by certain seditious letters that were purposely scattered five or six nights before in many streets of London: and a book was printed by Wiggington, who was a turbulent preacher, and in prison, that set on Hacket and the rest. It was entitled, *The fools bolt*; and on the other side of the sheet, *A father's exhortation to a young courtier.* It was in a halting rhyme, roaring lewdly, not only at the governors ecclesiastical, and

ANNO 1591. at other ministers, but at sundry having civil authority and high places; beginning thus:

" My son, if thou a courtier sue to be,
" In flower of youth, this lesson learn of me:
" A Christian true, although he be a clown,
" May teach a king to wear sceptre and crown."

These papers were dispersed by one Browne, and particularly to several women. He was examined about them by the privy-council and others. Wiggington, in his cham-
69 ber, was heard to say, That if the magistrates do not govern well, the people might draw themselves together, and to see a reformation.

4. The purpose of theirs was, not only to make an alteration in the state of the church-government, and to plant in every congregation their eldership or consistory of doctor, pastor, and certain lay-elders, with the appurtenances; but also to change the civil policy of this realm. For which consideration they meant to displace all the lords and others of the privy-council, calling them therefore by their bare names, or with this addition, *late lord-chancellor*, *late lord-treasurer;* and in their stead they had nominated and set down certain others, in truth very honourable and worshipful persons, that should be counsellors.

5. And last and most damnable designment was, the deprivation of her sacred majesty of her crown and dignity, and the destruction of her royal person. Arthington, who confessed afterward, did say, How that these things were to be effected, they opened not unto him; and pretended that he himself was always unwilling to hear any of them. But whether it was meant to do it by some open violence, or secret practice; but sure it is, that popular tumult was not the least means they trusted on; which tumult they hoped to stir up by their pretence of so great holiness, and by calling the realm to repentance in the open streets of London, by offering joys and mercy to the penitent, and by a proclamation also which they made in Cheapside.

Number XLIX.

ANNO 1591.

Some remarks of Hacket, and his two prophets, Coppinger and Arthington.

1. THEIR great pretence was the Spirit, and to be moved by the Spirit. 2. They would not pull off their hats before the magistrates. When two were sent by the queen, lords of the privy-council, and these two prophets brought before them at the lord mayor's house to be examined, they shewed them no reverence or duty, nor would put off their hats till they were plucked off by others. And when some asked them, if they knew before whom they stood, they answered, They knew them right well, but would yield them no duties or reverence, saying, They were greater persons than those before whom they stood. 3. These two prophets used horrible imprecations, confounding and damning themselves, if it were not true as they said.

At one Kay's house in Knightrider's-street, where Hacket lodged, he defaced the queen's arms there; and being examined about it, he said, He was moved thereunto inwardly by the Spirit, to take away her whole power of her authority; and that he would have done worse, had it not been for disquieting his hostess where he lay; because when she found it, she was very angry; and that he was not 70
sorry, nor is sorry, for doing that act, because he was commanded by God to do it, and durst not do otherwise.

He put out also the lions and dragons eyes in the arms; and being asked, Why? he answered, That he did know that lion and dragon did let God's people. He rased out also the cross pictured on the top of the crown. Kay and his wife also deposed, That they found the queen's picture picked with some bodkin, or iron instrument, in the very place representing her royal heart: and this they did with great anger charge Hacket with. He answered, That he had done it, and must and would answer it; adding, That he had greater matters to answer than that; and therefore they need not make such ado for it. But at his examination he denied this point, or said, He did not remember it.

ANNO 1591.

Hacket said, That the queen had forfeited her crown, in that her ministers used extraordinary means to set up religion; and said, There was a man at Walker's house that laid claim to the crown of England, meaning himself: and acknowledged, That he had published in Hampshire, three or four years past, and afterwards in Hertfordshire and in Northamptonshire, that her majesty was not queen; and that she had forfeited her title to the crown. All this he confessed without any torture.

Denies the queen to be queen of England.

When he was put upon the torture, he confessed her majesty to be his lawful queen, and affirmed that he honoured her, and was sorry for his offences: and added, That if Coppinger, Wiggington, and one other, (whom he named,) were well sifted and straitly examined, they would utter and declare sundry matters of treason.

Hacket tortured.

He was brought to his trial from Bridewell, July 26, [that is, a week after his and his companions doings in Cheapside, which was July the 19th,] at the sessions house near Newgate, before the lord mayor, lord Wentworth, sir Gilbert Gerrard, master of the rolls, sir Wolstan Dixy, sir Richard Martin, aldermen, sergeant Fleetwood, recorder of London, and others in the commission. After two several indictments against him, he was bid to hold up his hand, which he did. Then the first indictment was read; which was for his saying several times, That the queen was not queen of England; and that queen Elizabeth did represent all hypocrisy; and had forfeited her crown; and was worthy to be deprived. And that he defaced her arms in Kay's house: and that he said, He was moved thereto by the Spirit. He pleaded guilty, saying, All must be as you will.

Indicted.

The second indictment was for defacing the queen's arms, and rasing a certain picture of the queen's majesty in the said Kay's house, and thrusting an iron instrument into that part of the picture that represented the queen's breast and heart: and for treating with Coppinger and Arthington at Walker's house concerning his traitorous purposes and imaginations. And being asked, Whether he were

guilty or not guilty to this indictment? he began to answer more perversely, saying to the bench, You have wit enough to judge for me and yourselves. Being asked again, he said, Few words are best: it is good to know much and say little. Being asked again, Whether he were guilty or not? He said, *Ambo;* [that is, *Both;*] and afterwards he pleaded, Not guilty. Then being asked, By whom he would be tried? he said, By the country. And afterwards he said again, By the jury. And then burst out into blasphemous and hellish words against the majesty of God, in truth, not to be heard by Christian ears, and therefore not to be uttered. ANNO 1591. 71

Then the queen's attorney desired, in behalf of the queen, That seeing he could not be brought to any other plea, that judgment might be entered; and that he had pleaded guilty to the one indictment, and stood mute to the second: whereupon he was to be convicted of both indictments. The attorney and the solicitor, for the better satisfaction of the world, thought fit somewhat to shew how heinous and how evident his treasons were. The recorder then gave judgment upon Hacket.

Preachers travailed with him before the day of his execution. At first he gave froward and lewd answers; but at last they brought him to a serious consideration, as it seems, of his own state, and of the grievousness of his treasons. On the 27th of July, the day before his execution, Mr. Richard Young, an active justice of peace of London, wished him to submit himself, and confess his fault before Almighty God. Hacket did accordingly. Then he wished him to take patiently what God had laid upon him. Hacket said, He would unfeignedly so do; and withal asked the queen forgiveness, saying, He was sorry for the words he had spoken: and said, It was a gracious and happy turn that their treasons were in time revealed, for otherwise it would have cost a number of innocent men their bloods, and himself he thought should nevertheless also have been slain among them: but now he trusted in God that others also would confess their treason; and that her majesty was

ANNO 1591. a gracious princess, and would forgive them if they asked mercy. Upon his desire Mr. Yong gave him some money; Hacket thanked him, and desired Mr. Yong to pray for him. In this good temper he continued that night and the next morning, until looking out at one of the windows to the street toward Cheapside, he saw all the streets filled with people expecting his execution; thereupon he began very desperately and blasphemously to answer such as exhorted him. Coming down the stairs, one of the sheriffs wished him to be mindful of Christ's death, who suffered for him; he uttered execrable blasphemy against Christ's blessed passion. The rest of his behaviour and hideous expressions may be found in our historians.

The next day after, Coppinger, wilfully having abstained from meat seven or eight days together, died in Bridewell, and Arthington lived still in the Counter in Wood-street, reserved, as was hoped, unto sincere repentance; for immediately after Hacket's execution, he wrote a letter unto two great counsellors (whom, among others, he had lewdly slandered) of submission, and afterwards more at large to the body of the council, the whole course, as he pretended, of this action, so far as he was made acquainted with it; hum-
72 bly craving their lordships' mediation unto the queen's most excellent majesty for his pardon; and acknowledging his dangerous error and devilish seduction.

To all the rest this may be added. When Arthington was with Hacket at Walker's house in Broken-wharf, on the same day when he and Coppinger had proclaimed Hacket in Cheapside to be the prophet sent from God, Haynen, parson of St. Mary Somerset, (an honest and learned preacher,) was present, and looked upon some of Hacket's papers that were then seized; but Hacket reproved him for it, and said, It appertained not unto him, but unto the magistrates, to read those papers. Arthington then told that preacher, That the judgments that were over the city were very great, and that the time was come that God would reform his church, and root out all idolatrous priests; and the ministers of the city were no better. This preacher de-

manded of Hacket, Why he seduced Arthington to bring him into such blasphemy? (for he, at the end of all his expressions, used horrible imprecations, and said, If it were not so, *God confound me.*) Hacket answered, That abundance of zeal caused him to exceed in that sort. Further, he asked Hacket, How he liked that Arthington ascribed unto him an office peculiar to Christ? Hacket answered, That God had a great work to bring to pass by himself in this land; affirming also that he was a prophet. ANNO 1591.

And to conclude. What understanding there was between these wretches and Marprelate and his company may be gathered from part of a letter from Coppinger to Udal, who was then a prisoner in Southwark: telling him, That the cause why he repaired not unto him (and the rest who were in prison) so oft as he was wont to do, was for doubt of more trouble and danger that might grow to them thereby; and that in respect of an action which he had to do.

Number L.

A petition of divers prisoners, puritans, in the Fleet and other prisons, to the lord treasurer, for the furtherance of their humble petition to the lords of the council for their enlargement. Dated December 4, 1591.

HAVING a purpose, right honourable, by most humble petition, to come unto the lords of her majesty's most honourable privy-council for bail, agreeable unto law, (as we are informed,) until their lordships shall please to call us to further trial of our innocence in that we are charged with: we thought good, besides our petition to the lords, to address our most humble suit particularly unto your lordship, not only as defendants to a principal judge of the court where our cause dependeth, but also as children of the land to a chief father of the same; which taketh no pleasure in this our afflicted state, but will, as we are persuaded, tenderly weigh it, so far as any equal course of justice may relieve it. For we nothing doubt but your lordship, in dis- 73

ANNO 1591.

course of reason, and in experience of the state of students, can easily discern that a year's imprisonment (which we all, with a surcrease, have suffered) will strike deeper into our healths, having regard to our bringing up, than some number of years of others, whose bringing up hath been other, and which have followed their trades of life.

It is well known, that divers papists, not only denying her majesty's lawful authority, but giving the same to a stranger, yea, to the sworn enemy of ours, and of all Christian princes, have yet received favour of freedom from their imprisonment. There is never an one of us but hath been sworn to her majesty's supremacy, and some of us, upon occasion, divers times. And if we be doubted how we stand affected this time, notwithstanding we have given no cause (as we are persuaded) of that suspicion, yet, to satisfy the authority under which we live, we will be ready to take the oath again.

And notwithstanding some (not so well affected towards us as we are towards them) do suggest that we carry some other interpretation with us than the meaning of the law is, yet have we verily no other than all the reformed churches have in the dutiful acknowledgment of the authority of their several magistrates; none other than her majesty's own admonition in the end of her injunctions, and the 37th article of the convocation; and especially the most authentic and classical writers of this church, both bishops, deans, and other men of note, with privilege, with allowance, with oversight of the bishops themselves; and finally, with great commendation of all, have written of that point. Finally, we may affirm, with truth to be justified, that we hold no other than that some of the chiefest of them, whose hand is against us in this cause of further reformation, have set down, when they either quietly have written of this point, or have buckled with the papists, &c. However, writing ἀγωνιστικῶς against us, and put on by mislike of the persons against whom they write, crossed and contradicted their own judgment.

And thus craving pardon of our boldness in detaining

you from so weighty affairs of watching continually for the good of this commonwealth, and expecting that favour from your lordship which either equity or a regardful consideration of our afflicted state may require, &c. ANNO 1591.

Your lordship's most humble to command,

Prisoners in and about the city,

Thom. Cartwright,
Humfrey Fen,
Andrew King,
Daniel Wyght,
John Payne,
Edward Lord,
Edmund Snape,
William Proudlove,
Melancthon Jewell.

Number LI. 74

The heads of the colleges in Cambridge to the lord Burghley, their high chancellor: concerning Legate their printer, who was hindered the printing of the Bible and Psalms in metre by the stationers in London; whose part the heads took as their printer.

Right honourable, and our singular good lord,

SUCH is the importunity of our adversaries, in devising against us new complaints, as we are forced eftsoons to renew our just defence, ever while they charge us as doing wrong to Mr. Barker, [the queen's printer,] in printing a Bible of the lesser volume. Now they accuse us as offering like injury to Mr. Day, in publishing therewith the Psalms in metre. They seek, in dividing the persons, to make us seem guilty of many crimes. Whereas, in very truth, our printer having for his copy one only volume, wherein both those books are joined together, could not conveniently set forth the one without the other, seeing both do jointly and usually serve for the public celebration of divine service. The suit which they have made unto your lordship for the stay of our printer until the next term is so prejudicial to the poor man, as if they should prevail therein, it could not but tend to his utter undoing; especially Sturbridge-fair

ANNO 1591. now drawing near; being the chiefest time wherein he hopeth to reap greatest fruit of this his travail.

We are the rather therefore right humbly to crave of your good lordship, that if they cannot be pacified otherwise, your lordship would be pleased to require the opinions of the master of the rolls, the lord chief justice of the common-pleas, and justice Peryam; who all, or some of them, as we hear, either already are, or shortly will be there in London. Ourselves have conferred with divers of good skill of the laws of the land, who, not drawn to favour us in respect of our fee, but uttering freely their resolute judgment, find no just reason whereon the adverse party may safely rely. For the chief ground they seem to lay, viz. that the prince, by virtue only of prerogative, may, by a later grant, either take away or abridge a former, being no ways hurtful to the state, is not only against the rule of natural equity, but also dangerous to all degrees, opening a way to the overthrow of all patents and privileges, as well of inferior trades, as of offices, lands, and livings whatsoever.

We have not sought to call in question the validity of their monopolies and engrossments, whereby such effects do daily ensue, as poor scholars are either driven to be destitute of most needful books, or to buy them, to their singular hinderance, at excessive prices. We shall account our-
75 selves well appaid, if our poor printer may, with their good patience, now and then deal with some few of the most saleable copies for his necessary maintenance in honest art; if your honourable persuasion (whereunto it might well beseem him, in a case of such equity, to give better ear to) cannot induce them to yield to this, rather than our dutiful regard should seem to be wanting in the necessary defence of this our charter, so equitable in itself, so commodious to the students of the university, so beneficial to many other subjects of the realm, granted by her majesty's most noble father, ratified by the gracious bounty of herself, established by act of parliament so many years past,

may not be thought sufficient against their grant so late obtained, we know not upon privilege we may hereafter repose our trust. ANNO 1591.

Wherefore once again most humbly beseeching your good lordship to continue your honourable favour toward the university, in preserving the ancient and lawful charters of the same. From Cambridge, the 16th of July, 1591. Signed by,

Robert Some, vice-chancellor,	Tho. Preston,
William Whitaker,	Lawrence Chaderton,
Tho. Byng,	Roger Goad,
Tho. Legg,	Umphrey Tyndal,
	Jo. Du-port.

Before this, Legate [their printer] had printed Terence a year or two ago, in a small volume for the use of the scholars; and the impression the stationers had seized, or as many as they could get.

And before that, Thomas Thomas [the printer before Legate] had made a dictionary of his own, and printed it; and the stationers printed it at London upon him, to his great hinderance. These matters the university complained of to their chancellor.

Number LII.

Hugh Broughton, the learned Hebrician, his letter to the lord Burghley; occasioned by Bishop and Newburgh, stationers, who had seized his books newly printed, and taken out of his chamber. Desiring his lordship's order to have them restored.

MELCHIZEDEK.

CONSIDERING your lordship's great business, I would not trouble you but in a matter proceeding from yourself, and again waiting upon your determination. The sum is concerning books taken from me by Bishop and Newbury, wardens of the Stationers, which were printed by allowance,

ANNO 1591. paid for by myself, and carried to my chamber; having no one word against religion or policy, nor bitter against any 76 man. Of which the archbishop of Canterbury required to judge, of his honour and learning, said to one Mr. Hobkinson, That if they had been brought to him, he would have allowed them; and sent him to Bishop the stationer, with word, that he should bring them home: which yet the stationers refuse to do without a warrant, which will not be granted without your lordship's word. I think I may in justice require so much of your lordship; for the book was written upon urgent provocation of two D. D. [doctors of divinity,] extremely against themselves and her majesty's ground of religion; viz. *The stay of scripture*, in defence of my book dedicated to her majesty: wherein, I am sure, that posterity may see chief points in few hours which cost me many years. Wherein also I settled a consent of Jew and Gentile, of Moses and Evangelists, ever as all ages understood them; and one of the two still, where we strive.

I chose two points to dash at their stuff, to spare their fame, to close up the matter, that the learned might see a victory, and the simple might think that there was not great variance, thought a lapse in a treatise of Melchizedek; dealing against Dr. Croke, and where sorest he might be disgraced. But where learned men being of his mind, his fame should less be annoyed, though he were deceived. And Dr. Reynolds, who strives, that *si angelus dixisset post octies* 70 *annos excidetur Christus, hic præcise et proprie locutus esset angelus,* be not known to be so culpable, but convicted in one word, that Daniel expressly telleth, That the angel made him understand by his own grant should yield; who granted, That if Daniel knew his own meaning, and rightly knew what the angel meant, the words were to be taken properly.

Thus I thought of a quiet apology, sparing learned men. The suppressing of my book wrought them harm; for I was forced to call them both to account, and to object an hundred theses of great importance against each of them; whereby all learned condemn them both. Your lordship

feared harm by the book, &c. I pray your lordship that you would send them word by some of your men, to deliver me that which by law they could not take away, and to let them pass under your protection, to mitigate the rumour against two learned men. ANNO 1591.

Your lordship's to command,
H. Broughton.

Number LIII.

Anno 1591, *Nov.* 16. *A note of the Indian fleet of king Philip, dispersed and cast away. Sent to the lord treasurer.*

On this paper is written, by the lord treasurer's hand, *Sir Tho. Gage*, as from whom this information came.

OF 102 ships, lost 54; men lost, 1000. The treasure landed at Havana.

By examination of divers Spaniards and Portugals, upon their oaths, we find the loss sustained by the king and his subjects to be as followeth. Nova Spania fleet outward bound, was of 52 sail, whereof returned to Havana but 33; so lost 19 sail, and therein 2600 men; by account whereof many soldiers and passengers. 77

Terra Firma fleet outward bound was 50 sail; whereof some stole away for Spain by one or two at a time; and some were taken, and some sunk; so that only 23 ships came to the Havana; missing 27 sail with about 3000 men, by estimation.

At Havana met and joined together, 33 sail from Nova Spania; 23 sail from Terra Firma; 12 sails of S. Domingo; and 9 sail from Funduras; 77 sail in the whole; and set sail about the 17th of July. The admiral and vice-admiral being of 600 ton apiece, carrying 30 pieces of brass, and 500 men apiece; which kept company together until the 10th of August. At which time, and within twenty days after, all the great ships were cast away; so that by the end of August they were all perished, saving 48 sail;

ANNO 1591. whereof about 16 sail recovered to Tarseries only; all the rest forced by a storm to keep the sea, and not like to escape, but either to be taken or cast away: and in those ships cast away is thought to be about 5000 men. But the king's treasure is all landed at Havana, to come home in six frigates in January next.

Camb. Eliz. This Spanish plate fleet, ann. 1591, was waited for by the English, by several of the queen's ships, Thomas Howard, second son of the duke of Norfolk, in the admiral, unsuccessful.

Number LIV.

The queen's charter of Quietus est, *with her broad seal appendant, to the lord treasurer Burghley, discharging him from attendance on her, and to enjoy his beloved Theobalds, anno* 1591. *Drawn up by the queen herself in a facetious style, to cheer the said treasurer, who was, it seems, melancholy, and desirous to retire to a private life at his seat at Theobalds.*

Transcribed by some writer in old text hand; but the spelling is kept according to the queen's own writing. It is dated at Theobalds thus: *Teste meipsa apud Tybolles.*

ELIZABETHA Anglorum id est, a nitore angelorum, regina formosissima et felicissima: [the rest is in English.] To the disconsolate and retyred spryte, the heremite of Tyboll, and to al oother disaffected sowles, claiming by, from, or under the said heremit, sendeth greting. Where, in our high coourt of chancerie it is given us to understand, that yoou, sir Heremite, the abandonate of natures fair workes, and servaunt to heavens woonders, have (for the space of two years and two moonthes) possessed yoor self of fair Tybollt, with her sweet rosary the same
78 tyme, the recreation of our right trusty and right wel beloved, sir William Sitsilt, knt. leaving to him the old rude repoze, wherein twice five years (at his cost) yoor contemplate life was relieved, which place and fate inevitable hath

brought greefs innumerable, (for looer greef biddeth no compare,) suffering yoor solitary ey to bring into hir house desolation and moorning, joyes destroyers and annoye frendes; whereby paradice is grown wilderness, and for green grass are comen gray hearz, with cruel banishment from the frute of long laboure, the possession whereof he hath holden many yeerz, the want of the mean profit thereof (health and gladness) having been greatly to hiz hindrance; which toucheth us much in the interest we have in hiz faithful servicez; besides the law of hiz looving neibours and frends, infinite, as by the record of their countenance most plainly may appear. ANNO 1591.

Wee upon advised consideration have commanded you heremit, to yoor old cave, too good for the forsaken, too bad for oour worthily belooved coouncillour. And becauz we greatly tender yoor comfort, we have given poour to oour chauncillour, to make oout such and so many writs, as to him shal be thought good, to abjure desolations and mourning (the consumer of sweetness) to the frozen seas and deserts of Arabia Petrosa, upon pain of 500 despights to their terror, and contempt of their torments, if they attempt any part of yoour hoous again; ENJOYNING you to the enjoyment of yoour own hoous, and delight without memory of any mortal accident or wretched adversary.

And for that you have been so good a servaunt to common tranquillity, we command solace to give the ful and pacifick possession of al and every part thereof: not departing until oour favour (that ever hath inclined to yoor meek nature) have assured you peace in the possession thereof. Wherein we command al causez within the prerogative of oour high favour to give you no interruption. And this under the paine aforesaid they shal not omitt. *Teste meipsa apud Tybolls*, 10mo *die Maii*, *regni nostri* 33o.

On the back-side of this charter is, Per Cancellar. Angl.
Chr. Hatton.

ANNO 1591.

Number LV.

Advertisements from Spain to the lord high treasurer of England, so endorsed.

A brief of such news as I, Henry Carminck, of Droushed, a merchant, could learn in Spain; arriving there the 1*st of March* 1590, *and departing thence home the* 21*st of April* 1591.

THERE departed from Ferrol, about the 20th of February last, to the number of 25 sail for Britain, with 6000 soldiers; and being at sea were dispersed, some to the coast
79 of France, and four of them back again to the port Vivers in Gallicia, where they remained fourteen days in very foul weather. After which time there came commandment, that they should set forward again toward the port where they were bound.

Also I heard, that the duke of Savoy hath entered into Mersellia, and holdeth the same by the right of his wife.

It is reported, that the king of Spain hath promised to help the leaguers with 12,000 men by the last of May next.

There was lost 11 of the best ships that were bound forth for treasure to the Indies, and not any saved in them. After which loss the king sent forth sixteen other ships for a new supply. There is by report come home three small ships with four millions of treasure. Nevertheless some think it not so, but only a speech given out; thinking that if Drake hear that the treasure be come home, that then he will not set forth; and also that by this report the soldiers will the rather enter into pay. For as they were accustomed to be paid monthly, they have been of late five months behind.

Sir William Stanley [that betrayed Deventer to the Spaniard] is at Madrid, and hath by report 200 ducats by the month. He hath six men attending upon him, and yet is scarce able to maintain the port of a mean gentleman. And also the Irish gentlemen that be there, and have the king's

pay, are scarce able to pay for their victuals, their apparel being very bare and simple. ANNO 1591.

There grew in Madrid a mutiny by the commons of the town against the king, for that he pressed them and all the country with new impositions. So that they wish that Drake were their king, then should they live as freemen, whereas they are now but captives. Upon which tumult, there were to the number of 60 hanged, and about 200 whipped and carted.

There came post from Madrid to Ferrol, by sir William Stanley's footman, commanding every general captain and officer whatsoever, to be in a readiness presently to withstand sir Francis Drake; for there came letters to the court at Madrid, that Drake had promised that he would keep his Easter in Ferrol. Whereupon they commanded muster to be taken from 16 to 60; and for so many as I saw, (to the number of 4000,) they were but simply weaponed, and poor naked people, and such as, in my judgment, would never stand to fight. And to prevent the English fleet from coming into the river of Ferrol, the Spanish have moored five great armathos, and two galliasses, as bulwarks to keep the enter of the harbour.

Moreover, I heard that there was (since the 1st of November) three popes seated in Rome; whereof two are killed or poisoned. For that they held with the right of the king of Navarre, now king of France. Moreover, it is further reported, that there is a strong fleet builded at Blevet, and to straiten the same here lieth in the harbour five armathos and two galliasses.

By me, Henry Carminck.

ANNO 1591.

80

Number LVI.

The cardinals to the city of Paris, from Rome; giving the news of pope Gregory's death, anno 1591.

Miseratione divina episcopi, presbyteri et diaconi sanctæ Romanæ ecclesiæ cardinales, dilectissimis nobis in Christo, salutem et synceram in Domino charitatem.

MAGNO cum dolore et plane inviti has ad vos literas damus, quas cor vestrum scimus quasi peracuto doloris gladio pariter transfixuras. Nam quo major vestra est cum hac sancta apostolica sede conjunctio, quo illustrior pietas et erga Christi vicarium beati Petri successorem devotio et obedientia, eo acerbiori mæroris sensu vos commoveri certum est, cum aliquid nobis luctuosum accidit, qui vos paterne diligimus, aut ecclesiæ Romanæ matri vestræ charissimæ lachrymarum materiam præbet, quæ vos in visceribus Christi complectitur.

Sed jam tandem illud enunciandum quod et mens et lingua effari effugit; pater noster sanctissimus, pater amantissimus, in quo maxime conquiescebamus, Gregorius XIIII. summus pontifex nocte hesterna, sicut Domino placuit, caducæ hujus vitæ brevem cursum absolvit, et ad sempiternæ vitæ gaudia migravit; sic enim pie nobis persuademus. Vitæ enim integerrimæ actæ mors consentanea fuit. Nam ut omittamus quod sacris omnibus sacramentis Christiano ritu communitùs seipsum et innocentem animum Creatori suo cum omni humilitate libentissime tradidit, illud certe præterire non possumus, quod paulo antequam e vita discederet, sacrum nostrum collegium ad se vocavit, et magna constantia et pietate, ut talem pontificem decebat, gravissimis verbis testatus est unam esse catholicam fidem, quam Christus Dominus noster docuit, sancti apostoli et eorum successores prædicarunt, quam sancta Romana ecclesia omnium ecclesiarum mater et magistra docuit semper et docet; in qua se per Dei gratiam vixisse, in ea se velle mori. Tum præterea magno quodam affectu, ut plane ex intimo corde promanare perspiceremus, commendavit nostro sacro col-

legio causam nobilissimi et Christianissimi regni Franciæ, hoc est causam Christi, causam catholicæ religionis, causam totius reipublicæ Christianæ; cujus tam insignis et tam nobilis portio regnum illud est. Nosque magnopere admonuit, ut quæ tanta spe inchoata sunt non deseramus. ANNO 1591.

Nos autem sanctissimo patri, etsi multis cum lachrymis, ea respondimus, quæ tam justa et tam salutaria momento respondere debebamus, idem omnium nostrum ardor et desiderium erat: quare illius saluberrimas cohortationes cordi nostro infixas fore diximus, et reipsa jam efficimus. Scribimus enim ad dilectissimum nobis in Christo Herculem montis Mastiani ducem, et militum exercitus sedis apostolicæ præfectum generalem, ut provinciam sibi a sanctissimo patre impositam strenue sustineat, in opere tam præclare inchoato insistat, mandata illius sanctæ memoriæ quam accuratissime 81
exequi pergat, eadem nos cupere, eadem mandare, eandem nostram voluntatem esse.

In eandem sententiam scripsimus et ad apostolicos nuntios in regno isto ne latum unguem a præscripto itinere discedant.

Quare etsi negare non possumus multum in optimo pontifice amissum esse, qui de istius regni salute dies noctesque cogitabat, tamen æquum est ut D. D. W. [dominationes vestræ] seipsas consolentur, et bono ac forti animo sint, et in Dei providentia confidant. Vivit enim per Dei gratiam apostolica sedes, eadem apud vos materna charitas, oblivisci illos non potest quos in Christo genuit. Sacrum hoc nostrum collegium quantum in Domino poterit vos semper arctissime complectetur. Novimus virtutem vestram, novimus animi magnitudinem, novimus invictam fortitudinem istius regiæ et nobilissimæ civitatis pro fide catholica tuenda adversus omnes Satanæ machinationes et omnes inferorum portas. Vestra constantia bonis aliis exemplo fuit; et nunc quoque cæteros catholicos corroborat et sustentat.

Quare, dilectissimi nobis in Christo, constantes estote, viriliter agite, et confortetur cor vestrum in eo qui potens, et eo qui facit mirabilia magna solus.

Nos paulo post in apostolicum conclave ingrediemur, et

ANNO 1591. ab infinita Dei clementia cito pontificem summum impetraturos confidimus; nec dubitamus eodem animo, eodem spiritu, eadem erga nos charitate illum fore qua sanctæ rec. [recordationis] Gregorius fuit. Itaque vos magnopere hortamur, ut tot perpessos labores, tot merita vestra perfectæ patientiæ opere cumuletis, et cæteris, quod hactenus fecistis, vestræ gloriæ splendore præluceatis. Rogamus autem vos in Domino, ut sollicitudinem nostram vestris orationibus adjuvetis: ut ecclesiæ catholicæ sponsus et caput visibile, pastor universalis Domini gregis nobis a Patre misericordiarum, brevi concedatur, qui nostrum et vestrum et bonorum omnium desiderium in istius præsenti regni causa salutariter auxiliante Domino perficiat. Dat' Romæ in palatio apostolico, et congregatione nostra generali, sub sigillis trium nostrum in ordine priorum, die XVI Octobris 1591. Apostolica sede vacante.

Suprascriptio.
Dilectissimis nobis in Christo senatui, clero, præposito mercatorum et scabinis populi civitatis Parisiensis.

Subscriptum
Silvius Antonianus.

Number LVII.

Londino-Gallica ecclesia.

John Castel, minister there, in the name of the members of that church, upon occasion of a supply to be sent to the French protestants in France. His letter writ to the
82 *archbishop of Canterbury and the lord treasurer, sending to this church to make their contribution for them under persecution. Castel gives account of the members of this congregation, and their poor condition, in a Latin letter to this tenor.*

THAT their church consisted of strangers, that were deprived of their goods and estates out of their own countries. That one part, and that the least, were Frenchmen: and they denied not, but that heretofore more were most kindly received by this nation into this port. But such as

were of better condition long since returned, to defend their own seats against the rage of the enemies: but the men of meaner condition, and of military age, being helped by the liberalities of good men, (their wives and children being left to this church's care,) followed the king's camp: that those that remained there being exhausted with perpetual calamities, and had often suffered shipwreck, by reason of the continual tempest of war, did very hardly live. ANNO 1591.

That the other part [of this church,] and that the greatest, were Hannonii, Artesii, Flandri, Gallicani, that is, sprung out of the countries which obey the Spaniard; and in less need and want (some few excepted) than the rest. That from the good God it is granted to them, that in some certain manufactures [*opificia*] they excelled: but nevertheless since those works almost lie buried, all provision by the injury of times taken away, and commerce with other nations extinguished. That it is a wonder, and scarce to be believed, what great miseries the too deep silence of the merchants draws along with it. That they had about ten or twelve months since borrowed a great sum of money to relieve their poor, that they might not beg from door to door, to the disgrace of the church: out of which debt they could not tell how to get free, unless by some miracle from God.

Number LVIII.

Robert Beal, clerk of the council many years, now in some employment in York: his letter to the lord treasurer, upon the queen's sending for him to wait again, after some long absence, about the year 1591.

WHEREAS not long sith your honourable lordship signified unto me, that her majesty's pleasure was, that I should be sent for to wait again, I having considered of the matter, shall most humbly desire your lordship to inform her majesty as followeth, on my behalf, or else to procure me so much favour, as that I may deliver as much unto her majesty myself.

ANNO 1591. 83

First, I never refused to wait, nor ever refuse to wait so long as I shall be able. Upon the granting of my office at York, Mr. Secretary told me, That her majesty's pleasure was, that I should continue in these parts; for that I might be employed about foreign causes. As also I then was of the states of Denmark, &c. refusing nothing, although it were to my great trouble and charge. I did then willingly yield unto my companions, that were not otherwise provided, (as I was,) not to intermeddle in any thing whereby any profit might be gotten: and yet promised to be always ready to assist any of them upon any important service of her majesty; as I did the whole summer when the Spanish fleet passed by. And another summer I was with the earl of Leicester in the Low Countries.

The principal cause why I have not attended is the weakness and unability of my body to stand long, and to go up and down as I have done. My eyes wax dim. It is well known I am many times troubled with the gout and the stone, twice sith the beginning of this month. By much standing my feet will commonly swell. And if I do not prevent at the first the falling down of the humour, I am forced to use fomentation, poultices, plasters, and other physic a good while after. I have almost attained the declining year of fifty of mine age. In my youth I took great pains, and travailing in divers countries on foot for lack of other abilities. Besides, I have served nineteen years complete in this place, which is a longer time than ever any did serve sith the office was erected, one only excepted: and therein have spent much labour to attain to some ability of service, without any regard of my private estate or commodity.

I cannot deny but that it hath grieved me, that having served so long without being convicted or charged with any disloyalty or dishonesty, I have had so little favour; which hath discouraged me so much, that whereas I sometime had some account with princes, and divers others abroad, as their letters unto me, if need be, could testify: yet for that I have not had that favour, they both have less account

of me; and myself have withdrawn myself from any letters or action, either with them or any other. ANNO 1591.

The chiefest mean of my living consisteth only upon the moiety of the casualties of the office at York: so as if I should be called to any service, I should not be able to do it, but under some other, without leaving my family unprovided. And whensoever I shall die, it will be found that I shall leave the poorest wife and children that ever any of my place did.

Nevertheless I do content myself with my mean estate, and shall be still contented to serve, as far as I shall be able. But my desire is, that it may be so, as my body may be able to perform it: and therefore most humbly beseech her majesty to yield me the favour, that seeing there be many others, that have like and greater fees, without either serving as I have done, or daily attendance, which is required of me, I may enjoy my place and fee of *clerk of the council* still, and attend as the state of my body will give me leave.

Number LIX. 84

Mr. Beal's voyages and embassies: which he writ and sent to the lord treasurer, to manifest his public services and good deserts.

A VOYAGE to the prince of Orange; carried with him seven persons [attendants] with him, and had allowance of her majesty 40*s.* per diem. Then he solicited the merchants' causes [against the pirates.] One of his businesses was to prosecute the injury done to my lord of Oxford; whereof three were found, and one imprisoned, and some of his stuff recovered. He was then in danger of drowning, and taken by the Spaniards, who lay at Brewershaven, by which he ventured to pass. Ann. 1576. Camb. Eliz. p. 214.

He went a second voyage to Holland, being abroad six months, and had with him eight men; and his allowance was 40*s.* per diem. Passing the seas, he and his company

ANNO 1591. were spoiled of 250*l.* ready money, besides all their apparel and other furniture.

He made a long and winter journey, making a circuit to and fro of 1400 English miles at the least; repairing personally to nine princes, and sending her majesty's letters to three others.

Although I never desired to be employed, yet being put into it, my endeavour hath been to discharge the credit committed to me, as might be for her majesty's honour. And as for her highness's sake great honour was in sundry places shewed me, so could I not but by some remembrance requite the same. And I protest upon my allegiance, that the gifts that I gave at the duke of Brunswick's and the landgrave's in ready money, and money's worth, for her majesty's honour, being her gossips, and having had nothing to my knowledge sent unto them, (and in other places,) came to better than 100*l.* And whoso knoweth the fashions and cravings of those princes' courts may well see, that, having been at so many places, I could not escape with less. My charges came in this voyage to 932*l.* one ways or other.

Before my going over I sold a chain, which I had of the queen of Scots, for 65*l.*——The duke and duchess of Brunswic gave me a present of 1500 dollars, which is at the least in current money 340*l.*

These journeys into Holland and Germany were about the years 1577 and 1578.

Another letter to the lord treasurer, April —— 1578.

The queen at sundry times uttered hard speeches of Beal's expensiveness, and the charges he put her to in these two voyages; which occasioned him to write to the lord treasurer, and to give particular account of his expenses.

He complained he was in such poverty, that he could not longer hold out, but must give over, and go to some corner,
85 without the queen assisted him——I thank God, I have the testimony of a clear conscience, that I have served her majesty truly and uprightly——Touching my ordinary places,

if I have been a briber or encroacher, or have covetously behaved myself, upon just proof, I desire no other favour than to be hanged at the court gates. If I have gotten any thing by serving any man's turn, either foreign or within the realm; (as I hear that some of my predecessors did;) and if I would have been dishonest, (perhaps needed not to be so importune for relief at her majesty's hands,) I crave the same reward. ANNO 1591.

Besides the losses of money and other things I sustained upon the seas, I would not be in like danger to be assaulted, and so violently taken hurt, kept under hatches, menaced with killing and drowning, in so terrible a sort, as it amazeth me to think of it: and after left without bread, drink, money, or other furniture, to the mercy of the seas, for ten times the charge her majesty hath been at——being appointed to take the charge in hand, [that of an ambassador from the queen,] although I bear low sail in court; yet was I not in that service forgetful of her majesty's honour and my duty, but so far forth as my allowance and ability could stretch, I omitted not to do that became me.

Besides my six years continual attendance and service, I will not report the good-will I had to serve her majesty's ambassador in France, since the year 1564, and in Germany; as Mr. Henry Knowles and Mr. Killigrew can witness, without any charge to her highness.——

If it be suspected, that because in my ordinary service I make no great show, because I behaved not myself as it became me abroad; I thank God I know how to use myself in both. And as the countenance of the one was, I trust, for the time sufficiently maintained, so am I not now forgetful of my poor state, whereto I was to return, *deposito officio*. I can frame myself to live after the old manner, as long as it shall please her majesty, in a bare cloak in this *pistrina*, or out of it, rather than to be employed any more in so dangerous and costly voyages.

ANNO 1592.

Number LX.

A letter of the Puritan ministers imprisoned, to her majesty, in vindication of their innocency. Dated April 1592.

May it please your excellent majesty,

THERE is nothing, right gracious sovereign, next to the saving mercy of Almighty God, that can be more comfortable than your highness's favour, as to all other your faithful and dutiful subjects; so to us, your majesty's most humble suppliants, who are by our calling ministers of God's holy word, and by our present condition now and
86 of long time prisoners in divers prisons in and about the city of London. For which cause our most humble suit is, that it may please your most excellent majesty, graciously to understand our necessary answer to such grievous charges as we hear to be informed against us. Which, if they were true, might be just cause of withdrawing for ever from us your highness's gracious protection and favour; which above all other earthly things we most desire to enjoy. The reason of our trouble is a suspicion that we should be guilty of many heinous crimes: but these supposed crimes we have not been charged with in any due and ordinary course of proceeding, by open accusation and witnesses. But being called up to London by authority of some of your majesty's commissioners in causes ecclesiastical, we have been required by them to take an oath of inquisition, or office, as it is called. For not taking whereof we were first committed to prison, and since have continued there a long time, notwithstanding that all of us, save one, have been deprived of our livings, and degraded of our ministry.

Whereof, for that the oath is the next and immediate cause of our trouble, we have made our answer first to that; and then after also to the crimes that are suggested and secretly informed against us. And then they go on to vindicate themselves under these several heads, viz. the oath, schism, rebellion, supremacy, excommunication, conferences, and singularity.

The oath.

ANNO 1592.

As for the oath, the reason why we took it not is, because it is without limitation of any certain matter, infinite and general, to answer whatsoever shall be demanded of us. And of this kind of oath we find neither rule nor example in the word of God. But contrariwise, both precepts and precedents of all lawful oaths reported in the same, lead to this, that an oath ought to be taken with judgment, and so as he that sweareth may see the bounds of his oath, and to what certain condition it doth bind him, &c. This oath is to inquire of our private speeches and conference with our dearest and nearest friends; yea, of the very secret thoughts and intents of our hearts, that so we may furnish both matter of accusation, and evidence of proof against ourselves, which was not used to be done in causes of heresy nor of high treason. For these are the words of the statute of your most noble father king Henry VIII. For that the most expert and best learned cannot escape the danger of such captious interrogatories, (as the law calleth them,) which are accustomed to be administered by the ordinaries of this realm. As also that it standeth not with the right order of justice or good equity, that any person should be convicted, or put to the loss of life, good name, or goods, unless it be by due accusation and witness, or by presentment, verdict, confession, or process of outlawry. And further, for the avoiding untrue accusation and presentments, which might be maliciously conspired and kept secret, unrevealed, until time might be espied, to have men thereof by malice convicted; it was ordained, that none should be put to answer, but upon accusations and presentments taken in open and manifest courts by the oath of twelve men.

Ann. 25 H. 8. ch. 14.

Ann. 35. H. 8. sess. 3. ch. 15.

87

Schism.

As to the charge of schism: and that they so far condemned the present state of our church, that they held it not for any true, visible church of God, as it is established by public authority within the land; and therefore refused to have any part or communion with it in public prayers,

ANNO 1592.

or in the ministry of the word and sacraments; which, if it were true, we were of all men living the most unthankful, first to Almighty God, and next to your excellent majesty, by whose blessed means we are partakers of that happy liberty of the profession of the gospel, and of the true service of God, that by your highness's gracious government, &c. we do enjoy——We acknowledge unfeignedly, as in the sight of God, that this our church, as it is by your highness's laws and authority established among us, having that faith professed and taught publicly in it, that was agreed of in the convocation holden in the year 1562, and such form of public prayers and administration of the sacraments, as in the first year of your most gracious reign was established, (notwithstanding any thing that may need to be revised and further reformed,) to be a true, visible church of Christ; from the holy communion whereof, by way of schism, it is not lawful to depart.

Our whole life may shew the evident proof hereof: for always before the time of our trouble, we have lived in the daily communion of it, not only as private men, but at the time of our restraint (as many years before) preached and exercised our ministry in the same, and at this present most earnestly beseech all in authority that is set over us, especially your excellent majesty, that we may so proceed to serve God and your highness all the days of our life.

Rebellion.

Another crime suggested against us is, that we should practise or purpose rebelliously to procure such further reformation of our church as we desire, by violent and undutiful means. Whereunto our answer is, That as we think it not lawful to make a schism in the church for any thing that we esteem needful to be reformed in it; so do we in all simplicity and sincerity of heart, in the presence of Almighty God, (to whom all secrets are known,) and of your excellent majesty, (to whom the sword is given of God for just vengeance and punishment of transgressors,) that for procuring of reformation of any thing that we desire to be redressed in the state of our church, we judge it most un-

lawful and damnable by the word of God to rebel, and by force of arms, or any violent means, to seek redress thereof. And moreover, that we never intended to use, or procure any other means for the furtherance of such reformation, than only prayer to Almighty God, and most humble suit to your excellent majesty, and others in authority, with such like dutiful and peaceable means as might give information of this our suit, and of the reasons moving us thereunto. ANNO 1592. 88

Supremacy.

The third crime misinformed against us is, that we impeach your majesty's supremacy. For answer whereunto we unfeignedly protest, (God being witness that we speak the truth herein from our hearts,) that we acknowledge your highness's sovereignty and supreme power, next and immediately under God, over all persons, and in all causes, as well ecclesiastical as civil, in as large and ample manner as it is agnized by the high court of parliament, in the statute of recognition, and is set down in the oath of supremacy enacted by the same; and as it is further declared in your majesty's injunctions, and also in the articles of religion, agreed in the convocation, and in sundry books of learned men of our nation, published and allowed by public authority. We add yet hereunto, that we acknowledge the same as fully as ever it was in old time acknowledged by the prophets to belong to the virtuous kings of Judah; and as all the reformed churches in Christendom acknowledge the same to their sovereign princes in their confessions of their faith, exhibited unto them, as they are set down in a book named the *Harmony of Confessions*, and the observations annexed thereunto.

And besides this protestation, we appeal to the former whole course of our lives, wherein it cannot be shewed that we ever made question of it; and more particularly by our public doctrine declaring the same, and by our taking the oath of supremacy, as occasion hath required.

Excommunication.

It hath been odiously devised against us, concerning the person subject to excommunication, and the power thereof,

ANNO 1592. how far it extendeth. Touching the former,——we judge not otherwise herein, than all the reformed churches that are this day in the Christian world, nor than our own English church, both always heretofore hath judged, and doth still at this present, as may appear by the *Articles of Religion* agreed by the convocation, and by a *Book of Homilies* allowed by the same; and also by sundry other books of greatest credit and authority in our church. Which is, that the word of God, the sacraments, and the power of binding and loosing, are all the ordinances of Almighty God, graciously ordained for the comfort and salvation of the whole church. And that therefore no part or member of it is to be denied the comfortable wholesome aid and benefit thereof, for the furtherance of their faith, and (as need may require) of their repentance, &c.

89 For the other part, how far this censure extendeth, we profess that it depriveth a man only of spiritual comforts; as of being partaker of the Lord's table, and being present at the public prayers of the church, or such like, without taking away either liberty, goods, lands, government, private or public whatsoever, or any other civil or earthly commodity of this life. Wherefore from our hearts we detest and abhor that intolerable presumption of the bishop of Rome, taking upon him in such cases to depose sovereign princes from their highest seats of supreme government, and discharging their subjects from that dutiful obedience that by the laws of God they ought to perform.

Conferences.

Concerning our conferences: we have been charged to have given orders, and made ministers, and to have administered the censures of the church; and, finally, to have exercised all ecclesiastical jurisdiction. To which suggestion we answer, That indeed of long time we have used, as other ministers have done, (as we think in most parts of the land,) to meet sometimes, and to confer together. Which being granted to all good and dutiful subjects, upon occasion to resort and meet together, we esteem it is lawful for us so to do.

For besides the common affairs of all men, which may give them just cause to meet with their acquaintance and friends, mutually to communicate, for their comfort and help, one with another; men professing learning have more necessary and special use of such conferences, for their furtherance in such knowledge as they profess——But such as are professed ministers of the word have sundry great and necessary causes so to do more than others. Because of the manifold knowledge both of divinity and also of divers tongues and sciences, that are of great use for the better enabling them for their ministry: in which respect the conferences of the ministers were allowed by many bishops within their dioceses: and to our knowledge never disallowed or forbidden by any. Some late years also have given us more special cause of conferring together, where Jesuits, seminaries, and other heretics sought to seduce many. And wherein also some schismatics condemned the whole state of our church, as no part of the true visible church of Christ, and therefore refused to have any part or communion with it. Upon which occasion it is needful for us to advise of the best way and means we could, to keep the people that we had charge to instruct, from such damnable errors. ANNO 1592.

Further also particularly, because some reckoned us to have part with that schism, and reported us to agree in nothing, but to differ one from another in the reformation that we desire; we have special cause to confer together, that we might set down some things touching such matters, which at all times, whensoever we should be demanded, might be our true and just defence; both to clear us from partaking with the schism, and to witness for us that we agreed in the reformation that we desire. 90

But as touching the thing surmised of our meetings, that we exercise in them all ecclesiastical jurisdiction in making ministers, in censuring and excommunicating, in ordaining constitutions and orders upon such censures to bind any; we protest before God and the holy angels, that we never exercised any part of such jurisdiction, nor had any pur-

ANNO 1592.

pose agreed among us to exercise the same, before we should by public law be authorized thereunto.

Further also, touching such our meetings, we affirm that they were only of ministers, (saving in some parts where a schoolmaster, two or three, desirous to train themselves to the ministry, joined with us,) and the same, but of six or seven, or like small number in a conference; without all deed or appearance that might be offensive to any.

Singularity.

Which, though it be not subject to any punishment of law, yet is suggested against us by such as favour not our most humble desire of a further reformation; to disgrace us, and to make us odious, both with others, and chiefly with your excellent majesty. Wherein our answer is, That the discipline of the primitive church is ancient, and so acknowledged by the Book of Common Prayer——in these words: "That there was a godly discipline in the primitive "church. Instead whereof, until the said discipline may "be restored again, (which thing is much to be wished,) it "is thought convenient to use such a form of commination "as is prescribed."

Further also, if it please your majesty with favour to understand it from us, we are ready to shew, that in such points of ecclesiastical discipline of our church, which we desire most humbly may be reformed, we hold no singular or private opinion, but the truth of the word of God, acknowledged to be such by all the best churches and writers of ancient time and of this present age.

Thus have we declared, right gracious sovereign, truly and sincerely, as we will answer it to God and to your majesty, upon our allegiance, what judgment we are of, concerning the matters informed against us. And further testify, that no minister within this land, desiring a further reformation, with whom we have had any private acquaintance or conference of these matters, (whatsoever may be otherwise informed,) is of any other mind or opinion in these cases that have been named. By which declaration, if (according to

our earnest prayer to Almighty God) your majesty shall clearly discern us to stand free from all such matters as we are charged with, our most humble suit is, that your majesty's gracious favour (which is more dear and precious to us than our lives) may be extended to us; and that by means thereof we may enjoy the comfortable liberty of our persons and ministry, as we did before our trouble. Which if by your highness's special mercy and goodness we may obtain, we promise and vow to Almighty God, and your excellent majesty, to behave ourselves in so peaceable and dutiful sort in every respect, as may give no just cause of your highness's offence: but according to our callings, both in doctrine and example, as heretofore, so always hereafter, to teach due obedience to your majesty, among other parts of holy doctrine, and to pray for your majesty's long and blessed reign over us, &c. ANNO 1592. 91

The ministers that made this petition to the queen, were, as it seems, the same that addressed their letter to the lord treasurer, December 4, 1591.

Number LXI.

A petition to the lord treasurer from another rank of puritans, that were separatists; presented near this time: thus endorsed:

This humble petition was put up of many poor Christians, imprisoned by the bishops in sundry several prisons in and about London.

THEY humbly beseech your honour either to grant them speedy trial together or some free Christian conference, or else in the mean while that they may be bailed according to law: or else to put them in Bridewell, or some other convenient place, where they may be together for mutual help and comfort. Or if your honour will not yourself alone grant this their request, that then it may please you to be a mean for their speedy relief unto the rest of her majesty's most honourable privy-council.

ANNO 1592.

The Almighty God, that hath preserved your lordship unto these honourable years in so high service to our sovereign prince, and to the unspeakable comfort of this whole land, give your honourable heart so tender compassion, and careful consideration in equity of the poor afflicted servants of Christ; and that before the Lord plead against this land for Abel's innocent blood, that is shed in the several prisons, your honour may open your mouth for the dumb, in the cause of the children of destruction. You may open your mouth and judge righteously, and judge the cause of the afflicted. As the people of Israel, when they went to war, first made peace with God, and removed all occasion whereby his wrath might be incensed, lest he should fight against them in battle. For if this suppression of the truth, and oppression of Christ in his members, contrary to all law and justice, be without restraint prosecuted by the
92 enemy in the land, then not only the persecuted shall daily cry from under the altar for redress, but God's wrath be so kindled for the shedding the innocent blood of men, even the blood of his own servants, (of whom he hath said, *Touch not mine anointed*,) that though Noah, Daniel, and Job should pray for this people, yet should they not deliver them.

Pleaseth it then your lordship to understand, that we her majesty's loyal, dutiful, and true-hearted subjects, to the number of threescore persons and upwards, have, contrary to all law and equity, been imprisoned, separate from our trades, wives, and children, and families; yea, shut up close prisoners from all comfort; many of us the space of two years and an half, upon the bishop's sole commandment, in great penury and noisomeness of the prisons; many ending their lives, never called to trial; some haled forth to the sessions; some cast in irons and dungeons; some in hunger and famine: all of them debarred from any lawful audience before our honourable governors and magistrates, and from all benefit and help of the laws: daily defamed, and falsely accused by published pamphlets, private suggestions, open preaching, slanders, and accusations of heresy, sedi-

tion, schism, and what not. And above all, (which most utterly toucheth our salvation,) they keep us from all spiritual comfort and edifying, by doctrine, prayer, or mutual conference, &c. ANNO 1592.

And seeing for our conscience only we are deprived of all comfort, we most humbly beseech your good lordship, that some more mitigate and peaceable course might be taken herein: that some free and Christian conference, publicly or privately before your honour, or before whom it would please you, where our adversaries may not be our judges; but our case, with the reason and proof on both sides, might be recorded by indifferent notaries and faithful witnesses. And if any thing be found in us worthy of death or bands, let us be made an example to all posterity. If not, we entreat for some compassion to be shewn in equity, according to law, for our relief. That in the mean time we may be bailed, to do her majesty service; walk in our callings, to provide things needful for ourselves, our poor wives, disconsolate children and families relying upon us, &c. or else, that we might be prisoners together in Bridewell, or any other convenient place at your honour's appointment; where we might provide such relief by our diligence and labours, as might preserve life, to the comfort both of our souls and bodies. And if your honour will not of yourself grant us this suit, yet we most humbly entreat your honour will make the rest of her majesty's most honourable privy-council acquainted with our distressed estate, and together grant us some present redress.

The names of your poor suppliants, prisoners. 93

In the Gate-house.

John Gualter,
John Nicolas,
John Barnes,
John Crawford,
Thoms Conadyne,
ThomasReeve,
William Dodshoe,
Father Debnam,
Edmund Thomson,
Thomas Freeman.

In the Fleet.

Henry Barrowe,
John Greenwood,
Daniel Studley,
Robert Badkyne,

ANNO 1592.

Walter Lane.

In Newgate.

William Dentford,
Widow Borrough,
Roger Waterer.

In Bridewell.

William Broomal,
James Forrester,
Anthony Claxton,
Nicholas Lee,
John Francis,
William Forester,
John Clark,
John Fisher,
John Bucer,
Roger Rippon,
Robert Andrews,
Richard Skarlet,
Luke Hayes,
Richard Maltusse,
Richard Umberfield,
William Fowler,
William Burt,
William Hutton.

In the Clink.

George Collier,
John Sparrow,
Edmund Nicolson,
Christopher Browne,
Thomas Mitchel,
Andrew Smith,
William Blacborrow,
Thomas le Mare,
Christopher Raper,
Quintin Smith.

In the White-lion.

Thomas Legat,
Edmund Marsh,
Anthony Johnes,
——— Cook,
——— Auger.

In Wood-street Counter.

George Snells,
Christoph. Bowman,
Robert Jackson.

In the Poultry Counter.

Rowlet Skipwith,
George Kinsstone,
Thomas Eyneworth,
Richard Hayward,
John Lancaster.

Prisoners deceased.

John Chaundler, out of the Poultry Counter,
George Dinghtie, out of Wood-street Counter.

Out of Newgate.

Richard Jackson,
Widow Mainard,
Widow Row,
Nicholas Crane,
Thomas Stephens.

Out of the Clink.

Henry Thomson,
Jerom Studley.

Out of Bridewell.

John Pardy.

In all prisoners - - 59
In all dead in prison - 10

Number LXII.

ANNO 1592.

The humble supplication of the faithful servants of the church of Christ, in the behalf of their ministers and preachers imprisoned, to the lords of the council: the separatists shewing at large their case and reason in breaking off communion with the church established. 94

To the right honourable the lords and others of her majesty's most honourable privy-council.

YOUR honours venerable authority, gravity, and wisdom, assembled in this high place of council, for the redress of abuses, and for the godly and peaceable government of this land, under her most excellent majesty, giveth us, her poor oppressed subjects, boldness, yet in all humility, to express before your honours our most lamentable usage and distressed estate; whose entire faith unto God, loyalty to our sovereign, obedience to our governors, reverence to our superiors, innocency in all good conversation towards all men, cannot avail us for the safety of our lives, liberty, or goods, not even by her highness's royal laws, and the public charter of this land, from the violence and invasion of our adversaries, her majesty's subjects, whose dealing with us your honours shall further understand, when we have briefly declared the true cause thereof unto you; which is this:

Her highness publishing the holy scriptures, and exhorting all her subjects to the diligent reading and sincere obedience thereof in their callings; we thereby, upon due examination and assured proof, find the whole public ministry, ministration, worship, government, ordinances, and proceedings ecclesiastical of this land, by authority established, to be strange, and quite dissenting from the rule of Christ's Testament; not to belong unto, or to have any place or use, or so much as mention in his church; but rather to belong unto, and to be derived from, the malignant synagogue of Antichrist, being the selfsame that the pope used and left in this land; where we dare not by any means defile or subject ourselves in any outward sub-

ANNO 1592. jection or inward consent thereunto, both in regard of the whole first table of God's law to the contrary, and of the wrath denounced, Rev. xiv. 9, 10, 11, and xviii. 4.

Again, we by the holy scriptures find God's absolute commandment, that all which hear and believe the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ should forthwith thereupon forsake their evil walk, and from thenceforth walk in Christ's holy faith and order, together with his faithful servants, subjecting themselves to the ministry, those holy laws and ordinances which the Lord Jesus hath appointed, and whereby he only is present and reigneth in his church. Wherefore, both for the enjoying of that inestimable comfort of his joyful presence and protection, and to shew our obedience to God's holy commandment, we have, in his reverent fear and love, drawn and joined ourselves together in that Christian faith, order, and communion, prescribed in his word, and subjected our souls and bodies to those holy laws and ordinances, which the Son of God hath instituted, and whereby he is present, and ruleth his church
95 here beneath, and have chosen to ourselves such a ministry of pastor, teacher, elders, deacons, as Christ hath given to his church here on earth to the world's end; in attending there the promised assistance of God's grace, (notwithstanding any prohibition of men, or what by men can be done unto us,) according to God's holy commandment, to worship him aright, and to frame all our proceedings according to the prescript of his word, and to lead our lives in holiness and righteousness before him, in all dutiful obedience and humble subjection to our magistrates and governors set over us by the Lord.

Then they go on to shew, how that in both these, as well their attempts in forsaking the one, as endeavouring the other, that they undertook and were ready, before their honours, to approve against all men, as they were publicly avowed in the confession and practice of foreign churches, so to be warrantable by the word of God, allowable by her majesty's laws, no ways prejudicial to her sovereign power, or offensive to the public peace of the state.

That their only special adversaries, that found themselves offended hereat, were the officers of Antichrist's kingdom; namely, the Romish prelacy and priesthood left in the land. ——Their dealing with us is, and hath been a long time, most injurious, outrageous, and unlawful, by the great power and high authority they have gotten in their hands, and usurped above all the public courts, judges, laws, and charters of this land; persecuting, imprisoning, detaining at their pleasures our poor bodies, without any trial, release, or bail permitted yet; and hitherto, without any cause either for error or crime, directly objected.——And some of us they have now more than five years in prison; yea, four of these five years in close prison, with miserable usage, as Henry Barrow and John Greenwood, at this present in the Fleet. Others they have cast into their limbo of Newgate, laden with as many irons as they could bear: others into the dangerous and loathsome gaol, among the most facinorous and vile persons; where it is lamentable to relate how many of these innocents have perished within these five years. And of these, some aged widows, aged men, young maidens, &c. Where so many as the infection hath spared shall lie in woful distress, like to follow their fellows, if speedy redress be not had. Others of us have been grievously beaten with cudgels in the prison, as at Bridewell; and cast into a place called *Little-ease* there, for refusing to come to their chapel service; in which prison they (and others of us not long after) ended their lives. Upon none of us thus committed by them, dying in their prison, is any search or inquest suffered to pass, as by law in like case is provided. ANNO 1592.

How they were apprehended by pursuivants.

Their manner of pursuing and apprehending us is with no less violence and outrage. Their pursuivants, with assistants, break into our houses at all hours of the night——There they break up, ransack, rifle, and make havock at their pleasure, under pretence of searching for seditious and unlawful books. The husbands in the deep of the night they have plucked out of their beds from their wives, and haled them unjustly to prison——About a month since, their pursuivants, late in the night, entered, in the queen's name, 96

ANNO 1592.

into an honest citizen's house upon Ludgate-hill, where, after they had at their pleasure searched and ransacked all places, chests, &c. of the house, they there apprehended two of our ministers, Francis Johnson, without any warrant at all, and John Greenwood; both whom, between one and two of the clock after midnight, they with bills and staves led to the counter of Wood-street; taking assurance of Edward Boys, the owner of this house, to be true prisoner in his own house, until the next day that he were sent for; at which time the archbishop, with certain doctors his associates, committed them all three to close prison; two unto the Clink, the third again to the Fleet, where they remain in great distress.

Francis Johnson and John Greenwood, two of their ministers, taken.

Since this they have cast into prison Thomas Settle and Daniel Studley, lately taken, and Nicolas Lane, upon a Lord's day in our assembly, by Mr. Richard Young, and committed to prison, and afterward bailed by the sheriff of London, to be now again called for and committed close prisoner to the Gate-house.

Tho. Settle.

D. Studley.

Others of us they have in like manner proscribed, and sent out their pursuivants to apprehend; so there is no safety to any of us in one place.

Now you have heard our case and usage: it were long to relate to your honours all their secret drifts and open practices, whereby they seek to draw us into danger and hatred; as by their subtle questions propounded, not having or knowing any matter to lay unto our charge; by their subordinate conference, now almost three years since, sent into the prisons to well nigh sixty faithful Christians, whom they there against all law, and without all cause, detained; by indicting us upon the statutes made for disloyal, idolatrous, recusant papists, (whom yet after thirty-three years obstinacy, they use not after this manner,) though they know that we sincerely hold all the grounds of religion, published by her majesty in harmony of confession, and never refused any wholesome doctrine or truth, shewed us in God's word, but only withstand such popish enormities as they bring in and urge, contrary to the word of God;

by defaming and divulging us as anabaptists, though they be not able to charge us with any one of their errors to our faces; as Donatists and schismatics, though we have Christian communion with all that truly hold and walk in the Christian faith;——as seditious, covenant-breakers——though they still by their tyranny drive us into these secret places and meetings; as abridgers of and encroachers upon the royal power of the queen, though we from our hearts acknowledge her sovereign power, under God, over all persons, causes, and actions, civil or ecclesiastical——though we gladly obey, and never willingly break any of her godly laws; though we never attempted either secretly or openly of ourselves to suppress or innovate any thing, how enormous soever, by public authority established, patiently suffering whatsoever the arm of injustice shall do unto us for the same; doing such things as Christ hath commanded us in his holy worship, 97 but always leaving the reformation of the state to those that God hath set to govern that state; yet are we all accused as pernicious unto the state and public peace of the land, though we endeavour nothing but the pure worship of God, and sincere obedience to the law of our Lord Jesus Christ, within the limits of our calling, &c. ANNO 1592.

Likewise they untruly suggested, that we, by our opinions and proceedings, utterly cut off and condemn her most gracious majesty, your honours, and all others not of our mind, as infidels, reprobates, &c. wherein they much wrong your honours and us. God knoweth our reverent judgment, loyal hearts, and entire love to you all; how we seek, desire, yea, and have hope of your salvation as our own.

But, right honourable, this dealing will not for ever uphold their ruinous kingdom, or keep your honourable wisdoms from the sight and search of God's truth in these matters; which, if it may please your honours but to permit to be tried with them, cannot longer be hid. We can but in all humble manner beseech, offer, and commit our cause and whole proceedings to be tried by the scriptures of God, with any that is of contrary or divers judgment, before your honourable presence. Where we confidently

ANNO 1592. undertake, both to disprove their public ministry, ministration, worship, government, and proceedings ecclesiastical, established, as they vaunt, in this land; and also to approve our own present course and practice by such evidence of scripture as our adversaries shall not be able to withstand.——Protesting, if we fail herein, not only willingly to sustain such deserved punishment as shall be inflicted upon us for our disorder and temerity, but also to become conformable to their line and proceedings. If we overthrow not them, we will not say, if they overcome us——Neither may your honours without great charge deny, or any longer defer this Christian and peaceable course, prescribed and commanded of God in these causes, seeing it tendeth to the appeasing and ending great contentions already begun, and like to increase, to the satisfying many doubtful consciences, &c.

In the mean time they prayed in the name of God, and our sovereign queen, for the present safety of their lives, the benefit and help of her majesty's laws, and of the public charter of the land; (to the observation and preservation whereof your honours have sworn;) namely, that we may be received unto bail, until we be by order of law convict of some crime, deserving bands——We plight unto you our faith unto God, our allegiance to her majesty, that we will not commit any thing (unwilling) unworthy the gospel of Christ, or to the disturbance of the common peace and good order of the land; and that we will be ready forthcoming at such reasonable warning as your lordships shall command. It standeth not with your honourable estimation and justice, to suffer us to be thus oppressed or punished: yea, thus to perish, before trial and judgment; especially imploring and crying out to you for the same——However, we here take the Lord of heaven and earth, and his angels,
98 together with your own consciences, and all persons in all ages, to whom this our supplication may come, to witness that we have here truly advertised your honours of our case and usage, and have in all humility offered our cause to Christian trial.

Number LXIII.

ANNO 1592.

James Yong, a Jesuit, taken 1592. *His confession August 27. the said year, before the lord keeper Puckering, lord Buckhurst, and Mr. Fortescue, chancellor of the exchequer: being his letter under his own hand, as followeth:*

Right honourable,

BEING much comforted with your friendly dealing, as I have imparted unto your lordships that which is so much as my life is worth; so most plainly I shall now set down, what my whole knowledge comprehendeth in each sort, as I expect to find any favour with your lordships.

My place of birth was in the bishopric of Durham, in a town called Eglescliff. My father's name was Thomas Yong, who died about some 25 years ago, and appointed that I should be brought up at school, as after I was, until the year 1579; at which time I departed from Durham school, (where I was the queen's scholar, receiving five marks by the year of the college there,) under colour that I would go to the university of Cambridge, but indeed to go beyond seas. When coming to London, I was acquainted with one Richard Bartet, an old master of arts of Oxford, with whom I stayed here in London some two months; and both of us together went down to Gravesend, and from thence to Dover, going under pretence as though we would go to the camp of duke d'Allenson, who then was going into Flanders. We arrived at Bulloin the same night, in company with one of my lord of Leicester's men called Johnson, who carried letters to Monsieur. From thence we went to Paris, where I stayed but six or seven days, and talked with one Darbishire, a Jesuit, who first counselled me to go to Rhemes; for I did not know the place before, neither what was the manner of their living or profession. Brought thither, and seeing some of the same school with me to give themselves to priesthood, I applied myself, though with great repugnancy, to follow the same trade: whereupon I was counselled to study logic: and shortly after I was sent to Rome, where anew I began to study logic, physic, and meta-

ANNO 1592. physic; which I ended in three years, and then went to school-divinity four years. At the end of which time I was preferred to defend printed conclusions of divinity in the university of the Roman college, having before made a sermon in Latin before pope Sixto and the cardinals, in the chapel of St. Peter's, upon St. Stephen his day, the same year that the duke of Guise was put to death.

99 After this it was thought good that I should not come into England, but that I should read a lecture of divinity in Rhemes: for which I did prepare myself. Yet before I could be sent down, father Parsons wrote out of Spain to the rector of the English college at Rome, that he should send no priests into England that year: but if any should accept of it, as a benefit, to send them to Spain, for that he had obtained in Valladolid a new college. Then the rector told me, that he thought it would be greater credit for me to go into Spain, to see and learn the fashions of the Spaniard. Whose counsel I following in the year 1589, at Michaelmas time, together with four other priests, took shipping at Genua, and landed at Alecante, and from thence came directly to Madrid. At which time the king was absent, because of the plague which was then in that country thereabouts. From thence, after the space of a month, I was sent with two other priests to Valladolid, where we found but four students in the college. But the number was increased to thirty-six before my coming away.

The Spaniards, who returned out of England, spake much of the persecution here, much pitying our cases, who were there brought up, to venture our lives by returning home again. Whereupon father Parsons took occasion to write a little book of the end of the college, and the students therein, which he published in Spanish, and dedicated it to the king's daughter, which made the fame of the college greater; which the better to maintain, he hastened to send a mission hither into England. Which he did, carrying six priests with him from Valladolid unto St. Lucar's in Andaluzia; by the way causing us to go to noblemen, and to collegical and cathedral churches, the more to stir them up to favour

with their alms the foundation of the new college at Valladolid; when I made a short speech to the cardinal of Toledo, signifying the great good that might come to the catholic church, if his grace would favour the poor beginning of Englishmen, who began now to shew the fruit of the alms received, by sending into the vineyard of England, for the conversion of souls, in one year six priests. He promised to maintain yearly two students in the college, and to further with his letters to noblemen the maintenance of more; as likewise many more, to whom the rest of my fellows made speeches, did promise. ANNO 1592.

At last being come to Sevilla, our journey was in manner stayed, upon hopes of a new college there to be erected by the cardinal and citizens of that city; where staying six months, and understanding that the fleet could not come from Indies, because it was besieged by the earl of Cumberland in Havana, as the report went, we were disposed of after this manner: first, four were sent over under pretence of galley-slaves taken in the Portugal action; the other two, of which I was one, should have gone with two Scottish ships, and to have landed in Scotland, because it were near mine own country: yet being weary with the tedious journey, and not able to brook the seas, and parted from my fellow, who was in another ship, by a little storm, I arrived here in Thames; and being set on land, lay abroad under a hedge all that night, and the next day came to London in my Spanish attire, which presently I changed, and went from place to place to get victuals, not knowing any one in London, for that my purpose was not to land here: yet remembering a token which I heard father Parsons speak of to one of them who came like galley-slaves, I inquired for one Thomas Wiseman, about the inns of court; with whom, at last, I met; and he got me acquainted with my lady Throgmorton, with whom I remained a month, she being unwilling to keep me any longer, because of speech which was bruited of a proclamation, and continual search which should be for to find out such as of late came from Spain. Then she gave me twenty marks, with other

100 Lands in England. Comes to London.

ANNO 1592. linen, and obtained, that I should table in Clarkenwel, at one Mompersons: where I lay as one that made suit to a young gentlewoman, who then was at table there.

It happened about Christmas last, that the officers came suddenly to search the house, from whence I escaped by a back-door; another priest, who was then at that house, being taken, and shortly after executed. Then came to Wiseman——Then tabled by his means with one Coole, a schoolmaster in Holborn. Then to Wiseman again.

Apprehended. Then he lay at an inn, the White-swan in Holborn-bridge, where he remained until his apprehension, and bringing before Mr. Yong, at the beginning of Easter term last, and ever since was prisoner in the counter in the Poultry. That since his first arrival he never went out of the city, unless it were sometimes to walk in the fields.

This is the most true and sincere report of my whole manner of conversing, since my first departing over seas and return home again.

During the time of my abode in Rhemes, I understood nothing of any matter pretended by any against the realm; for that I was young, and not admitted into the company of the seniors in the college. After my coming to Rome, the first thing that ever I heard of was of the intent of Ballard and his complices; which I never understood perfectly, until I heard of their execution in England. Then I heard Dr. Allen say, that he had dissuaded Ballard, (who had revealed the matter unto him,) with all the earnest persuasions he could. But the other addicted rather to Morgan and Charles Paget coming to Paris, there laid the plot of their devise, with which he came into England, meaning to have effectuated it with speed.

Morgan and Cha. Paget.

King of Scots. The next matter that I heard was of the great hope there was of the king of the Scots, that he would become catholic. Which was the rather believed, for that one Tyry, a Scotch Jesuit, and one William Holt, an English Jesuit, who both came from thence, reported his inclination that way. With whom they had spoken privately divers times: as likewise with many other noblemen in that coun-

Holt, Jesuit.

try. And Morgan wrote divers letters to the cardinal in Rome, that shortly all the Scotch holy bishops should be recalled home to their livings, and made suit that help might be made for the reclaiming of England by aiding the Scottish king. Which matter was much furthered by Dr. Lewis, now bishop of Casan, and agent for the Scottish nation. ANNO 1592. 101 Dr. Lewis.

Yet after the death of the queen of Scots, both Dr. Allen and Parsons wrote to stir up the Spanish king, who, as I have heard Parsons say, could never be persuaded to attempt any thing against England in her lifetime, objecting that he should travail for others. That she being dead, the expectation was increased for the last invasion. Allen and Parsons.

News being brought of the great preparations in Spain and Flanders, and Dr. Allen made cardinal, Holt and Creswel sent into Flanders to come with the prince; and hourly the cardinal was to be sent, as legate from Rome, the Michaelmas before the Spaniards came: for that it was certainly thought that the invasion should have been at the Christmas before; because that they understood that the English navy was altogether unprovided at that time. But the marquis of Santa Cruz, as it was reported, did hinder the attempt in winter-time. When it was heard of their coming to before Callis, and their cutting of their cables, and way towards Scotland, Parsons said, that better news would be heard shortly: for that they should land in Scotland, where the matter was already agreed upon with the king, whose guard was maintained by the king of Spain's pension, and 40,000 crowns of gold, which he hath already received. When this was ended, as I did hear, sir William Stanley himself said, a new attempt was to have been made the Christmas after out of Flanders. For which purpose, he said, four months' victuals were already prepared, with 16,000 men. But it was countermanded by letters from Spain, some five or six days before it should have been effected. Sir William Stanley.

The matter of sir John Parrot I never heard named until my coming here in England, the Michaelmas twelvemonth after the Spanish attempt.

ANNO 1592. I was sent into Spain to Vallidolid, to be one of the beginners of the new college, where I attended the schools, to give example to the younger sort: although I had already ended my course of divinity in Rome. And to make Englishmen known in the university there, I did many public exercises.

About a year after, sir William Stanley came into Spain with one Owen, Anthony Standen, Thomas Fitz-Herbert, Rolestone, and three others his servants, who all went to the court, and stayed six weeks: Fitz-Herbert was sent to Paris, Standen to Burdeaux, where he was taken prisoner. Rolestone sent to St. John de Luz, where also he was imprisoned, but escaped, paying to the governor eighty crowns. Owen returned into Flanders again. These men should have given certain intelligence to don John Idiaques, a counsellor and secretary to the king; but they were descried in each place before their coming by a Frenchman, who lived in the court, under colour of a priest, and apprehended in Madrid, by the information which Rolestone gave against him. Each of them had twenty crowns a month in pension, and one hundred and fifty crowns in their purses at their departure.

102 When Rowlston departed back again, he came to Stanley, who said, Thou art welcome, I hope; thou shalt be employed in as good service for the lady of which we have often talked. At which time he said no more. Yet being demanded after by one Dr. Stillington, what that lady was, O! saith he, if we had her, the most of our fears were past, for any one that could hinder us in England. It is Arbella, saith he, who keepeth with the earl of Shrowsbury: whom most certainly they will proclaim queen, if their mistress should now happen to die. And the rather they will do it, for that in a woman's government they may still rule after their own designments. But here is Symple, saith he, and Rowlston, who, like cunning fellows, have promised to convey her by stealth out of England into Flanders: which if it be done, I promise unto you she shall shortly after visit Spain: and, as I judge, they will prove men of their word.

Shortly after, Symple and Rowlston were sent into Flanders: since which time I never heard any thing of the men. ANNO 1592.

Stanley then going to the court, was sent back in commission to see the army then at Pharol and at St. Anders, where don Alonso de Basan is general: who entertained Stanley with great honour, in hope for to gain his good-will, that he might be general over the army when it should come for England. Stanley at his return much magnified the strength and furniture of thirty-six ships, which he saw at Pharol, as likewise of others in Biscay. Wherein he found no fault, but that the gun-ports were cut too high above the water, which he laboured to have amended: but it could not be granted. That all our Englishmen were sent to Pharol, where they were entertained with fifteen crowns a month. He that had the least in his company in this voyage was one captain Cryps, an Englishman, who hath forty crowns a month for his service done in the Portugal action: a man greatly favoured with the *adelantado* of Castilia, general now of the galleys about the Straits. For whom all our Englishmen much labour that he may be general in the fleet.

There came also into Spain one Morgan, a captain, who some time had served my lord admiral: but the man I never saw. I heard that he had given him fifteen crowns at his first coming; and that he was to be sent to Pharol. Farnham, Johnson, and Hagthorp were sent into Flanders in pilgrims' weeds, as coming from St. James de Compostella. One Smith was sent by sea in a little *pataz* after: and a month after with a sufficient store of money, and a letter to Owen to provide more at their coming, for their despatch into England, to provide mariners in the west about Plymouth, and about Norfolk and Newcastle: Farnham having in charge specially to deal with captains, and other officers, and to promise them large entertainment if they would accept of the king's service. Whether these men be in England, yea or no, I am not able to say with any truth. The man I knew well by eyesight. And Hagthorp is mine own countryman, born at Chester in the Street, some six

ANNO 1592. miles from Durham. Yet so long I am certain they stayed in Flanders, until a post came with letters, wherein Farnham
103 gave notice of thirty-six pieces of artillery, and armour for 18 or 20 men: which was received safely from Amsterdam; and a little before was come out of England.

In my travel from Valledolid we were brought to the grand prior of Castillia, an ancient man: who talking with us of our voyage into England, and the danger of our entrance; I would to God, saith he, you might have but as safe arrival, as I hope to have there, before many years make my head more gray.

We asked father Parsons what was the meaning he said, that he looked to be general, and that he had entreated him to prefer his cause to the king; promising to maintain four scholars, and to shew all courtesy that he would command for any Englishman.

At last coming to Sevilia, where I stayed well nigh six months, upon expectation that a college should be there erected, I had daily access to father Parsons his chamber. Of whom I could never learn other, but that shortly an *armado* should be sent for England; and that the king had sworn he would be revenged of England, although he should spend all he had, even to the socket of his candlestick. One day I being with father Parsons in his chamber, he was called by his sacristan to his mass, but willed me to stay till he returned, which I did. At that time he was writing to sir Will. Stanley, who was shortly to go into Italy to see Rome, and from thence into Flanders. In this letter he sent him word, how now at length, by the favour of Idiaques, the king had yielded to his request for the first attempt against England; but not before the year 93, because of the great hinderances that arose in France daily. Yet they hoped by that time to have Brest in Britanny: from whence he should have sixteen great ships, with 10,000 men. From which place he should have more commodity to come to the Irish Kernes his old acquaintance; and from thence easily to arrive near his own country, where 19 would be ready to assist him, and that *young* one 14 he

hoped would also help; although now he would hold no water, but disclosed every one that seemed to move him in the matter. I have, said he, ascertained the king upon your word concerning nineteen. And the king saith, he remembereth the man very well: for that he was one of the last noblemen which was married in his time. And if the young one 14 had been unmarried, there had been none more fit to have been proclaimed king at their first arrival than he, thereby to gain the hearts of the people. Who these personages should be, upon my credit, I could never learn directly, other than by conjecture thus. After dinner captain Crips came into the Jesuits' college at Sevilia, where, in my company talking with father Parsons, he spake of an ambassage, wherein my lord of Darby was sent; and of a minister that came there, from whom a soldier stole a portmanteau, while he was disputing with others about religion. Nay, saith Parsons, I would he had stolen my lord his golden breeches from him, with which he hath been known this thirty years at least. The last time, saith he, that I did talk with the king, he told me, he did remember him and his marriage, which was one of the last in his time. By which words I remembered that which I had read in his letter of 19, but I durst not seem to take any knowledge thereof. ANNO 1592.

This assault by Stanley should be in April next. [The invasion to be April 1593.] Of whose arrival so soon as word should be brought, the whole fleet of Spain should be ready. Wherein Parsons himself would be present, and the cardinal should come down from Rome; but not into England, until the event of the navy should be seen. 104

At the same time of my abode in Sevilia, one Creeton, a Scotch Jesuit, came from the Escurial, where the king lay, and was presently to go into Italy, and from thence into his own country; sent with instructions to deal with noblemen for some harbour, if it should happen that their ships came there; and to have men in readiness for their own defence, as though they should be invaded; but in truth to send aid, when notice should be given out of England. Creeton.

ANNO 1592.

The two intelligencers, (for which I feigned myself to be sent,) they were both beyond the seas at Midsummer last a twelvemonth: and now remain, the one in Genua and the other in Antwerp; for to give notice to father Parsons in Spain, who a great time had been without any news, as I did know, some three months together.

This is the whole substance of all that ever I knew contrived or pretended by any person in or without this realm against my country, or any person therein: which, upon the word of a priest, and as I look for any favour to be shewed me by your honour, is the truth in all points, as I have set it down: humbly therefore requesting your lordship to stand my patron and helper in this my misery and long imprisonment. What thing soever I shall be able to do my sovereign any service, (whose gracious favour I crave upon my knees to be extended towards me,) faithfully I protest to shew myself ready to perform it, and continually to pray for her majesty's long and prosperous reign, to the overthrow and confusion of all her enemies, and comfort of true and loyal subjects. From which if I have swerved in any point from my duty, from the bottom of my heart I repent me; and promise hereafter all duty and obedience, as far as becometh any true and Christian subject.

Your honour's poor suppliant,
James Yonge, priest.

This letter was sent by the lord keeper, and lord Buckhurst, and Fortescue, to the lord treasurer, (being then with the queen in her progress,) with their letter accompanying: which were read to the queen by sir Robert Cecyl, her secretary. Whereof the said lord treasurer acquainted those privy-counsellors with, in this letter following.

Number LXIV.

ANNO 1592.

105

The lord treasurer to sir John Puckring, lord keeper, and to the lord of Buckhurst, and Mr. Fortescue, chancellor of the exchequer.

MY very good lords, I have shewed unto her majesty your lordships' letters of the 28th of this month, [August,] and the declaration of Yonge, now so named, the seminary priest. Which her majesty, beside my report, was pleased to have both the letter and the declaration leisurely read to her by Robert Cecyl: and none other present with her majesty but myself. Upon your letter she hath conceived that your lordships have dealt very wisely and cunningly to procure him to open himself so liberally as he hath done. MS. Harley.

Upon the declaration she findeth many matters worth to be marked. And she would Wiseman, Cole, and others named by him, to be apprehended; and charged with some other things, and not with relieving of this Yonge. Of whom she would have a general opinion conceived, that nothing can be had of himself: neither that it is like that he is acquainted with any matter of weight. So as he may retain his former credit with his complices; thereby to discover more recent matter. Her majesty would not any here of her council know that part of his confession, but only myself and Robert Cecil, because seeing the length, to ease me, she caused him to read it.

If your lordships privately can induce him to remember more matter, especially to discover in what persons our rebels put their trust, assuring him of keeping the same secret, so as he should never be blamed for the same, her majesty would greatly like it.

Yet her majesty is offended, that no sharp, yea, no capital punishment hath been done upon the number that rescued the rogues in Westminster. Whereof she knew not, but reading the letter of you, the lord of Buckhurst, to the vice-chamberlain. From the court the 30th of August, 1592.

Your lordships' assured loving friend,

W. Burghleigh.

ANNO 1592.

Number LXV.

Thomas Christopher, alias George Dingley, that came from Rome: committed to the counter about mid April, 1592. His confession. MSS. lord keeper Puckr.

HE took a corporal oath, that he had received the communion in Egglescliff, in Durham, Easter-day last, and came to London to get service; and was never beyond
106 seas. And after said, he had been sixteen years in Scotland with Anthony Dingley, his uncle, that went away at the rebellion in the north.

After, at a third examination, said upon oath, that sir William Stanley, at his last coming from Rome, being entertained with great courtesy by my lord the bishop of Montesiaston at supper, discoursed largely of the state of England. Among other things, saying, that one young lady, as yet unmarried, was the greatest fear they had, lest she should be proclaimed queen, if it should so happen that her majesty should die: yet there was hope that some will be found to hinder this matter. So he would not name the lady, his man being there in presence. Yet at my coming to Paris, and talking with one Mr. Robert Tempest, I repeated again these words, demanding, if he did know any thing concerning this young lady? He answered, that very shortly he trusted to God to meet with her here at Bruxells: for that one Simple, a Scot, and one Rowlston, had undertaken to convey her out of England. The lady doth abide with an earl[a], whose name I do not remember. And she is allied to the queen of Scots..... Divers letters which I saw in Tempest his study from father Parsons in Spain: but when he came to name any person, then he used to set it down in ciphers. Other things I cannot call to mind; but that most certainly there was nothing meant for England this year, by reason of Britain affairs.

[a] Earl of Shrewsbury.

Tho. C+fer.

He confessed, that he came from Rome by the way of Paris, and that four other persons came in his company into

England. That they came over at Easter last from sir William Stanley, as soldiers; and do go under the passport of sir Roger Williams; and landed at Rye, having good store of money; and were directed to go to captains houses, to see if they could procure them to serve the king of Spain. And they had also in charge to gather mariners, which should be ready immediately after Michaelmas. And there should be a hoy, or ship, made ready for them at the Thames mouth. And they should promise the said mariners ten crowns a month wages. And they were sent unto all parts of England to gather up mariners; and were appointed to travel as beggars, as though they had no money. ANNO 1592.

Subscribed,

Thom. XXfer.

Number LXVI.

The lord treasurer Burghley's speech in the lords' house, ann. 1592. *Containing the causes of the queen's entry into a defensive war with Spain. With an account of the queen's extraordinary charges by the said war. All writ with his own hand; and transcribed thence. It beareth this title on the top of the page:* The causes of the queen's entry into these defensive actions.

TO make a declaration of the first cause and original beginning, whereby her majesty was provoked to arm her realms with forces, were a labour lost in this place; where in former times the same hath been often declared; and wherein a great number of the nobility here present have heard many circumstances thereof, at the proceeding with the late queen of Scots. For whom and by whom the quarrels were first made against the queen's majesty's person, against the religion and quietness of the realm. 107 Original cause. Queen of Scots.

And therefore leaving the repetition of that cause, by which her majesty was detained in a kind of war, to withstand both the kings of France and Spain, who intermeddled in the case of the queen of Scots against her majesty;

ANNO 1592.

yet there hath followed continually such a deadly malice from the king of Spain, the bishop of Rome, and their confederates, as unto this day, wherein no intermission hath been of attempts against her majesty and the realm; although at some time more vehement than at some others: as appeared in the year 88 by his open armies both by sea and land; being of greater force than ever was known made by his father the emperor Charles, or by himself, or by any prince Christian within any memory of man.

Continuance of the Spanish malice.

But minding to overpass all the attempts afore that huge enterprise, that was frustrate by God's special goodness beyond the expectation of the world, I considering there hath been no assembly of parliament since that time, wherein her majesty might publicly declare to the states of her realm the continuance of the former attempts, but the increase of more dangers than were seen in any time before. Therefore, as was delivered by the lord keeper of the great seal, her majesty hath summarily imparted the same to this assembly, referring the consideration thereof to the whole three estates, whereof two are in this place; how the same danger may be withstood, and by what provision her majesty and realm may be preserved in domestic peace, as yet it is, as in a centre of happiness, where the circumference is in open calamity.

To overpass all afore the year 88.

Causes of danger delivered by her majesty.

And because it is all our parts and duties, first to God, and to our sovereign head, and our native country, to apply all our endeavour, being every one of us called to this place by special commandment in express words, upon consideration of the hardness of the business, and the perils imminent, to treat with her majesty, and with the prelates and great men of the realm, and to give our counsels, so as it is convenient for us all, first to consider the perils, and then to give counsel.

Our duty to consider of the provision.

Wherefore in discharge of my duty, with your patience in suffering an old man, beside his years, decayed in his spirits with sickness, to declare some part of his knowledge of the dangers and perils imminent: but for advice and counsel how to withstand the same, I shall be constrained, for

An old sick man.

Not for counsel.

lack of sufficient understanding in so great cause, to require some further conference with your lordships, or with so many as shall appear more able than I am to give some good entry thereto. ANNO 1592.

As to the dangers, that they be great and imminent, that they have both lately grown, and likely to increase, these be manifest arguments. First, the king of Spain, since he hath usurped upon the kingdom of Portugal, he hath thereby grown mighty by gaining the East Indies. So as how great soever he was before, he is now thereby more manifestly great. But for increase hereof, to be greater; yea, greater than any Christian prince hath been. He hath lately joined with his intended purpose newly to invade this realm with more might than before he did the invasion of France by sundry ways. Not as in former times, when the emperor Charles and the French kings, the great Francis and the warlike Henry, made former wars for towns their greatest wars. Yea, when the present king of Spain had his great army against Henry of France. For in those wars none of them intended any thing more but to be revenged of supposed injuries, by burning or winning of some frontier towns by besieging. And after such revenges, mutually had to the satisfaction of their appetites, wherein neither party had any special advantage, they fell to truces, and in the end with knots sometimes of intermarriages. And by these kind of wars none of them did increase in greatness to be dangerous to their enemies. And in these kind of wars our kings of England had their interest for the most part, to expense of men and money, and never to the loss of any small portion of any ground in England and Wales, nor otherwise; but by yielding to the king of Spain, by means of the marriage of queen Mary, to make war with France, the realm lost that noble town and port of Calais, with great seignories and territories thereunto belonging. 108 The danger great and imminent. Not for kingdoms. Calais lost.

But now the case is altered. The king of Spain maketh these his mighty wars by the means only of his Indies; not purposely to burn a town in France or England, but to conquer all France, all England, and Ireland. And for proof

ANNO 1592.

hereof, first for France, he hath invaded Britain, taken the port, builded his fortresses, carried in his army; waged a navy in Britain; [received into wages] a great number of his subjects, as rebels to France. And there he keepeth a navy armed, to impeach all trade of merchandise from England to Gascoign and Guyne: which he attempted to do this last vintage. And so he had had his purpose, if to the great charges of the merchants, and by countenance of her majesty's navy sent to the coast of Britain, the shipping of England had not been much stronger than his. Besides this his possessing a great part of Britain towards Spain, he hath at his commandment all the best ports of Britain towards England. So as now he is become as a frontier enemy to all the west of England. And by his commandment, and his waged troops in Newhaven, he hath enlarged his frontiers now against all the south parts of England, as Sussex, Hampshire, Isle of Wight. Yea, by means of his interest in St. Malo's, a port full of shipping for the war, he is a dangerous neighbour to the queen's isles of Jersey and Guernsey, ancient possessions of this crown, and never conquered in the greatest wars with France.

To conquer France, England, Ireland.

Frontier to the west.

Frontier to the south.

109 Of this matter of Britain a man might enlarge, the danger so great to England, as if he had attempted nothing at all in Normandy and France; yet the danger hereof might appear so great, as ought to induce England to spare no cost to withstand it. And herewith he is not contented to seek this dukedom, but he destines all his forces to conquer the kingdom of France, the principal kingdom of Christendom. And to achieve this enterprise, he hath, these two years day and more, corrupted, with great sums of money and large pensions, certain factious noblemen, not of the blood of France, nor the great officers of the crown; and by them, and with these rebels, and by waging of his soldiers in some of the principal towns of France, as Paris, Roan, Orleans, Lyons, Toloze, and others, he hath procured a rebellion against the king, against all the princes of the blood, against all the great officers of the crown. But finding these rebels not strong enough of themselves, notwithstanding they are

To conquer France.

Rebellion in France.

well waged by him to withstand the king, he hath to his great charges levied and sent into France, even to Paris and Roan, armies collected of Walloons, Lorrainers, Italians, Spaniards, Almains, and Switzers. Wherewith he hath twice entered into France; though God gave him no good success, but great loss and reproach. ANNO 1592.

Besides these foreign armies sent from the Low Countries, he hath caused his son-in-law, the duke of Savoy, to invade France by Provence and Dolphine; and the duke of Loraine by Burgundy and Champaign, and to environ France. Further, he hath sent armies by sea out of Spain to invade Languedoc. And even now at this present, all these foreign forces are newly made ready to enter into all parts of France, made by a colourable assembly of the rebels in Paris to represent the three estates; yet without a king or a head. He intendeth to be the king of that realm, or to make his daughter the queen, and to appoint her a husband to be as his vassal.

He hath also the pope so addicted to him, as he that never was wont to send to any parts only of Italy, by bulls with lead and parchment, did now levy and send an army into France. And though he coloureth it with matter of defence of catholic religion, yet both he and the king of Spain make war against all the princes of the blood, and officers of the realm, being sound catholics. And so they have by their ambassades lately advertised the pope; as by the cardinal Gundy, and marquis Pysany, ancient counselsors of France, and catholics. So as the pretence of the pope and the king of Spain in that point are merely France.

These are the dangers in France, and must of consequence draw England into like peril, without God's special goodness, and the speedy support to be given to her majesty for prevention thereof.

Arguments of the king's intention to invade England.

Now to manifest the king of Spain's attempt to invade England, whereof I think no good Englishman so want of feeling to think otherwise, yet I will remember to you divers manifest arguments thereof; and afterwards, to supply the want of any man's feeling only by arguments or tokens, I

ANNO 1592.

will declare to you the very truth of his determination by manifest proofs. So as none ought to think, because he was
110 disappointed of his intention for the conquest of England by his huge navy, therefore he will put that disgrace up, and leave off with that loss. But it is certain he hath the two last years builded a great number of ships of war, as near as he can to the mould and quantity of the English navy; finding by experience his monstrous great ships not meet for our narrow seas. He hath lately armed a number of galleys on the coast of Britain, which he intendeth to send this summer to Newhaven. He hath also these two years days both bought and built great ships in Eastland. He hath both from thence, and by corruption of our faint and covetous neighbours in Holland, recovered with silver hooks both mariners, ships, cordage, and all provisions. These being now on the point of readiness to serve on the seas, a good argument may be made that this navy must be for England. For now that he hath all the maritime coast of Britain, and that he hath in Normandy Newhaven, there is no service by sea to enter into any part of France with this navy.

A party in the realm by the seminaries.

How he and the pope ply themselves to win a party in England to be ready to second his invasion, I am sorry and loath to relate; and how far they have prevailed herein to gain so great a multitude of vulgar people; yea, of some that are of wealth and countenance, to adhere to these invaders at their entry, with vain hopes to attain to the places, honours, and livelihoods of such as are now known true, natural Englishmen, and good subjects.

Proofs of his intention.

But to such as these arguments will not suffice to be persuaded, that this intention of the king of Spain to invade this realm is certain, this that followeth shall fully satisfy any man, yea, any man that useth to believe nothing until he shall see it. There are taken in Scotland and imprisoned, certain that came first out of Spain, near afore Christmas, from the king; how before he had been sent out of Scotland to the king of Spain. These messengers brought assurance to certain noblemen of the greatest calling in

Scotland, that if they would send their bonds under their hands and seals to serve the king of Spain for the invasion of England by land this next summer, the king would send an army of twenty-five thousand to the west of Scotland; and would give the noblemen wages for ten thousand Scots to be joined with twenty thousand of his, to invade England; and would keep five thousand of his in Scotland, to aid them to overrule the king of Scots, and to change the religion. This accord was perfected by three noblemen earls, Arrol, Huntley, and Angus; promising their own assistance, besides assurance in general words of divers more, not yet discovered. And for an earnest penny, these earls have received good sums of money from the Low Countries. ANNO 1593.

Now for proof hereof, the messenger that was sent, and on shipboard, was taken, with the bonds of the noblemen: some signed and sealed by them all, and of every earl apart in several bonds in French and Latin. The messenger hath confessed the whole to the king; who so carefully proceeded therein, as if he had not travailed therein himself, such of his council as were appointed to examine the parties that were taken durst not, for fear of the greatness of the noblemen that had offended, and were fled, examine the messen- 111
ger of any thing that might concern these noblemen. They are all fled; and yet the king hath gathered of his good subjects a certain power to pursue them. But it is doubted that they will flee into the west islands. And from thence either to pass into Spain, or to have forces sent out of Spain. But the king, the day before he went, caused one Fentry, an old practiser with Spain for the queen of Scots, a man of a good house and great wealth, to be executed, being a principal contriver of this conspiracy. To animate the king to follow this action, her majesty hath sent my lord of Bourgh.

Thus far have I observed my purpose to shew the danger; and to give counsel to the remedy, *Hoc opus, hic labor est.* And I would gladly to have some company, of whom I might have some light, how to find out the darkness of the question: wherein, when time shall serve, I will not be

ANNO 1592. silent, but deliver mine opinion, and reform it upon good ground.

Number LXVII.

The queen's extraordinary charges by means of the war, moved by the king of Spain. Set down by the lord treasurer in the same paper.

FOR defence of the Low Countries 130,000*l.* by year.
For the charge in Mr. Huddleston's time for years 154,000*l.*
To the earl of Leicester for Sluce - - 31,000*l.*
Feb. 1586. To sir Tho. Shirley - - 531,000,120*l.*

Total

In Normandy with my lord Willoughby for 6000 men 49,283*l.*
In Normandy with my lord of Essex, with thousand men - - - - - - - -
In Britain with sir John Norris with 4000 men
In aiding the French king with money -
For maintenance of the navy on the narrow seas, sometime with 800, sometime with 700 and 600 - 232,000*l.*
Besides the ordinary keeping of the navy, 1200*l.* a month. Per ann. - - - - - - 44,400*l.*
For the office of the ordnance - 62,000*l.*
Scotland - - - - - - 15,000*l.*

Number LXVIII.

Thomas Markham to the lord treasurer: concerning his affliction for his son Robert Markham, going beyond sea for his conscience.

Right honourable, my singular good lord,

I HAVE sent your lordship here enclosed the most grievous and unlooked-for letter that ever I received; and from my second son, (your lordship's late servant,) simply

as he sent it to me. My grief is the greater, for that expectation and opinion was so firmly settled of his good and dutiful behaviour, both to her majesty and the state; beside the former hope that I had to see him enable himself by his diligent study to serve the same. All which hope by his lewd and undutiful practice is now frustrated. I take God to witness, not a little to my discomfort, he hath counterfeited my hand, as by his own confession your lordship may perceive. Whereby my good friend Mr. Robert Taylor is without lawful security for his 100*l*. For in true faith it is not my deed; neither was it received with my privity. But by the same faith the gentleman shall be as truly paid in the beginning of next term, as though he had my statute for it. ANNO 1592. 112

I have no more to say to your lordship touching this matter, but humbly to beseech your honourable, grave, and true censure of me, and that her majesty by your honourable means may not misconceive of me, but of her princely and gracious wisdom rightly deem of me; and that is all I crave concerning this matter. Thus, with my humble duty for this time, I humbly take my leave; beseeching God long to bless you with health and honour. From Kercby-bellers, this 8th of Sept. 1592.

Your lordship's,
Tho. Markham.

Number LXIX.

The letter enclosed.

Robert Markham to his father, upon his departure beyond sea.

HAVING striven thus long in vain to write a letter at large in excuse of my hasty travail, which my mind, overburdened with grief, and not able to endure one word tending towards departure, will not suffer me to do. Accept, therefore, I humbly beseech you, most dear father

ANNO 1592. and mother, these few lines, which for tears I cannot see to write, and for inward grief cannot endure to read again, as an excuse for my hasty journey. For which, upon my knees prostrate before you both, I humbly crave pardon and forgiveness; being perplexed in mind upon the reading the chapter against delay in the book of *Resolution*, I endeavoured myself to settle my conscience as well as I could. Whereupon I betook myself to the study of divinity. Wherein for the space of two years I have bestowed some time, together with the conference of divers learned on both sides. Upon reading and conference my conscience grew at length undoubtedly settled, that the Romish religion was the most true, catholic church: whereof unless I should become a member, I could not be saved. Hereupon endeavouring myself to be reconciled, I find, that that reconciliation to the church of Rome is high treason by act of parliament. Which odious name of a traitor I do so much de-
113 test, (besides the infinite trouble and charge which I know it would bring unto you both,) as I rather choose to leave my country than to hazard the staining of our house and name with treason, which as yet was never attainted.

Having therefore resolved this course, and having not means to convey myself away, I must confess my villainy. I took up an 100*l.* in your name of Mr. Taylor of the Exchequer; with which I hope to convey myself either to Malta or Vianna. Where I hope to find some entertainment; in how base a place I care not, so that I may be assured of your safeties, which I tender above all earthly treasures. Howsoever I shall fail of entertainment at either of these two former places, I assure you, by the duty I owe unto you, that I will never serve in France or Flanders against her majesty; neither, whatsoever beggary betide me, will I ever serve the king of Spain, nor any of his agents, so long as he remaineth enemy to England; neither be guilty to any conspiracy against her majesty's person, but reveal it, if ever any such matter chance to come to my hearing. And to conclude, my conscience only reserved to

myself, (whereupon dependeth my salvation,) as I hope to be saved at the latter day, I am and will be as good a subject to her majesty for allegiance as any is in England. But such is my present estate at this time, that every hour presenteth a hell unto me. On the days I go like a man distract of senses for fear of death at this instant. In the night I cannot sleep, nor take any rest; so monstrous is the horror of my conscience. When I pray, I am discomfited: for I pray without hope to be heard; because I am not of his church, or that church which I believe undoubtedly to be his church. ANNO 1592.

All these things hasten my journey, and command my absence. If ever I fail in any part of my allegiance, which heretofore I have protested, willingly or wittingly, disclaim me for your son; and instead of blessing, which now upon my knees I do most humbly desire, give me accursing: which God never let me live to deserve. Forgive me and forget me, I humbly beseech you, who desire to be forgotten. For since it is not God's will (which I have always desired) to suffer me by my study at law to do you some service, I will assure you so to behave myself, if it be possible, as to do you no harm. Be good to this poor man my servant, I humbly beseech you, in helping him to a master, who deserved a far better master than myself, and who I protest did never know my determination till the instant of my departure.

Thus humbly beseeching you to give me your daily blessings, which I will strive to deserve by my daily prayer for your prosperity, most humbly craving pardon for all that is past, I cease.

Your distressed son, desirous,
desirous to be more dutiful,
Ro. M.

Gravesend, this 27th of August.

ANNO 1592.

Number LXX.

114 *The queen in her progress, now at Sudley. From thence sir Tho. Heneage, her vice-chamberlain, writes to the lord keeper Puckring; relating the queen's kind expressions concerning him. MS. Harley.*

My good lord,

UPON the receipt of your letters, I acquainted her majesty with your joy of her so well passing so long a progress, and your great desire to understand how her highness did, now at the furthest of her journey, the good news whereof (being so far divided from her majesty) did give you life and most contentment. I also shewed her majesty, (as this gentleman, the bearer hereof, told me,) how your lordship had been in Waltham forest, and was not pleased to take your sport alone, but would have the company of the ambassador, whom you invited to dinner, and made partner of your pastime.

Touching the first, her majesty willed me to tell you, that she found, by your often sending, your love and great care of her. And for the next, she bade me say, that she found you could not only speak well, but also do well, and perform things with judgment and honour; praising you to me exceedingly. For I could not use any one word of just commendation of your lordship, that she gave not allowance of, and adding too of her own gracious conceiving. Whereof I (that will never be found to deceive you) can assure your lordship, you have great cause to take comfort. This is the best news that I can either now or at any time send to your lordship. But as soon as I come out of France or Italy, worthy the writing, I shall send your lordship a brief of them. And so with my humble commendations rest. At the court at Sudely, the 12th of September, 1592.

Assuredly at your lordship's commandment,

T. Heneage.

Number LXXI.

ANNO 1592.

Sir Thomas Heneage, vice-chamberlain to the queen, to lord keeper Puckring; signifying from her majesty, how well she took his assistance at the celebration of the 17th of November. MS. Harley.

.....Further, her highness willed me to signify to your lordship, how well she taketh your honourable handling the remembrance of the day of her entrance into her government, and willed me to tell you, that she thinketh that the good sermon that was then made (which her highness 115
greatly praised) did utter the words of your mind; and that your great alms and liberality, with the honourable celebrating her memory, did shew her highness's choice to be of a man worthy your place, [of lord keeper of the great seal,] and did deserve her thanks and best acceptation. Which is all I am now commanded to write to your lordship. To whom I humbly commend myself, and the service of my good-will. At the court, this 23d of November, 1592.

Your lordship's at commandment,

T. Heneage.

Number LXXII.

March the 5th, 1592. Notes for inspection into charitable gifts. Set down by the lord treasurer. This being a time of great dearth.

TO send to the lord mayor, to send some answer to the money received.

To move both houses of parliament to make collections. To appoint collectors by both houses.

To appoint distributers, to distribute to the soldiers reasonable stipends *pro viatico* with public order.

To make commission to certain to survey the Bridewell, and to certify the disorders; and the revenues to be better bestowed.

A bill to enact, that all lands that were limited to the

ANNO 1592. hospitals to be assured again; and commissioners to view the state of them.

A commission to view all hospitals, how they are misused.

A commission to view and survey all colleges that have had lands for relief of the poor, and for mending of the high ways.

Number LXXIII.

A fleet of Spaniards ready to invade England. In a letter from the lord Howard, lord admiral, to the lord treasurer. Endorsed by the treasurer's own hand, Aug. 29, 92.

To the right honourable, my very good lord, the lord treasurer. For her majesty's service. C. Howard.

Haste, haste, posthaste. Haste, haste, with all speed.

My very good lord,

I SEND you here enclosed a letter, which came to me from Portsmouth. The messenger thought to have found me at the court; but missing of me there, came hither. I
116 wished that he had delivered the letter to your lordship, that you might have spoke with him yourself. He is so weary that he is scarce able to stir. In the morning I will send him to your lordship.

The effect of his speech is this: that about Friday was sennight he coming from St. Maloes, where he left a fleet of Spaniards, being sixteen sail of double flyboats, two galleons, and two galleys, riding in the range there; within two days after, met another fleet of Spaniards, being very great ships; and one of them a great galleas. Six of them gave him chase. Yet he hath sped. Yet they took the governor from off Sherbroke. Afterwards they bore all eastward. So that this bearer, being a skilful sailor, thinketh, that certainly they be either put in at Newhaven, or into the narrow seas.

I understand by another letter from a man of mine at

Portsmouth, that captain Grove in the Tremontane, and men with him, are put out to discover upon the coast. ANNO 1592.

My lord, if these things fall out so, I am very sorry that her majesty should be so far from home. Whereby things will be longer in doing, as they ought to be done. I have written in all posthaste unto captain George Fener into the narrow seas, that he be not taken *improviso;* and to see what he can discover with good safety. I have also written to my lord Cobham, that the beacons may be well kept at the seaside, and that regard may be had of this matter. I mean, God willing, upon any alarm that shall be given, to repair thither, with the small company which I have of my own people. And so in great haste I bid your lordship most heartily farewell. From Byflete, the 29th of August, 1592.

Your lordship's loving friend to command,

C. Howard.

Postsc. It is not amiss my opinion, if letters be writ with some speed to Flushing; that they may have warning there, to prevent the worst. I cannot imagine, if they pass Newhaven, whither they should go to the eastward, unless it be for some enterprise upon us, or in Scotland.

Then follow three lines of the lord admiral's own hand, as the rest above is writ by his secretary.

My lord, I see the king of Spain is determined to block up England; and so to weary us with time, since by experience he sees he can prevail no other way. It must be looked into in time. We have heretofore looked for a summer war from [Spain]; but now we shall taste of it in winter.

Number LXXIV. 117

Another letter writ by the lord admiral to the lord treasurer: shewing his advice, judgment, and diligence upon this dangerous juncture. Thus endorsed by the lord treasurer, Ships to be put to the seas; *with his*

ANNO 1592.

marginal notes in some places of the letter. *September* 1, 1592.

My very good lord,

AFTER the receipt of your letter of the 30th [of August,] for the sending of the three ships to the narrow seas under the charge of George Fener to Plymouth, to waft the carack to Portsmouth, I have received another letter from your lordship of the 31st, in answer of certain letters of mine, containing the intelligence of certain forces which were seen at sea. I sent also the party himself that saw them.

First, It appeareth by your lordship's letter, that her majesty thinketh much, that her ships that have served in the narrow seas have taken no Leaguers, [against the queen and French king,] nor Dunkerkers. But methinks it should be more wondered at if they should take any. For they were ever kept as passengers, and not men of war, that should only go to take ships. Thank is to be given to God, that not one of her own ships have been taken, going so slenderly..... as much they have done, I marvel, how her majesty hath forgotten, that when sir Henry Parmer was sent only to take ships, he did take fourteen Newhaven men. I do not know that they were ever ninety-seven days free; that either they were to waft over men, or something else. But since I know her majesty's pleasure, I will see her hand before any shall go on waftage, but only to go to see what they can catch. And yet I think there hath been little cause to grieve at any hurt, that either Dunkerker or Leaguer hath done these three years' day. And I am sure her merchants and subjects have had the narrow seas free without danger. But three ships and a pinnace or two cannot guard the narrow seas, the western seas, the northern seas, the coast of France, and the coast of England, and all. I pray God it may hereafter be as well defended as it hath been hitherunto, &c.

For the safeguard of her majesty's navy at Chatham, I have sent sir John Hawkins, sir Henry Palmer, and Mr.

Burroughs. And upon any alarm I will myself be there presently. ANNO 1592.

I did write unto my lord Buckhurst for Sussex, in that sort, as I did to my lord Cobham for Kent. And I mean into every of these places, upon any alarm, to repair with what speed I can. But I am of opinion, that if this fleet be put into Newhaven, that they will forbear to do any thing upon England until the nights be longer. In the mean time they will do that service that will serve their turn about Newhaven, and up that river of Roan, and impeach our sending of men to Deepe. It appeareth by him that saw them, they have many vessels that row with oars. Her majesty's pinnaces had been in good case to have been 118
in the river there now. I did never take it meant, either by your lordship or myself, that they should lie like cromsters in the river for any plea. It were better her majesty should pay that little charge they have been at, (which is not great,) than to hazard the dishonour, which they had been very likely to fall into by staying there.....

Now, my lord, whereas you require my opinion concerning what force and strength of shipping were fit to be put to the seas in respect of this great fleet, if it should be answerable with proportion that might equal them, it would be too much to be done in that time, that would be fit for it, both in respect of the victualling of them, and the pressing of men; which at this time will be hard to come by. Yet it is fit that something should be done, and that some force should be had in a readiness to defend, though not able to offend much. Great fleet of Spanish ships.

The rest that follows is my lord admiral's own hand.

These ships, I think, most fit to be put in some readiness.

	Men.		Men.
The Lion -	250	The Swiftsure -	220
The Hope -	250	The Rainbow -	250
The Dreadnought	270	The Advantage -	220
			1310

ANNO 1592.

At the margin of this letter, against the names of these ships, the lord treasurer noted several other ships, which were then on the seas, and their number of men, viz.

	Men.		Men.
Trementane -	70	The Moon -	40
Another - -	100	The Charles -	40
			250

The admiral proceeded thus:

If these ships be liked of, as indeed they be the fittest for winter service, they may be grounded, and sent in some readiness. But I could wish, that the Rainbow and Advantage were sent into the narrow seas with all speed, and sir Henry Palmer to have the charge, if your lordship think good, or other of these may be put unto them; either the Dreadnought or the Swiftsure. It may fall out there may be no need of the rest. Yet the other three may be put in readiness, if need require. If your lordship find her majesty to like of this, then you must send for Mr. Gr——, and take order for their victuals; and that I may hear from you for putting the ships in readiness.

This fleet that was discovered were fifty sail; and had among them a galleas or two. These and those of Britain under Sebures are two several fleets. For by the parties
119 saying, he left but the day before the sixteen flyboats, and the two galleys, and four pinnaces in the range of St. Maloes, it is greatly to be doubted, if they be not gone into Newhaven, that they be gone for Scotland. If your lordship do remember what Mr. Mowlre, the Scot, declared unto your lordship and myself at Greenwich, this may very well fall out to be the same. And if it be so, it must be more than I here set down a good deal, that will fetch them out of the Frith, if they once possess it.

My lord, as you write, it is fitter her majesty were at some standing house near, than wandering so far off, to see but that she hath already seen [in her progress]; and not much worth the labour. God bless her majesty, and send her well home. And that these great and weighty causes may be

weightily considered. For every year will grow more dangerous than other. The enemy hath the start of us too much already. Let us meet with it in some time. The plot is great and dangerous that is laid; and although it hath been once checked, [in the year 88,] the malice was not gone, nor the game ended. We must look for more play. And God send us no worse luck. And so I commend you to the protection of the Almighty, to keep you in health. For by the Lord we cannot spare you in this world. From Byflete this 1st of September, at eleven of the clock at night.

ANNO 1592.

The queen's danger.

The plot.

Your loving friend, and ever at your commandment,

C. Howard.

Number LXXV.

Sir Roger Manwood, lord chief baron, to the lord treasurer Burghley: his submission upon several abuses: committed, and under restraint.

My good lord,

I PROTEST before Almighty God, that I have in my heart always much honoured your good lordship for your rare gifts and incomparable service in this commonwealth. And I never had thought to contend or contest with your lordship. Howbeit, forasmuch as I did write one letter to your lordship, with sundry particulars of my losses and hinderances, otherwise than in duty I ought, I do humbly confess my folly, and do for the same humbly submit myself. Beseeching your good lordship to remit the same, my first offence, and, I trust in God, shall be the last; protesting before Almighty God, and upon my salvation, that I had no intention to have offended your lordship; but in the anguish and agony of my grieved heart against the untrue complaints against me, I did so much write and offend, which I do not stand in to justify; but do confess, and humbly beseech your good lordship, that this my commitment and restraint of liberty in city and country spread

ANNO 1592. abroad, to my great discredit and heavy grief of myself, my wife, children, and family, may by your good lordship's means be discharged in charity, without any further revenge, according to your lordship's letter to me. And the rather, my good lord, because it is the first commitment and restraint that hath happened on me in the whole course of my sixty-seven years life. And now in this mine age most like to hasten mine end, after my lord Wray, who is with God, I trust I may find, that *hac miti castigatione contenta sit tua bonitas.* And I shall be most bounden unto your good lordship in all the brief remnant of my days, to pray to Almighty God for the long preservation of your good lordship. From my poor house in Great St. Bartholomew's, London. With a most grievous afflicted mind. This 12th day of May, 1592.

Your good lordship's most humbly,

Rog. Manwood.

Number LXXVI.

The lord chief baron's submission to the lords: by whom he had refused to have his causes tried.

I DO acknowledge to your most honourable lordships, that where by my late letters, written both in general to your lordships, as to her majesty's privy-counsellors, and to some others of this table in private manner, your lordships have conceived, that I have refused and been unwilling to have any causes of mine, whereof complaints have or should be made to her majesty, or to your lordships, to be ordered or heard otherwise than by the ordinary course of the common laws; I am most sorry to have given your lordships such just cause to have conceived of me; and for that I did by my said writing otherwise than in duty I now know that I ought to have done. I do most humbly submit myself for the same: beseeching your good lordships to remit the same, being my first, and, I trust, shall be my last offence.

And for further declaration of my dutiful mind hereafter, and for reformation of my said offence, I do assure

your lordships, that I will never refuse to make dutiful answers to her majesty, or to your honourable lordships, or afore such as her majesty or your lordships shall authorize to hear any such complaint against me; being firmly persuaded, that neither her majesty, nor your lordships, will commit the hearing or ordering of any such complaints from herself, or from yourselves, but to persons of knowledge and indifference, in such sort as upon favourable hearing of the probable allegations of both parties, and upon due report made to her majesty, or to your lordships, if the complainants shall not be otherwise satisfied by my answers, her majesty or your lordships may truly understand in whom the fault shall be, either for the correction 121
or reproof of the complainants, if they shall have complained without cause; or if the fault or error shall be found in me, then I shall be most willing, as in duty I ought to be, to reform myself, and to make amends to the parties, as by her majesty, or your lordships, shall be thought reasonable. Or otherwise, if the causes of the complaints shall, upon hearing thereof, appear to her majesty, or your lordships, to be more apt to be tried by the law than by such extraordinary hearing; then I also shall be ready to be directed to the trial and judgment of the law, or as the nature of the causes shall require, to her majesty's ordinary courts, ordained for causes of equity. Whereunto also I shall always be obedient. ANNO 1592.

And for satisfaction of your lordships for my late fault committed in my foresaid writings, I do most humbly beseech your lordships, that this writing, voluntarily subscribed by me with my hand in your lordship's presence, may be favourably accepted, and be a testimony of my intention never hereafter to commit the like fault. Signed at Greenwich before the lords of the council, the 14th of May, 1592.

These were the minutes corrected by the lord treasurer's own hand.

ANNO 1592.

Number LXXVII.

Another letter of the said lord chief baron to the lord treasurer: upon divers complaints and lawsuits against him.

My good lord,

UPON my last speech to your lordship, I found your lordship very bitter, not patient to hear me, to my great grief: I am now forced by these to put your lordship in mind briefly, that the intent and sum of my late written particulars to your lordship is, (for all things done and past,) I do with David hold myself contented, accounting the same to be God's visitation upon me, when any such bad folks in their bad causes have heretofore prevailed against me. And so do leave the same to your lordship's own conscience. And for things to come, that I may with your lordship's good favour enjoy the freedom of a loyal subject, not to have any of my goods drawn from me upon private complaints of any of mine adversaries, without due course of justice in some of her majesty's public courts. And thus do briefly cease; praying God long to continue your good lordship. At Sergeant's-Inn, this 13th of April, 1592.

Your good lordship's humbly,
Rog. Manwood.

Postsc. My writing aforementioned was not of any other intent, I take God to my judge: and *Intentio judicat quemque*, in rules of charity.

122

Number LXXVIII.

A case of Tho. Diggs, esq. against Manwood, steward of the chancery and admiralty court at Dover, in the ports; afterward lord chief baron. Found among the lord treasurer's papers.

ABOUT the year 1570, the queen granted him a fee-farm of such encroachments as had been made in Kent,

upon her majesty's seas shores and navigable channels, with licence also to and enclose such lands; so as it were not hurtful to any of her majesty's havens, &c. By virtue of this her grant in the time of judge Saunders, lord chief baron, the said Diggs did recover certain lands, and had judgment in the exchequer for them; and her majesty received 3*l.* a year rent for ever for them. And in the time of the succeeding chief baron, there were divers matters in suit; but by reason of the wealth of the intruders, and the devices of their council for delay to weary him, he could not come to any full trial till justice Manwood was lord chief baron. But he being Digge's extreme enemy, by reason of his leases of Barton Wingham marshes, whereof Manwood sought to defeat him, he found such imperfections, or pretences of imperfections, in all former pleadings, verdicts, &c. as all the two or three years' charges were utterly lost; and in every new suit he found him so much his enemy, as in every suit there was no hope for him of any good. And therefore made suit unto him, that he would give judgment against her majesty, that in the end he might surrender his grant, and let her highness know her grant was nothing. ANNO 1592.

He procured also Mr. Secretary Wylson to move the queen for her commandment unto him, to proceed unto some final judgment. Whereupon her majesty did, by secretary Wylson, require him to do Diggs justice without delay. The like suit he made to the lord treasurer; but all in vain.

For albeit the law was so evident on her majesty's side, as the lord chief baron dared not give judgment against her; yet was his hatred so vehement against Diggs, that he would not give judgment for his benefit. And therefore by sundry kinds of strange delays sought to weary Diggs, as he plainly saw, that while he lived, and had that place, there was no possibility for him to have any end. And therefore seeing he should but consume himself with charge, gave it quite over as a matter desperate, as long as he continued chief baron: who most unconscionably, [as he ex-

ANNO 1592. pressed it,] by subtile and cunning practices, and extreme rigour of law, sought to have utterly defeated him of those leases of Wingham Barton, and his brother William Diggs of his grand lease; nor could come to any conclusion with him, but to his loss, contrary to all equity and conscience, a thousand pounds at the least, besides the extreme charge of suit many ways by the unjust vexation of the tenants.

123 Then Diggs related the baron's dealings with him and his tenants; and then goes on in these words:

In this time of my persecution, there was brought unto me by a number of several persons in Kent, by the chief baron in like or worse sort oppressed, above twenty several such and so foul matters, as the least of many (by the very justice of law prosecuted and approved on him) would have confiscate all the goods, and chattels, and lands he had in England; and some such as concerned also highly her majesty's honour, as by their memorials, yet remaining with me, may partly appear. But the advancement to the place of chief baron so terrified all men from complaining against him, that they committed all to God, without seeking any redress, as myself also was fain to do, to my detriment above a thousand pounds.

Number LXXIX.

The bishop of Lincoln to the lord high treasurer of England; shewing the true state of the vicarage of Hocknorton; endeavoured to be alienated from the church, upon pretence of concealment; John Williams, B. D. then vicar. About the year 1591 *or* 1592.

MAY it please your honour to understand, that the parsonage and vicarage of Hocknorton are by Huckfold, Mr. Croker's own bailiff, deposed to be let out yearly for 400*l.* and above. That there be communicants in the parish of Hocknorton almost five hundred. That after Palm-Sunday last, Mr. Williams turned back from communicating about forty persons, most of them of the age of thirty years, or

above; who knew not how many Gods there were; or knew who made them, or who redeemed them, or what they came thither to receive. ANNO 1592.

That there hath been not any hospitality kept at either parsonage or vicarage this many years by Mr. Croker. And three of the parish died lately, within the compass of one fortnight, of mere famine. All these are proved to my lord keeper.

Mr. Croker his state in the vicarage of Hocknorton.

Mr. Croker challengeth the vicarage of Hocknorton to be appropriate by an union made to the abbot of Oseney by pope Leo only, without authority of the king, in the 4th of king Henry the Eighth. Which union he hath not authentical; but hath only an extract out of an old book without date; and also by a lease made by King, abbot of Tame, and commendatory of Oseney, the 29th of Henry the Eighth.

Williams his estate in the said vicarage.

Mr. Williams allegeth, that he hath been presented by her majesty, and formally instated, and inducted into that said vicarage. And to prove it institutive, sheweth xx several institutions. And that the said vicarage hath been still presented from ann. 1209 to 1536, without intermission, as the several institutions recorded do shew, against the pretended union alleged. A later institution, and the statute of the 28th of Henry the Eighth, with many other statutes now in force. And against the lease he allegeth, that being granted of a vicarage presentative, and never leased before, it can no way be good. 124

And your said orator most humbly beseecheth your honour so to favour the cause of a poor scholar, as that your honour, in the right of church, will finally determine the matter in your court of the exchequer chamber, according to the order set down in that honourable court; and not dismiss it to the common law, to your orator's further molestation and utter impoverishing. So that your orator be ever bound to pray for the increase of honour to your lordship.

ANNO 1592.

Number LXXX.

Instructions for the speaker's speech; drawn up, in several articles, by the lord treasurer Burghley, Feb. 13, 1592.

1. HER majesty's loathness to call any parliament frequently, as her progenitors have always usually done, almost every year, or second year one; or to call any at all, without great and urgent cause.

2. And for that purpose it may be noted, that in her first thirteen years there have been called but four; the rest thirteen, but three; and the rest, being nine, but three.

3. The causes now are grown greater than any have been, and more necessary to be further considered; and by good counsel to be provided for, against the greatness of the dangers that are grown more manifest, and greater than heretofore.

4. The king of Spain hath, since his attempt by invasion by sea in 1588, (wherein God fought for the realm,) been occupied these late years in building of great numbers of new ships, making many of them fit to fight with the ships of England. He hath made also such provisions out of all parts of the east for the arming of his navies, as he intendeth to make the strength of this his navy double to that it was.

5. He hath begun a mighty war in France by so many ways, as without God's goodness, for the justice of the French king's cause, it is doubtful that he will shortly possess that crown, to make himself thereby a monarch of all Christendom, and a conqueror of all his neighbours.

6. The means of his wars against France are these that follow: first, he hath already gotten the best part of all Britain, in manner of a conquest by sea; a place as dangerous to be possessed by him, for invading of England, as if he had conquered the Low Countries.

125 7. Secondly, he maintaineth, with continual wages, and pay, and great pensions, a number of rebellious subjects in France against the king; retaining also at his devotion the principal towns to rebel, and to be at his command.

ANNO 1592.

8. He hath presently so corrupted the rebels, although they consist of but a few nobility; yet of great towns and vulgar people. And although he hath no prince of the blood, or ancient officer of the crown, holding part with him; yet the rebels presently do make a pretence and counterfeit of an assembly of three estates at Paris. Therein to make an election of a king, wherein he hopeth by his corruption to gain the multitude of voices for himself, or for his daughter, to match her, where he may command the crown.

9. Besides this, as he did of late years invade France with a mighty army by the duke of Parma, and by another sent from the pope, (who never heretofore shewed his hostility otherwise than by bulls and excommunication,) so he now intendeth to renew the same again this year; having begun already to enter into a part of the frontiers of France with part of the army, which he mindeth to increase.

10. He maketh also invasion into France by the duke of Savoy, into Dolphine and Provence; and useth also the duke of Lorrain to do the like in Burgonie and Monpaignie. And at the present he hath addressed an army to enter into France by the way of Navar. So as there is no part of any frontier of France by which he doth not attempt this invasion; besides the invading of the body of the realm by the rebellion.

11. Besides this, his purpose to renew the invasion of this realm is discovered to be done by Scotland: where very lately a treasonable conspiracy is found to have been intended by divers noblemen in Scotland, being papists. For assurance whereof to the king of Spain, they had sent him divers bonds under their hands and seals; which being ready to be shipped, and sent into Spain, have been taken. In which conspiracy hath been determined, that the king of Spain should send the conspirators certain great sums of money to wage forces to join with his forces, which he should send by sea to Scotland. And therewith to enter, and make invasion into England; and to overrule the king there, and to make change of religion within that realm.

12. At that instant also the king of Spain promised to

ANNO 1592. make invasion into England by sea. And what may follow in Scotland, to the stay of this conspiracy by the apprehension of the conspirators, is yet doubtful; the conspirators being so great men, and fled to remote parts of the realm, and thought to have a secret party, and many more with them not yet known.

13. These dangers are worthy consideration how to provide for them: a matter so needful for this parliament, as her majesty thinketh it no ways convenient to treat of any other, but of such as tend to the means of some remedies hereof.

14. Finally, her majesty cannot overpass to let this assembly understand, that though they have heretofore, for lesser dangers than these are, offered some relief to her majesty
126 towards her charges, yet the same hath been so abused generally through the realm in the tax of the men of wealth, that should have given most aid, as if it should be by some examples specified of some commons by name in every country, to this assembly, how little the men in greatest livelihood in countries have yielded, it would seem an absurd thing for her majesty to receive it with thanks; considering with what good words the parliament did grant the same. And except such abuses may be remedied, her majesty shall account her service to be in words, and not in deed; and so herself abased in her expectation, and the realm frustrate in their intentions, and in danger irreparable.

ANNO 1592.

Some remarkable letters of sir Walter Raleigh, admiral of the fleet, concerning the great Spanish carack, richly laden from the East Indies, taken by some of his ships.

This huge carack was called *The Mother of God;* it was seven decks high, 165 foot long, and manned with 600 men. Of which ship, the treasure, and the taking of it, Camden, in his Annals of Queen Elizabeth, gives some brief account, under anno 1592.

Number LXXXI.

Sir Walter Raleigh to the lord treasurer, concerning the robbing of the great Spanish carack. Upon sir Robert Cecil's coming down to examine the matter, Sept. 21, 1592.

THE particularities of all done, your lordship shall receive from sir Robert Cecil. If the like diligence had been used at Plymouth, where the earl [of Cumberland's] ships arrived; at Portsmouth, where the Foresight arrived; at Harwich, where the Dainty arrived, as hath been here, their value of the carack would then have resembled itself in some sort. But if the earl[a] were presented of voluntary gift with so many thousands of pearls and diamonds, and these only from such of his men as were abiding in the carack, what is to be thought of the rest remaining? His own ships I leave to your lordship's discretion: and what was unpresented was of some account, if it had been recovered. For mercenary men are not so affectionate or religious, but that they can, with safe conscience, lick their own fingers.

[a] Whose ships chiefly engaged the carack.

What will be done hereafter, I know not; but I dare give the queen ten thousand pounds sterling, for that which is gained by sir Robert Cecil's coming down; which I protest, before the living God, I speak of truth, without all affection or partiality, (for God is my judge,) he hath more rifled my ship than all the rest: and yet she only stayed by

ANNO 1592. the carack, lost most men, most of all spoiled; and only remaineth here under commandment. The rest are gone, every one his way. And truly, my lord, Cross was most to blame, and dealt lewdly, to leave the carack, and afterwards to steal
127 from sir Martin [Frobisher]. I have always served him to my power; but his mad behaviour is too insolent in this action. Thus with remembrance of my duty I humbly take my leave, and remain most ready to do your lordship all honour and service.

W. Ralegh.

Number LXXXII.

Sir Walter Ralegh to the lord treasurer; to send down a commission for examination and inquiry concerning the robbing of the carack, Sept. 17, 1592.

MY humble duty remembered. If it please your lordship to send us by this bearer a commission, to examine upon oath, as well mariners as townsmen, and all strangers of other places, what hath been bought or sold, I doubt not but we shall find out many things of importance. For the earl of Cumberland's, who had the chiefest pillages, arrived at Plymouth, and made port-sale of diamonds, rubies, musk, ambergris, and all other commodities. And not one of the commissioners ever moved or sent thither; but only sacked my ship, which only attended the carack, even to the very keelson. The earl's ships, the Dainty, the Dragon, the Foresight, and the rest, ran from her into several ports, and ever sold all; only my poor men and ship was stripped for her good attendance. And if she had forsaken the carack, as the rest did, she had been cast away.

Also, if it please your lordship to send a commission to alderman Marten and others, to make inquiry into London, what goldsmiths or jewellers are gone down, and that at their return they may be examined upon oath, what stones or pearls they have bought; I doubt not but many things will be discovered. If I meet any of them coming up, if it be upon the wildest heath in all the way, I mean

to strip them as naked as ever they were born. For it is infinite that her majesty hath been robbed, and that of the most rare things. ANNO 1592.

Whereas I wrote to your lordship for 2000*l.* if we load the same ships with the goods, we shall not need to pay but part, and the rest at London. So as I think one thousand will serve. This in haste, I humbly take my leave. From Hartelbery, this Sunday morning.

Your lordship's humbly at commandment,

W. Ralegh.

If it please your lordship to send commission to myself, sir John Gilbert, sir Francis Drake, Mr. Killigrew, Mr. Christopher Harris, and Mr. Payden, the customer, and Tristram George, because some other dwell upon Saltashe river, and shall be able among their tenants to find out other things.

Number LXXXIII. 128

Sir Walter Ralegh's cause for the carack. Drawn up by himself.

THE account of our whole charge amounteth to 34,000*l.* Her majesty hath given order that we shall receive 36,000*l.* so as there is given to us of profit 2000*l.* The city of London is to have 6000*l.* profits by her majesty's order.

Then are they to have her majesty's allowance of 2000*l.* upon all; and 4000*l.* profit more out of our principal. By that means we are to lose 4000*l.* of our money disbursed.

The help which we have, 3000*l.* of the queen. And then we lose but a 1000*l.* But of that 3000*l.* of the queen, 1200*l.* was bestowed on her own ships to make them perfect.

Then there remaineth 1800*l.* towards the loss of 4000*l.* so as the loss will be 2200*l.* In respect whereof we have the remains and our ships again. But we are not allowed for our ships in this account, as they were worth in adventure, but only according to the loss which we sustain by them. And that remain is nothing to us; for we take our ships in part of payment.

ANNO 1592.

The earl of Cumberland is allowed also 36,000*l.* and his account came but to 19,000*l.*; so as he hath 17,000*l.* profit. Who adventured for himself. And we that served the queen, and assisted her service, have not our own again.

Besides, I gave my ships salt and cables to furnish the carack and bring her home, or else she had perished. My ship first boarded her, and only stayed with her, and brought her into harbour; or else she had also perished upon Silley. I was not present, and therefore had not extraordinary profit. I was the cause that all this came to the queen; and that the king of Spain spent 300,000*l.* the last year. And I lost the last year, in the voyage of my lord Thomas Howard, 1600*l.* beside the interest of 11,000*l.* which I have paid ever since this voyage began. And further, my ship, and sir John Hawkins, that were takers with the Foresight of the queen's, have no other allowance than those that were absent.

And whereas the city only disbursed 6000*l.* and have 12,000*l.* again; the same being taken out of the halls of London among a multitude: I that adventured all my state, loss of my principal; and they have double. I took all the care and pains; carried the ships from hence to Falmouth, and from thence to the north cape of Spain; and they only sat still, and did but disburse 6000*l.* out of the common store; for which double is given to them, and less than mine own to me; and to the earl of Cumberland 17,000*l.* profit; who adventured for himself, and I for the queen.

129 Number LXXXIV.

Sir Walter Ralegh to the lord treasurer; concerning the carack, worth 200,000*l. How much thereof came to the queen's share. Now under restraint. Dated Sept.*——, 1592.

SIR GEORGE CAREW hath dealt with me, to know in particular how her majesty might be profited by the carique, according to the offer I made. My promise was not to buy

my bondage, but my liberty. And I hope of her majesty's favour..... Before I heard of the taking of the carack, I thought not worth the labour [to compute the account of the voyage.] And myself being the greatest adventurer, I was contented rather to smother my loss, than labour to publish an hopeless overthrown estate, &c. ANNO 1592.

Briefly, of 5000 ton of shipping, her majesty hath but 1100.... Of 18,000*l.* in money, her majesty hath but 1500*l.* for the other 1500*l.* was employed on her two ships, as by sir John Hawkins's account will appear. To conclude, her majesty's adventure will come but to the tenth part. Which of 200,000*l.* (such I think is the value of the carack) her majesty's part will be 20,000*l.* And I know her majesty will not take the right of her subjects from them, contrary to her hand and seal; in consideration, that for her service sake, and the rather for your lordship's persuasion, they were contented to adventure.

And this is not the last time that her majesty shall need their contribution. If her majesty had set out the journey of her own charge, it would have cost her 40,000*l.* And now it stood her but in 1500*l.* besides her two ships. Instead of this 20,000*l.* if I had made it 100,000*l.* and done injury to none but myself, I hope it may be thought that it proceeded from a faithful mind, and a true desire to serve her. Fourscore thousand pounds is more than ever a man presented her majesty as yet. If God have sent it for my ransom, I hope her majesty, of her abundant goodness, will accept it. If I speak with the least, I greater sum, I greater sum will be more thankworthy. If my imprisonment or my life might do her majesty more good, I protest, before God, I would never desire either liberty or further respite of breathing.

And if her majesty cannot beat me from my affection, I hope her sweet nature will think it no conquest to afflict me. What her will shall be, I shall willingly obey. And so I humbly take my leave of your lordship. From this unsavoury dungeon this of Septemb.

ANNO 1592.

Number LXXXV.

Sir Walter Ralegh to the lord treasurer. His advice for the division of the treasury of the carack. Sept. 16, 1592.

130 BY your lordship's great favour, I have obtained liberty to ride down. I hope it shall be profitable for her majesty, and a quietness and satisfaction to the rest..... Present payment must be made the ships, that they come not under further charge..... The way to profit her majesty's cause be in this wise. To take a fifth part of her custom. Secondly, a tenth part or more for her particular adventure. And next, and chiefly, I will put the third part of all into her hands for the mariners: which I did undertake to pay; and of right belongeth unto myself: which will amount to the one half of the carack..... I did bind myself to all the ships' company to pay them. Which indeed I did; and confessed to sir Robert Cecil, while I was a prisoner..... I will aver, that I undertook on us, in the name and right, who had promised me to save me harmless; hoping of her majesty's goodness otherwise. For I protest before the living God, both my three years' pension of the Custom-house, which was 6000*l.* and all I have besides is in this journey..... All the wages of the seamen will not amount to 6000*l.* For that the *third*, I doubt not, but will be three-score thousand.

Number LXXXVI.

Henry earl of Darby to the lords of the privy-council; concerning the papists in Lancashire; and direction for dealing with them. Bell a seminary's informations.

May it please your lordships,

SINCE I despatched Bell, the seminary, I have well considered of that he revealed. And forasmuch as by mine own experience and knowledge of the party, I conceive that many of his informations be true; and that a number of these whom he chargeth are either known papists to the world, or at the best temporizers, keeping in

their houses those that are badly given; I have thought meet hereby to signify that my opinion to your lordships, and to let you know, that in hope of your like conception of the information, I still expecting some round direction of proceedings from your lordships, have forborne hitherto to deal much against the papists; on purpose only to draw them into a doubtless and secure mind of troubles; to the end I might, upon a sudden receipt of your lordship's direction, perform a better piece of service than I should, if I had stirred much in this mean time. For in vain it were to have attempted any matter or service of importment immediately upon Bell's sending up. ANNO 1592.

Nevertheless, forasmuch as your lordships see by our last certificate the great relapse of the people into blindness, and neglect of their duties towards God and her majesty; which cometh to pass only by means of the backwardness and deep dissimulation of the principals, whom the meaner sort follow. And thus you perceive well by Bell's information the inclination of sundry of calling. As also that those 131
that stand out as recusants do shift and convey themselves away; so as they cannot be met withal.

I will spare to trouble your lordships with mine opinion of mine own, but leave all to your grave considerations: nothing doubting but your lordships will devise such remedies for the suppressing of these enormities, and presumptions of continuance of lenity, as shall stand with God's laws, the safety of her majesty, and the quiet of the whole commonwealth. Praying also your lordships to credit this gentleman, Mr. Fleetwood, parson of Weegan, a discreet and painful labourer in the church of God; who can truly make known unto your lordships upon demand the state of this country, and private affection of the most persons of account. And so commending your lordships and your labours to the direction of God's holy Spirit, do end.

Your lordship's assured loving friend,
and at commandment,
H. Derby.

New-Park, my house, this
30th of Octob. 1592.

ANNO 1592.

Number LXXXVII.

The earl of Derby to sir Tho. Heneage, vice-chamberlain, and chancellor of the duchy. With a copy of the former letter to the council enclosed. The bearer, Mr. Fleetwood, parson of Wigan. Papists, temporizers many.

Sir,

ALBEIT I well know my letter to your lordships will come to your hand, yet to the end you may be the better armed to further my intent, which is to have the presumption of public and secret papists, being temporizers, suppressed, here enclosed to send you a copy thereof; being well assured, that answerable to the hope of all well given subjects in these parts, you will effectually further the good of the church, and the suppression of the maligners thereof. For any particulars touching that sort of this county, this bearer, Mr. Fleetwood, parson of Weegan, a discreet and learned preacher, can inform you truly, whom you may believe. And so with my heartiest commendations do end; wishing to you as to myself.

Your assured loving friend,

New-Park, my house, the 30th of Oct. 1592.

always faithfully to use,
H. Darby.

Number LXXXVIII.

The earl of Darby to the lord treasurer; that upon the directions of the lords he was in prosecution of the recusants.

132 My very honourable good lord,

WHAT success your lordship's very grave directions (which I assure your lordship have much revived and comforted all well given subjects here) have taken will appear by my letter to your lordship, and Mr. Wand's reports; who, having been an eyewitness of all proceedings, hath carried himself very discreetly, and with great diligence in this service. The which, although it hath been hindered by

such means as are set down in my letter, yet within a short time, and upon the sudden, when all things be quieted, I hope will appear to effect some good service in the apprehending of Jesuits, seminaries, and such like traitorous persons. The rather by intelligence and help of those whose appearance there is dispensed withal for a time for good purpose; who by bond and oath (dwelling in corrupt places) have undertaken to discover them. ANNO 1592.

And so nothing doubting but your lordship will further the continuance of these well begun proceedings, I do commit your good lordship and your labours to the direction of God's holy Spirit.

Your lordship's assured loving friend,

New-Park, my house, the 27th of Novemb. 1592. always faithfully to use, H. Derby.

Number LXXXIX.

Friar Robert Southwel, a dangerous conspirator, taken. Richard Topcliff writ to the queen a letter in June concerning him, and his taking and keeping; and concerning Anth. Coppley.

I HAVE him here within my strong chamber in Westminster churchyard, [i. e. the Gate-house.] I have made him assured for starting or hurting of himself, by putting upon his arms a pair of : and there, and so to keep him either from view or conference with any but Nicolas, the under-keeper of the Gate-house, and my boy; Nicolas being the man that caused me to take him.

He sent an examination of him to the queen, faithfully taken, and of him foully and suspiciously answered; and for what: knowing the nature and doings of the man, may it please your majesty to see my simple opinion, constrained in duty to utter it.

Upon this present taking of him, it is good forthwith to enforce him to answer truly and directly; and so to prove his answers true in haste; to the end that such as be deeply

ANNO 1592. concerned in his treachery may not have time to start, or make shift to use any means in common prisons; either to stand upon or against the wall, (which above all things exceedeth, and hurteth not,) will give warning. But if your
133 highness' pleasure be to know any thing in his heart, to stand against the wall, his feet standing upon the ground, and his hands but as high as he can reach against the wall, (like a trick at Trenshemarm,) will enforce him to tell all; and the truth proved by the sequel. 1. The answer of him to the question of the countess of Arundel. And, 2. That of father Parsons deciphereth him.

It may please your majesty to consider, I never did take so weighty a man, if he be rightly considered.

Young Anthony Copley, the most desperate youth that liveth, and some others, be most familiar with Southwel. Copley did shoot at a gentleman the last summer, and killed an ox with a musket. And in Horsham church threw his dagger at the parish clerk, and struck it in a seat in the church. There liveth not the like, I think, in England for sudden attempts; nor one upon whom I have good grounds to have watchful eyes, for his sister Gage's and his brother-in-law Gage's sakes. Of whose pardon he boasteth he is well assured.

And so humbly submitting myself to your majesty's direction in this, or in any service with any hazard, I cease until I have your pleasure. Here at Westminster with my charge and ghostly father, this Monday the 22d of June, 1592.

Your majesty's faithful servant,
Ryc. Topclyff.

Number XC.

An inscription upon the coffin of Roger Rippon, a Barrowist, who died in Newgate this year, 1592.

THIS is the corps of Roger Rippon, a servant of Christ, and her majesty's faithful subject. Who is the last of sixteen or seventeen, which that great enemy of God, the arch-

bishop of Canterbury, with his high commissioners, have murdered in Newgate within these five years, manifestly for the testimony of Jesus Christ. His soul is now with the Lord; and his blood crieth for speedy vengeance against that great enemy of the saints, and against Mr. Richard Young, [a justice of peace in London.] Who in this, and many the like points, hath abused his power, for the upholding of the Romish Antichrist, prelacy and priesthood. ANNO 1592.

Many copies were taken of this libel and shewed about.

Number XCI.

Francis Johnson, a Brownist, in prison, his letter to the lord treasurer, Jan. 18, 1593. *with a paper of certain reasons enclosed; upon his being to be indicted.* Anno 1593.

ALTHOUGH when I last presumed to write unto you, 134
right honourable, I thought then no more to trouble your lordship with my letters; yet now of late hearing that if the session had holden at Newgate the beginning of the last month, as was appointed, two of us (which are falsely called Brownists) were to be indicted, I have once again made bold to write these few lines unto your lordship; and herewithal to send included two reasons, by which it is proved, that we are not within danger of the statute of the 35th of Eliz. chap. 1. whereupon we have thought they would indict us; much less of the statute of the 23d Eliz. chap. 2. as I doubt not but your lordship evidently perceived by the reasons which that faithful witness of Jesus Christ, John Penry, sent unto your honour touching that matter in his lifetime. With this therefore I thought not needful to trouble your lordship again at that time.

Who they be that are indicted, we cannot learn. The two that are indicted, one of the commissioners openly spake it, when he sat with others at Westminster, the 5th of the last month. At which time also a preacher, one of us, being called thither: and upon their speeches and de- Mr. Wroth. Mr. Smith.

ANNO 1593.

mands, answering, that he marvelled, who hath been above eleven months prisoner, they should deal with men by imprisonment, and other rigorous means, in matters of religion and conscience, rather than by more Christian and fit proceedings; protesting unto them, that he should but dissemble with them, and play the hypocrite, if he should, to please them, or to avoid trouble, submit to go to church, and to join with the public ministry of those assemblies, as it now standeth; he being persuaded in conscience that it was utterly unlawful. The aforesaid commissioner said to him again, Come to the church, and obey the queen's laws, and be a dissembler, be a hypocrite, or a devil, if thou wilt. Pardon my boldness in mentioning this, I beseech your lordship: for their unchristian and heathenish speeches to us, and usage of us, force me unto it.

And is yet in the Marshalsea.

Mr. Justice Young also (who among the rest of the commissioners that usually sit with him, seems to carry matters as pleaseth him) will neither alone, nor with the rest, (when suit is made unto him,) suffer some of us so much as to have the liberty of the prisons (where we are.) Insomuch as my brother, called George Johnson, hath now been detained about eleven months, and myself about fourteen months, in several close prisons: he in a noisome chamber of the common gaol of the Fleet, and myself in the Clink. Yea, when our poor old father, this bearer, sued to him but for liberty of the prison. For as he, with the dean of Westminster, would have sent him to prison, had not Mr. justice Barnes stayed them. He sent also, in her majesty's and your honour's names, to take away my papers and books, as I wrote to your lordship heretofore; and still detaineth some of my books, although they be allowed by public authority, and all my papers; which albeit for the most part they be against the prelacy and other clergy of this land, yet are not any way within danger of the statute, as your lordship may see by the reasons included. Yet it may be they will pretend something (though never so unjust) out of them against me, as they have dealt with my

brethren already; whom they have killed; and now can do no more to them. Otherwise I cannot imagine whereon they will indict me, unless it be for sending to your lordship six books; (touching the Hauns ships which came to Middleborough while I was there, about three months since;) that is, for doing the duty of a loyal subject. ANNO 1593.

For indeed I remember, that when Mr. Barrow and the rest of us were examined the last Lent, I was asked, Whether I had ever seen [any] of those books? Whereunto I answered, That being at Middleborough, one Mr. Ferrers, then the deputy of the merchant-adventurers there, shewed me one of them. And because he understood not the Latin tongue, desired me to look upon it. Which when I had done, perceiving it to be written against this land, and he telling me that six of them came to that town, I wished him to buy them all up, and to send them with all speed to your lordship; which he accordingly did, and caused them to be delivered to your honour, (as I take it,) either by Mr. Saltonstal, alderman of this city, and governor of the company of merchants aforesaid, or by some others of his appointment. Your lordship may think it strange, that ever we should suspect them to be so unreasonable and wickedly minded, as to trouble us for these things, wherein we have done the duty of good and faithful subjects. But, my lord, we have found such unchristian usage at their hands, and perceived their hearts so to thirst after our blood, as if they were not restrained, partly for fear of her majesty and your honours, partly for shame of the world, and chiefly by the mighty and overruling hand of God, we might justly fear they would bring as much innocent blood upon this land at this day, as ever Arundel, Gandymer, Stokesly, Boner, Story, Dunning, or any such like bloodsuckers have done heretofore.

Now the scripture saith, [Numbers xxxv. 33.] that blood defileth the land; and that the Lord, when he maketh inquisition for blood, [Psalm ix. 12.] remembereth it. Therefore it behoveth your lordship, for the love which you bear

ANNO 1593. to this land, to her majesty, to yourself, and to your posterity, to be a means (according to the authority God hath given you) in time to stay their wicked and bloodthirsty purposes: lest otherwise our blood and God's curse be upon you and yours; because you have not holpen the Lord against the mighty, as it is written, [Judg. v. 23.]

I know, right honourable, that if you look at our persons, we are a people despised and reviled of all men; yea, every where spoken against, as schismatics, seditious persons, subverters of the state, and what not. But this (alas!) hath been the lot of the truth, and servants of God; [2 Tim. iii. 12. Acts xxviii. 22. Acts and Monuments every where.] yea, of the prophets, [Jer. xxxviii. 4. Matt. v. 11, 12.] apostles, [Acts xvii. 6, 7. and xxiv. 5, 6.] and of Christ himself, [Luke xxiii. 2. John xix. 12.] thus to be railed upon, and persecuted for the truth's sake; and commonly under other colour and pretence.

Therefore are we not ashamed of the gospel and sufferings of Christ: neither ought your lordship to withhold
136 your help from us, inasmuch as we suffer these things only for refusing to have spiritual communion with the Antichristian prelacy, and other clergy abiding in this land; and for labouring, in all holy and peaceable manner, to obey the Lord Jesus Christ in his own ordinance of ministry and worship, prescribed in his last testament, and sealed with his precious blood. Wherein if we did err, yet prisons and gallows were no fit means to convince and persuade our consciences; but rather a quiet and godly conference, or discussing of the matter by deliberate writing before equal judges. Which we have often sued for, but yet could never obtain it.

And now again therefore do in all humble manner sue to your lordship to procure it for us; not that we doubt of this cause, whereof we are fully persuaded by the word of God, and are still ready, by the grace of God, to seal it with our blood; but to the end that, the truth being found out, and made manifest, the false offices, callings, and works

of the prelacy, and other clergy of this land, might be quite abolished out of it; and their lordships and possessions (which so long as they are the maintenance of this false ministry, were fitly of old, by the lord Cobham, that blessed martyr, said to be the venom of Judas shed into the church) might be converted to her majesty's civil uses; (to whom of right they belong;) as were, not long since, the like livings of the abbots, monks, and friars in these dominions; that thus there might be more free passage to the gospel of Christ, and more peace to the church. So as no more innocent blood might be brought upon this land; but God might be worshipped in peace, according to his word; and her majesty obeyed, not for wrath only, but also for conscience sake. ANNO 1593. Acts and Monuments, edit. 4. vol. i. p. 562.

And of these things we are bold to write to your lordship, being persuaded, that it is high time for your honours with speed to consider hereof: especially now, that the Lord hath already begun to plead against this country and people by so contagious and deadly a plague, as in wonderful manner hath been brought upon this land and inhabitants thereof, since the shedding of the blood of those faithful servants of Christ this year last past[a]. And considering also, that her majesty, as we hear, in a gracious and tender compassion of our distressed estate, hath given commission to discharge us all. None of which things seem to be regarded of our adversaries; at least not so as they ought.

[a] Penry, Barrow, and Greenwood.

Unto your lordship therefore I am bold, in the name also of my brethren, once again to make this complaint: humbly praying your good honour to shew that love unto Christ [Matt. xxv. 34, 35, &c.] at this time in us, his poor afflicted children, which he requireth at your hands, accounted as done or denied unto himself; and therefore will accordingly recompense in that great day.

And thus in all humble manner craving pardon for this boldness, I betake your lordship to the protection of the Almighty; praying him still to lengthen your life in this world, to the praise of his name, and furthering of the

ANNO 1593. truth; and to give you everlasting life in the world to come, to your endless comfort by Jesus Christ. *Amen.*

Your honour's most humble suppliant,

Francis Johnson,

From the Clink, Jan. 8, 1593.

Pastor of this poor distressed church; and still in close prison for the gospel of Jesus Christ.

137 Number XCII.

Francis Johnson's paper, enclosed in the letter before, had this title. "*That F. J. for his writings, is not under* "*the danger of the statute of 35 Eliz. ca. 1. made to re-* "*tain the queen's subjects in their due obedience, ap-* "*peareth thus.*"

FIRST, By comparing together the words of this statute with the statute of the 1 Eliz. 1. wherein her majesty's authority in ecclesiastical causes is declared; and with the interpretation and defence thereof allowed by public authority.

2. It will appear that he is not within the danger of the statute aforesaid, by demanding this question of the prelates and ministers: to wit; whether her majesty, with the consent of the parliament, may suppress and abolish this present prelacy and ministry of the land, and transfer their revenues and possessions to her own civil uses, as her father, of famous memory, Henry VIII. did with abbots, monks, &c. and with their livings.

3. His writings are only in defence of such doctrines of the religion of Christ, as being against the canonical function of the pope, were accounted Lollardy and heresy in the holy servants and martyrs of Christ in former days. As for example, John Wickliff held, that archbishops, bishops, archdeacons, officials, deans, were disciples of Antichrist. *Acts and Monum.* 4 edit. vol. i. p. 450.

4. Seeing his writings are only in maintenance of such points of religion as were in the aforesaid martyr accounted

Lollardy and heresy, then would follow, that this statute reviveth those three statutes of the 5 Rich. II. cap. 5. and 2 Hen. IV. cap. 15. and 2 Hen. V. cap. 7. and that of 25 Hen. VIII. cap. 14. and that also it repealed the statute 1 Edw. VI. cap. 12. ANNO 1593.

5. If this statute of 35 Eliz. be against such writings and books as reprove the ecclesiastical ministry and government of archbishops, bishops, archdeacons, deans, &c. then the writing and printing of the public confessions of the reformed churches of Helvetia, Tigur, Geneva, Shaffhuse, &c. wherein they write, that as touching arch-prelates, metropolitans, arch-priests, deans, sub-deans, and all that rabble, they pass not a rush. And the public confessions of the reformed French and Belgick churches: which write, that the church ought to be governed by that regiment or discipline which Christ hath appointed; to wit, so that there be in it pastor, elders, and deacons.

6. In his writings he hath proved his assertions by the word of God, which her majesty protesteth and defendeth, &c.

7. His writings are in defence of the right and liberty of the church of Christ; which the great charter of England granteth shall be free, and have all her whole rights and liberty inviolable, &c.

8. If every persuasion, not to have spiritual communion 138
with the ministry of these assemblies, be within danger of this statute, as tending to impugn her majesty's authority in ecclesiastical causes, then if any should persuade another quite to forsake the aforesaid ministry, and to join himself altogether to the French, Dutch, or Italian churches, allowed by her majesty in London, Norwich, Sandwich, &c. he should also incur the penalty of this statute.

9. He never maliciously persuaded any to abstain from the church, &c. much less to the end and purpose that they should deny, withstand, or impugn her majesty's authority in causes ecclesiastical, &c.

10. He never did, nor doth obstinately, without lawful cause, but upon conscience, grounded upon God's word,

ANNO 1593. and approved by consent of the confessions of the reformed churches, &c. and of the faithful servants and martyrs of Christ, &c. refuse to hear, and to have spiritual communion with the public ministry of these assemblies, as now it standeth.

Finally, These things standing thus, as is aforesaid, and he having been close prisoner ever since a long time before this statute of 35 Eliz. was made, he cannot, in regard of his writings, or any other thing whatsoever, be lawfully convicted to have offended against this statute. And therefore is not under the danger thereof.

Number XCIII.

Some books printed and set forth this year, 1593, *against the new disciplinarian model of church government.*

DANGEROUS positions and proceedings, published and practised within this island of Britain, under pretence of reformation. Which was printed by John Wolf, 1593. The author was Dr. Bancroft; not long after bishop of London; and removed, after archbishop Whitgift's death, to Canterbury. In his advertisement to the reader, he writes, that the author was required by some persons of honour, [Hatton, as it seems, lord chancellor, and the archbishop,] who might dispose of him and his labours, to set down, by way of an historical narration, what he had observed touching certain *positions* holden, and some enterprises achieved or undertaken, for recommending and bringing the presbyterian discipline into this island of Britain, under pretence of reformation.

A survey of the pretended holy discipline. Containing the beginnings, successes, parts, proceedings, authority, and doctrine of it: with some of the manifold and material repugnancies, varieties, and uncertainties in that behalf: faithfully gathered, by way of historical narration, out of the books and writings of principal favourers of that platform.

This was writ by the same author, printed the same year, and by the same printer. ANNO 1593.

Thomas Bilson, D. D. warden of Winchester college, set forth another book this year, entitled, 139

The perpetual government of Christ's church. Designed to confute the new discipline of the government of the church by a presbytery of pastors and lay elders.

And as the former books of Bancroft were historical, so this of Bilson was argumentative: to disprove the reasons and arguments that these disciplinarians used to establish their discipline. The whole title ran in these words:

"*The perpetual government of Christ's church.* Where-
" in are handled the fatherly superiority which God first
" established in the patriarchs for the guiding of his church;
" and after continued in the tribe of Levi and the pro-
" phets; and, lastly, confirmed in the New Testament to
" the apostles and their successors. And also the points in
" question at this day touching the Jewish synedrion: the
" true kingdom of Christ: the apostles' commission: the
" lay presbytery: the distinction of bishops from presby-
" ters; and their succession from the apostles' times and
" hands: the calling and moderating of provincial synods
" by primates and metropolitans: the allotting of dioceses:
" and the popular electing of such as must feed and watch
" the flock: and divers other points concerning the pastoral
" regiment of the house of God,——perused and allowed
" by public authority. Printed by the deputies of Chr.
" Barker, printer to the queen's most excellent majesty."

In the epistle to the reader, he shewed the reasons of his undertaking this controversy: viz. "That when he saw the
" peace of God's church violated by the sharpness of some
" men's humours, and their tongues so intemperate that
" they could not be discerned from open enemies, he
" thought, as in a common danger, not to sit looking till
" all were on fire, but rather by all means to try what kind
" of liquor would restinguish this flame." Another reason leading him to this enterprise, "was the discharge of his
" duty to God and her majesty." For finding that some

ANNO 1593. broached their disciplinary devices under title of God's eternal truth, and professed they could no more forsake the defence thereof than of the Christian faith; and others defaced and reproached the government of the church here received and established, as unlawful, irreligious, and antichristian: he was moved in conscience not to suffer the sacred scriptures to be so violently arrested and overruled by the summons and censures of their new consistories; as also to clear the state of that injurious slander: as if, not knowing or neglecting the manifest voice of Christ's Spirit, we had entertained and preferred the dregs of Antichrist's pride and tyranny. And that these causes, of great and good regard, led him to examine the chief grounds of both disciplines, theirs and ours; and to peruse the proofs and authorities of their part. That, by comparing, it might appear which side came nearest to the sincerity of the scrip-
140 tures, and society of the ancient and uncorrupt church of Christ: the main supporters of their new devised discipline being the general equality of all pastors and teachers, and the joining of lay elders with them, to make up the presbytery that shall govern the church.

In this year 1593 came forth also another book for ecclesiastical courts; written by some learned civilian, (Dr. Cosins, as it seems,) in favour of another matter in the church, clamoured against; namely, the ecclesiastical courts, and the proceedings in them. It was entitled,

"*An apology for sundry proceedings by jurisdiction ec-*
"*clesiastical;* of late times by some challenged; and also
"diversly by them impugned. By which apology, (as it
"followed,) all the reasons and allegations set down, as
"well in a treatise as in certain *notes* that go from hand
"to hand, both against proceeding *ex officio*, and against
"oaths ministered to parties in causes criminal, are also ex-
"amined and answered; and upon that occasion lately re-
"vived and much enlarged, above the first private project;
"and now published, being divided into three parts. The
"first part chiefly sheweth what matters be incident to ec-
"clesiastical cognizance; and so allowed by statutes and

" the common laws. The second treateth of the two ways ANNO
" of proceeding in causes criminal; viz. by way of accusa- 1593.
" tion, and *ex officio judicis*. The third, concerning oaths
" in general; but more especially the lawfulness of such as
" be ministered touching supposed offences, either of them-
" selves that swear, or of their brethren."

Number XCIV.

Two kinds of schismatics, and the danger of their opinions, either directly or by necessary consequence gathered to be holden by those who urge a new church government, commonly called puritans. *These be of two sorts. First, some that will communicate with us in prayers, sermons, and sacraments. Secondly, others that will not. The first sort hold opinions dangerous; first, to her majesty and the crown; or, secondly, to the state, and to the policy of the realm. This paper seems to have been drawn up by the lord keeper Puckring, to be produced against them in the Star-chamber, after their examination before him.*

THE opinions especially touching her majesty and the crown, are either against, first, the revenues of the crown; or, secondly, her highness's prerogative and supremacy; or, thirdly, the prince's safety in the kingdom.

Their opinion against the revenues of the crown. That 141
the detaining of the possessions of religious houses and impropriations (being given once to the church) is sacrilege, and ought to be restored to the church again: that the ministers and others of the ecclesiastical function ought to be exempt from paying first-fruits, tenths, subsidies, and other impositions; like as the priests of Egypt were, even under a heathen king.

Their opinion against the prerogative and supremacy. They take away all gifts of bishoprics and deaneries from her majesty, by dissolving them. They take away all patronages from her majesty and others, and her highness's

ANNO 1593. patronage paramount for benefices lapsed: for they make all ecclesiastical functions merely elective by the people, or their elderships.

When the supremacy was justly restored to the crown, one chief super-eminency was, that the last appellation in all ecclesiastical causes was to be made to the king in the chancery. This they take away. For they make the appellation from an eldership consistory to a colloquy or conference: from thence to a provincial synod: and lastly to a national; and that to be final.

They deny the prince's authority in making laws ecclesiastical; which they do attribute to their synods. No, not so much as to prescribe what apparel the minister should wear: which, they say, cannot be done without injury to the minister. And that the church, nor no man else, may restrain the people from bodily labour in any of the six days.

Though in words they will not deny the oath of supremacy, yet in very truth they take it away. For they say, she is supreme governor over all persons and all causes ecclesiastical, but not [*in causes ecclesiastical.*] For they attribute no more to her, but to establish their discipline at the first, and to defend them from time to time in the execution of it. Which is *nuda potestas facti, et non juris:* an authority attributed by the papists unto their princes.

That her majesty, being a child of the church, is subject to the censures of excommunication by their eldership, as well as any other people. And that no man ought to aid, comfort, salute, or obey an excommunicate person. And that so long as one is excommunicated he cannot exercise his magistracy.

That all persons, as well as meaner persons, must willingly be ruled and governed, and must obey those whom God hath set over them; that is, the just authority of ecclesiastical magistrates; and must lick the dust of the feet of the church.

That the elderships and synods are to call and proclaim public fasts.

That the prince ought to give leave at the first to the churches to call their synods from time to time, as they see cause. ANNO 1593.

That if the prince without God's warrant will enter in, intermeddle with the church, as Gideon, and Nadab, Abihu, Uzza, Uzziah, and Saul did, he must think it none injury to be disobeyed.

That we are not bound to obey the prince's law for conscience sake, because only God's laws do bind men's consciences.

That the prince may not nominate to the people an ec- 142
clesiastical person to be chosen. That the prince must take heed that he pass no weighty matter of the commonwealth, without the assembly of all the estates of the land. Whereby he is barred from treating and capitulating, either for war, peace, or league, with any other prince, without making the parliament privy to it.

That every governor of a commonwealth ought in duty to appoint a successor, according to the laws of the land, before his death.

The late libeller, Martin, wisheth that our parliament would bring in reformation, and put down lord bishops, with all other points of superstition, being for the good of the commonwealth; though it be by withstanding the proceedings of their sovereign. That our church-government is an unlawful church-government, though her majesty and the state allow of it. It is a false government, not prescribed by the word.

That the offices of this church of England are invented by the magistrate, and so no members of Christ's body. That she doth injure the church, to keep the true officers out. That she maimeth and deformeth the body of Christ. That every Christian magistrate is bound to receive this government by pastors, doctors, elders, and deacons, into the church within his dominions, whatsoever inconvenience may be like to follow the receiving of it. That those who withstand it, hold it to be lawful for her majesty and the

ANNO 1593. state to bid God to battle against them; and that they make our prince and governor wage war against God.

That these four officers are now the only true members, that is, the only true officers of the visible body of Christ. So that her majesty, nor any other but these, is a true officer or member in the visible body of the church, by this assertion.

That the highest ecclesiastical authority in all matters of the church is belonging to their eldership.

Against her majesty's safety in the kingdom.

That the government of the church is *aristocratical*, or popular: and that the government of the commonwealth must be framed according to the government of the church; even as the hangings to the church.

Among the Lacedemonians there were certain magistrates, called *ephori*, which had authority to depose their kings. They now make such magistrates to be God's ordinance in every monarchy, to put a king down, if he be thought by them to be a tyrant: and do think it lawful and behooveful, even in a kingdom inheritable, for such magistrates, or the assembly of the estates, to depose the king, if he shall be thought by them to have broken all or the chief covenants that he made at his inauguration in that commonwealth.

Against the state and policy of the realm.

That baptism is to be administered to no known papist's children; to none excommunicate person's children; and to none but to their children that be within the church.
143 These they expound to be those that submit themselves to their order of discipline. So that all others shall be accounted as out of God's covenant, and no true Christians.

That the judicial law of Moses, for punishing divers sins by death, is in force, and ought to be observed in every commonwealth, as commanded by God. And therefore that no prince nor law can or ought to save the lives of wilful offenders, not offending by ignorance only; nor of blasphemers of God's name; nor of conjurers, soothsayers, per-

sons possessed with an evil spirit; heretics, perjured persons, wilful breakers of the sabbath-day, neglecters of the sacraments without just reason; disobedient to parents, or that curse them; incestuous persons; a daughter committing fornication in her father's house; adulterers; all incontinent persons, saving single fornicators; and all conspirators against any man's life. ANNO 1593.

That *lex talionis*, that is, an eye for an eye, a hand for a hand, &c. ought to be observed of necessity in every commonwealth. That all matters arising in their several limits, (though they be mere civil and temporal,) if there may happen to be breach of charity, or wrong be offered by one unto another, may and ought to be composed by the eldership. And he that shall refuse to be ordered is to be excommunicated.

That not only the state ecclesiastical, being one of the three in parliament, may, but also ought to be cut off. And so laws to be made by the lords temporal and commons only: one of the other like essential members being wholly taken away. And to this purpose it is said, that all the laws of England were made in the first year of the queen's reign, when there was never a bishop in the parliament. Martin, in his last book.

That it is unlawful for any state to tolerate the present government ecclesiastical. That it is false, unlawful, *bastardly*, unchristian. That none can be a good and sound subject that defends it. That they are traitors to God and his word that so do. That they are all enemies to her majesty and the land. That they are to answer for the blood which the Spaniard or any other enemies are like to spill. That they bring in hazard her majesty's life, and the prosperity of the whole kingdom, and are the greatest enemies it hath. That her majesty and her people are seduced out of the right way.

That ministers of duty not only may, but ought to determine and decree of all, both civil and ecclesiastical causes, though not of the very fact, as civil magistrates do;

ANNO 1593. yet touching the right, and what the law is: for that thereof they are appointed of God to be administrators.

The second sort of puritans, now called Barrowists.

They do hold all the former positions. And, besides, they also hold these errors following:

1. That it is not lawful to use the Lord's Prayer publicly in the church for a set form of prayer. 2. That all set and stinted prayers are mere babbling in the sight of the Lord, and not to be used in public Christian assemblies.
144 3. That the public prayers and worship of God in England, as it is by law in the church of England established, is false, superstitious, popish, and not to be used in any Christian congregation. 4. That the church of England, as it is now established, is no true member of the church of Christ. 5. That the government of the church of England, as it is now established, is no lawful government, nor Christian, but antichristian and popish. 6. That the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's supper, as they are administered in the church of England, be not true sacraments. 7. That infants ought not to be baptized according to the form of baptism administered in the church of England. But are rather to be kept unbaptized. And that such as have been baptized according to that form are not rightly baptized. 8. That the laws ecclesiastical, that are established by authority of the queen and realm, be not lawful. 9. That if the prince or magistrate do refuse, or defer to reform such faults as are amiss in the church, the people may take the reforming of them into their own hands, before or without his authority. 10. That the presbytery and eldership may for some causes, after admonition, (if there ensue no reformation,) excommunicate the queen. 11. That the church of England (as it standeth now by law established) professeth not a true Christ, nor true religion. That it hath no ministers indeed, nor sacraments indeed. And therefore they will communicate with us neither in prayer nor sacraments, nor come to our churches: which they call *popish parish assemblies.*

Number XCV.

ANNO 1593.

Cardinal Allen, from Rome, to Richard Hopkins, fugitive, August 14, 1593. So endorsed by the lord treasurer's own hand.

This letter of the cardinal was in answer to one from Hopkins, at Antwerp; upon report of a treaty between England and Spain; to endeavour a liberty of religion for the catholics.

Good Mr. Hopkins,

YOURS of the 10th of July came safely to my hands; and gave me knowledge of a certain overture made to you by one that might seem to do it by some secret commission of treaty of an accord between England and Spain, with desire of my sense therein, either of myself or with the pope, upon some reasonable conditions for toleration of the catholic religion in our country. Which argument, how grateful it should be unto me, you that of old know so well my opinion and desire in that cause may easily deem.

And after a little pause of mind upon so sudden and unwonted news, I could think no otherwise, but that God himself hath stirred up in their hearts this motion for the saving of that realm from the present fears, and dangers, 145
and perplexities it is fallen into. And thereby also a special [favour] offered at length unto me, once ere I die, not only to give the willing desired comforts I owe unto my afflicted catholic friends and brethren, but therein also to serve, most faithfully and profitably, even my very enemies. Though otherwise than through these unfortunate differences and debates in religion, (our Lord God forgive the author thereof,) I know I have none; or to do to the one or the other, and above all to my neighbour country, most dear unto me, so much good as an unfeigned peace would bring, I would travail to the last drop of my blood.

I thank God, I am not so estranged from the place of my birth, most sweet, nor so affected to foreigners, that I prefer not the weal of that people above all mortal things; whereof, if it pleased the queen's majesty or council to take

ANNO 1593. a sure taste, I desire no more but that they would confidently use and command me in this matter. And in truth, upon the receipt of your letter I had not slept before I had dealt with his holiness, if the party that made the motion unto you had brought any warrant in the world from any in authority, or any sufficient proof or attestation of their contentment therein: which might have been (as yet it may be) kept as close as themselves would require. That they so did not, if they meant any matter indeed, I marvel. And you did well and wisely to stand on that point: without which I cannot in reason nor honour attempt a thing of that weight and quality with the pope, much less bring our purpose to pass, either with him or the king. With whom also, not only by his holiness' mediation, but by myself, in matters concerning our country and religion, I may perhaps do more than I need now to say: and whatsoever I can do with either of them, I would employ in this case myself to the uttermost. Though to say the truth, if the pope were a temporal prince only, being no less injured (though in another kind) than the king himself, his person were not so fit to be a moderator of this pretended peace. But being a spiritual person, and the common and most loving father of all Christians, and attending above all human respects the service of God, and the advancement of religion, without all formalities and punctos of worldly honour, I am assured he will embrace this cause with all hearty affection. For I know many ways his most tender heart and desire towards our country's weal, both in God and in the world.

Only we want good grounds of her majesty's intention, and good acceptation of our travails herein: which if you can by writing or other equivalent means obtain, let me alone for the rest, promising mine own pains without exception; and not much doubting but that his holiness will most favourably and earnestly employ his authority for the same.

In all which matters, as myself would proceed with much more alacrity, if I might understand how far and in what

sort they of themselves would condescend in matters of religion, so I am sure that upon a reasonable toleration, according to that state of that realm, we may induce his holiness to take this motion to heart, and to proceed carefully, steadily, and effectually in the same. Where otherwise, if he be not well warranted of some reasonable accord for religion, (as I know he will never deal, but with all possible force debar all other treaty of peace,) so it is no less certain, that the king, of his like zeal and piety, will never make peace (or if I suppose his posterity after him) without some important moderation in religion. ANNO 1593. 146

Therefore this point well established and cleared, and the places holden of England rendered to the king, I trust, without all other restitution or recompense of losses, spoils, or damages, the king, by his holiness' means, and by labours, may be induced to a peace, most necessary and happy for England, and profitable for the whole Christian world; whereof if I might, by any office of my life or death, be a promoter or procurer, I would reckon the remnant of my few years I have to come more fortunate than the many evil and long years of all my life past; assuring myself, that there is no other way but this to save my beloved country from imminent ruin temporal, and, as it may be feared, perdition eternal. From either of which I would willingly deliver it by my death.

Of this my desire and entire affection to serve and save them in this cause, I pray you, as you have occasion, make them in England to understand: wishing them, if they mean sincerely, as I do faithfully, and as before God and my soul, for their general and particular good desire it, to send over some one or two of their civil or temporal wise lawyers, of catholic inclination, void of passion and partiality, that know how far the state of the realm may comport [with] the exercise of the catholic religion; and how far the queen and council can be contented to condescend therein, for a firm and stable peace. Which persons joining with you there, and with some such of our principal English clergy and gentlemen in those parts, as you shall choose, may set

ANNO 1593. down such articles as among you shall be agreed upon, and so send them hither to me, that I may present them to his holiness: that thereby he may the sooner be incited to take this matter in hand. Or if the parties think better to come hither with her majesty's licence, and you, if it be thought good, with them, for more speed and substantial despatch of all things; I will give them, or any of them, protection, and procure them large passports, and benign audience of the pope: and all this with as much secrecy as themselves shall desire.

But these, and all such like particulars, I commit to your discretions, praying you to advertise me of the receipt hereof. And so with my hearty commendations I bid you farewell. From my house in Rome, this 14th of August, 1593.

Yours assuredly,

W. Cardinal.

147 Number XCVI.

Holt, a Jesuit, to cardinal Allen: writ from Brussels, January the 6th, 1593. *Found among the lord treasurer's papers.*

AL Ill^mo et R^mo cardinal de Ingleterra a Roma. The rest in English. Very gracious and good lord, It is a comfort to all these, as I think, that are resolved to follow your grace's opinion in any matters, and namely myself, when from your grace's self they may know either your grace's resolute mind, or else some light to guess; as by these of the eleventh of December, partly I do, in two or three things. And indeed in some accidents it is very necessary, as far as the secrecy of the things do permit, lest by ignorance some traverse may happen, which neither one part or other doth desire; nor is good going farther off than these affairs can well permit.

And concerning D. Barret and the seminary matters, as I have little to do, so as little to say: I do bear both to him and them that affection I was wont and ought. Nei-

ther for one thing between us two did I ever require or advise any satisfaction at all, whatever I said, or whatsoever *ad justam defensionem meam*, where I was touched: as also to procure him to return to his old good affection: which seeing, he saith, he is, all is well. There needeth no more, and your grace may be careless of any particular between us: of which point, if I be well remembered, I have wrote to your grace some weeks past. So that you may see we prevented your desire.——[*It was some quarrel between them about the government of the seminary.*] ANNO 1593.

——The inequality committed concerning our nation, excepting only my lady Hungerford, Mrs. Allen, and Mr. Hugh Owen, were of so small importance, that exceeding small occasion men had to be offended. And in other nations such griefs be daily found. There were but three other poor men for special respects that got a double pay: which was Mr. Tyrrel, who is agent of the nation; George Persons, at his brother's request; and Mr. Verstegan, in respect he is continually employed, as your grace knoweth: and these but with a double pay for this time. Others have found oftentimes the like or greater favour. And towards redress——as Persely, before he died, 300 st. Mr. Paget, not long ago, 200; the earl of Westmoreland divers times, 200. And now and then so small, that in the king's books there was nothing done to him and divers others.

So that in that matter, both the writing to your grace, and the noise that was made of it here, may well be accounted to proceed of no good fountain; but that all men seek themselves, and chiefly those which most complain, and it may be, deserve it least.

Your grace hath by accident instructed me in a matter that some fifteen days ago I writ to be instructed of——that within cipher you cause written. God send all good speed, according to your grace's good desire and intentions. Such 148
as I can hear discourse of that subject do think it hard to be brought to pass: and assurance on all hands given; and whether 232. 229. [ciphers] do mean *bona fide* or no, it is no small doubt. If any thing would be really in hand, I

ANNO 1593.

would think 161 his going to *I* should be altogether necessary; where he shall both see the commodities and incommodities, faults and difficulties better, occasions and expeditions of things. Neither methinketh is there any repugnance with this and any thing 215 hath wrote to 212 concerning *H.* but altogether may and must be accommodated, &c.

Mr. Hesket will tell your grace of the non-appearance of the first letters to Stephano D. Ivara.——Here is come hither an advice, that Richard Hesket of England is put to death for dealing with the earl modern of Darby: whether it be true or no, in short time we shall understand, as of the manner.

Sir William [Stanley] is here returned from Flanders, where he hath been with count Charles, to put order to the queen's designments there: and he is well, and in very good conceit with the secretary chiefly, and all other men here. The rest of our nation be in the old sort, somewhat relieved by their last pays.

Here seems to be resolved upon a new voyage to France, with good forces, under the conduct of count Mansfeld, at least of 12,000 men, with provison more than heretofore: and indeed the payments begin to grow better. With more I have not to trouble your grace, but commit you to the protection of Christ Jesus. Brussels, this 6th of January, 1593, in the beginning of the new year: which, and many more happy, I wish to your grace.

Your grace to command,

Will. Holt.

Number XCVII.

Thomas Bell, a convert, to Mr. Young, a justice of peace in London: concerning printing his motives to renounce the Romish faith. Writ from Jesus college, Cambridge.

Good sir,

MY very hearty and manifold commendations remem-

bered: with like thanks for your cheerful friendliness and great courtesies. You shall understand, that I have now finished and made an end of that piece of work, wherewith you were partly acquainted at Lambeth. It containeth certain special motives, by which, as external means under God, concurring thereto, I was inwardly touched, as also fervently moved in heart and conscience, to renounce the Romish faith and religion. In which motives (as I trust and conceive the matter) the chief grounds of papistry are not only shaken, but the bulwark thereof is beaten down, 149 as no papist in the world is or shall be able to stand in denial of the same: for I have unfolded the same by evident demonstrations, even by the plain testimony of the best, most famous, and renowned doctors in the church of Rome. More forcible than which, no proof can be brought against the pope and his religion: a thing to my knowledge never yet attempted by any man. If it be able to profit God's people, his holy name be blessed for it, who began and accomplished that good work in me. ANNO 1593.

I beseech you, good Mr. Young, to do my most humble duty to the rt. hon. the lord treasurer, my singular good lord; and to acquaint his lordship with the said treatise or motives, in such manner as you conceive the same: and to know his lordship's pleasure, if his lordship think it good, that I put them in print. Which done, I shall desire you to certify me thereof in your letter so soon as conveniently you may.

I pray you heartily do my humble duty to my honourable good friend sir —— Foskewe [Fortescue, chancellor of the exchequer.] My humble commendations to the right worshipful, my special and approved good friend, Mr. Attorney-general [Egerton]. And so in haste I wish you all happiness. From Jesus college in Cambridge, this 30th of June, 1593.

Yours, as his own, unfeignedly,
Thomas Bell.

Accordingly Mr. Young, a few days after, (viz. the 5th

ANNO 1593. *of July,) acquainted the lord treasurer with Mr. Bell's request, and humbly craved that he might know his lordship's pleasure therein, what he should write unto him, adding these words:* Nevertheless, under your lordship's correction, I think it good that he should send up that treatise to your lordship, that so it might be committed to the view and examination of such persons as know what good or harm may come thereof. Although, for mine own part, I am very well persuaded of Mr. Bell, and do assuredly think, that as he is willing, so he is likewise able to do much good.

He wrote other letters to Mr. Attorney-general, wherein he did advertise him of one Hardestie, a priest, who had lately submitted himself, and was then at Emanuel college in Cambridge, whom he commended to be very learned and well affected.

150 Number XCVIII.

Bell to the lord treasurer, from the north; where he preached at the desire of the earl of Huntington, lord president: who was desirous of his abiding there, for the instruction of that ignorant people. He is ready so to do, or to return to Cambridge, according to the lord treasurer's directions.

Right honourable and my very good lord,

BY reason of the late sickness at Cambridge, I took occasion to visit two brothers which I have yet living; with whom at this present I make my abode, at Thresk in Yorkshire. At my coming from Cambridge, I thought not upon that kind of exercise in which I was very shortly after employed by the earnest motion of my very good lord, the earl of Huntington, lord president, and lord lieutenant in these north parts: a man so zealous in Christian religion, so forward in the service of his prince, so vigilant in his charge, and so favourable to all labourers in Christ's vineyard, as he may justly be thought appointed by God himself for that only end and purpose. What good he hath done in

these parts, since that honourable charge was first committed to him, your lordship knoweth, the country witnesseth, and myself am not ignorant. ANNO 1593.

At the godly motion of this honourable person, I have sundry times preached. To which my late exercise God hath given more large success, than I ever did or could expect. My lord president is desirous to have me stay in this country, that in these north parts, where the harvest is great, and the workmen few, in respect it may please God to use me as a weak instrument under him, for the profit and instruction of his people. Touching myself, thus the case standeth. My chiefest desire is to glorify my Lord God, to honour my dread sovereign, and to do what good I can to my native country: not to hunt after promotions, worldly riches, or transitory pleasures whatsoever. God (*qui scrutatur corda et renes*) knoweth this to be. So now to accomplish this my honest desire, whether it be more expedient for me to stay in the country, or at the university, or elsewhere, in what place or manner soever, I wish not to be mine own judge or director therein; but with a lowly mind crave to be directed by my honourable superiors, the higher powers. In order hereof, I beseech your lordship in all dutiful manner, that I may know your lordship's pleasure, and have your honourable direction in the premises: and so humbly take my leave. From Thresk, in Yorkshire, the 19th of March, 1593.

Your lordship's poor servant,

Tho. Bell.

Number XCIX. 151

Pierse, archbishop of York, and Henry, earl of Huntington, of the council of the north, to the lord treasurer; concerning an hospital and school, founded by Oglethorp, bishop of Carlisle.

Our very good lord,

AMONG other things out of order in this country, we

ANNO 1593. found about a year since, upon complaint, the foundation of a school and hospital, for a schoolmaster and twelve poor people, whereof licence was granted by queen Mary to Owen Oglethorp, late bishop of Carlisle, to found and incorporate the same, and to authorize 40*l.* a year to the same; and himself giving order by his will to his executors to perform it accordingly. Yet nothing in either done these thirty-six years to the establishment thereof, but a small stipend given to a schoolmaster, at the executor's pleasure: and two poor folks only found by them there.

But we calling Mr. Robert Oglethorp, the surviving executor, and others of the name to it, find, that the bishop's goods were so dispersed and spent in suits, and most of his lands that he bought to that end, and put in trust to his brother Andrew Oglethorp, by making him joint-purchaser with him to that end. Who, as is said, meant to perform it; yet he being suddenly slain by the rebels, that land came to collateral heirs, and is sold without recovery. Nevertheless, of that small portion of the said land which remaineth, by our persuasions and means with Robert Oglethorp, being surviving executor, who only by the letters patents and will hath power to establish the corporation, and after his death nobody, we have drawn him to incorporate the school and hospital, according to the licence. And among the rest of his name we are in hope to make it up; so as there shall be some stay of living for a schoolmaster, being a very happy place of the country for that purpose; and six poor folks to have 12*d.* a week, and their dwelling.

One only imperfection, there is doubted that a cottage in Tadcaster, which was a chantry-house that the said bishop purchased, whereupon the school-house is built, and a small tenement in the country, called Cobcroft, which the bishop in his lifetime assures to this Rob. Oglethorp, that liveth, to the use of the schoolmaster and almshouse, executed by livery: yet some doubt hath been objected, because there is no letters of attorney yet shewed for any to make livery, that there is none such, which is hardly credible, because Rob. Oglethorp hath enjoyed these lands ever since by that

deed. And we have persuaded him to assure his state and interest therein to the school and almshouse, according to the bishop's will. Yet, lest any near lookers into such titles might procure it, as a *concealment*, by colour that no letters of attorney were from the bishop, then he being base-born, his title therein should escheat to her majesty; we are to be earnest suitors, that your lordship, for the perfecting of so charitable a work, (the rather for the quieting of the poor people, that have no purse to withstand the defence of a title so to be pretended, than for any doubt in itself,) that your lordship would be a mean, by the soliciting of this bearer, Mr. Edward Stanhope, that this cottage and tenement may either pass gratis, or for some small trifle, in the next book that any passeth for concealment, with assurance from the patentee with Mr. Stanhope, who hath promised to travail in it, and to pass it over to the school and hospital, according as now they have it, by the intention of the late bishop of Carlisle. ANNO 1593. 152

Wherein we will think ourselves beholden to your lordship, and the poor people daily bound to pray for you. And even so we betake your lordship to the tuition of the Almighty. From York, the 14th of January, 1593.

Your lordship's assured friends,

Jo. Ebor. H. Huntyngton.

Number C.

Queen Elizabeth's letter to the emperor of Germany; answering slanderous reports of her; especially, that she should stir up the Turk to have war with Christian princes.

VIDE Camd. Life of Q. Elizabeth, p. 473. "At this time "was set forth in Germany scandalous libels against queen "Elizabeth, as if she had invited the Turk to make war "against Christendom. And the letters which she had sent "to the Turk were published, but most unfaithfully falsi-"fied and corrupted, many things being added; and divers

ANNO 1593. "contumelious and scandalous matters falsely feigned and "devised. The queen hereupon sent a messenger to the "emperor, and cleared herself from these calumnies and as- "persions. So that the books were prohibited, and the co- "pies thereof publicly burnt at Prague."

This letter was drawn up and composed by the lord treasurer, and written by his secretary Mr. Maynard: and at the latter end is an addition of his own hand. The letter followeth.

To the emperor.

ALTHOUGH we have sustained these many years past continually great injuries from the king of Spain, and consequently from the pope, without any just cause given on our part, as should appear, if there might be found competent judges to deal in the causes of princes sovereign:
153 wherein nevertheless we may doubt, that though in God's presence we may clear ourselves, yet your majesty may conceive otherwise of our actions, by reason of the proximity of blood betwixt the king of Spain and your majesty, and for your devotion to the see of Rome, varying in some parts from ours: and lastly, because your majesty hath had no resident ambassador with us, nor we with you, to be participant of our mutual actions, as in former times hath been used, to the honour of both our estates. Yet no one thing hath more grieved us in all injuries done to us, than that there hath been spread abroad in infamous libels, amongst many other manifest lies, (wherewith we mind not in this our letter to trouble you,) this that is most horrible, that we have solicited the great Turk, an enemy against Christendom, to make war against Christian princes: which hath been, we take Almighty God to witness, far from our thoughts. And for good proof hereof, the actions of late years have manifestly declared the contrary of this false slander; when by our own solicitation we did procure such a peace betwixt the king of Polonia and the great Turk, when the Turk had entered with a mighty army into his country, and had publicly rejected the king of Polonia's

offer of tribute, and had threatened the devastation thereof. For a notable testimony whereof, we require your majesty to see the very words of the great Turk's own letter, sent to us in June, 1590, as they shall be presented to you by this bearer, truly translated. [*Then followed the Turk's letter in Latin: which was omitted in this letter to the emperor, the bearer being to carry it, and deliver it to him by itself.*] ANNO 1593.

The like to these letters at the same time did Simon Bassa, the principal counsellor to the Turk, and Hedar Bassa, then governor of the army prepared against the king of Polonia, write to us, signifying, that if we had not earnestly solicited their lord to this peace, he would never have consented. And according to this, the king of Polonia, Sigismond the Third, did acknowledge this obtaining of peace, and diversion of so dangerous a war only to us, as by his letters and messenger from himself, and by the letters from his counsellors and general captain Joannes Samoski, is most manifest.

But of this our Christian action we never made any ostentation; neither now would have occupied your majesty with this recital, but for a late lamentable accident, as it is reported to us from Constantinople, properly concerning your majesty's self, and your kingdoms bordering upon the great Turk's dominions, and consequently the rest of Christendom. Which is, that upon the ordinary tribute, not sent to him in due time by your majesty, he hath published war against you and your countries: wherewith we are, as in Christian duty we ought, deeply grieved even to our soul. And because we have been most falsely slandered to have heretofore solicited the Turk to have made war against some Christian kings; and not knowing whether any such reports have been by our enemies brought to your ears, as we may think, that many other untruths, yea, incredible lies, have been, without hearing or defence, to deprave our most just actions, taken in hand only for our natural defence; and those supported to this day with God's favour, to our safety 154
and preservation of our country in peace, even in the midst

ANNO 1593.

of all other countries adjoining to ours, that are in war only by reason of such as are all our common enemies; and we could not forbear to impart to you both our great grief for this accident now breaking out, and to assure your majesty, that if it may lie in our power, and were so allowed of by your majesty, we would spare no means to stay this intended violent war, as dangerous as the time is, wherein, as the pope and the king of Spain do proceed with their hostile actions, there is no part of Christendom that will be free from war; a case very rare and lamentable. For as by the war that is to proceed from the Turk, all the parts of Germany, and the east parts of Christendom, and some great part of Italy, shall feel the burden of the same, with loss of Christian blood, depopulation of countries and towns; so on the other part of Christendom westward, it is lamentably seen, how all France, the Low Countries, our realms of England and Ireland, and now of late the kingdom of Scotland, is already threatened from Spain, and provoked to rebellion. All which are mightily infested by the wars; and France by the dukes of Savoy and Lorrain, by the solicitation of the king of Spain.

All this shall be in the agents' instructions. *L. Burgh. hand.*

And here it is to be especially noted, that the king of Spain's wars are at this day the more dangerous to make a destruction of the people of Christendom, in that he maketh not his wars, as in former times the emperor, his father, and other his progenitors did, to make incursions into France or Italy only for revenge, or to besiege or recover restitution of some towns: which commonly ended in a few months. That in a summer with some loss on both sides: but commonly stayed with a truce, or ended with a peace and intermarriages. But now all these wars, attempted by the king of Spain against so many kingdoms and countries, are wholly to conquer the same without any colour of title. As certain years past he did attempt, with an army by seas, upon our kingdom of Ireland, only upon a pretence that the pope would give it him to conquer; and afterwards, in the year 88, purposed certainly with an army by sea, which was termed by his Spaniards *invincible*; and by another

mighty army by land, at the same instant brought by the seaside in Flanders, to have been transported into England, without any pretence of title. And that at the very time when our ambassadors and his were treating of a peace, and upon good terms of a conclusion. But by God's invincible might, his armies, termed *invincible*, were proved both vincible and evicted. ANNO 1593.

But to shew this his continual purpose in making war for conquest, and total subversion of countries, he hath these many years attempted, with infinite charges and loss of his people, to make a conquest of his maritime Low Countries, to plant his Spaniards in the richest towns and ports; minding also thereby to have opportunity to invade and prosecute his intended conquest of England. And now for a further and a most manifest sign of this his unsatiable desire of conquest, he hath these last years openly with sundry armies invaded France, the greatest and most noble kingdom of Christendom; seeking by his great powers and treasures flowing from all his Indies, and by supporting of 155
certain rebellious heads in France, that made leagues and confederacies against their last king, whom they procured to be murdered, to deprive the lawful king now living, Henry the Fourth, of his crown; whom, without any exception, all the persons, being of the ancient royal blood of France, and the great officers of the realm, and most of the governors of provinces, as they were left by the last king, being also catholics, do obey, and offer their lives to defend him as their lawful king. And because this attempt is found very difficult to compass, he hath stirred up the pope to send armies into France over the Alps, a thing never used by any pope; and he hath also provoked with his treasure the dukes of Savoy and Lorrain likewise to invade and conquer certain provinces of France, lying near to them. And how he himself hath gotten possession of the towns and havens in Britain, intending a full conquest thereof, is not unknown.

Beside these, to leave no part of Christendom westward in peace, the king of Scots hath lately discovered a full purpose of the king of Spain, by a compact and corruption of

ANNO 1593. money offered to certain of his nobility, to give entry to the army of the king of Spain into Scotland this summer, both to conquer the realm and to invade England. For achieving whereof, great sums of money have been provided, and a good part hath been sent secretly into Scotland to such, as seeing their conspiracy discovered, are fled into the mountains of the land: and at this time are pursued by the king, both with force and proscriptions, as being notable traitors to himself and to their native country.

Thus your majesty, being the greatest prince in honour and degree in Christendom, may behold a lamentable spectacle of the whole state of Christendom as it were set on fire at one time: whereof, though that part where your majesty's dominions are towards the east may feel a present danger from the common enemy; yet, if they that thus trouble the rest of Christendom here in the west (as no part is free from the calamities of war) would content themselves with their own patrimonial kingdoms and countries, and suffer other their neighbours to live in peace, (which they desire,) it were to be hoped that the Turk would also forbear this attempt of war against your majesty, with an opinion very probable to move him thereto; in that he might think, that the rest of Christian kings and potentates would (enjoying peace in their own countries) give your majesty aid, and so divert the Turk from offending of Christendom. [*Here the instructions for the agent ended.*]

And thus having imparted our grief for this lamentable estate of all Christendom, we cannot but wish, that both your majesty being a sovereign of highest degree, and others that carry the titles of Christian and catholic princes, would be Christianly moved to take compassion of this woful estate of Christendom, and lay aside all minds of revenge, and of unlawful seeking of other countries, and make one solid union of the Christian countries for their defence.

156 *Then begin the lines again for instructions to the agent.*

And where pretences are made, that these wars are taken in hand for maintenance of catholic religion, it may be well denied so to be in France, where the wars are prosecuted,

not only against the person of the king, but against all his faithful subjects, the princes of the royal blood, the cardinals, bishops, and clergy, and the ancient nobility, that profess the catholic religion according to the church of Rome. ANNO 1593.

And as to the wars made against us and our people, and the king of Scots and his people, though in some sort we do not yield to be subject to the pope, as pretending an authority over our crowns, to dispose them where he will; yet we do not dissent from the true catholic religion established by the apostles, and continued in the primitive church. Neither hath the king of Spain, by any former example, any lawful authority, upon such pretences, to make any wars against us, being a prince sovereign, acknowledging no superior over us in earth, or any other kings and potentates agreeing with us in Christian religion; as are the kings of Denmark, Scotland, Sweden, and the chiefest of the princes temporal of the empire. But according to the example of all former ages, he ought to suffer decision of the controversies of the church to some free and general councils to be lawfully congregated.

How these declarations and arguments for our defence shall content your majesty, we know not. But if there were not such abounding malice reigning in this age, as that the same were not maintained and continued with most shameful slander and horrible untruths dispersed in libels, in all languages, but that nothing were divulged but truth, we would not doubt but both your majesty would, according to your office, admonish the pope, and advise the king of Spain to alter this their violent course, whereby they do kindle and stir up fire to inflame all Christendom.

These lines following are of the lord treasurer's own hand, and is the conclusion:

And to shew our Christian disposition to have this intended dangerous war, now proceeding from the Turk, whereof cannot but great and inestimable damage happen to Christendom, which way soever Almighty God shall give the victory. We have, in the zeal that we bear to peace,

ANNO 1593. (which is the chiefest blessing of God here on earth,) presumed to write and send to the grand seignor our letters and message also, to yield to a surcease of war. And there by some colloquy betwixt your ambassadors to meet on your frontiers, to restore both your states to your former peace. And of this matter, and of our Christian purpose, this bearer shall further inform you; and of sundry other things, wherein we require you to give him credit.

On the back-side it is thus endorsed. The 14th of April, 1593, Minutes of a letter to the emperor. By D. Parkins.

157

Number CI.

The letter of the great Turk to the queen, (who had interceded by her agent to him in behalf of the king of Poland,) mentioned in the foregoing letter, was as followeth:

REX Poloniæ duos suos legatos ad portam nostram beatam et fulgidam mittens significavit, quod rex Poloniæ missum munus augere vellet. Sed nos supplicationem regis Poloniæ amplecti et acceptare noluimus: imo iterum exercitum nostrum in regem Poloniæ mittere, et Creatoris omnipotentis auxilio regnum Poloniæ subvertere constitueramus. At legato serenitatis vestræ ex mandato vestro pacem pro regno Poloniæ petente, neve regnum Poloniæ ex parte nostra turbaretur et infestaretur intercedente, serenitatisque hanc singularem et peculiarem esse voluntatem exponente, legati serenitatis vestræ significatio et intercessio nobis fuit grata et accepta. In favoremque serenitatis vestræ, cui omnis honos et gratia ex nostra parte debetur, juxta hunc modum literæ nostræ ad regem Poloniæ sunt datæ.

Si ex parte serenitatis vestræ fœdus et pax cum rege Poloniæ ineunda sollicitata non fuisset, nulla ratione fœdus cum rege iniissemus; sed in favorem solummodo serenitatis vestræ, regno et regi Poloniæ singularem præstitimus gratiam. Quod et serenitas vestra et rex Poloniæ certo sibi persuadere debeant.

Number CII.

ANNO 1593.

A commission to Mr. Chery, a merchant, from the lord treasurer, and others of her majesty's principal counsellors, with her letter to the great duke of Muscovy: vindicating the queen against false and scandalous reports and libels spread abroad, of assisting the great Turk; and in behalf of her merchants trading in those parts. Being minutes drawn by the lord treasurer.

WE, who have subscribed this writing, being counsellors to the mighty queen Elizabeth, by the grace of God queen of England, France, and Ireland, and defender of the Christian faith; and being also the principal public officers of the realm and crown of England, do authorize you —— Chery, of the city of London, merchant, and the queen's servant, to present unto the mighty king and great duke of Russia, to the noble prince lord Boricfederow Godo—— principal counsellors to the said great duke, the queen's 158
majesty's royal letters, whereunto you have been made privy; containing in them her majesty's most friendly salutations, and large thanks to the said emperor of the great favours of late times shewed on her majesty's behalf to her merchants repairing and residing in his countries, with request to continue the said favours to them: notwithstanding the malicious practices of some subtile and unworthy persons, that have of late of the devilish mood attempted, by slanderous and false reports, to alienate the great good-will and affection which the said emperor hath of long time borne to the queen's majesty, and his favour to her merchants and subjects. Among which malicious persons, the queen's majesty understandeth that sundry of them have been hired, and induced for the pleasing of the pope, and especially of the king of Spain, who are known to be her majesty's professed enemies, to publish, not only in the parts of Germany, and the countries of the emperor of Germany, but also in the countries and court of the said great duke of Russia, that the queen's majesty hath secretly aided the grand seignor of Turkey in his wars against Christendom.

ANNO 1593.

For that one that is her agent for her merchants at Constantinople was in the camp of the great Turk, in summer was twelvemonth, being forced thereto by the Turk's commandment, without the knowledge of the queen's majesty. But yet he did thereby use many means to redeem divers captive Christians, and procured liberty to the servants of the emperor's ambassador, to be freely sent to the emperor of Germany; for the which he received great thanks. And in other things he did not give anywise to the favour of the Turk, but employed all his labour to the redemption of many Christians. Which course he had held of long time at Constantinople, where he doth yearly procure the liberty of many captive Christians; a matter publicly known in all these west parts of Christendom.

And besides this, there is pretended, for some particular colour and end, proof of her majesty's aid, (though most falsely,) that the said Turk hath had from her majesty sundry pieces of great ordnance, graven and marked with the arms of England; a matter utterly false, and vainly imagined. That there was not any intent to aid the Turk against Christendom, by any manner of means directly or indirectly, entered ever into her heart, being a professed Christian prince, as she will answer unto Almighty God.

And so we, being the principal counsellors of the realm, do in the presence of God affirm, that there was never any such purpose in her majesty to favour the Turk in his wars against the state of Christendom. But contrariwise upon our knowledge, and with our advice, her majesty hath employed her ambassador and servants, to her great charge at sundry times, to be means to cease the war between the said Turk and sundry Christian princes; whereof there is notable testimony publicly known of a peace of late years, by her majesty's earnest solicitation, made between the Turk and the king of Pole. For the which her majesty hath had public and large thanks from that king and the states of the kingdom. And like thanks also hath she had from the em-
159 peror of Germany for her ambassage sent to solicit peace between the said emperor and the Turk: which took not

that effect at that time according to her majesty's desire; because that the emperor affirmed, that he had at that time such advantage against the Turk, as he then found it not profitable for the estates to accept such conditions of peace as her majesty had by her agent propounded to be ready to be offered. ANNO 1593.

So as now for your further direction: you being thus informed of the contents of her majesty's letters, you shall use your best discretion and diligence, by the acquaintance which you have with the lord Borycefederow, and by advice also of the principal merchants of our nation, there residing, present the said letters; first those which be to the lord Boryce, whom you shall use as the means of your access to the said great duke: and by the direction of the said lord Boryce, you shall present her majesty's letters to the said great duke, and require, that his majesty's public interpreter, only with your aid and knowledge, rightly and fully interpret the same into the Russian tongue. And so also shall you cause the like to be done for her majesty's letters to the lord Boryce, with her royal salutations; and according to the contents of all those letters, as before you are here informed, you shall do your best to persuade the said great duke and the said lord Boryce, and other great counsellors of the great duke, that such false and slanderous reports are only grounded upon the great malice that the king of Spain, and his faction, which he hath in Germany by the emperor there, and other his kindred of his house of Austria, beareth to her majesty, for her just defence of her dominions and subjects against the ambition and tyranny of the said king of Spain, labouring, by conquering of his neighbouring kingdoms and countries, to be a monarch of the greatest part of Christendom.

And for your more effectual proceeding herein, you shall cause this writing to be likewise interpreted into the Russian tongue, and offer the same to the lord Boryce to be seen, as the testimony of us four, being the principal counsellors and officers of the crown and realm of England. The first of us being the lord chancellor of England; the

ANNO 1593. second, the lord high treasurer of England; the third, the lord earl marshal of England; the fourth, the high admiral of England; as yourself can report us. For testimony whereof we have subscribed this writing with our hands, and sealed the same with our seals.

160 Number CIII.

A memorial of sundry necessary things to be put in execution for the service of the realm, now toward the spring of the year: upon the formidable preparation of the Spaniard. Drawn up by lord treasurer Burghley. Dated Jan. 8, 1593.

FIRST, letters to be directed by the council to all the lieutenants of the counties of the realm; to give them knowledge, that her majesty would have them presently, by themselves or their deputies, make a review of all the bands and forces, both of horse and foot, that have been a few years past put into bands, and that have been trained. And for that her majesty thinketh, that there hath been for these two or three years an intermission made of the musters of the said bands, whereby it is very likely that in number and in force the same are greatly decayed, as well by death or departing away of captains and officers, as of the private soldiers; and a diminution also of the horse, armoury, and weapons decayed, during the said intermission. Therefore her majesty most earnestly requireth the said lieutenants, by themselves, or their deputies in their absence, to view the estate of all the said bands, and to be duly informed of the defects thereof in all the foresaid lacks and wants, as well of men as horse and armour. And upon the defects and wants found, to devise how to have the same supplied. And thereof to make particular certificates of the estate of the bands as they were aforetime, and of the particular wants and decays thereof: and likewise of the supplements to be made of the same wants and decays. And to make certificate unto her majesty's council of their said services.

Whereupon her majesty is determined, for her better satisfaction, to have some special persons to repair into those countries to see the said supplies, and for some other order about the said bands: and consequently to consult with the said lieutenants for the training thereof, to be ready for the service of her majesty and defence of her realms. ANNO 1593.

Item, Consideration to be had of what counties there be lacking lieutenants, by reason of the death of the former[a]. And her majesty to be moved to appoint fit persons to be authorized to better [become] lieutenants in the same shires, with like authority as the former have had.

Item, Letters to be written to the towns that were appointed to have staples of powder and munition, to be in a readiness for the service of their countries. And to cause the same to be viewed, what want there is, either of the quantity thereof, or the ill condition for lack of good keeping: and charge to be given to supply the same. For which purpose order may be given to have the same supplied out of the queen's majesty's stores at reasonable prices for ready money; if otherwise the same cannot be had of merchants using the trade to bring in foreign powder into the realm.

A memorial for the border of Scotland. 161

The certificate of the earl of Huntingdon to be viewed, concerning the causes of such as have been in two several commissions certain years past, for the execution of the statute for the strengthening of the frontiers against Scotland: with a note sent also from the said earl, of a certain number newly by him named, that before were not in commission. And according to the act of parliament to have a commission made under the great seal of England, and under the seal of the duchy, as the cause shall require, according to the form of the said statute. And that the earl and the lords of those north parts may be directed to repair and reside in the same, to the furtherance of the said commission.

[a] Countries lacking lieutenants, with the names of them that did serve there: Middlesex and Northampton, lord chancellor: Stafford and Nottingham, earl of Shrewsbury: Lancashire and Cheshire, earl of Derby: Bucks, lord Grey.

ANNO 1593.

A memorial for the navy of the realm.

The lord admiral to cause a perfect view to be made of all her majesty's own ships; of what burden they are, and in what readiness they are or may be to serve for the war.

Item, To understand the want of all habiliments fit for the equipping of the said ships; and to procure a particular certificate, what are the special wants needful to be provided for the arming and equipage of the said ships. And what proportion thereof is to be had out of foreign countries, and what out of the realm.

Item, To consider what shall be a convenient number of soldiers and mariners to serve in the said ships, as men of war; and where and from what places the mariners may be provided and had to be in readiness. And how many captains are to be provided for the government and rule of the said ships, to serve under the lord admiral, if he shall be directed to serve personally; or otherwise also the lord admiral to consider with himself, what special men there be, of service and experience, which he shall think meet in his absence to be employed in particular charges and voyages as admirals.

Item, To be considered what kind and quantity of victuals is to be provided for the numbers that are to be employed in the said ships. Or if all the navy shall not be occupied, what quantity were fit to serve for the numbers to be employed in the half of the said navy, or in two parts thereof. And in both cases proportion to be made for five or six months, besides the rigging victuals.

Item, Also to be considered of the number of the merchants' and subjects' ships, that be or may be made fit for men of war to accompany her majesty's navy. And to foresee that none of them be permitted to go in any long voyage, to be absent out of the realm after the mnoth of May.

The office of the ordnance to be considered as followeth.

First, How the same is furnished with such proportions of powder, saltpetre, and muskets, and such other shot, with lead, and other necessaries for the same.

How the great ordnance is provided for with carriages, both for the sea and for the land: and wherein the wants do consist: and where to be provided: and in what time, and at what prices. ANNO 1593.

Item, To take better order than in former times hath been, for bargains to be made for calivers and muskets, and such like. For the which greater prices have been allowed than were reasonable, upon pretence that the makers did forbear their money: which would be remedied, as the lieutenant of the ordnance hath thought the same convenient, having seen the faults before his own time. 162

A view would be had of certain engines, that were made by Engelbert and his brother; where they do remain, and in whose charge; and how they may be used.

A like consideration would be had of the office of the armoury.

First, What quantity of armour is in the Tower, and what in other places of the queen's store: and how the same is kept clean, or what were fit to be done to put it in better order.

Concerning the recusants in the realm.

The archbishop of Canterbury to certify his knowledge of such persons of quality as have been put to liberty upon bond: and where they are. His grace also would send to the rest of the bishops and commissioners ecclesiastical in the countries, to have the like certificates from them: so as the numbers of such ill-contented persons might be known, and to be defurnished of any force of armour, or such like. And likewise to have their offices of any rule under her majesty to be suspended.

The queen to be moved for a warrant for the buying of iron hoops, which certain merchants are to have, coming to 950*l.*

A warrant for money to repair the storehouses of Dover and Portsmouth, coming to 600*l.*

To have an account of the armour which the recusants had taken away from them.

To remember also that a magazine of victuals be pro-

ANNO 1593. vided in the north, to be used upon any occasion. As in Barwick, or in some place else, where it may be conveniently distributed.

Number CIV.

The vice-chancellor and heads of the university of Cambridge, to their chancellor, the lord Burghley: touching restraint of plays and shows; especially at that infectious season.

Right honourable,

IT is now long since we presumed to offer unto your good lordship a supplication, as touching a restraint for public shows and common plays, to be delivered by our messenger unto the lords of her majesty's most honourable privy-council, if it should so seem meet unto your honour. The occasion, as we thought, was then great, which moved us thereunto; as namely, the regard of our duty, in respect of the good safety of this place, wherewithal we are put in trust: and therefore, having first resolved then to send some of our
163 body unto the university of Oxford, there to observe the entertainment given to her majesty, it seemed to us not unmeet, upon the occasion of that opportunity, to have it referred for that other also unto your good lordship's most honourable discretion; either ourselves erring in judgment, as touching the fitness of that time, or our messengers in forbearing there the soliciting of your honour more than was meet, we know not how otherwise to excuse it, than by appealing unto your honourable and accustomed good acceptance: which hath induced us also at this time to undertake the renewing of that suit; the rather in regard of God's great goodness towards us, who, having hitherto somewhat strangely preserved us from such infection as hath greatly touched many other parts of this land, are the likelier to find the continuance thereof, if by your honourable means we may be freed from that kind of people, who are, as we think, the most ordinary carriers and dispersers thereof.

ANNO 1593.

And so most humbly craving that it would please your good lordship, as touching the particulars of our desire, to be referred unto the copy of a letter which was, by your lordship's honourable means, long since procured for us from the lords of her majesty's most honourable privy-council, as also unto the bearer Speech, our messenger, as touching any thing concerning this matter, wherein it shall further please your good lordship to be informed; we do most humbly take our leaves, daily praying for your lordship's most honourable, long, and happy preservation, as we are all most dutifully bound. Cambridge, the 17th of July, 1593.

Your honourable lordship's most humbly to be commanded,

Tho. Leggs, vice-chancellor.

Signed also by

R. Some,	Barwell,	Bynge,
Edm. Hounde,	Duport,	Tho. Preston,
Tho. Nevile,	Tyndal,	Laur. Chaderton.

Number CV.

A certificate of certain principal traitors, by Diaper, [now a prisoner,] the 25th of September, 1593. So endorsed by the lord treasurer.

THE names of those whom I have seen on the other side [of the sea.] 1. The earl of Westmoreland. 2. Charles Paget. 3. Sir Timothy Mocket. 4. Sir William Stanley. 5. Two of the Throgmortons. 6. Throgmorton, since that executed. 7. Then there is one Owen. And, 8. One Smith, a Jesuit. 9. Also one Thomas Farayn. And, 10. One Thomas Winter, of Fowlston in Kent. Also, 11. One Flowe, that studieth law. And, 12. Mowdy, known to your honour.

These, my lord, are daily about the court [of Spain.] And one Thomas Tresom. There are many others that I know, being there; but I cannot now call them to mind. 164

ANNO 1593. I hope your lordship will pardon a prisoner, though I fortune to err in my gross writing; and wanting the book, my lord, I cannot write what I would of Westmerland's life.

For the traitor Westmerland, it is not unknown to your honour, in how bare an estate of life he daily liveth. For when the court is at Antwerp, he will be at Brussels; for he cannot abide the smell of the court; for either he hates the court, or some in the court hate him. For not long ago young Charles Mansfield did upbraid him by the name of *traitor*, and told him, that he came into Spain more for fear of his life than for love of religion, and would have thrust him out of doors, but that some there did persuade him.

Now for his life, it is so lascivious and vile, that but with reverence I dare not write it, he keepeth a French boy as his pander: and when he hath waited all day, he may go sing for his supper. He never carrieth any money: for the filthy women, that he daily useth, are ready to receive it before he have it: and yet the old colt will be lusty. For if he see a brave woman, he sendeth his pandry boy for her, and in his drunken humour he will give a Philip dollar for a kiss. And so sometimes when he receives his pension, he consumeth that in three days that should keep him three months after; and that maketh him so far in debt: for he oweth more than 15,000*l.* in Antwerp and Brussels. And let there come any English, if he know it, he will send the marshalsman to apprehend them as spies. This I speak by proof. And he keepeth daily company with sir Timothy Mocket, whose life and behaviour is either as bad or worse than my lord's.

He meddleth with no matters of state, because indeed they hold him not wise. He is going into Spain: for I know he dareth tarry no longer in Antwerp: for he is fain to go under protection of the king, for fear of arresting. And he taketh a good order: for look, what he can get is his own: for he meaneth not to pay any thing he oweth. And still he goeth threadbare. Sir Timothy Mocket and

he keep ordinaries, when they have money; and when they have none, they dine with duke Humfrey. So much for him, with your honour's pardon for my presumption. ANNO 1593.

Charles Paget.

Paget, my lord, keepeth himself still, as he hath ever been, a notable rebel, and a monstrous traitor both to his prince and country. He will give any thing to hear of her majesty's death: for then, he saith, he doubteth not but to make your honour render him his land, which, he saith, you have let by lease to a lady in Kent, as I remember he said. This old traitor will give money to such as come over to undertake a villainy against the state of England, or the state of the Low Countries. This rebel is greatly in regard with the count Faustus, and Mansfield, and Mountdragon, governor of Antwerp castle, and all those of the king's council. For they take him to be very wise; especially in plotting such matters as can never be brought to pass. He saith, he hopes to be a privy-counsellor in England: but I hope and desire of God to see him shorter by the head, 165 like a traitor. And if good fortune had served, we might have had him here, to be rewarded for his treasons and practices. It was his villainy to put in that notable rumour of the lady Anabel: also that secretary Walsingham died in that horrible sort, that he dareth in that traitorous, false libel. But how can he do other than lie, when the traitor knoweth not the truth; or at least he will not know it. He is a great friend to religion, and will always be talking what a sweet life it is to be a *capucheny:* and how dukes have left their livings to be of that sect; and how they lie upon the bare boards with a stone under their heads, and whip themselves, and drink nothing but cold water. And yet those days they do this penance, in the evening, when the audience is departed, they will be so drunk with wine that they can scant stand: let the world judge whether this be hypocrisy or no. I think Paget would be one of those holy men, but that he hath so many bags of money, and so much money at usury, that he thinketh it would hinder him from his devotion. For indeed he is the wealthiest rebel in that

ANNO 1593.

country among the English rebels that be there. And his house-mate is that traitor, the eldest of the Throgmortons. And between them both, they bring up Throgmorton's son that was executed, that young imp of impiety, that no doubt will follow his father step by step to his gallows. This young imp told me, that he hoped ere long to see them lose their heads that condemned the traitor his father to death. He goeth to school in Antwerp. But if Paget could speak as many languages as he can tell lies, I think he should be out of the king's privy kitchen: for he counts many things before they be done. And therefore I count him fitter to tell dishes in the king's privy kitchen, than to be of a king's privy-council. I cannot write so bad of him as he deserveth. But I thought good to shew your honour this, ere I proceed any further.

Throgmorton.

My irons are heavy, and my imprisonment taketh away my memory. And therefore, till I have answered the matter for which I was committed, I hope your honour will pardon me.

Sir William Stanley

Is the next that England calleth to the bar. [*And here the paper endeth, somewhat abruptly.*]

Number CVI.

Anthony Hall, a messenger and officer of the queen's: his services and deserts, shewed in a letter to the lord treasurer. And for a favour on that account to be obtained for his son. And his abilities in heraldry for that end. Feb. 12, 1593.

MAY it please your honour, That where I am an humble suitor in behalf of my son Anthony Hall, in respect of divers services that your honour and divers others my lords
166 have commanded me; as passing twice to France with the seminary priests and Jesuits, being in number fast upon sixty, as appeareth by certificates in the council chest; of their good usages by me; as also the conveyance of 4000

and 500 Irish, transported to Bristol at two several times, as appeareth by certificates delivered to your honours under the common seal of the town of Bristol; as also the keeping of Jaques de Noa, the Scottish queen's secretary, six weeks, I only lying on a pallet in a chamber, until he had delivered all the truth he knew touching the Scottish queen's treasons. *Testes*, Mr. Philips, her majesty's decipherer, and also Mr. Francis Mille, [Walsingham's secretary.] Also my house was possessed, at your honour's commandment, certain days and nights, whereby Ballard the priest, and Babington, with others of that traitorous crew, were apprehended in a garden near my house. *Testes*, Mr. Philips, and Mr. Fra. Mille. As also the keeping of Mr. Richard Randolph (a professor of the law) in Bridewell and in the Counter, for a prisoner certain days and nights; who persuaded Bennet the priest that he should revoke those treasons whereof he had accused the earl of Arundel, until he had confessed all the truth. *Testis*, Mr. Wade, clerk of the council. ANNO 1593.

In respect of which my loyal and dutiful services, I humbly am a suitor, that it might please your honour to receive into the place of a pursuivant at arms my said son, a scholar brought up at Cambridge, in Emanuel college; and since professing the law at Barnard's-inn; and, by my lord Anderson's gift, clerk in the prenuitories [protonotaries] office, in the common-place. Notwithstanding, I perceiving his inclination apt to gather gentlemen's coats, as well on church windows, stone walls, as noblemen's tombs, whereby he hath collected some thirty thousand or more coats, of his own tricking and writing, besides a pretty skill in counterfeiting pictures after the life, or otherwise; am hereupon, knowing his sufficiency, by some of the said officers at arms made known unto me, humbly to beseech your honour to stand my good lord in my son's suit.

Your honour's humble servant, to command,

Anthony Hall, senior.

ANNO 1593.

Number CVII.

167 *Strangers, Flemings and French, in the city of London: and complaints of them, and libels against them. Ann.* 1593. *MSS. Car. D. Hallifax.*

THEY contented not themselves with manufactures and warehouses, but would keep shops, and retail all manner of goods. The English shopkeepers made several complaints and remonstrances against them: whereupon a strict account was taken in every ward of all strangers inhabiting within London, with their servants and children. And certificates were returned the 4th of May; when the total of all the strangers, with their children and servants, born out of the realm, were 4300: of which 267 were denizens.

Another scrutiny was made the same year, 1593, by order of the chief magistrates: which was done by the ministers and chief officers of the foreign churches in London, and in the same month of May, by which the number of the strangers of the French, Dutch, and Italian churches did amount to 3325, whereof 212 were found to be English born.

Complaint of them.

The artificers freemen within the city and suburbs in London made complaint, by several petitions, against the trades and occupations exercised by strangers. And upon due information the households appeared to be only 678.

Libels set out against the strangers.

While these inquiries were making, to incense the people against them, there were these lines in one of their libels.

"Doth not the world see, that you, beastly brutes, the "Belgians, or rather drunken drones, and fainthearted "Flemings; and you, fraudulent father, Frenchmen, by "your cowardly flight from your own natural countries, "have abandoned the same into the hands of your proud, "cowardly enemies, and have, by a feigned hypocrisy and "counterfeit show of religion, placed yourselves here in a "most fertile soil, under a most gracious and merciful "prince; who hath been contented, to the great prejudice

" of her own natural subjects, to suffer you to live here in ANNO
" better case and more freedom than her own people.—— 1593.
" Be it known to all Flemings and Frenchmen, that it is
" best for them to depart out of the realm of England
" between this and the 9th of July next. If not, then to
" take that which follows: for that there shall be many a sore
" stripe. Apprentices will rise to the number of 2336.
" And all the apprentices and journeymen will down with
" the Flemings and strangers."

Number CVIII. 168

A rhyme set up upon the wall of the Dutch churchyard, on Thursday May the 5th, between eleven and twelve at night: and there found by some of the inhabitants of that place, and brought to the constable and the rest of the watch. Beginning,

You, strangers, that inhabit in this land,
Note this same writing, do it understand.
Conceive it well, for safeguard of your lives,
Your goods, your children, and your dearest wives.

THE court, upon these seditious motions, took the most prudent measures to protect the poor strangers, and to prevent any riot or insurrection: sending for the lord mayor and aldermen, resolving that no open notification should be given, but a private admonition only, to the mayor and discreetest aldermen: and they not to know the cause of their sending for. Orders to be given to them to appoint a strong watch of merchants and others, and like handicrafted masters, to answer for their apprentices' and servants' misdoing. The subsidy-books for London and the suburbs to be seen: how many masters, and how many men, and of what trades, and if they use double trades. The preachers of their churches to forewarn them of double trades. And such as be of no church to be avoided hence. And a proclamation of these things to be made publicly in Guildhall.

After these orders from the council boards, several young

ANNO 1593. men were taken up, and examined about the confederacy, to rise and drive out the strangers.——Some of these rioters were put into the stocks, carted and whipped, for a terror to other apprentices and servants.——*MSS. Car. D. Hallifax.*

Number CIX.

A notable Jesuit taken up, named Ogilby, alias Bowrne, but his true name Ingram. Certified in a letter from the earl of Huntington at York, to the lord keeper Puckring. Feb. 12, 1593.

.... FOR the seminary, which was sent from Berwick, I find him still to be close, obstinate, and resolute: but I think I may boldly affirm, that he is an Englishman born, and no Scot, though himself saith otherwise. I cannot
169 hitherto learn his right name; and I find now that it is doubted that his name is not Bowrne, as it is most certain it is not Ogylby. But with Scotland he is greatly acquainted, and among others, especially with the earl of Huntley; with whom, as it is constantly affirmed, he hath been for the most part of one year and an half. And so great is the reputation of him with the archpapists of Scotland, and some others, that if money would redeem him, he would not long continue a prisoner. And I am told, that if the time of his sending from Berwick had been known, some would have adventured to rescue him before he had passed Northumberland. A matter which I had cause to doubt of. And therefore I sent a man to Mr. Cary, expressly to send him away well guarded, on the sudden; which was well performed. I shall shortly be able to advertise at whose house, and with whom he hath been in the south; (and I do already partly know some places and persons, where and with whom he hath been in Northumberland;) when I have gotten hereof more certainty.

I wish rather that I might be licensed to bring him to London, than commanded to send him. For I do greatly desire to see her majesty, and say somewhat to herself,

which I will not write. And that done, if my service here be requisite, I will upon two days warnings return again, though I could be contented to stay there a month or six weeks this spring time ..... But to return to this seminary. I think, till he come to the Tower, he will not speak English so rightly as he can and should do .... From York, this 12th of February, 1593. ANNO 1593.

Your lordship's assured poor friend,
H. Huntyngdon.

Number CX.

Another letter from the earl of Huntington to the lord keeper: concerning his examination of Ogylby, and Walpole, and Lingen, seminaries, concerning Ogylby's true name. March the 8th. And Ingram sent up.

..... SINCE the receipt of your lordship's letter, I have travailed with the seminary called Ogylby, both by strict examination and gentle persuasions, sometime myself alone, and sometime assisted with some of this council; with whom I could not prevail in any matter to any purpose, (such was his obstinacy and wilfulness,) until by that good hap, which God giveth to all service for her majesty, I had some light given to me by them, of whom, touching him, I never did ask a question that they would satisfy me in. For of Ogylby, which he always confidently said to be his name, or of Bowrne, which I certified was his name, according to the information given me, I could not learn any thing, nei- 170
ther of Walpole the Jesuit, nor of his brother Thomas Walpole, nor of Lingen; neither could the two seminaries, Hardestre and Maior, tell me any thing of him, which were both then here in this house. But calling one day for Thomas Walpole, to take some examination of him, it was his hap to meet this seminary going from me. And when he came before me, he told me of himself, that he had seen this man both in Brussels and in Antwerp, or one very like to him. I did straightway send for the seminary again, and made Walpole stand where he might view him well.

ANNO 1593. Which done, I bade him in writing set down all his knowledge of him: which he did. And so have now sent it to my lords, with the seminary's own confession, and another of Lingen: whom I take to be a man as badly affected towards her majesty and this state, as the worst of his company.

I hope it shall not be disliked at this time, that I have sent this seminary before I had a direction for it. For in part that which your lordship did write in your last letter hath emboldened me to do so; and partly, because I think now he is discovered to be an Englishman; the fear of torture, with such other good courses as may there be taken with him, will get more from him than here I could obtain. And to this gaol I durst not send him, for that I did hear very confidently of some liberal offers made for his enlargement before he came from Berwick: which moved me to think him more fit for the Tower, where he might be in more safety, and better sifted than here he could be.—From York, the 8th of March, 1593.

Number CXI.

Concerning Walpole the Jesuit, Walpole his brother, and Lingen, thus the earl of Huntington to the lord keeper in a former letter, dated Jan. 10.

SITHENCE letters from my lords, dated the 17th of December, which came to my hands on Christmas-eve, in which they directed their pleasure in dealing with Walpole the Jesuit, and the two other persons which were taken with him, viz. Tho. Walpole his brother, and Edward Lingen, I appointed a gaol-delivery to be held here on the 24th of this month, [January.]..... And now upon conference had lately, the learned of this council tell me, that this Lingen and Tho. Walpole cannot be tried here without a special commission for that purpose: because their treasons were committed beyond the seas. I have written this much to my lord treasurer; and have thought good like-

wise to advertise your lordship thereof. To the end, that if the lords shall think it meet they should receive their trial here, (the example whereof, no doubt, will do good in these parts,) your lordship will please to give direction, that the commission may come hither in time, before the 23d day.....

ANNO 1593.

From York, this 10th of January, 1593.

In another letter of the same date, thus the earl wrote concerning one of them: Tho. Walpole giveth me some cause to hope of his conformity and plain dealing. But Lingen, he sheweth himself hitherto far otherwise. 171

Number CXII.

Henry Barrow, a separatist, now in prison for sedition, (and soon after executed,) requireth a conference; in a letter to Egerton, attorney-general.

MY most humble and submissive desire unto your worship was and is, that forasmuch as there remain sundry ecclesiastical differences of no small weight between me, with sundry other her highness's faithful subjects, now imprisoned for the same on the one side, and this present ministry, now by authority established in the land, on the other, undecided, or as yet indiscussed; your worship would vouchsafe to be a means to her most excellent majesty, that a Christian and peaceable disputation by the scriptures might be vouchsafed unto some few of us; with whom, or how many of our adversaries herein shall in wisdom be thought meet, for the ready and happy deciding or composing the same: protesting to your worship, in the sight of God, at whose final judgment I look hourly to stand, that I hold not any thing in these differences of any singularity or pride of spirit. And as I am hitherto certainly persuaded, by the undoubted grounds of God's word, the profession and practice of other reformed churches, and learned of other countries. Whereof if we, her majesty's

ANNO 1593. said few imprisoned subjects, shall fail to make evident and assured proof, and that those learned shall shew any other thing by the word of God, in the said Christian conference desired, that then I for my part vow unto your worship, through God's grace, (as also I am persuaded, my said imprisoned brethren, permitted this conference, will do the like,) that I will utterly forsake any error I shall be so proved to hold, and in all humbly consent to submit to our now dissenting adversaries in all these matters, wherein now we differ, if they shall approve them unto us by the word of God.

By which charitable act your worship may put an end to these present controversies; reduce all wherein we err, and appease many Christian souls.

Your worship's humble suppliant,

Henry Barrowe.

172 Number CXIII.

This petition of conference was considered of by the bishops and others; and not thought convenient upon these reasons against public disputation with Barrow. MSS. Whitg. archiep. Cantuar.

IT is not equally safe nor fit to grant a disputation to sectaries. 1. It hath ever been denied by the state to papists, a sect that had the possession of the church for some hundred years before. 2. To call the ministry and confession of the church of England into question, were to call all other churches likewise into question. Against whom also those exceptions extend. 3. The church of England hath submitted herself to disputation thrice; in king Edward's time, in queen Mary's, and in queen Elizabeth's. 4. The erroneous opinions of these men have been already condemned by just treatises of the most famous learned men that have lived since restitution of religion. 5. It is no reason that religion and the controversies thereof, the same being already established by parliament, should be

examined by an inferior authority, by way of disputation. 6. It is no reason, that all the reformed churches in Europe, (acknowledging our church of England for a sister,) the same should be now brought into question at the will and request of a few sectaries. 7. Their principal errors have been already discussed by disputations and writings in the days of St. Augustin, and that by himself, &c. 8. To call the ministry of England into question is to strengthen the papists, and to disable all the exercises of the mysteries of religion ever since the establishment thereof. 9. It hath ever been the manner of heretics to require the same, by great importunities and continual exclamations; as Novatus, Arrius, Eunomius, Paul Samosatenus, Campion, and such like. 10. It hath been already discussed by books written; out of which the truth may better appear than by any tumultuary disputation. 11. They that require disputation of the civil magistrate will not stand to the judgment of the civil magistrate. 12. If the church should satisfy every sect that riseth, there were no end of disputations. ANNO 1593.

Number CXIV.

Another address of Barrow for a conference (as it seems) to the council, entitled, A motion tending to unity.

1. THAT if we may not hear public conference for any inconvenience, (in regard whereof it were better we should suffer mischief,) yet that our teachers may in our hearing (if it may be thought meet) have such as was granted 173
Campion and his fellows. 2. Or else that there may be some conference between two or three of each side, before a good number of your honours and worships in some private chamber, the main questions agreed upon, (with preparation of fasting and prayer.) And when the time comes, omitting all taunts and by-matters, only searching the truth in love: to the touchstone, to the law and to the testimony. 3. Or else such a conference as was granted Hart, the papist.

ANNO 1593.

If it be objected that none of our side are worthy to be thus disputed or written with, (public or private,) we think that this will prove the contrary, viz. because there are three or four in this city, [London,] and more elsewhere, which have been zealous preachers in the parish assemblies, not ignorant of the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew tongues, nor otherwise unlearned, and generally confessed to be of honest conversation: to be brief, as gentle and learned Mr. Reynolds of Oxford, and other like him, are yet alive; so are there right honourable and godly disposed personages of sir Fra. Knowles's mind; who have power we know, and good-will we hope, to further such lawful motions, tending to such good purposes.

If these motions take effect, we are verily persuaded that the controversy will soon end (with all or most of us.) For by these means shall we, poor wretches, (which only make this separation, as knoweth the Lord, for love we have to keep his commandments, and for fear to disobey him,) perceive more plainly, whether as men and simple souls we be deceived by any false light, or else, as his dear children, (for so we hope,) honoured and trusted with the first view of, and faithful standing in, a cause of holiness and righteousness. Where in most humble and earnest manner, and even as you fear God and love righteousness, and as you strive to resemble him in liking better of them that are hot, than of those which are lukewarm, we entreat your honours and worships to labour these or some better motions for procuring unity and mercy; and for that the blessings promised to faithful men and peacemakers may light upon you and yours; and that the curses threatened for the contrary may be far from you.

You reverend magistrates and noble guides of this most flourishing commonwealth, we beseech you again and again, in the Lord Jesus, search yourselves narrowly, when you seek him whom your soul loveth, and think how you would desire to be dealt with, if you were in our case; and so deal with us and our teachers. If you suppose them and us to be in grievous error, for common humanity sake,

(were there no further cause,) let us not perish, either secretly in prisons or openly by execution, for want of that uttermost help which lies in your power to afford them that are not obstinate men. If any adversaries shall object, that we are worthy of close imprisonment in most contagious air, without bail, and unworthy of having or hearing any great prepared conference, or of any favour, because some of us have been conferred with already, and yet remain in great error, as learned men judge, we make this answer, and pray each one of tender heart to ponder it deeply; God 174
forbid, that all they who err greatly in some opinion should have no other means to convert them, but sudden, unequal conferences by starts, with snatching and catching, without good order and indifferent hearing and judges. Such have all or the most of our conferences been. And then, if they will not by and by yield, be thought worthy of as bad prisons as thieves and rogues, &c. ANNO 1593.

This address goes on in a passionate style, setting forth their imprisonments, and the miseries thereof to themselves, and all their children and families, and to their undoing. And then appeals sometimes to the reverend fathers, *and sometimes to the* merciful magistrates, *and sometimes to their* worships *and* honours. *More concerning this Barrow will be found in Archbishop Whitgift's Life,* b. iv. ch. 11.

Number CXV.

A meeting of Barrowists at Islington: where many of them were taken and committed; and afterwards examined before some of the queen's justices. MSS. lord keeper Puckring.

THE examination of Daniel Buck, scrivener, of the borough of Southwark, taken the 9th of March before Henry Townsend, Richard Young, and John Ellys, esquires. And being required to be deposed upon a book, refuseth to take

ANNO 1593. any other oath, than to protest before God that all his sayings were true.

Being examined, whether he was with the coffin at Newgate, [where one of the brotherhood died, and a coffin was brought with much pomp, with an inscription, to receive the body of a martyr for the cause,] denieth that he was there, and that he did not see the libel fixed on the said coffin. But saith, that afterward a stranger shewed unto him the copy of the same at his own shop in Southwark; saith, that he was upon Sunday last in the afternoon in the constable's house at Islington; where he did see, among others of his fraternity, Penryn, [Penry;] and that George Johnson was reader there in the constable's house, as aforesaid; and that there were above forty of them together, and divers others that were not of their society. And that he was not in the parish-church these twelve months, because it was against his conscience, unless there were reformation in the church, according as they be warranted by the word of God.

And as concerning the bishops, he thinketh that they have no spiritual authority over the rest of the clergy. Being asked, What vow or promise he had made, when he came first into their society; he answered, he made this protestation, that he would walk with the rest of the congregation so long as they did walk in the way of the Lord, and as far as might be warranted by the word of God.

175 Being demanded, Whether should be a motion made by some of their fraternity, that they should go somewhere in the country, whereby they might be in more safety; denieth that he heard any such matter; but saith, that he heard one Millers, a preacher at St. Andrew's Undershaft, say, that if they did maintain the truth, they should not keep themselves in corners, but should shew themselves publicly to defend the same. But he thought that unfit, lest it might be a means to stir a rebellion.

And being further demanded, who was their pastor, and by whom he was created; saith, that Mr. Fra. Johnson was

chosen pastor, and Mr. Greenwood doctor, and Bowman and Lee, deacons, and Studley and George Kniston, apothecary, were chosen elders, in the house of one Fox, in St. Nicholas-lane, London, about half a year sithence, all in one day, by their congregation, or at Mr. Bilson's house in Cree-church, he remembereth not whether. And that the sacrament of baptism was, as he called it, delivered there to the number of seven persons by Johnson. But they had neither godfathers nor godmothers. And he took water and washed the faces of them that were baptized. The children that were there baptized were the children of Mr. Studley, Mr. Lee, with others, being of several years of age; saying only in the administration of this sacrament, *I do baptize thee in the name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost*, without using any other ceremony therein, as is now usually observed, according to the Book of Common Prayer; being then present the said Dan. Studley, Will. Shepherd, Will. Marshal, Joh. Becke, with the names of a great many more, [here set down,] with some women. ANNO 1593.

Being further demanded the manner of the Lord's Supper administered among them, he saith, that five white loaves, or more, were set upon the table. That the pastor did break the bread, and then delivered it to some of them, and the deacons delivered to the rest; some of the said congregation sitting, and some standing about the table. And that the pastor delivered the cup unto one, and he to another, till they had all drunken; using the words at the delivery thereof, according as it is set down in the eleventh of the Corinthians, the 24th verse. Being demanded, whether they used to make a collection or gathering among them; said, that there is a gathering of money among them. The which money is delivered to the deacons, to be distributed according to their discretions, to the use of the poor. And he heard say, that they did use to marry in their congregation. And further refuseth to come to the church, and obey the form of service which is used in the Book of Com-

ANNO 1593. mon Prayer, because there is not a reformation according to the word of God.

[Signed] Rych. Young.

176 Number CXVI.

Penry, [or Martin Marprelate,] his indictment. Being expressions taken out of the printed books: reflecting upon England, and the general state; the archbishops, bishops, judges, and council. From lord keeper Puckring's papers.

ENGLAND. What hath England answered! Surely, with an impudent forehead, she hath said, I will not come near the Holy One; and as for the building of his house, I will not so much as lift up a finger towards that work. Nay, I will continue the desolations thereof. And if any man speaketh a word in the behalf of this house, or bewaileth the misery of it, I will account him an enemy to my state. As for the gospel and the ministers of it, I have already received the gospels and all the ministers that I mean to receive; I have received a reading gospel and a reading ministry, a pompous gospel and a pompous ministry; a gospel and a ministry, that strengtheneth the hands of the wicked in his iniquity; a gospel and a ministry, that will stoop unto me, and be at my beck, either to speak or to be mute, when I shall think good. Briefly, I have received a gospel and a ministry, that will never trouble my conscience with the sight of my sins. Which is all the gospel and all the ministry which I mean to receive. And I will make a sure hand, that the Lord's house, if I can choose, shall be none otherwise edified, than by the hands of such men as bring unto me that forsake [foresaid] gospel, and the foresaid ministry.

The general state. As for the general state either of the magistracy or the ministry, or of the common people, behold nothing else but a magistracy of conspirators against

God, against his truth, against the building of his house, against his saints and children; and consequently against the wealth of their own souls, and the public peace and tranquillity of the whole realm. ANNO 1593.

Archbishops, bishops, and clergy. You shall find among this crew nothing else but a troop of bloody soul-murderers, sacrilegious church-robbers, and such as have made themselves fat with the blood of men's souls, and the utter ruin of the church.

Judges. It is now grown, and hath been a long time, a common practice of these guiltless men, to make offices, statutes, ordained for the maintenance of religion or common quietness, a pit, wherein to catch the peaceable of the land.

Council. And because our council may be truly said to delight in this injury and violent oppression of God's saints and ministers, therefore whensoever the Lord shall come to search for the sins of England *with lights*, as Zephaniah saith, he will surely visit our council with a heavy plague. Because undoubtedly they are frozen in their dregs, and persuade their own hearts, that the Lord will do neither good nor evil in the defence of his messengers and children. And then shall they feel what it is to wink at, much more to procure, the oppression of the church of Christ. I will 177
not in this place charge our council with that which followeth in Jeremy, upon the place before alleged; namely, that they execute no judgment, (no, not the judgment of the fatherless,) but this I will say, that they cannot possibly deal truly in the matter of justice between man and man; insomuch as they bend all their force to bereave Christ Jesus of that right which he hath in the government of his church. The which ungodly and wicked course as they have held on, ever since the beginning of her majesty's reign, so at this day they have taken greater boldness, and grown more rebellious against the Lord and his cause, than ever they were.

ANNO 1593.

Number CXVII.

Observations upon Penry's tracts and writings; as, his Protestation of his Loyalty; his Confession; his Treatise unto the Queen's Majesty. Ubi supra.

I. OBSERVATIONS upon the Protestation of his Loyalty. That Penry is not, as he pretendeth, a loyal subject, but a seditious disturber of her majesty's peaceable government, appeareth many ways. 1. By his peremptory condemning of the whole ecclesiastical government established by her majesty, as wicked and Antichristian. 2. By his libels and pamphlets; wherein he hath for these many years past most devilishly railed against the whole state ecclesiastical, and condemned their calling as Antichristian. Who notwithstanding have no ordinary lawful authority in this church, but under and from her majesty. 3. By his schismatical separation from the society of the church of England, and joining with the hypocritical and schismatical conventicles of Barrow and Greenwood. 4. By his justifying of Barrow and Greenwood, who, suffering worthily for their seditious writings and practices, are nevertheless by him reputed as holy martyrs. 5. By his seditious practices in Scotland against the peace of this church; as appeareth out of certain his writings now lately taken; which do display his seditious intentions. 6. By so many of his protestations, wherein he acknowledgeth her majesty's royal power only to establish laws ecclesiastical and civil; shunning the usual terms of *making*, *enacting*, *decreeing*, and *ordaining* laws. Which import a most absolute authority. As though her majesty had no such power, but only a prerogative to establish and ratify such laws as are made to her hand by the omnipotent presbytery, as he and others of his crew have both taught and written. 7. By the doctrines taught in their conventicles, whereof he is a member, and practised by his lewd martyrs; viz. that the people are not to stay for her majesty's authority in proceeding to reform matters of religion; neither are to be hindered therefrom by any her prohibitions. 2. That her majesty envieth

her subjects a saving knowledge of the true God. 3. That the sacraments ministered in her land are unto them not the seals of God's covenant. 4. That her majesty is yet unbaptized. Her people remain in infidelity, and stand generally condemned to hell. 5. That an honest man cannot possibly live under her government in any vocation whatsoever. 6. That her majesty may as well make a new religion, as new laws for religion. 7. That her majesty altereth the penalties of the judicial law of Moses. And many more, all flatly impeaching, defaming, or impugning her majesty's lawful authority. ANNO 1593. 178

Penry's contemptuous and seditious speeches, in a treatise of his unto the queen's majesty; taken out of the book through the pages set down here. Whereof these are some:

The last days of your reign are turned rather against Christ Jesus and his gospel than to the maintenance of the same. We cannot be quieted, until we find ourselves rid of all the occasions and obstacles that hinder us to enjoy that which our soul so much desireth..... It is not your majesty we are to deal with, but it is our God. I have great cause of complaint, madam; nay, the Lord and his church hath cause to complain of your government, not so much for any outward injury as I or any other of your subjects have received, as because we your subjects this day are not permitted to serve our God under your government according to his word; but are sold to be bondslaves, not only to our affections, to do what we will, so that we keep ourselves within the compass of established civil laws, but also to be servants to the man of sin and his ordinances. Reject them we must all of us, that mean to live godly in Christ Jesus. .....Your judges in causes of blood, nay, your whole council and state, will not be afraid to proceed against us by the laws of the land: whereas in the mean time we are ready to shew our cause to be good, according to the word of God.....

It is not the force that we seem to fear, that will come

ANNO 1593.

upon us. For the Lord may destroy both you for denying, and us for slack seeking of his will, by strangers, [i. e. by the Spaniards.] I come unto you with it. And if you will hear it, our case may be eased; if not, that your posterity may know that you have been dealt with, and that this age may see that there is no great expectation to be looked for at your hands..... And if your state will thus stand against his word, the Lord will surely overthrow it..... Among the rest of the princes under the gospel, that have been drawn to oppose themselves against the gospel, you must think yourself to be one. For until you see this, madam, you see not yourself. And they are but sycophants and flatterers, whosoever tell you otherwise. Your standing is and hath been by the gospel. It is little or smally beholden unto you, for any thing that appeareth. The practice of your government sheweth, that if you could have ruled without the gospel, it would have been to be feared, whether the gospel should be established or not. For now that you are established in your throne, and that by the gospel, ye have suffered the gospel to reach no further than the end of your sceptre, limited unto it..... If we had queen Mary's days, I know that we should have had as
179 flourishing a church this day as ever any. For it is well known, that there was then in London under the burden, and elsewhere in exile, a far more flourishing church than any are now tolerated by your authority.

It will be said, I know, that I endeavour sedition against your majesty, and draw your subjects unto sedition against you. Unto which slander I will vouchsafe no other answer at this time, but that that state is near ruin, where the truth is accounted seditious; and that truth will be verified in the overthrow thereof, when it shall wish that it had given ear unto the truth before destruction come. If to utter the truth be sedition and treason, few Christians can be but greater..... I would not have it said, that the cause of God was either ashamed or afraid to come before queen Elizabeth. Briefly, madam, you may well see the foundation of England rooted up; but this cause will you never

see suppressed. [*With a great deal more. The whole address may be read in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift*, book iv. ch. 11.] ANNO 1593.

Number CXVIII.

Advertisements out of Portugal, by one Graye, (a merchant, as it seems,) lately come from thence, of some Irish, and other English there; with other intelligence.

THE cardinal suddenly left the government of Portugal, and went for Madril. Then it was bruited the king was dead, and that he should marry with the daughter of Spain. In his stead the government of Portugal was committed to don Juan de Silva, conde de Portulegre, Spaniard, the archbishop of Lixbon, don Duarte Castleblank, Merinlomez, earl of Villa Dorta, and Michel de Mores ..... of the nobles of Aragon, were beheaded upon an insurrection. The state is still jealous of that country.

Buttler and Tirol [Irishmen] came to Lixbon to offer their service. Where they were committed. Within a month discharged. After suspected (they say, accused) of intelligence, and so committed close prisoners in Madril, and put to the torment. Immediately thereupon Tayler, the English consul, Lee, an Irishman, both of Lixbon, and Rynkin, an English merchant of the Madera, were apprehended, their goods seized for the king, and they sent prisoners to Madril.

Mr. Stanihurst is said presently to go upon the king's business into Scotland, accompanied bravely. The English fathers any time this twelvemonth very peremptorily presaged of the alteration of religion in England and Ireland, as if they knew some great matter of estate.

An English college is in erection at Lixbon. The duke of Berganza promiseth a yearly stipend thereto.

Four months since, George Cawell, out of Mr. Glamand's shipping, came to Lixbon, and offered his service. But that before he had served the king in the Low Countries with sir William Stanley, and departed the service, he was mis- 180

ANNO 1593. trusted, and so committed, with seven Englishmen more that came with him, to the castle.

The bishop of Tomond, so called, came out of Ireland half a year since, and wrote a letter to the said Cawel, that he should advertise him at the court of all them that were factious in Ireland, and of Maguyer; because it was at that instant a matter of great consequence: the kinsmen of the earl of Desmond, and all the rest of the Irish pensioners, in December, met at Madril, and, as we heard, to sue to carry men into Ireland.

In November, father Fixer, under the name of father Young, came to Lixbon, attired gentleman-like, and within three days after was shaven, and took the habit of a priest. He is very conversant with don Juan de Silva, the principal governor, and hath hourly recourse to all of that council. With him came one Thomas Pool, a young gentleman of Hampshire, which lodgeth in the English father's house, that came in a ship of Tredawgh.

The crown of Portugal furnish out the Portugal armado, and none govern or serve in them but Portugals.

Four days before our departure from Lixbon, upon the post coming from the court, it was bruited the king was dead. Which news continued still in vehement suspicion. The second day after, they sat in council, and ordained the crown of Portugal to pay all the king's soldiers garrisoned in the realm of Portugal. Don Juan de Silva likewise gave it out, that all Englishmen afterwards taken should be disposed of by the archbishop and the Portingals.

As we came thence it was generally bruited, (but not promulgated by royal authority,) that the king had licensed free sale of all English commodities in Spain and Portugal, so it came not in English bottoms nor by English factors.

Nothing is so much dreaded in Spain as the Turk, which cometh down with great power. His galleys be very busy in the coasts of Spain; and have taken many men out of their houses within this twelvemonth.

The Spanish captains and soldiers, at our coming away, would oftentimes argue, that it were fit their king and the

queen's majesty should have peace, and to assist him with the rest of the Christian princes against the Turk. The news was there, that the emperor began to solicit a peace, and that the duke of Arnezia should govern the Low Countries, and begin there the pacification. ANNO 1593.

An hundred and fifty captains before Christmas were despatched from Madril with their commissions to raise companies. They give it out, for defence of Aragon, which remaineth troublesome.

Many Portugals lately apprehended and committed. The king is said to owe twenty millions to the merchants of Italy, Spain, and Portugal; to have received many rents of his estate for six, eight, ten years beforehand; and to be behind with his soldiers wheresoever, for four, six, and eight years.

In December, father Henry Flud came for England. At our departure father George, a Lancashire man, went to St. Rock, to the divinity exercise, and to be private, to have his hair grow, to come likewise for England..... All Englishmen taken by the way of wars are licensed to come for their country without ransom..... The governor, don Juan de 181
Silva, hath promised good wars, in his government, with the English nation..... This year came here but two caracks of the five which should have come. That called the Pantaleon was brought to Payon, but commanded to come to Lixbon to discharge..... Thirty-seven great and small ships, with the six sent, those of treasure, came this year from the Spanish Indies. The vice-admiral of them was cast away at the island. About the end of May, two ships came very rich from the mines of Revelasco. Three saicks and 40 [or 90 obscurely writ] barks and ships, the week after Easter, go this year for the Indies of Portugal. One of the caracks is a new ship of 13 or 1400, and carrieth much plate with her.

At the cardinal's departure, an Italian engineer presented his skill before the Altoze and the governor, by skirmishing on the water with musket without boat, by conveying fireworks strangely, and breaking down a gate

ANNO 1593. and piece of a wall by enginal force. He is lately gone for Madril. And it is said he promiseth the cardinal to burn her majesty's navy. They be so afraid of intelligencers, as they commit pilgrims, and forbid Portingals peregrination.

The governor willed us at our departure to signify our good entertainment there, and to be solicitors that the king's subjects in like manner might be used and sent home without ransom.—That intelligence that the Dutch consul sent by me to your honour is with my lord admiral.

Number CXIX.

A note of the evidence of all the prisoners for popery in the several counties; as the lord keeper Puckring collected, and writ it down for and against the persons hereafter named. So endorsed by his own hand; anno 1593.

SURREY. William Flower, born in Denshire, made a priest in France at Michaelmas, *anno* 28. *reginæ.* He returned into England, and was apprehended in Surrey about June, 29. *reginæ*, after the general pardon. His offence was of being in the realm.

Edward Chapman, a person reconciled four years past in St. George's Fields in Surrey. After apprehended at Chichester in Sussex, after Easter, *anno* 28. *reginæ.* Committed to the Marshalsea by the council's commandment, 26. April, *anno* 28. *reginæ*, where he hath remained ever since. He is not within the last general pardon, but excepted, unless he will submit himself, in obedience to her majesty; come to church to hear the divine service; conform himself in matters of religion; and so continue in the same. Also he is further excepted out of the pardon, 29. *reginæ*, being a prisoner in the Marshalsea. As being then restrained of liberty by some of the privy council's commandment.

182 Will. Goodacre, reconciled in the Marshalsea, about a

year and a quarter past, since the last general pardon. A person within the exceptions of the pardon for not conforming himself. ANNO 1593.

John Vachel hath forborne to come to church these two years, was reconciled in the Marshalsea.

John Cradock, reconciled in France, about a year and a quarter since, so, after the last pardon; but yet two years since: he is excepted out of the same pardon, unless he conform himself, *ut supra;* his offence being treason committed beyond sea, is to be inquired and determined in what county it shall please her majesty, by commission, having words tending to that end. And so may now be in Surrey by especial words now in the commission.

Kent. Edward Campion: he was born in Shropshire, made priest in Lent, *anno* 29. *reginæ;* came into England at Easter after. (Which his offence was after the last pardon.) Was apprehended in Kent. So a traitor, triable there. He wisheth he were no worse traitor than Campion, [his namesake,] that was executed for treason. Will not directly say, if he will take the queen's part against the king of Spain's army; but will pray that the catholic Romish church may prevail. If an army come by the apostolic authority, to deprive her majesty and to restore Romish religion, he refuseth to tell what part he will take, but will pray that the catholic religion may prevail so long as he liveth.

Christopher Buxton, born in Derbyshire, made priest beyond sea, at Hallowtide, *anno* 28. *reginæ.* Came into England at Hallowtide the 29. *reginæ.* Was apprehended in Kent after time of the last pardon. This man will not take her majesty's part against the [Spanish] army, nor do any thing to hinder his religion.

Robert Wilcox, born at West-Chester, made priest beyond sea. He will pray for the army that shall come hither to supplant religion.

William Margenet, made priest beyond sea. John Bolton, made priest beyond sea. Committed to the Marshal-

ANNO 1593. sea, 11th Nov. 1585, *anno* 27. *reginæ*. Where he hath remained ever since.

Sussex. Edward James, made priest four years past beyond sea. Rafe Croket, made priest beyond sea, three years past. John Owen, made priest beyond sea, three years past; returned into England. Was banished out of the realm about Michaelmas, *anno* 28. *reginæ*. And after sailing between Deep and Bolleyn, was, by tempest, as he saith, driven into England, and landed in Sussex, and there apprehended. He will not say he will take the queen's part against any for religion. Besides all these in the Marshalsea, not excepted out of the queen's pardon, there were also many more in the Marshalsea, of other counties, and particular accounts given of them; and why excepted out of the queen's pardon; as John Robenson, James Harrison, Christopher Thules, priests, made beyond sea. Thomas Heath, for receiving and relieving of the same Harrison at his house in Cumberford-hall in Staffordshire.

Richard Webster, schoolmaster, born in Yorkshire; examined April 20, 1593, before Dr. Goodman, dean of West-
183 minster, Dr. Stanhope, Mr. Topcliff, Mr. Barne, and Mr. Young. Refused to be sworn, but saith, that he had been prisoner in the Marshalsea seven years, or thereabouts, for being taken at a mass; and divers times examined before the lord treasurer, lord archbishop of Canterbury, Mr. Young, and others, and indicted for hearing of mass, and for recusancy. And that he was married by George Beesly, a seminary priest, and gave him 28*s*. 6*d*. for his pains..... That two years after Beesly came to him to the Marshalsea. And then his wife made and gave him a cordial. Examined, what seminary priests he knoweth. Saith, he knoweth divers; and set down divers; but all such as are in prison, and known to some of the said commissioners. Being charged that he gave forty shillings to Fr. Corbet, a seminary priest, at Corbet's first coming into England, saith, that if Corbet will say so, he will not deny it. Being demanded, whether he will at this present denounce [re-

nounce] the pope and his authority, and take an oath thereto, refuseth the same, desiring pardon. Being demanded, whether if the pope, by the catholic authority of the church of Rome, shall proceed against our sovereign lady, the queen's majesty, to excommunicate her, accurse her, and thereupon pronounce her subjects to be free of their oath of allegiance and obedience to her; then whether he thinketh therein the pope do lawfully or not? I answer to this question, I have not read of it. And I cannot tell what to answer herein. [This writ with his own hand.] And otherwise he will not answer. Being asked, whether in the like case, whether if the pope send an army into this realm, to establish that which he calleth the Romish catholic religion, he would fight against such an army on the queen's majesty's side, or on the catholic Romish army's side? I answer in this case last before written, I will take her majesty's part against..... [And no more written by him.] And there he ending, being required to write these words following, *the pope and his catholic authority and army*, to make up the sentence, refuseth to write the same. I humbly crave pardon not to set my hand to the last article, [writ also with his own hand,] added in the margin. ANNO 1593.

Gratian Brownel, of Sponeden in Derbyshire, bachelor of the law in Oxon, of the age of forty years; in prison in the Marshalsea six years; committed by sir Francis Walsingham: saith, he hath no living, neither lands nor goods. [And so did divers others, to save themselves the mulct by law for absence from church.] Denied that he ever received a seminary priest or Jesuit. Refuseth to come to church. Being asked, whether if the pope by his catholic authority, and the authority of the church of Rome, shall proceed against our sovereign lady, queen Elizabeth, to excommunicate her, accurse her, and thereupon pronounce her subjects to be freed of the oath of allegiance and obedience to her; then, whether he thinketh the pope therein do lawfully or not? refuseth directly to answer; and saith, he knoweth not what he may answer to this case. Being asked, whether in the like case, if the pope send an army to

ANNO 1593. this land to establish that which he calleth the Roman catholic religion, he would fight against such an army on the queen's side, or on the catholic Roman army side? refuseth directly to answer.

184 April 17, 1593, Raffe Emerson, of the bishopric of Durham, scholar, of the age of 42 years, or thereabouts; examined before sir Owen Hopton, Dr. Goodman, dean of Westminster, Mr. Dale, &c. [ecclesiastical commissioners,] saith, that he hath been in prison nine years: in the country three years, and in the Clink the rest of the time, in bringing books, called, *my lord of Leicester's books*, as he saith: had been examined before sir Francis Walsingham and others; confesseth he is a lay Jesuit: took that degree at Rome fourteen years since, and was sometime Campion's boy. And saith, that when he took that order, he did vow chastity, poverty, and obedience to the superior of their house. And if he sent him to the Turk, he must go.

Being urged to take the oath of allegiance to her majesty, refuseth the same, and saith, he may not take any oath. Would not set down by whom he was maintained, and now relieved. Refused to be reformed and come to church; affirming, that he will live and die in the faith. Being demanded, whether if the pope shall send an army into this realm, to establish that which he calleth the catholic Romish religion, whether he would in the like case fight for the queen on her side against the said army, or on that army's side? saith, that he will never fight against her majesty, nor against the religion which he professeth.

Several other papists, priests and laymen, in the Marshalsea, examined by the ecclesiastical commissioners in the month of April, 1593.

Thomas Alcock, of Rampton in Cambridgshire, gentleman, examined before Dr. Goodman, Dr. Stanhope, Mr. Barnet, Mr. Young. Refused to be sworn. Saith, that he hath been in the Marshalsea about thirty-two weeks; committed by the archbishop of Canterbury, &c. for recusancy. Is indicted for the same in Cambridgshire, and hath been often examined. Saith, he hath an annuity of 40*l.* a

year from his father for his maintenance, and hath the reversion of all his father's lands, worth 200*l.* yearly. Saith, his father goeth to church. Himself had married one of Mr. Edward Gage's daughters, of Bently in the county of Sussex. Denieth, that he knoweth any seminary priests or Jesuits, or ever had conference with any such. Refuseth to depose it. Saith, that he hath had conference with Mr. Dr. Andrews and Dr. Fleming. Refuseth to come to church. ANNO 1593.

Robert Parton, priest, examined. Made priest in queen Mary's time. Of the age of 77 years. Refused to be sworn. Saith, that he hath been in prison about ten years. First in Newgate. From thence set at liberty by sir Francis Walsingham. After taken again, and sent to Stafford gaol, where he remained six years. Then brought up to the Marshalsea: where he hath been ever since Christmas last. Committed by the lord archbishop of Canterbury for recusancy. Divers times examined: never indicted to his knowledge. Confesseth that he was made a priest by Dr. Hopton, bishop of Norwich, in queen Mary's time. Never beyond the seas since her majesty came to the crown. Hath neither land nor goods, but only in money 10*l.* That he hath not come to church these fifteen years last past. That he was beneficed the space of ten years, since her majesty 185
came to her crown, at the beginning of her reign: which benefice was to the value of an hundred mark by the year. From which being deprived, fell to papistry again. Refuseth yet to come to church. But he is contented to have a conference with the dean of Westminster; and desireth a month's respite.

Robert Bellamy, of Harrow at Hill, gentleman, of fifty-two years, examined; saith, that he hath been in prison six years. First, being taken with Blackborn, a seminary priest, in his house at mass, with divers others. Committed to Newgate. Indicted for hearing of mass, according to the statute. Did afterwards break prison, with others, and fled into Scotland. And from thence into Germany. And there taken by duke Casimire; and by him sent into England.

ANNO 1593. Then committed by sir Fran. Walsingham. By the means of Robert Robinson, who had twenty marks for his labour, being a suitor to the privy-council, was by their honours set at liberty. Afterwards committed again by Mr. Young and other commissioners, about twelve months since, or somewhat more. Then in Easter set at liberty again, upon bonds taken with sureties that he should appear at the next sessions. In the mean time should resort to the dean of Westminster for conference. And again, being committed by Mr. Young for being found in the court as a man suspected. But will not yet come to church.

Being demanded, if any army shall come into this realm by the catholic Romish authority, sent from the pope to establish the catholic Romish religion (as he calleth it) within this realm, whether in the like case he would fight for the queen's majesty against such an army, or against the queen's majesty and her forces, on the said army's side? saith, he will fight for the queen's majesty against any such army. And this he affirmeth upon his oath. Saith, he hath not been at church these fifteen years. But yet is not indicted for recusancy.

Christopher Rocke, an Irishman, 32 years of age: examined by the commissioners. Hath been in prison a year and a quarter. Committed by the lord treasurer: being suspected to be a priest. Indicted about a year since, for speaking seditious words against the queen. And was therefore set upon the pillory divers days. Hath not yet been indicted for recusancy. Demanded, whether if the pope, by his catholic authority, shall proceed against the queen to excommunicate her, accuse her, and thereupon pronounce her subjects to be free of her oath of allegiance and obedience to her; then, whether he think the pope doth therein lawfully or not? saith, this question is too high for him to answer unto; and otherwise will not directly answer. Being demanded, whether in the like case, if the pope shall send an army into this realm, to establish that which he calleth the Roman catholic religion, he would fight against such an army on the queen's side? he refuseth to answer directly;

saith, he will fight for her majesty against all her enemies. ANNO 1593.
But being further asked, whether he think the pope to be her majesty's enemy? saith, God knoweth, he knoweth not: and otherwise will not answer. Whether he thinketh Saunders, and those that came with him into Ireland, were the queen's enemies? saith, he knoweth not. Confesseth he was eight years beyond sea. And at that time was at Rhemes, 186
Doway, Paris, Lorain, and other countries in France. Knoweth Corbet, a seminary priest; which came to the prison: but knoweth not any other seminary or Jesuit; nor never relieved any. But being urged to be sworn thereto, refuseth. Refuseth to come to church. Saith, that he never had conference with any preacher, nor doth he desire it, except he may have some liberty. *A very dangerous fellow*, added by another hand.

Humphrey Cartwright, of Warrington in Lancashire, scholar, of the age of 47. Committed to prison in Manchester nine years, by the earl of Derby. Thence brought up to the Counter in Wood-street. In which he remained about a year for recusancy. Indicted at Manchester. Hath neither lands nor goods. Knew Bell, a seminary priest, in Lancashire. Did help him to say mass at Mr. Stopford's house in Lancashire; who was dead. Saw Mr. Michel, a seminary priest, in Lancashire: one Baret, a priest, at Mr. Whitmore's house in Cheshire. Met one Brian, a seminary priest, in Fetter-lane, and one Lloid, in Fleet-street. But never relieved any of them. Refuseth to come to church. Never had conference with any preacher since his imprisonment; neither doth he desire it.

There were likewise examined this month of April, by Dr. Goodman, dean of Westminster, and other commissioners, now in the King's Bench and other places: Rob. Goldsborow, of Stabridge Weston, of Dorsetshire; Walter Blount, of Utoxeter, gentlemen; in prison twenty years, in divers prisons. Rob. Daubigny, of Sharrington in Norfolk, gent.; John Grey, of Preston in Suffolk; in prison for the most part of twenty years. Will. Cornwallis, clerk. Confesseth, he was made priest by the bishop of Soissons in

ANNO 1593. France, by authority from the bishop of Rome. Aged 66, &c. For his opinion he saith, that he thinketh that the pope, by his catholic authority, and his authority over the church of Rome, may not proceed to excommunicate or accurse our sovereign lady, and thereupon pronounce her subjects to be freed and discharged of their obedience to her. And that if the pope should send an army into this realm, to establish the catholic Romish religion, he would in that case fight against such an army to the uttermost of his power, on her majesty's side.

Miles Gerrard, of Ince, esq. charged by Mr. Bell to have received and lodged divers seminary priests at his house; as namely, Norden, Blackwel, Gardiner, Fourth, Hughs, Hardwyt, Dakins, Butler, and Bell, alias Burton. His brother a seminary, to whom he gave 30*s.* and another time 40*s.* and after, sent him 10*l.* to Wisbich: and to another brother of his . Saith, he hath frequented the church these seven years, but hath not received the communion; but desireth therein respite and conference, hoping he shall conform himself. That he never took the oath of allegiance, according to the statute, but is willing to take it, if it be tendered.

Thomas Simpson, alias Iligate, of Brightlingsey in Essex, clerk. Made a seminary priest beyond sea. He hath reformed himself, and is contented to renounce and forsake his former calling, opinion, and course of life, and to live according to the laws of this realm, and to come to church,
187 and to do every thing as becometh a good subject. And in sign thereof hath now voluntarily taken the oath of allegiance unto her majesty, and is ready to take the oath of supremacy. And is further contented to write his own submission and conversion more at large with his own hand. And hath renounced all foreign powers, princes, and potentates.

Richard Sampson, of Binfield in Berks. In prison fifteen years, in divers prisons. Committed by the bishop of London, for being at mass with the French ambassador in Salisbury-court. Indicted for recusancy. Hath taken an oath

upon a Latin Testament of Erasmus's translation, that he is no priest. But refuseth to be sworn upon an English Testament. Refuseth to be sworn, whether he hath been beyond sea or no. Refuseth to come to church, neither doth he desire conference. Demanded, whether he think the pope, by his catholic authority, and the authority of the church of Rome, may excommunicate our sovereign lady? saith, he is not able to judge of this matter, but leaves it to such as are better learned. Whether, if the pope should send an army into this realm, to establish Romish catholic religion, he would fight against such an army on her majesty's part? he will take the queen's part so far as he shall not offend God nor his conscience. And otherwise will not directly answer. ANNO 1593.

Rich. Waldern, citizen and salter of London. Hath been in divers prisons about London these fifteen years. Committed to the Tower by the bishop of London. Found about him a written book: which was delivered to him by one father Read, an old priest. The contents whereof he refuseth to tell. Confesseth the cause of his first commitment by Mr. Wilkes was, for that there was a portmanteau and a chest of Polydore Morgan found in his house; which, he saith, was delivered him by the said Morgan's brother. Afterwards committed to the Tower. Afterwards set at liberty. And then taken for suspicion for being at mass at the French ambassador's. Stands indicted for recusancy. For the question about the pope's excommunicating the queen, saith, the question appertaineth to learned men to answer: and saith, himself is unlearned, and so can make no answer to it. And otherwise refuseth to answer directly. To the other demand about the pope's invading the land, and fighting for the queen in that cause, he saith, that when such matter shall happen, then he will make his answer to it. But being again asked the same question, saith, he would take the queen's majesty's part, so far as it shall not be against his conscience.

ANNO 1593.

Number CXX.

188 *One Whitfield's information concerning Mr. Francis Dacres going to the king of Spain. Whose two brothers were papists, and in the rebellion in the north. Discovered by John Whitfield (who went in his company) to Mr. Henry Dethick, a justice of peace, October* 1593. *The confession whereof was brought to the bishop of Durham; and he delivered it to the lord president of the north. Found among lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*

THE sum of the said Whitfield's information was, that he, of Welton, waited on Dacres into Scotland. After long continuance there, they got a licence from the king of Scots for his passage and return from Spain. That they were driven by weather into Dartmouth. Landed; and took shipping again. Landed at Bourdeaux. Left there a little chest of *evidences* with one Adam Hud, an Irish priest, until his return from Rome. Then he travelled to Spain; where he had conference with Parsons, an English seminary: by whom all Englishmen, whom he liketh of, have access unto the king. But he found more help by father Creiton: who followed Mr. Dacre to Rome. Mr. Dacre hath 80 crowns allowed by the Spanish king every month, paid him in Rome by the duke Cessie, the king's ambassador; who continued three years together in Rome. And his son is at Doway. Unto whom the king hath promised 40 crowns every month: but doubteth it is not paid duly.

Mr. Dacre went out of Spain not well pleased that he had no greater pay. It was objected to him, that his brother had done greater service, and he had but 50 crowns monthly. Whereupon Mr. Dacre wished himself in England again, for that he failed of his expectation. Furthermore Whitfield saith, that Dacre left him with one of the squires of the body to the prince, for to learn the language. He did see the king daily, who is sorely weakened with the gout: and that his eyes and lips are fallen down very much. He remained in Spain a year and three months at the least. Who perceiving at last that he should be enforced to re-

ceive the sacrament, his conscience moved to the contrary: and whereas the use is, that a note is taken in every house fourteen days before Easter of those which are to receive, he willed the examiner not to write his name, for that he would not be there. And so hardly escaped, being moved in conscience: seeing the fruits of their doctrine; being expressed in their abominable stews, and other idolatries. He came to Rochel, and arrived at Plymouth. And so was brought to my lord treasurer. Since which time he hath been at his father's house, [Raphe Whitfield of Whitfield,] and among his brethren in Northumberland. ANNO 1593.

Number CXXI. 189

Whitfield's declaration voluntary, of his own handwriting, concerning Dacres. Nov. 8, 1593. *So endorsed by the lord keeper Puckring.*

THE first petition which Francis Dacre had made to go to the king of Spain was made by father Parsons; which was very brief. The effect of it was only to make it known unto the king, how his brethren had died in his service. And the cause of their banishment was in respect of conscience, and that not unknown to his majesty. And that after the death of both his brethren, he made title to the lands which were his ancestors'. And because he was always catholicly affected, he was not well thought of by the queen's majesty and her council only, but deterred also from the common laws of the realm and justice. And in respect of his conscience, thought himself happy to be drove into a catholic country; where he might live in the service of God, till it should please God to send a catholic prince in his country, whom he hoped would restore him to all the living which was his ancestors'.

And concluded his petition to the king, who was the refuge of all the exiles of his country, that his majesty would consider of his estate and quality, and how he should be maintained; and that his majesty would command his service, where his majesty thought most convenient.

ANNO 1593. Within a month after Francis Dacre came to Madrid, news came, that my lord of Cumberland was upon the coast of Spain; and father Creiton [a Scotch Jesuit] did practise with Fran. Dacre, that he would go unto the said lord, and make an offer unto him, that he should refuse his country, and come to serve the king: Dacre would not go, because he did distrust that the said lord would have kept him. And not having a fit messenger, I was moved thereto, that I should go with the message: which I granted to do; meaning always to have done the duty of a good subject. They concluded, that Dacre, Creiton, and I, should have gone all to Lisbon; and that Dacre and Creiton should have stayed ashore. That I should have gone with letters and a message in a boat to the ships. But in the mean time, while they were agreeing what they should offer him, news came that he was gone. At which time Francis Dacre was persuaded by father Creiton, that the king would have granted him his pension in Scotland, because he made his information, as he told me, that in Scotland he was most able to do the king service. And that his money should have been paid by bank, by Will. Neper, a Scotchman, a burgess of Edinburgh: who is the principal man that conveyed the Spaniards forth of Scotland, and the chief merchant that trafficks into Spain, in all Scotland. But father Parsons prevented him privily, that he should not have the pension paid him in Scotland, as he thought. Because that Parsons had no steadfast hope in Dacre. And also that he
190 should know, that his credit was more with the king than Creiton's, or any other in that matter.

The duchess of Feria told Francis Dacre, as he told me, that it was a common use of the English Jesuits, when they give intelligence to the king of Spain out of England, they tell the king, that so many Englishmen hath such a Jesuit converted; and that if the king of Spain would make invasion into this country, that they would all refuse their allegiance unto her majesty, and turn unto the king of Spain.

John Whitfield.

Number CXXII.

ANNO 1593.

Mr. Francis Dacre indicted. The particulars of his indictment: anno 1593. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*

THE imagining and compassing the death and destruction of the queen's majesty, and the invasion of the realm, &c. practised by him without the realm, in Scotland, Spain, and Rome, beyond the sea.

Overt acts. In Scotland he took upon him the name and title of honour of lord Dacres, without her majesty's licence, consent, or knowledge. He conferred with sir John Seton and others in Scotland, touching the compassing and performing of these his treacherous imaginations and purposes. And procured sir John Seton to write divers letters to divers in Spain, being the king of Spain's subjects, to shew him favour, and to receive him into the frontier towns in Spain; and another letter to col. Symple in his favour.

In Spain he adhered to sir Francis Englefield and Parsons, the Jesuit, being traitors attainted, and the queen's public enemies; and conferred with them touching his treason.

He left and refused his allegiance and obedience to the queen, and yielded himself as subject to the king of Spain; offering his service to be at the king of Spain's commandment in what service he thought convenient.

He devised and set down in articles and notes in writing for the invading of England: declaring his opinion, that it was best to be done by landing his forces at Kerkeodrey in Scotland; and so to enter upon the west part of England, where Francis Dacres was born, was best known, had best friends, and able to do the king of Spain best service. These articles and notes he delivered to Creighton, a Scottish Jesuit, to translate into Spanish. And being translated, he delivered the same to John de Ideaces.

He obtained a grant of a pension of 60 crowns for himself, and 20 crowns for his son and heir. Which pension he hath received accordingly.

ANNO 1593. He went to Rome, and there adhered to cardinal Allen; and had conference with him, touching the compassing and performing of his treasons.

191 Number CXXIII.

Whitfield, a spy. To the lord keeper Puckring, offering service. Nov. 16, 1593.

My good lord,

I DO think, that if Fr. Da. do send into England, he will send by Scotland. And most like he will send to John Whitfield, [this Whitfield's uncle,] which was mentioned in those notes which I writ yesternight; or to Matthew Blenkensop, who serveth the lord Wharton, and knew of Fr. Da. way-going [going away]; and was a messenger between the lady Wharton and Fr. Da.: which men I am well acquainted withal. And they will not conceal any matter from me, as touching those causes. But if it be known unto them, that your lordship should shew any favour unto me, they would not give to me so good credit as they have done. Many others there be in that country which are affected that way: which, if it please your lordship to send me into that country, I shall take better mark of, and shall be better able to give a reason of them. In this country I know no place, where I am acquainted, that I can learn of any thing that may tend to her majesty's service, but only at sir Rob. Dormer's, which I may do as I go down to the north, or in returning. The more hardlier I shall be bruited to be thought of by your lordship, the more able I shall be to do her majesty service in that respect. In the north I can procure what bond your lordship shall think meet, either to be given unto my lord president [of the north, for his appearance whensoever he should be called,] or to my lord [bishop] of Durham.

I beseech your lordship pardon my boldness, and let the rudeness of my country excuse my evil manners. And whatsoever it shall please your honour to command me, I will,

with all humbleness and duty, be ready to obey. And after trial I most humbly desire your lordship to think of me as my good-will shall deserve, and wherewith I am able to perform the same. ANNO 1593.

John Whitfield.

Number CXXIV.

Whitfield's intelligence, December 2, 1593, of English Jesuits and pensioners in Spain.

SIR Francis Englefield is the principal man who giveth intelligence unto the king of Spain. For every post that goeth between Spain and Flanders he writeth by them. He writeth most commonly to father Holt, a Jesuit, who remaineth in Flanders; for most part at Brussels. And presently upon the receipt of letters, the said Englefield re- 19
porteth unto don Juan dey Diaques; to make known unto him what news he hath heard, as touching England. I did first understand this by Fra. Jackson. And afterwards I saw it evidently, that presently, upon the coming of the post from Flanders, he repaired unto don Juan dey Diaques, as I have said before.

Also, the said sir Fra. Englefield sendeth letters to Rome with every post that goeth; and receiveth answers. He writeth to every town in Spain where there is English from every week, and receiveth answer. Father Parsons for the most part writeth to sir Fra. Englefield, when he hath any business as touching matters of England. And the said sir Francis repaireth to don dey Diaques, as before is said. But for the providing for his college, father Parsons sendeth to one Tho. James, who lieth at Madrid only to solicit the causes of father Parsons. Which James went in April last to Seville, there to be employed by father Parsons in a college which is built for English students. And now in Tho. James's place is Fra. Jackson employed in Madrid. Which Jackson hath of sir William Stanley 600 reals, five shillings apiece, for to receive and transport by bank, from

ANNO 1593. Spain to Brussels, a pension of 300 crowns a month, granted by the king of Spain to sir William Stanley for his life-time. Which pension in May last, as I understand by Jackson, as also by letters sent from sir William Stanley to the said Jackson, to be delivered to don Juan dey Diaques, that for the space of a year and an half he had received no pay at all out of Spain.

The chief Jesuit of the English is Walpole, and one Chriswel, and one Fleck Chriswel came from the English college at Rome. The cause wherefore he came from Rome, as I understand by William Owen, a scholar, who some time had been a scholar in the said college at Rome, was disagreement one with another among themselves; and that the whole college of Rome was divided into two factions, when as the said William Owen came thence, which was in summer was a year.

When I came from Madrid, which was in May last, one Richard Burley had a pension granted of 40 crowns a month, as he told; and that he should be sent back again to Newhaven in France, where he lay as a spy for the king of Spain.

In May last, one Boswel, a scholar, who had been sick in the English college at Valedolid, came to Madrid, to recover his health. And after he was well, departed from Madrid to Seville, where he was to be made priest with divers others, and presently to be sent into England. I did hear it of the said Boswel, when he took his leave of his brother, one Richard Boswel, who was once my lord of Huntington's man, and afterwards a soldier in Britain, and now is at Madrid in service.

In the last spring there was a general discharge of all pensioners in Portugal, that did not serve by sea in the armada, or else in the galleys. And many Englishmen came to Madrid, for to seek of the king their pensions which were by-past, and due before. But no answer they could get. Also, one Owen Paton did seek a pension at the same
193 time, but could not travail. At the same time I did understand by sir Francis Englefield, that all Englishmen that

were not of good account were in the like manner discharged, except they would go and serve in the wars that were in Flanders. ANNO 1593.

The duchess of Feria [who, I think, was an Englishwoman, named Dormer] told Francis Dacre, that he came in very late time for to seek any thing at the king of Spain's hands: because the king neither doth give so great pensions to Englishmen, as beforetimes he had done, nor makes so great account of their service. Also she told him, that the English priests, when they are in England, as he well knew, did seek by all means to drive men forth of their country; promising them, that when they came into Spain they shall be well entertained by the king. But when they come there, they are neither esteemed by the king, neither by the Jesuit who was the cause that made them leave their country. For there is no credit in Spain for any Englishmen, but only for father Parsons; who now taketh care only for the colleges, for to maintain English scholars which are most able to do most service for the present to the king of Spain.

Joh. Whitfield.

Number CXXV.

An examination of Joh. Whitfield, November 6, 1593, *before sir John Puckring, lord keeper.*

HE saith, that about four years ago, Francis Dacre departed out of the realm, and went into Scotland, being moved thereunto by discontentment. Which did grow by reason that he received not such favour at the hands of her majesty and the lords of the council as he expected. And this examinant was then his servant, and attended upon him. And that his intention was to procure the king of Scots to deal with her majesty in this behalf. And therein he prevailed so far, that the king did write his letters to the queen's majesty for him, &c.

ANNO 1593.

Number CXXVI.

Another examination of J. Whitfield, November 8, 1593.

..... IT is reported this last year in the court of Spain, (and greatly feared,) that sir Francis Drake was appointed to come with forty ships to invade Spain on the one side, and the Turk on the other side. And that her majesty and the Turk were agreed of it.

He saith, that Rolston wrote letters to Francis Dacre into Spain, but they were not delivered till after Francis Dacre was gone from Spain to Rome. Which this examinant receiving did open; and perusing them found, that
194 Rolston thereby affirmed, that he was sorry that Francis Dacre was not more esteemed, or no more accounted of in Spain, since he was able to do the king so good service in England; and no English out of England better able.

This examinant saith, that at Francis Dacre's first coming into Scotland, the king said unto him, that whensoever he should be king of England, he would restore Francis Dacre to all the living that his brothers had lost for the queen his mother, and that he would give him the title of honour in the mean time. And so was Francis Dacre called the lord Dacre among all the lords and gentlemen in Scotland.

Number CXXVII.

Names of prisoners now in the Tower. Some that intended to kill the queen. Others for other treasons. Lord keeper's MSS.

EDWARD YORK and Richard Williams; undertaking the death of her majesty: confessed. Henry Young; stirring of rebellion, and to kill her majesty: accused by them. Laton, for intending the death of the queen. Jo. Annias, an Irishman, pensioner of the king of Spain; for intending the burning of the queen's ships; privy of Patrick Collins's treasons; breaking prison. Edward Lingen, pensioner of the king of Spain; adhering to her

majesty's enemies; came over with Walpole, the Jesuit, guarded with two ships of war of Dunkirk; and spoiled divers of her majesty's subjects by sea. Walpole, Southwel, Gerard, Jesuits. ANNO 1593.

Number CXXVIII.

Cardinal Allen's letter to Mr. Mush, a priest, anno 1594, *to pacify the disagreements between the priests in England. In which year the cardinal died.*

I HAVE heard, to my great grief, that there is not that good correspondence between the fathers [Jesuits] and other priests; I cannot tell upon what discontentments, &c. But whereof soever it cometh, it is of the enemy; and with all possible discretion and diligence, by the wiser sort on both sides, to be rooted out, or else it will be the ruin of the whole cause, &c. And therefore in this point especially, Mr. Mush, be earnest and peremptory with all parties, and every one in particular. And tell them, that I charge and advise them, by the blessed blood and bowels of God's mercy, that they honour, love, and esteem one another, according to every man's age, order, and profession. Anno 1594.

Number CXXIX. 195

Advertisements of the ill estate and order of the Jesuits and seminary priests, &c. in the prison of Wisbich castle, [and their manner of living there.] Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.

THE state of the seminary priests and Jesuits at Wisbich, by liberty and favour of their keeper, growing to be as dangerous as a seminary college, being in the heart and midst of England. First, there is about twenty-eight seminary priests and Jesuits, who have compounded with their keeper, Gray, for their diet and all provision, and necessary entertaining servants, as if they were in a free college, and

ANNO 1594. no prison. 2. By that means they send abroad into the town, being a place of some resort, to the market; where they buy up any dainty victuals before the best in the town, or in that country. And their men will disdainfully ask any person, if they dare buy any thing out of the gentlemen's hands, before they be served. 3. Great resort and daily is there to them of gentlemen, gentlewomen, and of other people; who use to dine and sup with them, walk with them in the castle yard, confer with them in their chambers: whereby they receive intelligence, and send again what they list, from and unto all quarters of the realm, and beyond sea. And other priests resort unto them: as father Scot, the seminary priest, did, anno 91; and others known. 4. Venison, wine, spices, and all other provision, is sent to them from all parts of the realm. And they want no money. The townsmen and women be so feasted and entertained, as they are far won to be theirs in devotion, and further disallegiance: the town and country seated over strongly for such people of danger. 5. The alms and devotions they give at the gate makes the poor to esteem them for good and godly men, and others to affect them. 6. Bakers, brewers, chandlers, shoemakers, tailors, and their wives, resort to them for payment of money; and thereby won to popery. 7. They keep eight poor townsborn children, and two strangers of good wit and choice, besides their cooks; and those recusants. 8. They be all young and lusty people, disposed to mirth and viciousness with women; known to attempt them, as well with deeds as words, with enchanted almonds; as the keeper's maiden and his two daughters have been in whorish manner: one of them run from thence, and hath had children from her husband; and overthrown in popery, of a modest, fair young wife. 9. Some of them promise favour when the Spaniards invade, and speak lewdly of their hope to come. And most of them were examined of their disposition, when the Spaniards were on the seas in anno 1588. The best said, they would pray for the catholic cause. Most of them were banished, and returned; some condemned men for treason. Whereby scho-

lars of the universities, and priests beyond the sea hold, if they be taken, and so entertained, that the worst is but good cheer, and great hopes of bishoprics and preferments hereafter. ANNO 1594.

Number CXXX. 196

Then follow the names of the priests remaining in the castle of Wisbich; and of such boys as are attending on them. Jan. 1595. *With their countries. Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*

DR. Christoph. Bagshaw, Staff.
Dr. Norden, Lond.
Father Will. Edmunds, Kent.
Mr. Tho. Blewet, Wales.
Father Buckley, Staff.
Mr. Ralph Ithel, Essex.
Lewis Barlow, Wales. And 25 more, with their names set down, and their countries whence they came.

Then follow the names of the boys, and on whom they attended.

Number CXXXI.

Three gentlemen condemned in Middlesex for treason, when the Spanish fleet was on the sea, and passed Calais. And had their trial at the Old Bailey. Sir George Bond, mayor. Ubi supra.

HUGH MORE, late of Gray's Inn, gentleman, was condemned and executed, for being reconciled to the see of Rome, by one Thomas Stevenson, a Jesuit.

Edward Shelly, late of London, gentleman, condemned and executed, for receiving, aiding, and comforting of one Will. Dean, a seminary priest.

Henry Foxwel, of the city of Westminster, gentleman, condemned for being reconciled to the see of Rome, by one

ANNO 1594. John Bawdewyn, a Jesuit. He was afterwards reprieved, and had his pardon.

197 Number CXXXII.

Names of recusants, with their several sums of money paid into the receipt, from Michaelmas last to March the 10*th*, 1594.

Their names are set down, and the counties where they lived, and the sums that each of them paid. The sum total at the end: which comes to 3323*l.* 1*s.* 10*d.* Exam. per Chr. Wardour, clericum pellium. *The names are about* 137. *Where some paid good round sums; others lesser. MSS. D. Puckr.*

MICHAEL HARE, of Suffolk, 140*l.* Rob. Rookwood, of Suffolk, 51*l.* 7*s.* 3*d.* Ferdinand Paris, of Norfolk, 120*l.* John Townely, of Lanc. 140*l.* John Sayer, of Yorkshire, 120*l.* Robert Grey, of Norfolk, 59*l.* 4*s.* 9*d.* Robert Downes, of Norfolk, 49*l.* 4*s.* 6*d.* Edw. Rokewod, of Suffolk, 120*l.* John Gage, of Sussex, 140*l.* Joh. Arundel, Cornub. 120*l.* George Cotton, Southam. 140*l.* Robert Apprice, Hunting. 120*l.* Tho. Tresham, Mid. 140*l.* John Talbot, Wigorn. 120*l.* Edward Sulliard, Suff. 140*l.* Tho. Throckmorton, Bucks. 140*l.*

Among these is Tho. More, of York, 5*l.* 2*d.* Many of lesser sums. 260*l.* 50. 40. 30. 20. 10. And some 1*l.* and upward. And in those sums in general, considerable sums.

There is, as I think, much more money rising by recusants, which is still paid to the sheriffs of the counties. And is paid in their particular accounts in the Pipe Office. Yet please it your lordship to say, that order should be taken with Mr. Vaughan, that all money growing thereby should be particularly paid to the receipt. Which performed, your lordship may always know of me the certainty thereof, according to this certificate: [viz. that above, of the names of each papist throughout all the counties, and the sums by them paid.] This was writ by Wardour, clerk of the pells.

Number CXXXIII.

ANNO 1594.

Matthew Hutton, bishop of Durham, to the lord treasurer, December 1594; *upon the queen's purpose, upon the death of Piers, archbishop of York, to prefer him to that see.*

I UNDERSTAND, by a letter sent in a packet to Mr. Dean of Durham, from the rt. honourable the lord chamberlain, that her majesty hath set down a full resolution to remove me to York; a thing, I assure your lordship, that I did not desire, being very well pleased here, and also so aged and decayed, that it is more fit for me to think of my 198
grave, than any honours in this world. Yet because it hath pleased God to incline her majesty's heart towards me, as always heretofore especially, I doubt not by your lordship's means, I do commit myself wholly to God's good providence, to be wholly in her highness's disposition.

I have written to sir Robert Cecill, [lord treasurer's son,] to know your lordship's directions, when to send up for that matter. Because I would be loath, either to seem too forward in hasty sending, or, in protracting the time, to be thought undutifully careless of so gracious a resolution, &c.

Number CXXXIV.

Another letter of bishop Hutton, upon his being nominated by the queen to the see of York. Written to the lord treasurer, Febr. 14, 1594.

MY humble duty remembered, &c. I think myself most bound to the queen's most excellent majesty. For now this is the third time that her highness hath preferred me above desert; and at this time above desire also. And I account the blessing to be the greater, because the same God, who of his undeserved goodness inclined the royal heart of so gracious a sovereign to my good, hath also moved your lordship from time to time to further me. The Lord make me thankful, and careful in my calling, &c.

ANNO 1594.

Number CXXXV.

Part of two letters of the bishop of Durham to the lord treasurer: in behalf of the lady Margaret Nevyl, daughter to the unfortunate earl of Westmerland.

.....I SENT up in the beginning of the term to sue for the pardon of the lady Margaret Nevyl, taken in company with Boast, the seminary priest. She lamenteth, with tears, that she had offended God and her sovereign: and she is wholly reclaimed from popery. Dr. Aubrey hath had her pardon drawn since the beginning of the term. If it come not quickly, I fear she will die with sorrow. It were very honourable for your good lordship to take the care of a most distressed maiden, who descends, as your lordship knoweth, of great nobility in the house of Norfolk, the house of Westmerland, and the house of Rutland, in memory of men; and was but a child of five years old, when her unfortunate father did enter into the rebellion. And now she is a condemned person, having not one penny by year to live upon since the death of her mother;
199 who gave her 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* a year. It were well that her majesty were informed of her miserable state. She is virtuously given; humble, modest, and of very good behaviour. .....From Aukland, the 11th of December, 1594.

Number CXXXVI.

Part of the bishop's second letter. Writ February following, when the bishop was removing to York.

.....NOW, because I am presently to leave this country, I am bold still to recommend unto your good lordship the pitiful state of the lady Margaret Nevyl, daughter to the unfortunate earl of Westmerland, prisoner in my house, and condemned to die for being in company with Boast, the seminary priest. She is wholly reformed in religion. She sore lamenteth, with tears, that she hath offended so gracious a sovereign and her laws. It is an honourable

deed, in my opinion, beseeming your lordship, with favour to prefer her humble suit unto her majesty. Your lordship knoweth, that she is descended of divers noble houses, in the memory of man; of the house of Buckingham, Norfolk, Westmerland, and Rutland. And now behold the instability of all human things. Two of them are utterly overthrown: only one standeth unspotted. And she herself, a poor maid, condemned to die. I do assure myself, that if her highness were truly informed of her lamentable state and true repentance, she would take pity and compassion on her, and so make known unto the world that she maketh a difference between her and her two obstinate sisters. [Katharine Gray, a widow, one of them.] She hath confessed unto me, and I verily believe it to be true, that partly want did cause her to wade to woe. For whereas the great offence of her father, her highness most graciously allowed unto her mother 300*l.* a year, for herself and her three children: whereof 33*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* was by Mr. Clopton, her majesty's receiver here, paid unto her yearly; so it is, that since the death of her mother, and somewhat before, the same annuity was not paid unto her. By occasion whereof, she fell to converse with the papists for relief first; and so by little and little did forsake both her religion towards God, and her loyalty to her sovereign. For both the which she is most heartily sorry, and most humbly craveth one drop of her majesty's mercy. ANNO 1594.

I have writ unto Mr. Roger Manners, her great uncle, to commend her humble suit unto your good lordship. Thus beseeching God to bless your lordship with his manifold graces, that you may yet long continue a most wise and faithful counsellor unto so gracious a sovereign, I humbly take my leave.

Your lordship's bounden in Christ,
Matth. Dunelm.

ANNO 1594.

200

Number CXXXVII.

The humble submission of Margaret Nevyl to the queen's most excellent majesty, enclosed in the former letter.

MOST humbly, with tears, beseecheth your highness, your majesty's most desolate, poor subject, Margaret Nevyl, one of the daughters of the unfortunate late earl of Westmerland, to take princely pity upon my lamentable estate. With great grief I do confess, most gracious sovereign, that sithence the death of my dear mother, having no part of that allowance which it pleased your majesty graciously to bestow upon me, nor any other maintenance, I was even forced, by reason of great want, to receive relief of papists: by whose subtilty my needy simplicity was allured from mine obedience and loyalty, to their superstition and errors: and so being drawn into the company of a seminary priest, I was condemned.

At the assizes the last summer, being destitute of help, it pleased the good bishop of Duresme, at the motion of my lord treasurer and the judges, to take me into his house. Where he only hath and doth yet wholly relieve, and by his godly and sound earnest instructions he hath, I most humbly praise God, fully reformed me in religion. Which by God's grace I shall, with all obedience unto your highness, constantly profess while I live. And now, alas! this pitiful bishop, my only help, is very shortly to leave this country, and I know not how or where to be relieved, I commend my case and woful state unto God and your majesty: most humbly beseeching your highness, of your princely and most gracious wonted compassion, to be merciful unto me, a most distressed, poor maiden, and to vouchsafe me your most comfortable pardon for my life, and somewhat also for my relief. Which if I still want, my life will be no life, but only misery.

So shall the enemies of true religion have no cause to rejoice at my woe; the repenting poor converts, by my example, will be comforted; and I, as most bound, shall never cease with them to pray for your majesty's most happy

reign in all wished felicity, and long to endure. Feb. 14, 1594. ANNO 1594.

Your majesty's most woful poor prisoner,
Margarett Nevyl.

Number CXXXVIII. 201

Tobie Matthew, D. D. dean of Durham, to the lord treasurer. Information of Scotch matters, and the Scots king.

.....OUR papists here do secretly whisper, that the stay of Lopus [a Portugal physician, that should have poisoned the queen] his execution may argue, that his condemnation is but to draw the king of Spain in odium with our nation: which indeed would be credited of too many, if he should not suffer.

The earl Bothwel's late enterprise to so small effect doth much rejoice the papists; who stick not to rumour, that the king secretly hath mass, and is catholic, and that he hath as sound intelligence in our court as her majesty hath in his. Whereof there is doubtless great suspicion, howsoever it cometh. There is now with me one William Ashby, kinsman to that Mr. Ashby that was by her majesty employed in Scotland; who among other particulars (whereof of the king's council he was demanded) was examined, whether he knew what money the earl had received from me. I pray God the king's protestations be not over-well believed; who is a deeper dissembler, by all men's judgment that know him best, than is thought possible for his years.

They talk much in Scotland of the weak provisions in Berwick, specially of powder: and stick not to take notice, how little there was between Trent and Tweede at that time the Spaniards were last upon the coast.

The delivery of notorious recusants out of prison almost hand over head, sithence the last statute made, hath done, and will do, great harm hereabout. Thus very glad,

ANNO 1594. when your lordship pleaseth to command my service, which I have vowed to your lordship: and craving pardon at this present, I most humbly betake your good lordship to God. At Duresme, the 9th of April, 1594.

Your lordship's most humble and most bounden,
Tobie Matthew.

Number CXXXIX.

The death of Pierse, archbishop of York, and the queen's almoner; who died Sept. 28, 1594, *at his seat at Bishopthorp. Some account of him in the sermon preached by Dr. King, his chaplain, at his funeral.*

HE was dean of Chester, dean of Christ's-church, and dean of Salisbury, successively; and bishop of Rochester for twenty months; then bishop of Salisbury about eleven years; and lastly, archbishop of York six years. Aged 71: 202 buried in the cathedral of York; with a large inscription set up in memory of him: viz. That he was *contemptor mundi: optimus, facilis, et in sola vitia superbus.....Veram et germanam Christi religionem omnibus modis propagavit*, &c. His funeral sermon was preached by Joh. King, D. D. his domestic chaplain, (afterwards bishop of London,) Nov. 17. Which was afterward (anno 1599) printed with his Lectures upon Jonah.

His text was Psalm cxlvi. *Put not your trust in princes, nor in any son of man: for there is no help in him. His breath departeth, and he returneth to the earth*, &c. In which sermon this account was given of his life, discharge of his holy function, and Christian departure: viz.

As he was not great by parentage, so it was his greater commendation that he became greater by virtues.....The university tried his learning, the court his manners, the church his wisdom. He was transplanted from college to college: not by chance, but by advised choice.....He sat in a chair [as a public professor] to teach. In the court, while he lived therein, he was not *unus e multis*, a com-

mon man there for his deserts: and yet for his pains he was *unus e multis;* he made himself a common man, in keeping as orderly and ordinary a course of preaching, as whosoever was most bound to do that service. And as he had an office therein besides to wait upon, [the queen's almoner,] so he discharged it with fidelity: not bearing the bag like a thief, but with such uprightness of conscience, that in the sight of God and man he might justly purge himself with those words of Samuel, *Witness against me*, if you can; *whom have I defrauded?*..... ANNO 1594.

Lastly, The church had a long experience of his government. He was thrice a dean: and because he was faithful in a little, he was made a ruler over much: for he was thrice also a bishop. In the management of which weighty charges, malice itself spared him: even that malice which blotted and blemished the names of most of the lights of this land, [viz. the bishops,] never accused him. But I call this the least credit of a thousand. From the first hour that he came into this province, you know his behaviour among you at all seasons; how he kept nothing back that was profitable, but taught you openly, and through every church; witnessing both to Jews and Gentiles, protestants and papists, repentance towards God, and faith towards Jesus Christ, &c.

You cannot truly say of him, *Ditavimus Abrahamum.* He had not a holy trade more than he brought at his first coming. What this reverend prelate hath gained and carried away with him, by continuing among you these many years, is only the name of an archbishop, &c.

Now concerning his travail and pains in his function. He dealt both the gospel of Christ and himself among you. Whose saying ever was, that which he also took from a famous light of this land, which was *Julium Sydus,* a jewel of his age, [Bishop Jewel, perhaps;] Where should a preacher die, but in his pulpit? *Oportet me pastorem in acie stantem mori.* A general must die in the field upon his feet. Surely he thoroughly performed it: for when the infirmity of his body was such, that the least moving and 203

ANNO 1594. stirring thereof, by travail, drew his blood from him, even then he drew out his breast, and fed you with the milk of God's most holy word, &c.

Now concerning the last particular of all. This I can constantly affirm in general, that all other cares and consultations, which the world might have drawn him unto, he laid aside, and not sought much: as, namely, he only applied himself to make some profession and promulgation of his faith; which he rather chose to do, not to all the people, but to us witnesses, (then chaplains in his house,) chosen of God to the same dispensation of the faith wherein himself had been. His speech was to this effect:

I have sent for you for this end, that before my departure I might give some testimony of that faith wherein I have hitherto lived, and am now to die. What I have received of the Lord, that have I ever delivered. I have received much; written much; often disputed; preached often: yet never could I find in the book of God any ground for popery; neither have I known any point of doctrine received in the church of England that is not consonant to the word of God. Wherefore he exhorted me [said Dr. King, the preacher] and my colleague, being then absent, to continue in that building wherein I had already laid my foundation. And because I was now his *ghostly father*, (which was the unworthy name a father bestowed upon me, a child in comparison,) required, that I would not neglect to repair unto him twice or thrice before his ending. I told him, that having often in his life ministered so good comforts to others, he could not want comfort to himself. He granted it. But because *omnis homo mendax*, (wherein we took his meaning to be, that a man might flatter and beguile himself,) therefore he again required my resort unto him. I replied, that I thought it best, and I feared would be the last service that ever I should do him. Howbeit, the comforts I had to give, I could but pour into his outward ears; and that it must be the Spirit of God which inwardly comforteth the conscience. To which his answer was, The Spirit of God doth assure my spirit that I am the child of

God. Yet he proceeded, You have seen long peace, and many good days in Israel; I hope also you shall depart in peace, and leave peace behind you: neither know I any thing in the world wherewith your conscience should be troubled. ANNO 1594.

He finally concluded, I die in perfect peace of conscience, both with God and man. So he licensed me to depart, not willing, he said, to trouble me any more at that time. Indeed it was the last trouble that ever in breath he put me unto. For the next entrance I made was just to receive his last and deepest gasp. Of whom I say now not more, but as Philip said to Hipparchus, being gone, he died in good time to himself; but to me too soon. Thus he, that was ever honourable in the whole race of his life, was not without honour at his death..... He fought a good fight, both in the defence of the faith, and in expugnation of heresies, schisms, seditions, which invest the church.....I call that labour of his, because he made none other at that time, his last will and testament. Wherein the particular legacies which he bequeathed were these: To myself, (which I hold more precious than the finest gold,) fatherly exhortation to go forward in planting the gospel of Christ, which I had begun. [Meaning, perhaps, his lecture in York.] Secondly, To the papists, wholesome admonition to relinquish their errors, having no ground in the scriptures. And let them well advise themselves, that at such a time, when there is no cause to affect favour and partiality to the religion established, no places left to dissemble with God or man, *tanti meriti, tanti pectoris, tanti oris, tantæ virtutis episcopus;* (as Augustin spake of Cyprian;) so worthy, so wise, so well spoken, so virtuous, so learned a bishop, gave such counsel unto them. Thirdly, To all the members of the church of England, unity of soul and heart, to embrace the doctrine authorized. And, lastly, To himself peace and rest in the assured mercies of God. This peace he had plentiful fruition of with the God of peace. 204

ANNO 1594.

Number CXL.

Cooper, bishop of Winchester, (who died this year, 1594,) his monument and epitaph.

IN the choir of that cathedral church was a plain white stone, on the ground, by the south door that goeth out of the choir, thus inscribed:

Hic jacet THO. COOPERUS, *olim Lincolniens. nuper Wintonien. episcopus; munificentiss. doctiss. ac vigilantiss. præsul. Qui religiosissime in Dno. obdormivit, 29 Apr. ann. Dom.* 1594.

Thesaurus, Chronicon, COOPERI *cætera scripta*
Dum remanent, celebris COOPERI *fama manebit.*
Oxoniensis erat, Glocestrensisque decanus.
Continuus primæ vicecancellarius urbis.
Tum Lincolnensis fit præsul: et inde movetur
Wintoniam, denos ubi sedit episcopus annos.
Summe doctus erat, summeque benignus egenis,
Et summo studio divina oracula pandit.
Terra tegit corpus, sed spiritus est super astra.
Cœlestes animæ cœlesti pace fruentur.

W. S. Decasticon.

205

Number CXLI.

William Wickham, upon his nomination from Lincoln to the bishopric of Winchester, to the lord treasurer; in gratitude, and upon long leases designed of the revenues of that bishopric.

HE acknowledged that lord to have been the main instrument of his preferment, in a very gentile and courtly style. Afterwards he went on in these words:

Now in this conscience of my devotionate affection to your lordship, and of your lordship's high favour to my instant preferment, suffer me, I pray you, after that cause of confidence, which you have ministered unto me your ho-

nourable inclination to the good of my state, to be suitor with your good liking, that as you have thought good to bring me forth to this further advancement in our church, so you will please to be mean for me to her majesty, that like as it is reputed, and I trust intended, so I may indeed find it an advancement unto me, by enjoying her highness's benefit whole and full, without constrained grants: such as, I understand, are by some endeavoured, of extraordinary and unlawful leases of lands belonging to the bishopric. Whereby not only I shall from my own time be disabled to answer equally to my late predecessors the supposed dignity and well-known charges of that place, but (whereof I would be more loath) shall for hereafter also leave behind me an evil fame and report in this whole church; that I was a spoiler of that see, which an honourable bishop there, of the same name [William of Wickham] and house sometime with me, did diversely before enrich and endow. Hereof, my honourable good lord, in most humble and earnest manner, I again pray you. And so commit your lordship to the merciful protection of the Almighty. From my lodging in London, the 10th of January, 1594. ANNO 1594.

Your lordship's daily and most faithful orator,

Gulielmus Lincoln.

Number CXLII.

Fletcher, bishop of Worcester, his letter to the lord treasurer. Desires a remove to the see of London: and why.

Right honourable,

I AM bold to beseech that by writing, which lately in presence I desired of your lordship: to wit, your honour's opinion and continuance of that begun favour, which lately it pleased your lordship to afford me to her majesty. My education hereabout, [viz. London,] and long knowledge of 206
the place, continued as well by my service in court, as by sundry other links of friendship with persons of the city,

ANNO 1594. and considering the absence from that charge which I have, do draw me rather to desire the improvement of my poor duty and endeavour to the service of God and her majesty to this see and city of London, than in any other place of the realm. And I doubt not but it will please God to bless it withal.

Your lordship knoweth, that it is not nothing in that function, where the flock and the pastor have desire the one of the other: in many things, beside the main and principal matter of ecclesiastical government and oversight therein, your lordship for your long experience knoweth, that there may befall occasions concerning the state, where the bishop, being regarded and beloved of them, may be a good and ready mean to give them furtherance and expedition. Besides which, the general care and regard of pastoral charge which, I trust, it will please God to settle in me for his glory there, your lordship shall be assured, if it so please the same, that no man, no, not bound with bands of nearest duty to your lordship, shall be more ready to respect your lordship's honourable either desires or directions in that place.

And so, humbly beseeching your lordship to make me in this occasion both favoured by her majesty towards her own servant, and by the rest of my honourable lords, beholden to your lordship, as in time past I have been, I commit your lordship to the goodness of God. The 29th of June, 1594.

Your lordship's ever in Christ,
Rich. Wigorn.

The success of this letter, and what happened to the bishop afterwards, may be seen in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. chap. 13.

Number CXLIII.

ANNO 1594.

Adam Loftus, archbishop of Dublin, and lord chancellor of Ireland, to the lord treasurer. His troubles; his integrity; displayed to that lord: and his application to him. Wrote from Dublin, 27th of May, 1594.

May it please your good lordship,

AS often as I look back unto the course of my life, which draws towards an end, and call to my remembrance the manifold crosses and grievous troubles which in my place and vocation I have endured, so often must I confess, that next after the goodness of God, and her majesty's great grace, your honourable patronage and protection of me hath been the only means of my deliverance. Wherefore I 207
most humbly crave your lordship's pardon, to license me (being destitute of all other means to make any requital for the least of your favours which you have poured upon me) in all my letters to acknowledge my most bounden duty and thankfulness; which is the only thing I can present unto you.

By your lordship's letters in answer of mine sent by my servant, this bearer, I do perceive your just mislike of my motion, to have her majesty's leave, during the time of my absence in England, to leave the custody of the great seal with some one of this council, for whom I would answer. I do most humbly acknowledge mine oversight in that motion, being misled by some formed precedents in former times: and very loath that the keeping of the seal should have come into the hands of sir Robert Gardiner, a gentleman not well affected towards me, as I have just cause to conceive by his dealings: first stirring up Leg and Rich to prefer untrue and malicious libels against me; and now lately animating one Tipper, a seditious man of this country birth, to prosecute the same course; who hath his sole dependence upon sir Robert. Nevertheless I yield my most humble thanks to your lordship, for directing my servant by your greater advice to suppress my letters to their lordships, lest any advantage had been taken against me for

ANNO 1594. that matter; having now resolved to forbear my suit till a more convenient time, when it shall please all-wise God to send it.

I understand by a postscript, written by your lordship's own hand, (for which I am most bound,) that upon such informations as were preferred against me, first by Leg, and now lately by one Tipper, which have been reported to her most excellent majesty by two of the lords, her highness is not well satisfied towards me. I am right woful in heart, and oppressed with grief of mind, that after my thirty and three years service in the place of a privy-counsellor in this state, information of so base persons are believed against me, and mine answers not credited: which I have delivered upon my credit, duty, and conscience; and do refuse no manner of trial that shall be directed for my purgation. For remedy whereof, I have no other refuge but still to fly to your honourable protection: humbly beseeching your lordship, that as it hath pleased God in these our days to make you even the father of all good counsel, and the most ancient counsellor that ever served prince, that you will not suffer a poor servitor of my conscience, after so many hazards of my life in her majesty's service, to be without cause thus unworthily disgraced.

If either the answers which I have made to Legg's informations be found untrue, or in any of these new matters preferred by Tipper I shall be culpable, I am contented for ever to renounce your lordship's favour. I have partly been advertised of Tipper's accusations, and do find by experience, that the falsehood sometimes carrieth some probability of a truth. But if upon due trial of these cases it shall be proved that I have offended, let me never after be trusted with you.

208 I hear to my great comfort, upon the late arrival of Tipper, and upon speeches given out by himself, that commission is directed to sir William Russel, the two chief justices, and sir Ra. Napper, for examination of the matter wherewith he hath charged me. I am right glad this course is taken for the trial of the truth. And my humble suit to

your lordship in this behalf is only this, to vouchsafe me your letter to the said commissioners to enter with some speed into the examination of these causes; that I may be called to answer all that is or shall be objected. And that all my answers may be duly certified, for the full satisfaction of her majesty and your lordships: which is the thing I chiefly desire: and to the end no scar may remain against me of these informations; as I am right sorry, by reason of Legg's death, there doth of the former, the Lord is my witness, without any cause. ANNO 1594.

My hope is, that during your lordship's days (which God long continue) I shall not want a friend to inform her majesty of my long and painful services, and of my zealous affection and desire to do unto her highness any acceptable service. But woe is me, that now I perceive, to my great discomfort, your lordship doth begin to complain of sickness, and want of strength in body to protect such as always heretofore have depended upon you. My good lord, I have no other to rely upon, being unknown to all the rest of their lordships. Hitherto, under God and her majesty, I never had dependency upon any but the earl of Sussex and your lordship. Neither do I mean to seek a new friend so long as you do live: most humbly beseeching your honourable lordship to be a mean for me unto your son, sir Robert Cecil, that under you I may depend upon his honourable favour in my just and honest causes. To which end I have purposely sent over this bearer, my servant, with my letters for him, humbly craving your lordship's good furtherance of this my suit. And I promise your lordship hereby, upon my honesty and credit, I will never seek his favour in any bad or dishonest cause. And even so, with due remembrance of my most bounden duty, I commend your lordship, by my most earnest prayers, to God's best graces. From Dublin, the 27th of May, 1594.

Your lordship's humbly at commandment,

Ad. Dublin, canc.

ANNO 1594.

Number CXLIV.

209 *John bishop of Limrick, from York, who was, it seems, of the council there, to the lord treasurer: concerning some dangerous papists taken in those parts, and sent up: and now going to his bishopric in Ireland, desires to be one of the council there, and his service promised.*

..... THE prisoner Gravenor, and the two Hales, by my lord president here sent up, and within two or three days after this my letter will be at London. They will not here confess any practice. But your honour will find them most obstinate malefactors and dangerous persons. It appeareth they agreed upon a form of a set tale, when they should come to be examined, as may seem by their first answer, that they were beer-sellers; which they confessed they concluded among themselves, in the way betwixt Barwic and York, &c.....

If your honour may be pleased to pardon this one thing I now write, I will perform while I live that which I now write. Namely, if your honour think me worthy for any employment about the state with the deputy and council in Ireland, whereby I may have cause sometimes there to reside for her majesty's service, there shall not any one thing concerning any service happen there, but thereof will I give your honour, or sir Robert Cecil, primary and speedy true intelligence thence. In one word, I will in all things serve your honour. For I know you serve her majesty and your country with all faithfulness. Only were I so happy as to be received into your honour's trust and protection, I were sufficiently animated from time to time to certify your honour all things there said, purposed, or practised. Yourself should dwell in their bosoms, when I dwell in Dublin.

And so, humbly desiring your honour to wrap up my proffered service and duty in silence and in oblivion, I most humbly take leave, praying to the Almighty, with hand and heart lift up to heaven, for your health to be con-

tinued, with all honourable happiness. York, the 31st of December. ANNO 1594.

Your honour's in all duty,
Jo. Limricensis.

Number CXLV. 210

The said bishop to the lord treasurer: for leave to transport things from York into Ireland; where he was going to live, being required residence.

My most honourable good lord,

I BESEECH your honour, that I may have licence (seeing I am to live in Ireland) to transport with me 50 ewes, 8 rams, 6 mares, 20 cows, and 2 bulls, for mine own breed; and 10 muskets, and other needful furniture, for my own safety. And that my household stuff, which I carry with me, my books, chests, trunks, and other my carriages, may be transported with myself or with my servants, without any let or trouble to me or my servants, by searchers, or customers, or other officers, to be offered unto us. I most humbly take my leave; evermore praying for your honour's healthful and happy preservation. York, 16th of March.

Your honour's in all duty and service,
Jo. Limricens.

Number CXLVI.

The plague, dreadful storms and unseasonable weather in this and the former year, gave occasion to Dr. J. King, in one of his lectures at York, to use these words.

THE months of the year [1593 and 1594] have not yet gone about, wherein the Lord hath bowed the heavens, and come down about us with more tokens and earnests of his wrath intended, than the agedest man of our land is able to recount of so small a time. For say, if ever the winds, since

ANNO 1594. they blew one against the other, have been more common and more tempestuous; as if the four ends of heaven had conspired to turn the province of the earth upside down. Thunders and lightnings, neither seasonable for the time, and withal most terrible with such effects brought forth, that the child unborn shall speak of it. The anger of the clouds hath been poured down upon our heads, both with abundance, and (besides those that felt it) with incredible violence. The air threatened our miseries with a blazing star. The pillars of the earth tottered in many whole countries and tracts of our land. For the arrows of the woful pestilence have been cast abroad at large in all the quarters of our realm, even to the emptying and dispeopling of some parts thereof.

And in another of his lectures. Within the year, each sevennight cut off a thousand; yea, sometimes a great many more, in one city of our land, [viz. London,] by the infection of the plague. Since that time, the note hath returned
211 [of the abatement of the infection] not one; or so few, that it is as yet as if it were nothing. Remember that the spring [that year when the plague brake out] was very unkind, by means of the abundance of rains that fell. Our July hath been like to a February; our June even as an April: so that the air must needs be corrupted. God amend it in his mercy, and stay this plague of waters. But yet the pestilence is not ceased.

And concerning a dearth for three years now successively, he had these words. Behold! what a famine God hath brought upon our land; and making it to persevere yet hitherto, doth increase it. One year there hath been hunger: the second there was a dearth: and a third there was great cleanness of teeth. And see, whether the Lord doth not threaten us much more, by sending such unseasonable weather and storms of rain among us. Which if we will observe, and compare it with that which is past, we may say, that the course of nature is very much inverted. Our years are turned upside down. Our summers are no summers: our harvests are no harvests: our seeds-times are no seeds-

times. For a great space of time, scant any day hath been seen that it hath not rained upon us. And the nights are like the days. ANNO 1594.

Number CXLVII.

Francis Bacon, (afterwards the learned lord Verulam,) son to sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper of the great seal, deceased, to the lord treasurer: concerning the solicitor's place, which he had endeavoured by friends to obtain from the queen.

AFTER the remembrance of my humble and bounden duty. It may please your good lordship, the last term I drew myself to my house in the country, expecting that the queen would have placed another solicitor; and so, I confess, a little to help digestion. And to be out of eye, I absented myself. For I understood her majesty not only to continue in her delay, and, as I was advertised chiefly by my lord of Essex, to be retrograde, to use the terms apted to the highest powers. Since which time I have, as in mine own conceit, given over the suit: though I leave it to her majesty's tenderness, and the constancy of my honourable friends; so it be done without pressing.

And now my writing to your lordship is chiefly to give you thanks. For surely if a man consider the travail, and not the event, a man is often more bounden to his honourable friends for a suit denied, than for a suit succeeding. Herewithal I am bold to make unto your lordship three requests; which ought to be very reasonable, because they come so many at once. But I cannot call that reasonable, which is only grounded upon favour. The first is, that your lordship would yet *tueri opus tuæ manus;* and give as much life to this present suit for the solicitor's place as may be without offending the queen: for that were not good for me. The next is, that if I did shew myself too credulous 212
to idle hearsays, in regard of my rt. honourable kinsman and good friend sir Robert Cecill, whose good nature did

ANNO 1594. well answer my guest liberty, your lordship will impute it to the complexion of a suitor, and of a stirred seasick suitor, and not mine own inclination. Lastly, that howsoever this matter go, yet that I may enjoy your lordship's good favour and help, as I have done, in regard of my private estate. Which as I have not altogether neglected, so I have but negligently attended; and which hath been bettered only by yourself, (the queen except,) and not by any other, in matter of importance.

This last request I find it more necessary for me to make, because, though I am glad of her majesty's favour, that I may with more ease practise the law, which percase I may use now and then for my countenance; yet to speak plainly, though perhaps vainly, I do not think that the ordinary practice of the law, not serving the queen in place, will be admitted for a good account of the poor talent that God hath given me. So, as I make reckoning, I shall reap no great benefit to myself in that course, that am desiring the continuance of your lordship's goodness as I have hitherto found, and on my part sought also to deserve. I commend your good lordship to God's good preservation. From Gray's Inn, this 21st of March, 1594.

Your lordship's most humbly bounden,

Fr. Bacon.

Number CXLVIII.

Sir Thomas Mildmay moveth to keep a register of all strangers coming into the realm. (*Hitherto refused out of a compassion, as it seems, of the poor people, that came over hither for the sake of their religion and their lives.*)

THE queen's most excellent majesty, even from the first beginning of her gracious reign, having manifested to all the world her godly zeal and inclination to the true service of Almighty God, by abolishing idolatry and superstition from among her people, causing his word to be preached,

and his gospel to have free passage throughout her highness' dominions, hath thereby (through the malice of the apparent adversaries to God's truth) procured herself many: from whose danger nevertheless God hath, in his great mercy, miraculously defended her majesty, notwithstanding their practices both abroad and in her own realm; tending to the overthrow of religion, the peril of her royal person, and the utter subversion of the commonwealth. In this time of her highness' reign, (her princely clemency is such,) she hath permitted and suffered a number of strangers and foreigners of sundry nations (without account rendered of the causes of their coming) liberally and freely to have access into this realm, and under the colour of religion and conscience, here to inhabit and accede at their wills and 213
pleasures; protected from those exactions and persecutions wherewith they were like to have been miserably afflicted in their own natural countries: a work highly pleasing God, greatly honourable to her majesty, and worthily commendable among all good men. ANNO 1594.

Howbeit sithence heretofore among many good princes, her majesty's manly progenitors, and in other well-governed commonwealths at this day, (joining policy with pity,) it hath been and is reputed great wisdom to provide means, that the certain number of foreigners and strangers coming to inhabit this our country or any other, and the several occasions of their coming, might be certainly known by notorious and perfect registers, kept in some special office to be appointed for that purpose, of what nation each foreigner were, the cause of his coming, his calling and condition, art and science, when and where he arrived, in what place he inhabited, and what time he returned again into his own country.

It may so now please her majesty, of her special grace and favour, for these necessary reasons ensuing, for the yearly rent of 40*l.* to be paid into her highness' court of exchequer, and in consideration of the true and faithful service done unto her majesty for the space of twenty-eight years now past, by sir Thomas Mildmay, kt. her grace's servant,

ANNO 1594. to erect an office for that purpose by her highness' letters patents, making and ordaining him, the said sir Thomas, officer thereof; granting unto him and his assigns power and authority thereby, for the term of twenty-one years, to begin from the feast of the birth of our Lord God last past, to make and keep a register and registers, yearly, of the names, ages, and abilities of body, countries, callings, arts, sciences, places of habitation, causes of repair hither, and times of departure hence, of all foreigners and strangers, now being and inhabiting within this her highness' realm of England, and of all other that shall from time to time come into this realm to inhabit, or pass forth of the same, during the same term of twenty-one years; except all ambassadors and their trains, noblemen or gentlemen, ladies or gentlewomen, coming of pleasure to see her majesty and her realm, and Scots. Allowing to the same sir Thomas Mildmay, or his assigns, for the first entry after, during the continuance of the said term, four pence for every poll of such as be householders, and two pence the poll for children and servants; and four pence the poll for every one that shall depart the realm again.

The reasons to prove this suit beneficial for the commonwealth.

1. Although the number of foreigners and strangers, now inhabiting and being within the realm, may not as yet be reputed over great, yet is the same meet to be certainly known. And well may it be feared, that the wars and afflictions now being, and like to continue sharp in the countries adjacent, may procure a greater number to repair hither, than with good policy were fit to be endured.

2. It were necessary to know of what nation each foreigner is, and the cause of his coming. So may her majesty's friends be known from those who are subjects to other princes or states, her enemies; and cannot in reason be thought to come among us either for zeal for religion
214 or love to her majesty, but rather to practise against her highness and her state, or at the least to rob us of our commodities, to enrich themselves.

3. The strangers that do now inhabit here, either have placed themselves in the heart of the realm, as London, Norwich, and Canterbury, or in the port-towns, as Southampton, Sandwich, Colchester, and divers others; where they are ready to do mischief, being of power, (time and occasion serving them,) or otherwise lie fittest to engross our commodities into their hands, and to transport the same to their own private benefit and our great hinderance. And therefore it is expedient to know certainly the number of them, their callings and trades. So as always at her majesty's pleasure the same number might be abridged, if either it should seem perilous to the state to suffer it, or that it might be granted to such of her majesty's subjects, artizans and mechanical persons, to be impoverished by the multitude of strangers, being of their trades and faculties. ANNO 1594.

4. Even as her majesty, by her gracious favour, doth protect such as repair hither sincerely for their conscience sake and for religion, so is there no reason; but such as make religion the colour of their coming, and are in truth irreligious, and frequent no church at all, such be known and discerned from the other, as by this means they may be.

5. Her majesty, by knowing their number, ages, and abilities of body, may understand what serviceable men there be among them, fit to be employed in the wars, if it should so please her majesty to use them. And accordingly to increase armour and weapon at their charge, to be kept in store at her majesty's appointment, for the benefit of the realm, as occasion shall serve to have the same used, either by our own countrymen, we having among us many more able bodies than we can easily arm, or otherwise at her majesty's pleasure.

6. There be many known rich men among them, and others very able, (though not so greatly noted,) which live obscurely only to benefit themselves by usury and exchange of money, without doing good to our commonwealth. These men are meet to lend her majesty great sums of money at all times, if it be her pleasure to use it, and thereby ease

ANNO 1594. her highness' own subjects. And by the register such may upon all occasions be found out.

7. Many strangers and foreigners, after they have once greedily gotten into their hands great riches and treasure by engrossing our commodities, suddenly depart the realm, and many times steal away with other men's goods, without any notice given or taken thereof. A matter very hurtful to the commonwealth, and would be holpen, if the time, place, and manner of their departure were observed and registered.

8. Under the colour of merchandize and religion, many intelligencers and spies adventure to come hither among us, to the prejudice of the state: which would be reformed, if the cause of their coming was well understood and discreetly examined.

9. If the meaner multitude of her majesty's people should (as in former days) happen, upon some fantastical conceit, to find themselves grieved at the extreme prices of victuals, or the great enhancing the rents of houses, where the foreigners inhabit: suppose the numbers of them be the cause, it would by the register plainly appear whether it were true or no; and at all times be reformed with speed, at her majesty's good pleasure.

10. There be few or no poor people among them; so as it cannot be justly intended, that this payment of 6*d.* for the first entry, and 4*d.* and 2*d.* yearly after, as aforesaid, cannot be offensive. And it is very evidently seen and known, that after they be once settled here they become wealthy in short space, however poor and needy they were at their first coming. Therefore the burden being so small to them, nothing being thereby taken from any of our own nation, but so many benefits growing to the realms by the means of erecting the said office, and a yearly revenue coming to the crown thereby, it may therefore please her most excellent majesty to favour this humble petition of the said sir Thomas, and to grant the same accordingly.

The like suit was made the year before, 1593, to the lord

treasurer, by Edward Dymock, for a view of all aliens and strangers through the realm, and to keep a roll and book of the names and numbers of them; with the reasons set down: when the answer given him was, that the suits were stale, and inconvenient for her majesty to grant. ANNO 1594.

Number CXLIX.

The lord treasurer to the queen's secretary: concerning certain rents and revenues to be assured to the queen, upon the vacancies of the bishoprics of Winchester and Durham, by the two bishops that should succeed the former. MSS. D. Joh. episc. Elien. (*Now in the royal library at Cambridge.*)

To my very loving son, sir Robert Cecill, kt. &c.

I WOULD wish you to be careful touching the proceeding to be had for the nominated bishops of Wincester and Durham; that before they be perfited, there be sufficient provision made, and assurance to her majesty of such rents and annuities as ought to be assured by them. As namely, from the bishop of Winchester of a rent charge of CCCC *lib.* [i. e. 400 pounds] per. ann. granted by the late bishop deceased, out of the manor of Taunton, and other manors; as also of $^{c}_{viii}$ and $^{xx}_{iiii}$ [880] yearly rents, issuing out of the lordship of Allerton, and other lordships within the bishopric of Durham, paid to her majesty; and further, of CXL [140] yearly rent for the castle of Durham, and a fishing upon the river of Tweed, which my lord chamberlain holds, which rent was likewise answered to her majesty by his predecessor. I pray you therefore have a care to these things, touching her majesty, before any further pro- 216
ceeding be had therein. From my house, Westminster, the 14th of Feb. 1594.

This that follows was my lord Burghley's own handwriting.

" I sent for Mr. Attorney to have a care hereof, who is " herein wary how to proceed, but I have directed to speak

ANNO 1594. " with the lord chief justice and the master of the rolls, who " were attorneys; and so he will: but he complaineth of " want of others, seeing there is but one sergeant, and no " solicitor; alleging, that there are many weighty causes " of her majesty to be ordered.

" You may inform her majesty hereof: and for a ser- " geant, I know none fitter than Mr. Yelverton. As for " any solicitors, I will not presume to name any for some " respects.

" Your loving father,
" W. Burghley."

Number CL.

A prayer of queen Elizabeth, upon the going forth of her army against the enemy. Found among the lord Burghley's MSS.

MOST omnipotent Maker and Guider of all the world's mass, that only searchest and fathomest the bottom of all hearts' conceits, and in them seest the true original of all actions intended: thou that by thy foresight dost truly discern, how no malice of revenge, nor quittance of injury, nor desire of bloodshed, nor greediness of lucre, hath bred the resolution of our new set out army; but a heedful care, and wary watch, that no neglect of foes, nor over-surety of harm, might breed either danger to us, or glory to them. These being the grounds, thou that didst inspire the mind, we humbly beseech thee, with bended knees, prosper the work; and with best forewinds guide the journey, speed the victory, and make the return the advancement of thy glory, the triumph of their fame, and surety to the realm, with the least loss of English blood. To these devout petitions, Lord, give thou thy blessed grant.

Number CLI.

ANNO 1595.

The archbishop of York, and the council in the north, to the lord treasurer: signifying their receipt of the queen's commission; with certain instructions for authorizing the government of that council. 217

MAY it please your good lordship to be advertised, that we have received yesterday her majesty's commission under the seal of England, directed to us and others, together with certain instructions, signed with her most gracious hand, for the authorizing of the government of this council. Wherein we do most humbly acknowledge her highness's princely, and your good lordship's honourable regard had of this council, and the quiet government of these parts. Which commission was this day published, the sitting beginning accordingly. And whereas upon the death of our late good lord, the earl of Huntington, it pleased your good lordship to signify unto us, that her highness did well allow, that the steward of his lordship's late household should continue the diet for this council, and the ordinary servants, (whereof a calendar was before sent up to your lordship,) until her majesty's pleasure be further known. Since which time, the said steward, upon knowledge of your lordship's letters given him, and to her majesty's receiver of this county, by us, having received since Christmas but the sum of fourscore pounds from the receiver, hath hitherto therewith, and with such provision of corn and victuals as remained of the late earl, and money disbursed by him, maintained the diet for this council and said household.

And now for so much as it hath pleased her majesty by these her last instructions, to declare that her highness will give order by warrant to the receiver of this shire, to continue payment of such sums of money for the discharge of the diet of the household, to be kept for this council, as heretofore he hath done; and so that the household of the late earl yet continuing together is very great, the corps remaining still in her majesty's house, and her highness's receiver being now at London, not having any warrant from

ANNO 1595. your lordship, either for the money he hath hitherto paid to the steward upon this quarter, since his lordship's death, nor for the payment of the rest; so as in his absence the steward doth borrow to supply the present provision, till some further direction from your lordship: we therefore are humble suitors to your good lordship, that present warrant may be given, to be sent directly to the clerk, for the payment of the rest of this quarter's allowance to the steward; whereby the diet may be the better provided, and the money borrowed for the same discharged: as also to know your lordship's further pleasure, how long the servants of the said lord president, that be here at her majesty's cost, and how many shall after be continued for the necessary attendance and service of the place.

We are now about the despatch of her majesty's service for the horsemen to be sent to the lord Euric, for defence of
218 the borders, according to her majesty's gracious pleasure: which we hope to effect with expedition. And so beseeching God to bless your lordship, we humbly take our leaves. At York, this 1st of March, 1595.

Your lordship's most assured,

Matth. Ebor.	W. Cardynall.	E. Stanhope.
Ch. Hales.	J. Ferne.	Jo. Gibson.

Number CLII.

Matthew Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: concerning recusants in those parts. A great revolt there.

My honourable good lord,

TOGETHER with her majesty's commission for keeping the sitting here, I received your lordship's letter of the 26th of the last month, [February.] Whereby I understand you have seen the certificate of the recusants of this province, and that you do *compati* with us of the clergy, whom especially the matter doth concern, and who I fear must answer to Almighty God for this *great revolt*. And

yet I hope it is not so great as it seems to be. Partly, because a great number of those that were indicted for 12*d.* a time are either dead or else reclaimed, as yesterday I did hear; and partly, for that the most part of them are women, or of the meanest sort, not able to endanger the state. ANNO 1595.

Your lordship is desirous to know my opinion, what should be the cause of this falling away. Which I will do, as soon as I may conveniently. I am shortly to visit mine own diocese: whereby I shall know all things more exact, and certify your lordship more perfectly. In the mean while, I will use all good means to call in those that are gone astray, and to keep those that are within. But I must earnestly entreat your lordship to be a mean, that the ecclesiastical commission may be renewed. I have been above three quarters of a year in suing for it, and yet cannot get her majesty's hand. Edward Barker, the register, did undertake the suing it forth before my coming from London; and every term since I sent to him: and now I hear it is delivered to Dr. Cæsar.

Thus, beseeching God to bless your lordship with his manifold gifts, and namely, with good health, that her majesty, the church, and the realm may long have the fruition of your sound counsel in these troublesome times, I bid your good lordship most heartily farewell. From York, this of March, 1595.

Your lordship's in Christ most assured,
Matth. Ebor.

Number CLIII. 219

The same archbishop to the lord treasurer: concerning one Wright, a dangerous man; dismissed, and sent down to York.

My most honourable good lord,

ALBEIT it doth not become me to dislike any thing done by that most honourable board, yet because it hath

ANNO 1595. pleased her most excellent majesty to commit a great charge unto me in this country, I am bold to signify unto your good lordship, as to the father of grave counsel, that I have no good liking of the coming of Wright unto York, nor of his abode here. His father is an obstinate fleering recusant, and long hath so been: himself went away from school at York about 19 years ago; and now is said to be a Jesuit. The man, properly studied in the school-points of popery, not sound, nor profoundly learned; yet very bold, audacious, or rather impudent, to defend the most absurdities of that trash in any company; in presence of myself and my chaplains. He did to this assertion stand very stiffly: that a private man, being in conscience persuaded that it was lawful for him to kill a tyrant, sinneth not, if he kill him. And when I replied, that that ignorance itself was a sin, and that albeit it might excuse *a tanto*, yet it could not in any wise excuse *a toto;* he did boldly and audaciously stand to it, that it did excuse *a toto.* This opinion is a most devilish opinion; most dangerous to all states and commonwealths. For he is a tyrant and an heretic, in their opinion, whom the pope saith is one.

I beseech your good lordship consider, whether it is fit that this man should be sent for thither, or stay here, without keeper, without pardon. I pray God, that the papists do not make this collection, that seminary priests and Jesuits are true and dutiful subjects to her majesty: for it is said, he hath done good service of late, &c.; but I am in opinion, that he doth the pope very good service in this kind of dealing. And God knows, whether he hath not dispensation to bewray some things against the Spaniard, that some other way he may do the pope better service, either against this state or against religion.

And thus I commend your good lordship to the blessed protection of the Almighty. From Bishopthorp, the 19th of Sept. 1595.

Your good lordship's in Christ most assured,

Matth. Ebor.

Number CLIV. ANNO 1595.

Newal, a messenger of the queen's chamber, sent by the privy-council into Derbyshire, to apprehend certain seminary priests there: with directions under their honours' hands, unto which houses he should go; and the names of the justices that accompanied him. 220

EDWARD COKAYNE went with him, being one of the queen's justices, with his own man, Day: and that to do her majesty his best service. The first house which they searched, according to the messenger's direction, was the house of Mr. Tenison, that married one of the lady Gerard's daughters: she being a great recusant, and not her husband. However it is reported, that there was great resort of strangers there. But what they were, they could not learn. Nor did they find any there, but pictures in the chambers, according to their profession. Only one West, that was a messenger between the seminaries, was fled six weeks before they came.

The next house they searched in the same county was one Mr. Merry's house, of Barton-Park; whose wife is sister to Mr. Palmer of Legworth: she being a great recusant, and not her husband. And they have likewise, as was reported, great resort unto their house. She told the messenger, that she heard of his coming the night before. In the house indeed they found nothing.

For these seminary priests which he doth look for, namely, John Redford, alias Tanfield, Robert Shewel, Nicolas Wade, alias Toke, three seminaries, they have been heard of to be in this country ofttimes, and yet remaining up and down; but where, as yet, we know not. All this circuit I have been with the messenger, who hath taken very great pains, and discharged his duty very well. 16th of June, 1595.

Edward Cokayne.

The same messenger came to Fr. Hastinges, another justice there, shewing the council's warrant to go with him

ANNO 1595. about her majesty's service. They went presently to Mr. John Palmer's house at Kegworth: and the messenger made due and diligent search; but found nothing, nor no stranger there. This the said Hastings certified, June the 18th, 95.

221 Number CLV.

Prisoners for religion: their prisons, and numbers, sent up from the ecclesiastical commission.

IN the Clink,	Of popish recusants	24
	Of Brownists	1
In the Marshalsea		14
In Newgate		16
Whereof one a Brownist.		
In the Gate-house		11
Whereof two convicted of recusancy.		
In Bridewell		9
Most upon the council's commandment.		
In the Fleet		13
Whereof one a Brownist, and three committed for debt.		
In the Counter in Wood-street		3
In the White-Lion		3
In the King's Bench		2
The one a sectary; the other convicted of treason.		
In the prison of St. Katharine's		4
From the lords of the council.		
The whole number		89

Of which number, 10, partly upon submission, and partly upon promise to admit conference, are enlarged, upon bond to return to prison upon warning.

So there remain prisoners at this present, 79.

Of which number of threescore and nineteen, only 24 are committed by the ecclesiastical commission.

And they all continue obstinate, and of the same mind wherein they were at the time of their commitment.

And of the same number of 79, there be 28 committed by the lords of the council, and by order from them.

ANNO 1595.

Number CLVI.

October 30, 1595. *A memorial for defence of dangerous places of the land in several counties: wrote by the lord treasurer; upon apprehension of an invasion from Spain.*

A MEMORIAL of the dangerous places for the landing of the enemy upon the south coast of England, and in the river of Severn at the haven of Milford. With a note of the forces thought meet to be in readiness to defend the same.

Cornwall 8000. The most notable places are Helford, Fawmouth, Foye, and Mountsbay. For the defence of these places, or any other in Cornwall, where the enemy may attempt to land, it is requisite that the lieutenant of the shire, or his deputy in his absence, should make choice of so many of his most principal gentlemen of credit and knowledge in the county, as might take the charge of so many bands as should amount to 4000 men, furnished. 222 And the same to see the same to be truly furnished with armour and weapon. And to be ready to repair to those places in the county, and especially to the havens above mentioned, upon view of the enemy's coming to the coast. And for the more effectual service, every of the said gentlemen, that shall be appointed captains to any of the said bands, shall be directed to carry with them, as parcel of their numbers, as many of their household servants, being able men, with armour and weapon, to the place for defence; and also to make choice of some experimented soldiers, to serve under them, as their lieutenants and officers.

Item, For further succour of this defence, order is to be given, that the lieutenant of Devonshire to give assistance of 4000 men under like principal gentlemen for their captains, with like furniture, of their household servants, and assistance of expert soldiers for their lieutenants, and officers of their bands. For which purpose the lieutenant of Cornwall shall give knowledge to the lieutenants of Devonshire to send his said number to his aid, or so many of them as

ANNO 1595. he shall think needful upon the landing of the enemy, or upon the entry of the enemy's shipping to the haven with appearance of his purpose to land his said forces within the said haven.

Devonshire 19,000. *Item*, The same order shall be given to the lieutenants there, for the defence of the havens there, of Plymouth, Dartmouth, Torbay, and Salcomb, in this manner following. There shall be 6000 of the numbers of that county, being furnished in like manner, prepared by the lieutenant of Devon. And moreover he shall send to the lieutenant of Cornwall, as he shall find it needful, if the enemy shall not attempt any thing there, to have the number of 4000. And to the lieutenant of Dorset for 3000. And to the lieutenant of Wiltshire for 2000. And to the lieutenant of Somersetshire for 4000. All which numbers the several lieutenants of those counties shall upon demand of the lieutenant of Devon send to his aid, and a certain advertisement of the landing of the enemy, or of his entry into the haven, with appearance to land his forces.

Dorset 14,000. The places of danger there, are the haven of Portland with the isles, and the havens of Pool and Weymouth. For defence whereof the lieutenant there shall put in readiness, under bands of principal gentlemen of the shire, the number of 4000. And for the further succour, as need shall require, he shall have the aid out of Devonshire of 4000, and of Somerset of 4000, and of Wilts 2000. Which numbers the lieutenants of those several shires shall put in order, well furnished with armour and weapon; and under sufficient captains and leaders. And shall send the same to the lieutenant of Dorset, or so many of his said numbers as he shall require.

Hampshire 16,000. The places of most danger there, are the Isle of Wight and the town of Portsmouth. For the defence whereof there shall be provided and made ready 4000 of the forces of Hampshire. And for further succour 2000 out of Wiltshire, and 3000 out of Barkshire, 4000 out of Sussex, 3000 out of Surrey. Which forces shall be also commanded to be put in readiness by the lieutenants of

the said several shires; and shall be by them, upon the request of the lieutenant of Hampshire, or his deputies, sent to the succour of the said county of Southampton and the Isle of Wight. And yet nevertheless the former orders taken with the lieutenant of Hampshire, with the captain of Portsmouth and of the Isle of Wight, for succouring the said isle and town of Portsmouth, shall not be discontinued. ANNO 1595. 223

Kent 20,000. The places of most danger are about the Isles of Shepey and Thanet. For the defence whereof there shall be put in readiness by the lieutenant thereof the number of 6000. And for further succour, upon request of the lieutenant of Kent, there shall be sent out of Sussex 4000. Out of Surrey 6000. From the city of London 3000. And from Essex 4000.

Essex 17,000. The place of most danger is Harwich. For succour whereof there shall be put in readiness 6000. And for further supply, as case shall require, there shall be 4000 sent out of Kent. From London 3000. From Hartford 1000. And from Suffolk 3000.

Suffolk 13,300. Upon occasion of landing in any place to the danger of the country, there shall be made ready 5000 of that county. And for further supply, there shall be sent upon request made to the several lieutenants; that is, out of Norfolk 3000. Essex 4000. Cambridge 500. Huntington 300. Hartford 500.

Norfolk 13,800. The place of most danger is Yarmouth. For the defence whereof, or of any other place where the enemy shall attempt to land, there shall be made ready and provided in Norfolk 6000. And for a further supply, out of Suffolk 4000. Out of Lincoln 3000. Out of Cambridgeshire 500. Out of Hunt. 300.

Wales. The special place of danger there is the river of Severn and the haven of Milford. For the defence whereof there shall be made ready in South Wales the number of . And as need shall require, there shall be out of the shires of North Wales made ready And for a further supply, out of Herefordshire 1000. Out of Somersetshire 1000. Out of Gloucestershire 1000. Out of

ANNO 1595. Worcestershire 1000. And if cause shall require greater supply, there shall be sent out of Shropshire 1000.

Item, Every lieutenant that shall send a footman to the seacoast of any place, for impeaching of the enemy's landing, he shall also send, for every thousand of footmen, an hundred pioneers, to accompany them with necessary tools, as spades and pickaxes, and such like, to serve for intrenchment for grounds, for stopping of passages, or such necessary things. And that some number of them may have also halberds or bills wherewith to offend the enemy. Allowing some carriages to carry their tools, whereby to make the more expedition.

Letters to the lieutenants.

A memorial of certain things to be inserted in the letters to all the lieutenants of the counties aforesaid.

1st, That every lieutenant, within whose county the enemy shall attempt to land, shall cause all the forces of the horsemen, both lances, light-horse, and petronels, to be in such readiness, as upon the sight of the enemy coming upon
224 the coast to land in any place, the same forces of horsemen shall be directed to make their way to the seacoast, there to behold to what landing place the enemy shall make his course. To which place the horsemen shall direct all their course to impeach their landing.

Item, The lieutenant also shall give order to such forces of footmen as are far distant from the seaside and landing places, to be provided of a number of small nags and horse, and carriages, as heretofore was prescribed unto them, both to carry them with more speed to the place of service, and also to aid them for carriage of their armour and victuals for some few days. Whereof care would be had, and an order given to every captain of a band, to cause some proportion of victuals to be carried, to satisfy the numbers for some reasonable time, until a general provision might be had of a sufficient store of the common charge of the shire, to maintain the numbers during the time of their service.

Item, It would be foreseen, that besides the quantity of

powder, match, and lead, which the shot in every band shall carry with them for their private use, the store also heretofore appointed to be kept in public to be supplied in any defect; and the same to be carried upon some carts, or horseback, to supply the lack that may happen upon the expense of the private men's store. ANNO 1595.

Item, Every maritime lieutenant, upon the view of the enemy upon the seacoast, shall send for the forces of horse: which shall repair to the next places of the seacoast; there to attend, to see in what place the enemy shall attempt to land; and then to make their course to that place of landing, to impeach the enemy: and so what he shall require further aid of the other counties, to send him such succours of footmen as before is appointed. He shall also, if he findeth occasion to have the use of horsemen, require the aid of some reasonable number of horsemen: which horsemen shall repair to the next seacoast, there to attend and expect where the enemy shall offer to land: to which place the said horsemen shall repair.

Item, Every lieutenant that shall be required to give aid shall have like consideration to have horse or nags provided to serve the footmen, both for hastening of them to the place of service, and to carry their armour and necessary victuals for them, for some reasonable time. And shall also send with them some further supply of powder, lead, and match, to be taken out of that store which hath been ordered to be in readiness for the whole shire.

Item, Every lieutenant of any maritime county shall cause inquisition to be made, whether any gentleman, or other person of value, having had his habitation within the county, near to the seaside, within the space of one year past, have removed their dwellings, or are departed from their said houses, either out of the county, or to any remote place from their former habitation: which if he shall find any so to have done, he shall charge them in her majesty's name to return to his former habitation; and there to continue with as many in his family as accustomably he was wont to do. And that he also enjoin such persons to provide arms

ANNO 1595. and weapons, both for himself and for every man servant in his family, being above sixteen years of age. And upon
225 this direction given, the lieutenant shall signify unto her majesty the names and conditions of all such persons as shall not without delay perform this commandment given in her majesty's name. So as the party may be sent for, and receive such severe punishment and correction as the cause doth require for the common weal.

The lieutenant, as well of the maritime counties, as the other counties adjoining, to certify the names of those whom they shall appoint to be captains and conductors of those men that are appointed for the defence of the landing place, &c. And if in the execution of these directions they shall find any defaults in any, to certify the same to her majesty's privy-council.

The names of the lieutenants to whom letters are to be written for this service.

Cornwall. Sir Walter Rawleigh.
Devon. The earl of Bath.
Dorset. The lord marquis.
Hampshire. The lord marquis: lord Mountjoy.
Sussex. Lord admiral: lord Buckhurst.
Kent. Lord Cobham.
Essex. Lord treasurer.
Suffolk. Norfolk. Lord chamberlain.
Wilts. Somerset. Earl of Pembroke.
Wales. Earl of Pembroke.
Berkshire. Lord Norris: Mr. Treasurer.
Surrey. Lord admiral.
London. Lord Mayor.
Hartfordshire. Lord treasurer.
Cambridgeshire. Lord North.
Huntingtonshire. Lord S. John.
Lincoln. Lord treasurer.
Herefordshire. Lord Pembroke.
Gloucestershire. Lord Chandois.

Number CLVII.

ANNO 1595.

Young, bishop of Rochester, to the lord treasurer: upon a malicious report, that he was covetous, and kept a miserable house: together with an account of his incomes.

Right honourable, and my very good lord,

BEING at the court with your lordship upon Sunday last, and acquainting you with a report from a suspicion of mine own touching an offence of your lordship's towards me, it pleased you to say, that without any other offence towards me, your lordship had only conceived somewhat like of me: for that it was affirmed by certain that I was noted to be extremely covetous. And that it appeared so to be by my near and miserable house which I kept. For the better satisfying therefore of your lordship in that matter of my housekeeping, and the utter reproof of these sharp, slanderous sycophants, who cease not to blatter out against me, and such as I am, they care not what, to the discrediting and despising of us and our calling; indeed of him who hath called us, whose ministers and servants we be; (*for* 226 *he that despiseth you despiseth me:*) I have set down in this note enclosed faithfully and truly the sum of my yearly revenues and expenses; to serve, not only as a glass for those malicious *Momi*, to behold their impudency, but also as a pattern for them (or whosoever they be else) to imitate; certain prodigal clergymen and laymen excepted, which to spoil of Christ's patrimony, or their own, in epicurism and belly-cheer, and other vaunting and bravery, do pour out they care not what, and would absume Crœsus' and Solomon's treasury if they had it.

Whereas it please your lordship for to object unto me my *commendams:* for answer thereunto I do refer any one to the clear yearly value of my bishopric, set down in this note; which doth not amount to above 220*l.* And let that say whether it be needful to have somewhat added unto it by way of *commendam.* Whereunto I will be bold also to add this, that if there be no ease nor abatement of our ex-

ANNO 1595. cessive payments, this extreme and terrible famine continuing, that, my bishopric and revenues, and commendams notwithstanding, I must be fain, ere it be long, to dissolve my house. In which cogitation I am at present, and to send my servants a begging, and my poor miserable neighbours a starving, for ought they are like to have at my gates.

For other bishoprics, whereof it pleased your lordship also to make some mention, as I have not in my lifetime sought any, so if they be offered, and I lawfully called thereunto, and they meet for me to accept, especially freed from outrageous spoils, (as Norwich was not,) I am not so precise and scrupulous as to refuse. *Honores nec ambiendi, nec recusandi*, hath ever been a maxim in schools; and so taken to be both good philosophy and good divinity among scholars. Thus much I thought good to commit to these my letters. But to meet with the false and sinister reports of some ill-willers of mine, and for the better satisfaction of your lordship; wherein if I may prevail, I shall be right glad, and think myself very much bound unto your good lordship; and so commending the same in my daily prayers to Almighty God's most merciful tuition, I take my leave. From Bromleigh, the 22d of June, 1595.

Your lordship's always to command in Christ,

Jo. Roffens.

Then follow the notes enclosed.

The yearly revenues of the now bishop of Rochester.

Imprimis, The yearly revenue of the bishopric, tenths, subsidies, and other expenses deducted, - CCXX*l.* and not above.

Item, Commendams, and casualties, *communibus annis*, and not above, (but rather less) - - - CXX*l.*

In toto CCCXL*l.*

Of this in meat and drink only, *communibus annis*, (or rather more, as is to be shewed,) for sixteen or seventeen years together - - - - - - - - CCL*l.*

ANNO 1595.

So there remaineth towards all other charges, viz. reparations of houses and farms, and chancels, removing of household-stuff and furniture, apparelling myself and my wife, 227 maintaining my son at London at school, and liveries, stable-charges, expenses in law and physic, gifts, rewards, and toward the serving of the realm, when it is required, only LXXXXl.

Some are of opinion, (which I have seen also published in print,) that no man can well uphold his state, if he spend above the third part of his yearly revenue in meat and drink. But by that which is above written, it doth appear, that very near three parts of the four are spent in meat and drink.

This therefore being true, besides that the great indignities and injuries done unto me by certain envious traducers in the matter of my housekeeping are made manifest to their utter reproof, I am of opinion, that the like will hardly be found again in England, in any house of honour or worship, unless it be in houses, where all, without all order, is wastefully and prodigally consumed. Of which sort, I am afraid, there be too many nowadays, both of the clergy and the laity.

This that is here set down shall by me, *inspectis sacrosanctis, et in verbo honoris et sacerdotis*, be deposed at such times as I shall be called thereunto.

Jo. Roffen.

This bishop Young was master of Pembroke-hall in Cambridge. Commended for his quickness in government, and readiness in learning. Fit to bridle innovators, not by authority only, but by weight of argument. The character given him by Elmer, bishop of London.

This bishop Young writ notes upon H. Nicolas's book, called Evangelium Regni, *and published anno* 1579.

ANNO 1595.

Number CLVIII.

Tho. Bilson, warden of Winchester college, to the lord treasurer, soliciting his interest for the bishopric of Worcester.

My very good lord,

I LEARNED of my lord of Canterbury how much I was bound to your honour, for that it pleased you at the first of your own accord, without my suit, to set me down to the deanery of Windsor; which I never refused, as I hear her majesty is now informed; but only acquainted my lord of Canterbury of my oath, which permits me by no means to be absent above eight weeks in the whole year, save only in college affairs. If therefore that presence might content her majesty in the dean of her chapel, which I greatly feared, I would with all duty and thanks accept it . . . . . Only this doubt of her majesty's misliking my overmuch absence made me become a humble suitor to your lordship for your assistance to obtain Worcester.

228 My lord of Canterbury's favour by friends I have sought: but he is besieged by some about him, that he is not suffered to follow his own inclination, who always spake the best of me, and so continueth, save that, as he now saith, he hath moved her majesty for Dr. James, and cannot recall it. If my lord archbishop were not overcarried by others, this cause would desire no better judge, whether of us twain hath taken more pains in the church, and served her majesty with greater charge. But my facility being surprised by others, I am forced to appeal to your honourable and indifferent wisdom and favour, since her majesty useth the advice of more than one in these matters; and am willing by your lordship's censure to stand or fall, as never meaning to molest friends for any thing that your grave and worthy judgment shall think unfit. Octob. 31, 1595.

Your honour's in all duty,

Tho. Bilson.

He obtained (according to his suit) the said bishopric; and not long after advanced to Winchester.

Number CLIX.

ANNO 1595.

Mr. Henry Savile to the lady Russel; praying her interest with the lord treasurer for the provostship of Eaton.

Right honourable and my very good lady,

AS I was bold with your ladyship at the beginning of my suit, so I must be importunate now at the conclusion. My fortune always hath been hitherto to receive still my despatch by my lord treasurer's only means; so was it when I obtained Merton college in Oxford, and so must it be now for Eaton. Or else I will hope for small good. I know his lordship's favourable opinion of the matter to her majesty, at such opportunity as it shall please him to take, will end the whole matter. Till then, I assure myself it will stick. His honourable promise of favour made to me at Tybalds gave me courage to begin: and her majesty's direct nomination at Nonsuch, which I saw in his lordship's own hand, gave me hope to continue. It remaineth but that his lordship would vouchsafe to perfect his own work with a prosperous and happy conclusion.

To which purpose I pray you, good madam, as hitherto you have been, so still to continue to be my honourable mediator to his lordship. I can make profession of nothing but my poor humble service: which here I do vow to you both. And so take my leave. The 4th of February.

Your honourable ladyship's humbly at commandment,

Hen. Savile.

Number CLX. 229

The vice-chancellor and heads of the university of Cambridge to the lord Burghley, their chancellor: complaining of doctrine preached by P. Baro, D. D. Lady Margaret professor, in his clerum at St. Mary's. University Regist.

Right honourable,

OUR humble duty remembered. We are right sorry to have such occasion to trouble your lordship, as the peace of

ANNO 1595. this university and church (which is dear unto us) being brought into peril by the late reviving of new opinions and troublesome controversies among us, hath urged us, in regard of the places we here sustain, not only to be careful for the suppressing of the same to our powers, but also to give your lordship further information hereof, as our honourable head and careful chancellor.

About a year past, among divers others, (who have attempted publicly to teach new and strange opinions in religion,) one Mr. Barret, more bold than the rest, did preach divers popish errors in St. Mary's, to the just offence of many: which he was enjoined to retract. But refused so to do in such sort as hath been prescribed him. With whose fact and opinion your lordship was made acquainted by Dr. Some, the deputy vice-chancellor. Hereby offence and division growing; as after by Dr. Baro's public lectures and determinations in the schools, contrary (as his auditors have informed) to Dr. Whitaker's, and his sounder truth, ever since her majesty's reign; we sent up to London by common consent in November last Dr. Tyndal and Dr. Whitaker, (men especially chosen for that purpose,) for conference with my lord of Canterbury, and other principal divines there; that the controversies being examined, and the truths by their consents confirmed, the contrary errors, and the contention thereabouts, might the rather cease. With whose good travail, with sound consent in truth, such advice and care was taken by certain propositions (containing certain substantial points of religion taught and received in this university and church, during the time of her majesty's reign, and consented unto and practised by the best approved divines, both at home and abroad) for the maintaining of the same truth and peace of the church, as thereby we enjoyed here great and comfortable quiet, until Dr. Baro, in January last, in his sermon *ad clerum* in St. Mary's, contrary to restraint and commandment from the vice-chancellor and the heads, (by renewing again those opinions,) disturbed our peace. Whereby his adherents and disciples were and are much emboldened to maintain false

doctrine, to the corrupting and disturbing of this university and church, if it be not effectually in time prevented. ANNO 1595.

For remedy hereof we have, (with joint consent and care,) upon complaint preferred by divers bachelors in divinity, proceeded in the examination of the cause, according to our 230 statutes, and usual manner of proceeding in such cases: whereby it appeareth by sufficient testimonies, that Dr. Baro hath offended in such things as his articles had charged him withal.

There is also, since the former, another complaint preferred against him by certain bachelors in divinity, that he hath, not only in that sermon, but also for the space of these fourteen or fifteen years, taught in his lectures, preached in sermons, determined in the schools, and printed in several books, divers points of doctrine, not only contrary to himself, but also contrary to that which hath been taught and read ever since her majesty's reign, and agreeable to the errors of popery: which we know your lordship hath always disliked and hated. So that we, who for the space of many years past have yielded him sundry benefits and favours here in the university, being a stranger, and forborne him when he hath often heretofore been busy and curious *in aliena republica*, broached new and strange questions in religion; now, unless we should be careless of maintaining the truth of religion established, and of our duty in our places, cannot (being resolved and confirmed in that truth of the long professed and received doctrine) but continue to use all good means, and seek at your lordship's hands some effectual remedy hereof; lest, by permitting passage to these errors, the whole body of popery should by little and little break in upon us, to the overthrow of our religion; and consequently the withdrawing of many, here and elsewhere, from true obedience to her majesty.

May it therefore please your good lordship to have an honourable consideration of the premises, and for the better maintaining of peace, and the truth of religion, so long and quietly received in this university and church, to vouchsafe your lordship's good aid and advice; both to the

ANNO 1595. comfort of us, (wholly consenting and agreeing in judgment,) and all others in the university soundly affectionate; and to the suppression in time, not only of these errors, but also of gross popery, like by such means in time easily to creep in among us; (as we find by late experience it hath dangerously begun.) Thus craving pardon for troubling your lordship, and commending the same in prayer to the Almighty God, we humbly take our leaves. From Cambridge, the 8th of March, 1595.

Your lordship's humble and bounden,
to be commanded,

Roger Goad, pro-can.	Tho. Preston,
R. Some,	Humph. Tyndal,
Tho. Legg,	Jam. Mountague,
Joh. Jegon,	Edm. Barwel,
Tho. Nevyle,	Lawr. Chaderton.

See the further proceeding with Dr. Baro in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. chap. 18.

This learned man surrendered his professor's place, and soon after left the university, and retired to the city of
231 *London, where he lived divers years after; and died anno , and was carried decently, six doctors of divinity his pall-bearers, from his house in the parish, to the church of St. Olave, Hart-street; attended by the ministers of the city, according to an order from the bishop of London. And there the corpse was interred; leaving a large posterity behind him. His eldest son, Samuel Baro, was a physician, and lived and died in Lynn-Regis in Norfolk.*

Feb. 3, 1575. *Mr. Petrus Barrow, licentiatus in jure civili in academia Bituricensi: incorporatus Cantabrigiæ. Regr. Cantab.*

Ann. 1576. *Mr. Petrus Barrow, S. Th. P. Cantabr. ibid. This is the first year of his receiving the stipend as lady Margaret professor. Ex computo academiæ. MSS. Rev. T.B. B.D.*

This is subjoined in some remembrance of so remarkable a man.

Number CLXI.

ANNO 1595.

Dr. Goad, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to their chancellor, the lord Burghley. Complaint of Mr. Covel's sermon. Charging a crime upon some noblemen and bishops.

My good lord,

I THINK meet to signify to your lordship, that since this feast of Christ's nativity, one Mr. Covel, fellow of Christ's college, preaching upon the text, *Domus mea, &c. vos autem fecistis speluncam latronum*, in applying and inveighing against those that did *facere speluncam latronum* in our church, did, offensively and extraordinarily, so charge the noblemen of this land especially; and in some sort also the bishops. As being present, I thought it my duty, not only to call him to answer, which I have done, but also by so fit an occasion, for my better discharge, to give some signification hereof to your lordship. The rather, for that for want of sufficient assistance of heads of colleges, now from home, I can do little in these causes. And also, because I cannot, as yet, by way of counsel and persuasion, induce the said party to make voluntary, convenient, public satisfaction: which I will yet further endeavour.

In the mean time, until I may have necessary assistance required in these cases..... And so being further loath to trouble your lordship, &c. From King's college in Cambridge, the 2d of Jan. 1595.

Your lordship's humble and bounden,
to be commanded,
Roger Goad, pro-can.

See some further account of Covel's troubles in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. ch. 19.

ANNO 1595.

Number CLXII.

232 *The lord Burghley, high chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to the president and fellows of St. John's college, being divided among themselves; strictly forbidding them from the queen to proceed to the election of a master of that college; Dr. Whitaker, the last master, being lately dead.*

AFTER my hearty commendations. Although I have by my former letters ordered her majesty's commandment should be given unto you, to forbear from all manner of proceeding in the election of a master there, until her majesty might be further informed what were meet to be done in that election for the benefit and quietness of that house; which her majesty's commandment, (she being not only the foundress of that college, but supreme governor in all causes, and over all persons in her dominions, as well ecclesiastical as civil,) she looks to have obeyed by you all and every one of you all in that college: which, I doubt not, but, being notified unto you, you will obey. Yet being newly again by her majesty expressly reiterated to be signified unto you by me, her counsellor, and your chancellor, I do by these presents reiterate her royal commandment unto you, charging you, upon pain of your deprivation, and her majesty's indignation, to forbear to proceed to any election, notwithstanding any local statute of that house; wherewith her majesty hath authority to dispense, until her majesty's further royal pleasure shall be signified unto you: wishing you all charity, quietness, and concord among yourselves in the mean season, &c. 15th of Dec. 1595.

Number CLXIII.

The chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to the vice-chancellor and heads: to enjoin the fellows of St. John's,

divided among themselves, in the queen's name, to proceed to the election of either Dr. Claiton, or Mr. Stanton, for their master. Dated Dec. 19, 1595. ANNO 1595.

THIS letter was in answer to one dated Dec. 15, from the vice-chancellor and the heads. He had in a former letter appointed them to acquaint those of St. John's college with the queen's commandment. And accordingly in an assembly, they, the vice-chancellor and heads, had conference with such of that college as seemed to be the heads of the division there; and that they intended to have agreed upon the nomination of some one meet person for the place of 233
master. But when they could not so do, they afterwards determined upon two meet persons, that had been of that company heretofore, and not misliked by such of the fellows whom they called unto them for conference: which two persons were Dr. Webster and Mr. Stanton. And in the conclusion of their letter, the vice-chancellor and the greater part of the heads shewed themselves inclinable to Stanton.

The lord Burghley, their chancellor, in his answer to them, told them, that he had acquainted the queen with what they had done. Who, he writ, had a special care to have both a learned, diligent, and wise person, and also a man agreeable to the whole company, and not inclined to any faction. And that so in the end her majesty did, of those two, according to your opinions, (as he wrote,) like of Mr. Stanton: but since the same time she also hath heard good information made unto her, that one Mr. Dr. Claiton, master of Magdalen college, were a very meet person, the rather because he is unmarried, as the other two are not. And therefore in conclusion, she hath commanded me to signify to you, the vice-chancellor and the heads of the colleges, and so I do, as your chancellor, by her majesty's command, that you should in some assembly with the former heads, call the president of St. John's college, and some convenient equal number of the fellows that seem to be divided in opinion: to whom you shall declare and deliver her majesty's princely and regal resolution; that if they

ANNO 1595. will have the choice of their master by an election, it shall be free for them to choose one of these two, Mr. Dr. Claiton, or Mr. Stanton: and so they may quietly proceed. If they refuse to promise and yield thereunto, then you must enjoin them, in her majesty's name, as they will avoid her highness' displeasure, to forbear from proceeding to any manner of election. So as her majesty may, according to her royal authority, having the charge of government of the church, for the commonwealth of the college, (whereof she is inevitable foundatrice,) name some one to be master there, as she shall find to be for the benefit and quietness of the house, and furtherance of learning therein. Of which two things she meaneth to have chief respect.

And so committing this matter to your discretion, I do wish most heartily to see some good end thereof: and that such a master may be there, as may bring seeds of concord into the house, being the principal band to continue them in charity. And thereby to proceed in grace and living: whereof no one in the society whosoever shall take more comfort than myself; esteeming and reverencing that college as my best parent, that gave me nouriture to know God truly, and to detest popery: which was above threescore years now past, &c.

234 Number CLXIV.

A speech of the lord treasurer Burghley to the queen and privy-council: for commissioners to be appointed by her majesty for reforming abuses. The year when spoken not inserted, but probably near this year, or not long before. The queen had required a copy of it from him, and was as followeth:

MY dutiful speech, which your highness granted me to pronounce in your royal presence, with the attendance of your royal majesty's most honourable privy-council, &c. in furtherance of your highness' happy service, is;

As there is none godly wise within the civil parts of the

world, but he knoweth how the Almighty hath miraculously, above human hope, not only placed and preserved your majesty in this your own imperial state, but also beautified your supreme government with his manifold divine favours, more plentifully than other princes; so now that it hath pleased his divine wisdom also, who, as himself saith, holdeth your heavenly heart in his hand, as the division of waters, which way soever he will incline it, to move the same, to grant me, a simple one, your royal presence in this affable, benign, and gracious sort; and to admit me to inform in these weighty causes. It resteth, and his holy will is, that your highness should likewise advance his glory, your own honour, and your politic state, by purging and rectifying the same, from all my humbly informed and many mo heinous enormities. ANNO 1595.

If *civil* law say, that it will be an *innovation*, which oft produceth perils to a peaceable commonweal, let it likewise affirm, that it must needs be dangerous for your majesty to be wiser than other princes in performing the will of God, and in preferring the wealth of your people. But how can it be called an innovation in your majesty's prudent sight, sith your learned wisdom well knoweth, that many, even profane princes, who knew not God, (except in a glimsing,) but being led by the line of moral learning only, and succeeding vicious rulers in government, have repaired the torn estates of their commonwealths very *civilly*. And yet were it small reason to move your majesty to sue so far for examples, when no fewer than eight of your highness' own most noble progenitors, royal kings of this your highness' realm, sithence the last conquest, (upon the whole informations and complaints of their good subjects,) have earnestly endeavoured the like reformations, though not always for the like godly respects, nor in so mild and merciful manner, as the Almighty will induce your majesty to do it. For he will never suffer your sacred mind in punishing to pass the due proportion and method of justice, or to exceed the true limits of mercy, temperance, and truth; wherewith he hath ever heretofore corroborated your im-

ANNO 1595. perial throne, and ever will do. I think, yea, I dare boldly say, that there is no credible history in the whole world, be
235 it divine or profane, that mentioneth a maiden queen to reign so long over a nation in such continual happiness, pouring forth such sweet blessings upon her people, as your majesty hath done upon us all: and altogether at divine disposition, as your highness' self teacheth us to know.

And sith it is his mighty pleasure to make your sacred majesty a phenix, a peerless prince, a loadstar, and mirror of the world, to shew forth the shining brightness of his divine grace; why should we not then expect of your highness the accomplishment of rare height, and excellent actions of singular consequence every day, more and more?

It pleased God to grant to those former famous princes, even in their times, some tests of true religion, and of the errors, abuses, and ambition of the clergy; but he reserved the holy work of reformation (well begun by the noble kings, your majesty's most famous father and blessed brother) to be fully consummated by your mighty person. So did he eftsoons give them great entrances into the relieving of their politic governments; and yet hath reserved that heavenly happiness to be thoroughly perfected by your highness. If I should make particular mention, how far those good princes proceeded therein, recounting from king Stephen hitherward, it would be too tedious for your majesty, and eke superfluous, sith your majesty knoweth all better than I. But let it please your high excellency to be only thus far informed, that I never meant to move the same to make choice of three bishops for their sincerity, to become controllers of all your officers, as well of justice as of account; trying, punishing, and expelling: as that valiant, learned, liberal, and charitable prince, king Henry II. did. Nor yet to shift some sheriffs, to put surveyors over the rest; to set their sheriffalties on sale to who will give most; to let them to farm to fat bishops; to search out by general commission, how your fines, forfeitures, amercements, penalties, recognisances, have answered, with that excellent prince, king Richard the First, Cœur de Lion.

Whose highness proceeded further in those affairs: and yet no memory of any vice, saving of some hard dealings towards the king his father, in his frail and young years, which made the same the more excusable. Neither to follow the tragical course of king Henry III. induced by the overbold and eloquent bishop of Winchester by Pat. de Rivalls, his nephew, or bastard son, Segrove and Paslew; who being suddenly exalted to high estate of government; and sometime undiscreetly punishing innocents with offenders, in the highest degree of extremity; yea, expelling all high counsellors almost, and great officers English, (because some were found defective,) and placing others [over] the king's subjects, strangers born; furnishing also his highness' forces with strangers, (a thing which the English ever have naturally hated,) that so far exceeded the bounds both of justice, moderation, and civil policy, as their honest endeavours, which were both honourable and profitable for the good prince in the beginning, by want of moderate, ordinary, sincere, and politic proceedings, became clear contrary in the end. ANNO 1595.

As to the godly and right princely endeavours of that 236
virtuous, valiant, and wise king Edward the First, in sifting, shifting, fining, punishing, and expelling all officers and offenders, great and small universally, as well by virtue of his gracious commission, termed *Trayte de Baston*, and as by others; when he found none free from corruption in the whole commonwealth, but only John de Mettingham, and Elias de Beckingham: the kingly example of that paragon among all princes of the time, king Edward III. in changing, committing, fining, and punishing of the greatest lords and officers, both of justice and account, and in placing of others; for that they supplied not his treasure, for the furtherance of his French wars, in the 14th year of his royal reign: the perilous precedent of king Richard II. in letting his whole realm to farm to the lord Scrope, his lord treasurer, to sir John Bushie, his secretary, sir Bagot and sir Grene: the excellent dealings of the duke of York,

ANNO 1595. protector to the peaceable prince, king Henry VI. together with the earls of Salisbury and Warwick, when the said merciful king reigned in name and dignity only; and they ruled all in rule and authority, till the witty, stout, and yet inconstant queen, by changing of that short regiment, and great alteration both of high and low estate, (which yet for the time relieved many oppressions, and made justice to flourish,) procured both the king's, her own, and the young princes, their sons, all their reigns, even as God himself appointed it. And lastly, as to the prudent proceedings of that sapient king, your majesty's noble grandfather, king Henry VII. whose royal heart was a storehouse of all heroical virtues .... in instituting masters of forfeitures, and in augmenting of the treasure greatly, through sifting of all sorts of people by such means as are known to your highness.

I induce them, not for any direction to your majesty's high prudence herein, but this I no less humbly than faithfully and fervently beseech of God and your majesty, that it may please your sacred mind to be thereby occasioned to enter into your accustomed most princely, prudent, and grave deliberation now of these lower and lesser matters. And thereupon to make choice of some competent number of singular and sincere subjects, learned and well experienced in the affairs of your public government, and who yet never had their hearts touched, or at least possessed with avaricious appetite, ambition, or other notable crime. So as it may please your highness to authorize and term them to be your majesty's commissioners for a godly reformation of abuses, in politic proceedings; to proceed therein indeed, as well by direction and ordinary course of your laws, as also by virtue of your majesty's supreme regiment and absolute power, from whence law proceeded: and yet in both, and all mild, innocent, moderate, and sincere means. And then shall your most excellent majesty not only fully complete this whole work, and yet further fulfil your blessed function, whereunto the everlasting wisdom of

God hath (among all other princes living) especially appointed you, to his own eternal glory, and to your majesty's immortal memory; but also the same will more augment your highness' treasure, with the ancient revenue of your imperial crown in a short time, than ever came in account into the court of Augmentations, erected in the king your famous father's reign. ANNO 1595. 237

How the time fitteth now for it, in respect of your highness' higher affairs of supreme estate, I know not. Neither is it meet for me to aspire thereunto, otherwise than by my dutiful prayers still for blessed continuance of happy success. But this I know for certain, that if our most mighty king of all times do now vouchsafe the time for your majesty to do it, he surely will make all times, all occasions, all powers, all policies, all counsels and devices, whatsoever they be, to yield and apply thereunto: so much, most benign, gracious sovereign, in a generality. Some particularities, for example, will hereafter follow, as may best stand with your majesty's mighty pleasure, and be least to your grace's trouble.

Number CLXV.

Queen Elizabeth falls sick, being in her climacteric. The great apprehensions and fears arising hereupon; but recovereth. Related in a letter of Camden to sir Robert Cotton. Camden's Letters.

THAT they were all in melancholy and pensive cogitations, the queen being indisposed by an ἀνυπνία, [i. e. want of sleep,] and that joined with an inflammation in her breast upwards; and her mind altogether averse from physic. And this happening in her climacterical year, did more than terrify them all; and moved the lords of the council, when they had providently caused all the vagrants thereabouts to be taken up, and shipped for the Low Countries, to draw some munition to the court, and the great horses from Reading, to guard the receipt at Westminster, to take

ANNO 1595. order for the navy to lie in the narrow seas, and to commit some gentlemen hunger-starved for innovations, as sir Edmond Bainham, Catesby, Tresham, the two Wrights, and afterwards the count Arundel of Warder, to a gentleman's house, for speeches used by the foresaid turbulent spirits. But the queen's dangerous distemper ceased.

And Camden concluded his letter: That he thought good in this generality to impart unto him, that he, as they did, might put away fear, and thank God for this joyful recovery of her, upon whose health and safety they all depended.

238 Number CLXVI.

Edmond Nevyl, [*calling himself lord Latymer,*] *a prisoner in the Tower: his letter to N. Ramberd, steward of the Tower, containing information against the lieutenant of the Tower. November* 9, 1595. *MSS. Burghlian.*

Sir,

I WOULD not be made the author of the things, but if I be called and examined upon these points, I will discharge my conscience: 1. If God shall call her majesty, he [the lieutenant] will not obey the council in general, nor any one in particular. 2. He doubteth not, but to make whom he list to prevail, [that is, to be king;] because of the munition, &c. means which he hath, by taking his place, to arm many thousands: for he holdeth all within the Tower at his commandment, and himself tied to none. He hath demanded many times of divers persons, how many men were sufficient to man the Tower, and what course were best to take to furnish it with, in victuals, as myself, captain Wainman, and Mr. Wentworth.

Wherefore let your articles be drawn, to examine as [us] upon these points: which will be verified and proved. Let me speak with you before you go: for I would not have my hand seen in anywise, because we will reduce these things into a better method: and something else I have to say

unto you, that I will not commit to writing. From the Tower, the 9th of November, 1595. ANNO 1595.

To his approved good friend,
Mr. Ramberd, steward of
the Tower of London.

Your ever assured,
Edmond Latymer.

Number CLXVII.

Another letter of Latymer's to Mr. Ramberd; setting down the articles of information against the lieutenant of the Tower.

IMPRIMIS, That if it shall please God to call her majesty, he will keep the Tower, and will not obey the council in general, nor any one of them in particular. 2. He will make king whom he list, by taking of the Tower, by reason he hath all the chief munition of the realm within his government, and at his commandment. 3. To this effect he hath sought to learn of divers their opinions, and how many men will furnish the Tower; and what discipline were best to be used therein. 4. Also, he hath demanded what course were best to be taken for to victual the same place, if he 239
should be distressed before he could make known his intent to his friends. 5. He affirmeth, that he shall be able to arm four or five hundred men with all manner of munition and furniture, which he supposeth sufficient to sway the diadem which way it pleaseth him.

Yours ever,
Edm. Latymer.

In the margin of these articles it is thus writ:

Urge you these articles as of yourself. That whosoever of the lords it be, whom it shall please them to grant their commission to call before them captain Wainman, Mr. Wentworth, and myself, to be examined upon our oaths. And for the other matter of the prisoners, they may be dealt in either at that time, or when it shall seem best unto their honours. But deal you faithfully and secretly herein,

ANNO 1595. as you love the credit of your friend, and tender the credit of the state.

Number CLXVIII.

Another letter of Nevyl to Ramberd. Nov. 13.

Sir,

FOR divers considerations it is more fit that I speak upon my oath, than set down again things voluntarily: in which examination of time and place, with all other circumstances, will sufficiently appear my care of the imperial state of this honourable island hath been long known unto you, and made well known by you unto that honourable gentleman, Mr. Vice-chamberlain; in whose time this matter was not come to its ripeness that now it is: which may be the cause he never acquainted her majesty therewith. As you are a faithful witness of my dutiful care, so let me entreat you to be a careful friend for the preservation of my credit. Let me be called, deposed, and examined, and then am I bound to say what shall be demanded of me; at least my knowledge therein, &c.

Number CLXIX.

A fourth letter of Nevyl: concerning the words spoken by the lieutenant of the Tower.

Sir,

TO all these articles I am able to depose, and do assure myself, so can Mr. Wentworth, or to the most of them, if he can be drawn to it. But to the third and fourth, captain Wainman both can and will be witness; as also myself: for he hath spoke severally unto us thereof. His speech to me touching the earl of Hertford was, that Mr. Wentworth's standing for to have a successor established, was only in the favour of his lordship's children: whereof when I spoke to Mr. Wentworth, he answered, he doth me wrong. For he

himself is of that faction, which he hath plainly discovered unto me, saith he, and shewed me reasons to strengthen his opinion for his speech to Mrs. Wentworth, that if the gentlemen of England were honest, there would be 500 in prison. For her husband's opinion ere it were long, both Mr. Wentworth and his wife do affirm and have done, before captain Wainman and myself. The rest I refer to the time of his examination. The times were most often, and the places in every walking place, about the hours wherein we [prisoners] used to converse. God bless you once more, and ever. This 13th of November, 1595. From the Tower.

ANNO 1595.

Yours ever, as you know,

Edmond Latymer.

This Latymer, (as he styled himself from the earls of Westmerland,) or Nevyl, was concerned in the plot with Parry, ann. 1585, *for killing of the queen.*

This Wentworth was a member of parliament, and committed to the Tower for his too free speaking there, and much for the succession of the family of the Grays to the crown.

Number CLXX.

Lord Cobham and lord Buckhurst, of the privy-council, to Mr. Wade, clerk of the council: to examine Nevyl, whether he gave not occasion to the lieutenant to speak those words as above. To this question Nevyl wrote thus to Wade.

Sir,

WHEREAS I understand that you do desire to be better informed in my answer to the last question you propounded unto me, which was, whether I had not given the occasion of the speeches which had passed between the lieutenant and me: whereunto I protest, that I have delivered that thereunto you, which is, that I only commended unto him the honour and credit of his place, as a matter of

ANNO 1595. great trust and credit; and therewithal shewed unto him, how many earls and some dukes had been constables there. Whereupon he entered into the matters already mentioned simply and of his own accord, without any manner of urging by me: though not all at one time, yet after he had once broken with me therein, he never met with me alone, but ere I went from him, he would be in that matter, &c.

241 Number CLXXI.

N. Ramberd, steward of the Tower, to the lord chamberlain. His confirmation of the articles, Nov. 19.

.... THERE are very strong presumptions to strengthen the said article, viz. "If the gentlemen of England were "honest, there would be 500 more in prison for Mr. Went- "worth his opinion ere it were long. Thus much should "Mr. Wentworth and his wife affirm, in the hearing of "Mr. Nevyl and captain Wainman." And shewing his [the lieutenant's] very bad mind: which if your lordship please to command me, I shall be ready to perform, and with all duty to set down.

Number CLXXII.

Dr. James, dean of Christ's-church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring; concerning a stint of bread to be used in that college.

Ihesus.

MY duty in most humble wise remembered: I was bold to acquaint your honour with a purpose that our company had for a stint of bread, which we have now put in execution, as by our common letters to your lordship, with the order enclosed, may appear. I trust nothing shall be found unreasonable or unmeet for men of our places to have been done. I send your honour here enclosed the copies of such letters as the lord chancellors have in former times written to our company, as they remain registered in our books.

Wherein although we have no statute for it, yet your lordship may perceive in what place they accounted themselves. ANNO 1595.

For my own matters, [about a remove to a bishopric,] I hear nothing more than I did at my late being with your lordship. I presume they shall succeed much the better by your lordship's honour's favour and furtherance..... And thus beseeching God to bless and preserve your honour, I most humbly take my leave. From Christ's Church, Oxford, the 11th of April, 1595.

Your honour's most humbly at commandment,

W. James.

242

Number CLXXIII.

The dean and prebendaries of Christ's Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring; sending the copies of letters written in times past by the lord chancellor to that college, for reducing a stint of bread.

Our duties most humble to your lordship remembered.

WHEREAS our house hath been, with the great charge which of late years we have sustained, as by suit in law, reparations of our sundry houses, church and chancels, where we are proprietors, and to the present and former dearths of corn, and great waste and spoil of bread, as also by detaining of rents in divers places to great sums, for the which we are forced to sue, and sundry other occasions, brought behindhand, as to your lordship hath been heretofore signified: for the amendment whereof, after many consultations, we find no better or more speedy remedy to grow to a reasonable stint of bread; yielding to every one that be of the king's majesty's foundation but 12*d.* yearly, for all allowances 13*d.* in bread only: and so to all others in like proportion. And to bring them to the old usual rate of being four in a mess, their commons being in a manner doubled over that it was.

Forasmuch as it may be, that upon the execution hereof some resistance may be made here at home, and some com-

ANNO 1595. plaint exhibited above, (which yet we hope will not be done,) seeing we offer nothing but that which is most reasonable and conscionable, as we doubt not shall to your lordship by the enclosed appear; wherein we yield them all the benefits of our improvements, by rent-corn, the rent of our pastures at Bynsey, reared to a great rate, the recovery whereof, to their only good, hath cost us a thousand pounds, and the benefit of feeding upon our several grounds, of most whereof neither we, they, nor our predecessors ever tasted; wherein we have good interest, and some of us, above our abilities, or the example of others of our place, suffer loss: our most humble suit to your lordship is, that if any disordered persons in our company complain, or by faction draw others better affected, (if such troublesome spirits provoked them not,) that they may be sent home to their studies, and charged to yield obedience, until such time as the next term, or when it shall seem convenient, such grievances as either they now have, or then shall present, may be truly considered of.

We are bound to acquaint your honour with our proceedings herein, for that both we and they have found your honourable favour and assistance in the causes of our house. For the which we all rest most bounden to your honour; and that in the like causes both we and they have had recourse to such as have sitten in the place wherein God now hath placed your lordship, and wherein we beseech him long to bless your honour.

243 We trust our cares and travails taken in our house's behalf, now for many years, not unknown to your honour, shall clear us from any wilful conceit either toward the house in general, or any member thereof: and thus we most humbly take our leaves.....From Christ's Church, Oxford, the 11th of April, 1595.

Your lordship's most humble at commandment,

W. James,	Tho. Thornton,
Joh. Purfey,	Ro. Pickaret,
Arthur Wake,	Joh. Weston,
Ric. Eeds,	Tho. White.

Number CLXXIV.

ANNO 1595.

Then follows an original paper, endorsed, Christ's Church endowments and expositions: *declaring the state of that college. Sent to the lord keeper.*

KING HENRY VIII. of famous memory, founded Christ's Church, Oxon, and endowed it with (as appeareth by our letters patent) - - - - 2200 0 0
King Edward VI. gave to supply some wants 21 9 3
Queen Mary for more, to supply the said church 74 8 4

Total. terrarum et possessionum - 2295 17 7

Then follow charges going out of the said revenue.

Imprimis, The stipends yearly paid to the dean, prebends, 3 professors, of Divinity, Hebrew, and Greek; 100 students; 12 chaplains, and singing-men; 8 chorists; 24 servants and officers; 24 alms-men, paid ever since the foundation, - - - - - - 1057 3 4

Then are set down reasons for the stint of bread.

The stint of bread is grounded on equity and necessity.

I. *Equity* appeareth. The far greater part of the house having but 14*d.* or 12*d.* for all charges of diet, have every one of them by this rate of 9 ounces in bread, 14*d.* 3 farthings, besides commons and drink. 2. The other colleges that have stint, have it only of 8 ounces: and such as have no stint, if they spend above the first allowance, pay for it. 3. It is sufficient for a student, and by them so confessed: and the better sort spend nothing so much. 4. It preserveth them that are sworn (to be true and kind to the house, and in nothing to hurt it) from wilful perjury. 5. It is general, from the sub-dean and canons, to the lowest and meanest servants.

II. *Necessity* appeareth. 1. The church cannot bear it, as is shewed. 2. It hindereth spoil and waste; upon every offence by them conceived, and upon every punishment by the officers inflicted, as shall be proved. 3. It stayeth purloining and carrying bread out of the hall, at after dinner 244

ANNO 1595. and supper, to a fire, and for breakfasts, as shall be proved. 4. It riddeth the house of almost an hundred thriftless hangbyes, whom they maintain with bread. 5. It shall keep our butlers and officers from spoil and waste, and enforce them to answer for every farthing.

The students' commons is little, and not sufficient.

For answer whereof, 1. They have the king's allowance, without bar or abatement: and the king left six or seven acres to feed beasts. 2. The dean and chapter have in former times purchased, and to their use converted the pastures of Chaundense, &c. 3. The now dean and chapter, at their great cost and suit, as is known to the lord archbishop of Canterbury and lord treasurer, recovered a third part of the copyholds, tithes, and pastures of Bynsie, to the yearly value of 40*l.* or thereabouts; saving some annuities, going out for some years, yet to come, as appeareth in the award; all the remnant remaining to their benefit. 4. The now dean and chapter, in whose time provision of corn did first come, have given unto them all the improvements of rent-corn by statute, wherein of right they have a portion: and so concluded it *capitulariter*, until their commons shall be doubled throughout the year at dinner and supper: which, with the rent and provision of corn of this last year's, did amount to 113*l.* 14*s.* 8*d.* And the now dean, for their benefit, hath any time this seven year lent them 100*l.* and forborne his own stipend till the year's end; which was quarterly payable, as they are paid theirs.

Number CLXXV.

Robert earl of Essex to lord keeper Puckring, July 1595; *for his retainers, put away because he would not offend the law. And that for the cause of retainers they may not be put out of the commission of the peace.*

My very good lord,

ALTHOUGH I am very loath to leave the name of master to so many honest gentlemen in Wales, as out of

their love desire to serve and follow me, and do hold the place of justices in those parts; yet I had rather give them liberty, and free them from retaining unto me, than that in this respect they should lose any jot of that former reputation: which I do with due regard unto her majesty's service, and the good of the several counties where they dwell; being all of them, to my knowledge, very able and sufficient gentlemen. It shall therefore suffice henceforth, that I have their love without further ceremonies. Praying your lordship that they may not, by the late order, be subject to the loss of their places for this cause, but to deal honourably and favourably with them for my sake, &c. July 1595. ANNO 1595.

Endorsed, *Lord Essex for his retainers, put away because he will not offend the law, and for that cause they may not be put out of commission.* 245

Number CLXXVI.

The earl of Essex to the lord keeper Puckring: in behalf of Buckridge, his chaplain. Jan. 12, 1595.

..... I SENT Mr. Smith, the clerk of the council, not long since, unto your lordship, to entreat your honourable favour towards my chaplain, Mr. Buckridge, for the benefice of Bradfield. And by him received such answer, as gave me hope of good success.....I pray you make me beholden to you for your honourable favour towards my chaplain, which I will acknowledge with all thankfulness. .....Thus I commit your good lordship to God's best protection. From the court, the 12th of Jan. 1595.

Number CLXXVII.

The earl to the lord keeper: for Dr. Meyric, his chaplain. Feb. 1595.

..... I HAVE a special care of the good and preferment

ANNO 1595. of my chaplain, Dr. Meyrick, as well for the worthiness that is in him, as also in regard of his long dependence on my father and myself. This made me lately recommend him to your lordship's good favour and remembrance, as opportunity should be offered. Which request I do now again renew with earnest affection: leaving which, I do desire for him to the solicitation of the bearer, his kinsman, &c. Feb. 5th.

Number CLXXVIII.

In the behalf of both the above-mentioned clergymen, his chaplains, the earl had writ to the lord keeper the year before, viz. Jan. 29, 1594, *with mention of their deserts.*

His letter for Dr. Meyrick.

UPON the preferment of Dr. Morgan to the bishopric of Landaff, the parsonage of Llanrullin, in the county of Montgomery, which he now holdeth, will be in your lordship's disposition. Whereunto I do greatly desire, with
246 your good favour, that my chaplain, Dr. Meyrick, may be preferred. He is a man worthy of it, and one whose good I do the more tender, for that he belonged heretofore unto my father, and hath only an archdeaconry, whereupon he liveth. This parsonage is in the country where he was born; and having the language is the fitter for it, and may the better profit the people there. If it shall please your lordship for my sake to bestow the same upon him, or, if it be already granted, the rectory of Denbigh, which the said Dr. Morgan also holdeth. Wherein your lordship shall do me a great favour, &c. From the court, the 29th of Jan. 1594.

Your lordship's very assured friend,

Essex.

Number CLXXIX.

ANNO 1595.

His letter for Mr. Buckridge. Feb. 17, 1594.

YOUR lordship hath been already moved, as I understand, by some friends of my chaplain, Mr. Buckridge, for a small living in Hertfordshire, called Shephale; and what hope he hath already of your lordship's favour in it, I do not know. But if your lordship hath, at any other friend's suit, been pleased to bestow it on him, these may be to give you thanks. If not, and that it remaineth in your lordship's power, they come in good time to entreat your lordship for him, as for a man worthy in himself of good preferment; and besides as my chaplain; by which name, I doubt not but he shall find the more favour at your lordship's hands. I pray your lordship make me beholden to you for this benefit to him. And command me, when I can do good to any of yours. From Greenwich, the 17th of February, 94.

This vicarage of Shephale was given before.

This Buckridge, or one of his name, was master of St. John's college in Oxford; and made bishop of Rochester and Ely successively.

Number CLXXX.

Sir John Puckring, lord keeper, his petition to the queen, for a lease of part of the possessions of the bishopric of Ely: a motion to fill that vacant see. MSS. D. Puckring. About the year 1595.

THAT it may please your most excellent majesty to grant me, your most bounden servant, your princely favour, that I may have a lease of part of the possessions of the bishopric of Ely, not exceeding a third part thereof in 247
value, for such a reasonable term of years as the bishop may grant unto your majesty; yielding unto the bishop and his successors the best accustomed rents now, or any

ANNO 1595. time heretofore, answered to the bishop for the same, and performing, as usual, covenant for payment of rent, and doing reparations.

For the accomplishment whereof, it may please your majesty to translate one of the eldest bishops; who may make the same lease. By whose great age it is like the same bishopric will not tarry long forth of your majesty's hands. I find no other suit so fit for your majesty to grant me as this; for the exchanges, fee-farms, and leases of your majesty's own lands are to be taken from your own self, and from your royal revenues.....It may perchance be objected, that your majesty having now the revenue of the bishopric, doth forego the same by making a bishop. Answer, Your majesty, by giving the bishopric, shall have the first-fruits, which is one year's profit, and the tenths and subsidies besides: which you cannot have, while the bishopric remains in your majesty's hands: which, together, I take it, will be as profitable to your majesty, as it is now the bishopric remaineth in your hands. And your majesty shall hereby have moreover the first-fruits of that bishopric from whence your majesty shall be pleased to translate the bishop to Ely; and also of so many as you shall be pleased by that occasion to remove or translate.

The clergymen may perchance think your majesty doth decrease the revenues of the church by making a lease of the bishops' lands. Answer, So long as the inheritance and the ordinary rent of the bishopric is not diminished, they cannot think any thing thereof, but rather may be glad, that after so long vacancy your majesty will be pleased to make a bishop. Because there will be one see the more filled than hath been many years heretofore: and where, for want of a bishop, a great number of papists are harboured in that diocese, and the bishop's houses much decayed. Your majesty, by making a bishop, may easily remedy those inconveniences. And moreover, if your majesty make a bishop of Ely, he is to do your highness divers services; as finding of men and horses in time of war, &c.

Number CLXXXI.

ANNO 1595.

Another discourse of the said lord on the same subject; viz. that the placing of a bishop in the see of Ely will be as profitable to her majesty as now the vacancy thereof is: besides divers reasons for the which, also it appeareth to be very expedient.

THE clear profits of the bishopric of Ely, as it hath been answered to her majesty, since the see became last void, (as will appear by the accounts remaining with Mr. Auditor Neal,) hath been, *communibus annis*, about 1500 0 0

Her majesty, by placing a bishop there, shall yearly have 248

for the tenths thereof - - -	213	9 10	q.
For the subsidy yearly - - -	383	6 8	
For the first-fruits, the tenths being deducted, each year, by the space of two years - - - - - -	960	13 2	ob. q.
In all years to be answered to her majesty - - - -	1557	10 8	ob. q.

Moreover, the bishop of Norwich, who is eighty-eight years old, being translated to the bishopric of Ely, which is of lesser charge and jurisdiction, there will come to her majesty, for the first-fruits of the bishopric of Norwich, at the least - - - - - - - - 800 0 0

And so it appeareth that her majesty shall make profit, and not any loss, by the placing of a bishop in the see of Ely.

By occasion also of this translation, divers other removes may become very profitable to her majesty: viz. The first-fruits of the bishop of Hereford, by that bishop's remove to Norwich, 700*l.* The first-fruits of the bishop of Chichester, by his remove to Hereford, 600*l.* The first-fruits of the bishop of Chester, by his remove to Chichester, 360*l.* And the like out of the bishop of Peterborough, by his remove to Chester, 300*l.* - - - - - - 2010 0 0

Furthermore, the bishopric of Ely, being bestowed upon so old a man as the bishop of Norwich, is very likely shortly to be again at her majesty's disposing.

ANNO 1595.

Number CLXXXII.

Another paper of the said lord keeper: soliciting the queen for a lease of some part of the revenues of the abovesaid bishopric.

HE seeketh but to be the bishop's fermour; and that only of such portion as the bishop can and will be willing to spare: being no part of his mansion-house, or demeans; but that which others shall have, if the lord keeper have it not. And the lord keeper having it, will let to the tenants for reasonable fines: who will be glad of good and certain terms, and will bestow costs upon the same.

The reasons. By making a bishop of Ely, your majesty shall fill that see, which hath been fourteen years void, [that is, from year 1581,] and remove that opinion of keeping a bishopric so long in your majesty's hands.

A lease may be made from the bishop to your majesty (and so to be given to myself) of 600*l.* by year, of those possessions, for such reasonable years as the bishop may grant, without diminishing any usual rent of the same.

249

Number CLXXXIII.

Sir Edward Wotton to the lord treasurer; suing to be treasurer of the queen's chamber, upon the death of sir Francis Knowles.

Most honourable,

I AM so clear from having given your lordship any cause of offence, that I pretend to have deserved your favour. In confidence whereof I write this: beseeching your lordship to be my mean to her majesty for the treasurership of her chamber. Your lordship shall prefer unto her a faithful servant, and one most thankful unto yourself: which point I forbear to amplify; knowing the little credit much saying carrieth in this age of words. It may please your lordship to hope well of my actions, which are the true interpreters of the mind. And so, expecting your honour-

able answer, I wish your lordship a speedy recovery, with continuance in health and happiness. From Pykering-house, this present Friday. ANNO 1595.

Your lordship's, to do you honour,
Edward Wotton.

But succeeded not; Roger lord North obtaining the place.

Number CLXXXIV.

Sir Robert Cecil, knt. made secretary of state: son to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley. His familiar letter to Mr. Michael Hicks, his friend, secretary to the said lord: avowing his principle, chiefly to serve the queen.

Mr. Hicks,

THINGS past are known unto you: and the more that difficulties were, the more contentment now to remember them, being overcome. That which is to come, I pray you take care of: which is, especially, that I may not be known to have had any particular dealing in the matter more than others, of the conceit I had, that his worth justly entitled him to this fortune, [perhaps the marrying of a rich ward.] For it will disable me to do him or others pleasure hereafter, by my access to her majesty's ear: which now I so used, as her majesty cannot suspect that I look to any thing but her service: which, as I profess and protest, I did and do most of any thing in all my recommendations: so do I not deny to myself the liberty, that, when other things concur, my friends are now nearest to me in my wishes and honest endeavours.....

Your friend,
Ro. Cecil.

ANNO 1595.

Number CLXXXV.

A book came forth this year, 1595, (*printed at Lond. 4to.*)
250 *called*, The State of the English Fugitives under the King of Spain and his Ministers: *containing besides, a discourse of the said king's manner of government, and the injustice of many late dishonourable practices by him committed.*

THE intent of the book is, to dissuade the English Roman catholics to forsake their own country to go into Flanders, or other countries under the king of Spain, to serve him. And that because so many such gentlemen that were there met with such great scorn, injury, and destruction: the author himself having been five or six years since in those parts of Flanders, and seeing (as he writeth in his preface) a miserable troop of his unhappy countrymen (some of which were gentlemen of good houses in England) wandering, in poor looks and afflicted gestures, heavily groaning under the burden of an extreme and calamitous necessity; being debarred from return into their own country, and daily overlooked with the proud eyes of disdainful Spaniards.....

Knowing of some of his good friends and acquaintance in England, possessed with the like humour as that which possessed the aforesaid unhappy gentlemen, to forsake their country, and to settle themselves in the service and dominion of the king of Spain, he thought good to advertise them of that which his experience had gathered, touching the small regard, distress, poverty, scorn, calamities, and affliction, that befell to such as had already entered that course.

The ground of this discourse was a letter that he had formerly sent, who himself then served the king of Spain, to a catholic gentleman, his kinsman and friend, that had signified to him of his longing to come into those parts, and to employ himself there in the service of the Spanish king, as many other young gentlemen did; in hope there to grow to great preferment, advancement, and employment,

and wealth: and others pretending matter of conscience, thinking assuredly to live there with more liberty and ease of mind, than within their own country they enjoyed. Therefore in the same letter he resolved (out of due and humble regard to the service and sacred person of the queen, and to his dearly beloved native country and countrymen) to set down some notes and observations, which by a long and dangerous experience in this place he had heedfully gathered; by which he hoped to make it manifest to him, and to all others his countrymen, by apparent examples and undeniable truths, how greatly they that greatly desired to repair thither in a hope of good, to be received by the said king or his ministers, did err and were deceived. ANNO 1595.

In the conclusion of his book, because many of our coun- 251
trymen, living in great happiness at home, yet (like those that cannot take good rest when they lie soft) do in their conceit mislike the quiet estate they live in, he shewed..... touching the benefits and blessings God had poured down upon her majesty and her people, together with the flourishing state of the realm, since the time of her majesty's government, so plentiful in peace, victorious in war, so industrious in arts, so excelling in all sciences, that the very Spanish enemy himself did not stick many times to break out into an admiration thereat; and sometimes in his scoffing, or rather blasphemous humour, to swear, that he thought Jesus Christ a protestant. And then the writer made a brief comparison between this government and that of the adversary, viz. the king of Spain: his cruel and inhuman usage of his miserable subjects; his violent abolition, and taking away all their privileges; and, in fine, the unspeakable bondage, constrained servitude, and pitiful desolation in which they lived.

In this discourse he mentioned eight English gentlemen hanged up, after the sack of Antwerp, by his captain-general in the Low Countries, notwithstanding notable services they had done both to him and the duke of Alva: and Egrimond Ratclyff and Mr. Grey, gentlemen of noble

ANNO 1595. houses, and faithfully affected both in religion and service to the Spanish king. Nevertheless, upon some groundless suspicion, that they should have practised the death of don John, were both apprehended; and nothing could be proved against them: yet their heads were stricken off in the market-place of Namur, protesting their innocency at that time. Four and twenty English soldiers were hanged together in the market-place of Audenard, by the Spanish provost. Of the surrender of which place, the troops, wherein they were, were the chief causes. He mentioned also the miserable deaths, or miserable lives of Norris, Barny, Cornish, Gibson, Pigot, Tresham, captains, with abundance more; and of some hundreds of brave, tall English soldiers, that never received, in all the time of their service, any one month's pay. And added, that he had seen lieutenants and ensigns of them go up and down sickly and famished, begging their bread, covered only with poor blankets, and ticks of featherbeds, that they had rifled in the villages abroad. And he himself relieved some of them.

252 Number CLXXXVI.

The visitation of Richard Fletcher, bishop of London, Oct. 20, ann. regin. 37. In some articles of inquiry, chiefly respecting the clergy. MSS. D. Joh. episc. Ely.

Art. 10. WHETHER your preacher, in his prayer made in the entrance of his prayer to his sermon, do use at all times to pray for her majesty by her whole title, by the queen's injunctions, given unto her as queen of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. over all causes, and over all persons, within her majesty's dominions, as well ecclesiastical as temporal, next and immediately under God supreme head, &c.

Art. 11. Whether any teacher in conventicles or private meeting have read or used within your parishes, either in the church, or privately in any house, by any not sufficiently licensed thereunto? Or whether any such reader do

teach any doctrine of innovation, to withdraw the people from due obedience unto the ordinary of the church, set forth by public authority, or cause them to forbear the participating either in the prayers or sacraments with our church? ANNO 1595.

Art. 18. Whether any such do commend a discipline contrary to the laws now established, privately or publicly?

Art. 27. .....Whether, &c. do declare or speak any thing in derogation of the Book of Common Prayer, &c.

Art. 28. Whether any preacheth, and doth not at certain times in the year minister the sacraments in his own person, and in such church wherein he readeth his lectures?

Art. 31. Whether there be contention for doctrine and ceremony; what, and who was the cause thereof?

Number CLXXXVII.

The archbishop of Canterbury to Chaderton, bishop of Lincoln; removed thither from Westchester, 1595. *Touching relief of the poor in the time of dearth.*

Salutem in Christo.

YOUR lordship shall do well, in this time of scarcity and dearth of corn and victuals, to admonish the preachers within your diocese, to exhort the wealthier sort of their parishioners to contribute more liberally towards the relief of the poor; and specially in such sort as by letters is signified from the lords and others of her majesty's most honourable privy-council, to the sheriffs and others in every several county. And I could wish that such as are noted to hold up their corn in this time of extremity were spe- 253
cially admonished thereof, and let to understand, how great an offence that is in the sight of Almighty God, &c.

I doubt not but that your lordship will take due care hereof, the necessity of the time requiring the same. And so, with my hearty commendations, I commit your lordship

ANNO 1595. to the tuition of Almighty God. From Croyden, the 27th of May, 1595.

Your lordship's loving brother in Christ,
Jo. Cantuar.

Number CLXXXVIII.

Matthew Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer, in behalf of the lady Margaret Nevil, reclaimed from popery.

My honourable and very good lord,

YESTERDAY in the afternoon I was at your lordship's lodging in court, to have seen and certified your honour, (but that you were then sitting in council,) that I had been with her most excellent majesty, making petition for the poor distressed lady, Margaret Nevyl, shewing her pitiful estate; that she is wholly reformed in religion, most penitent for her offence, and most humbly with tears beseecheth her highness' most gracious pardon for her life, with somewhat for her living. It pleased her highness to vouchsafe me a gracious speech; saying, she would have consideration of the petition.

Now I am very heartily to recommend her lamentable case unto your honourable and favourable consideration, that your lordship would vouchsafe to be a special good means for this poor condemned madam; whom many godly men do greatly pity, and I have been willing to my power to help. Your good lordship, in my opinion, may do a godly deed, and make many of her honourable and good friends bound unto your lordship in her behalf. And truly, my good lord, as, I thank God, I was a means to do good to her soul, (whose example may happily do good to others,) so I would be right glad it would please her majesty to shew to the world, that she putteth great difference between her, that is dutiful, and her two sisters, that continue obstinate.

Thus, sorry that I have been so troublesome to your lordship in this matter, I commend your honour to the blessed direction of the Almighty. From Chanon-row, this 10th of April, 1595. ANNO 1595.

Your good lordship's in Christ most assured,
Matth. Ebor.

Number CLXXXIX. 254

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer. Against certain concealers, to deprive him of certain church lands in Rippon, upon pretence of conccalment.

My honourable and very good lord,

I AM given to understand, that one Ellesworth and Proctor, two troublesome and unworthy informers in the late vacancy of this see, procured commission out of her majesty's honourable court of exchequer; by colour whereof, they have indirectly (so far as they could) endeavoured to have certain lands belonging to my liberties of Rippon, and given to the use of a free chapel, to be proved to be concealed: although it is well known, and may appear by ancient records, that the same are holden by the archbishop of York by copy of court-roll. I am therefore earnestly to pray your good lordship, that my poor tenant there be no further molested or charged by means of the suggestions of such promoting persons, little worthy the countenance of that honourable court. Or, if it please your honour to be further satisfied herein, that direction may be given to some of good credit, that may also certify the state and truth thereof. And so I heartily commend your good lordship to the blessed protection of the Almighty. From Bishopthorp, the 6th of May, 1595.

Your good lordship's most assured,
Matth. Ebor.

ANNO 1595.

Number CXC.

The council in the north to the lords of the privy-council: giving notice of the death of Henry earl of Huntington, president of the council of the north.

Rt. honourable, our very good lords,

MAY it please your lordships to be advertised, that our very good lord, the earl of Huntington, lord president in these parts, departed this life at York, about seven of the clock in the morning of this 14th day of December. The state of his sickness and manner of death, (which was most Christian like,) this bearer, his lordship's servant, can at large declare to your lordships. Immediately upon his death, we, then present, and attendant on his lordship, did collect into places fit for the same, all casks, boxes, writings, letters, and papers which we could find; and locking up the doors of those places, we have sealed up the same with our seals, and delivered the keys to the lord archbishop of York, till your lordships' pleasure be further known.
255 Wherein, as likewise for your lordships' direction in the affairs and government of this place, we most humbly pray your lordships' advertisement and instructions. And so, most humbly recommending our services unto your good lordships, we take our leaves. From York, this 14th day of December, 1595.

Matth. Ebor.

E. Stanhope, Joh. Gibson,
W. Cardynal, Jo. Foyne.

Number CXCI.

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: desiring a pardon for Nelson, a priest, a prisoner; now reclaimed.

My honourable good lord,

ONE Martin Nelson, a late massing-priest, taken the last summer, wholly reclaimed, and hath before me dutifully and willingly subscribed to the book of Articles of Religion

established; and also very humbly, upon his knees, taken the oath of her majesty's supremacy earnestly. Considering that, as he is most penitent for his offence, so he will faithfully labour as a minister, to do good service to God and her majesty, and to persuade and reform such as heretofore he hath dissuaded and seduced. And he humbly beseecheth, and I humbly pray your lordship, that being aged, and having nothing for his relief in prison, he may be bailed, if it may be; and that it will please your lordship to be an honourable good means, as my late honourable good lord president would have been, to procure him her majesty's gracious pardon: her highness being ever most mercifully inclined, as a princely pattern of piety, to take great pity upon penitent offenders, therein truly imitating Almighty God, whose person she doth rightly represent here on earth. ANNO 1595.

Thus, beseeching God long to bless your honour with his manifold graces, I commend you to his heavenly protection. From Bishopthorp, the 15th of January, 1595.

Number CXCII.

A memorial: containing the lord treasurer's advice concerning the Spanish preparations. November 4, 1596.

MY opinion by way of advice, under correction, of former information concerning the matter moved from her majesty to be considered, what were meet to be done upon the advertisements of the Spanish preparations, is as followeth: Anno 1596.

First, For the present, I think the order sent to the 256
realm, to all lieutenants and governors, for the putting in readiness of all their forces, and to put in speedy execution all former orders for the defence of the seacoast, hath been most necessarily expedited. And where they are eftsoons required to certify what they do and mean to do, for speedy execution of these orders, the same would be reiterated, if they shall not speedily advise.

Secondly, I think it most necessary, that a convenient

ANNO 1596. number of ships of war be speedily sent to the west parts, both for the comfort of the coasts, and to do such service as they shall be able to do, to impeach the enemy from free landing of forces in places where the said ships of war may impeach them. And though speedily they cannot be put in readiness, for lack partly of plenty of victuals, partly because the ships meet for this service cannot be so speedily rigged as were necessary, and partly for lack of mariners, whereof a great number are absent in voyages, such a navy as may be sufficient to encounter the Spanish; yet such a number would be presently made ready, as victual and mariners may be had to serve the purpose. And presently also some bargain would be made with the merchants of Holland, to make provision of some quantity of grain; whereof some part would be brought to London, some part to Dover, and some part to Portsmouth; where there are places of stowage, and all necessary offices to make provision of supplies of victuals for the ships.

Item, Beside that provision, a former charge would be renewed to sir Henry Palmer, to stay all foreign shippings with corn which should pass the narrow seas: seizing so much thereof as may be proved to be intended for Spain; and all the rest to be taken up by way of bargain for the queen's majesty, upon reasonable prices.

Item, I think it very necessary to consider partly how a sufficient army may be compounded of the forces of the countries by perusal of the certificates of every county, of the numbers there in readiness, what arms may serve to withstand and defend the enemy, when he shall land. And because it is uncertain where the enemy shall land, it is requisite that one army might be compounded of the western counties, as of the forces of Cornwall, Devon, Dorset, and Somerset; and one other of the counties more eastwardly, as Wiltshire, Hampshire, Sussex, and Berkshire. And considering the numbers of the countries already levied and sorted into bands are number sufficient to make a complete army, joining three or four or more of the counties together, for the composition of two such armies, which

may be readily made of 20,000 men, or mo or less, it shall be necessary, that her majesty do make choice of some fit noble person to be her lieutenant-general, to take charge of the said armies, whensoever they shall be compounded, and shall be used; who may be ready to have his commission, as soon as cause shall require to have the said armies used, according as the enemy shall be seen to direct his course for landing. And likewise her majesty may do well to name some other persons to be ready also to serve over the said army as high-marshal of the field, and one other to be the general of the horsemen, and one to be lieutenant of the lances, and one other of the light horse; and one to be master of the ordnance for the field, and one to be colonel-257 general of the infantry, and a sergeant-major: and to have one a provost-marshal and corporal of the field; and other inferior officers, to be named by the advice of the lieutenant-general. All which officers, so named aforehand, may be ready with the lieutenant to repair to the countries, when there shall be cause to have the army assembled. ANNO 1596.

And forasmuch as in all the countries the companies both of horsemen and of footmen have been of long time committed commonly to the government of the best men of worship and knowledge in the countries, who have been at great charges in keeping the said numbers in order, and seeing them to be furnished with armour, weapon, and other necessaries, and that the people of the countries, so distributed by bands to the government of the choice men of worship and value, will be most willing to serve and venture their lives with their said captains, I think it most necessary, that the said gentlemen be continued in the charge of their said bands, and not to be discharged without notable cause of default or lack, and not to commit the said people to the charge of strangers, unknown to them, who neither can have that natural care over them, nor have the affections of the people so devoted to them, as thereby to adventure their persons and their lives under them. Nevertheless, considering that when those numbers shall be assembled, and reduced to the body of an army, these particular

ANNO 1596. captains and leaders shall not be thought able to direct them in general sort, as is requisite in an army; therefore all such captains, with all their bands, shall be subject to the allowance and commandment of the general lieutenant of the army, and to the direction also of the former officers named for an army. For seeing that the inferior officers, as the lieutenants, sergeants, viewed to be inexperimented for their offices, or otherwise, to be removed, and more sufficient put in their places, by order of the lieutenant-general; and to avoid the discontentment of such as have already offices, as colonels of regiments, the said lieutenant-general may do well (except he see great defaults in the said colonels) to suffer them to be particular colonels of the said regiments, and yet to appoint them to be under the rule of the general colonel of the army; to be employed as the lieutenant-general shall order.

Item, The like order would be had, where any have had principal charge of leading of lances and light-horsemen, to suffer them to continue their charge; and yet to be directed under the lieutenants of the horsemen for the army.

Item, Because it may be doubted, that the forces of every country may not be in such readiness, nor so furnished with armour and weapon as were necessary, or that the persons levied, and on roll, as soldiers, may be found unable in their persons, it were very necessary, that presently into every maritime county upon the south and west, a fit person of knowledge might be chosen and sent by her majesty into the counties, to the lieutenant of the county, to be by him directed to take the view of the bands, both of horsemen and footmen, in every part of the shire; and to observe the defaults of the persons, armour, and furniture, and in her majesty's name to charge the captains of the band to see the same speedily reformed; and to give knowledge
258 thereof also to the lieutenant of the county, to move him to see the same supplied, as he will answer to her majesty.

Item, I think it reasonable, that wheresoever this army shall be compounded, and wheresoever the lieutenant-general shall come personally to execute the office of general,

that for the time of his residence in any county, he should, by virtue of his commission, authorize the lieutenant of that county to be his lieutenant-general, as long as the army shall remain in that county: so as the authority of the lieutenant of the county be not extinguished, but continue under the rule of the lieutenant-general of the army. ANNO 1596.

Item, I think it very necessary, that all persons being of the nobility, and being gentlemen, residing within every county, which are not by any former order limited to a particular charge of leading of horsemen or footmen, nor are limited to any martial charge, should be presently enjoined to furnish themselves, to the best of their power, both with horsemen and footmen, to be ready to serve at the commandment of the lieutenant of the army, as parcel of the army, when he shall come into the county: and to be directed by him for any special service requisite. Of which number, I think, there must be very many of every county, that are of the great livelihood, and may have at their commandment, besides their own family, many of their tenants, that are not allotted to any charge of particular bands. And of these persons the lieutenant of the county should be charged to make present inquisition; and by his letters in her majesty's name to command them to put themselves in order with their families, and such of their tenants as are not already sorted into bands, to be ready to serve in the army, as the lieutenant-general shall command. To whom the lieutenant of the county shall give knowledge of the number of such persons, and of their force.

I think it very necessary that letters be written to the lieutenants of every shire, and to the bishops of every diocese within the said shires, to inquire presently, what number of persons, that be householders, and of livings able to keep house, be recusants, and forbear to come to the church, according to the laws of the realm. And to cause all such persons to be apprehended, and removed from their dwelling-places, and to be committed to the prisons of the shires, or except they shall give good assurance in bonds with sureties sufficient, to remove out of the counties where their

ANNO 1596. dwelling is, to the custody of some other good loyal subject, dwelling in a maritime county, with condition not to depart from thence without special knowledge and licence of the lieutenant of the county where he did inhabit. And that all such horses, armour, and weapons, as such recusants shall have, be delivered to the custody of some public officer, to be employed for the common service of the realm; and the charge of maintenance of the horse to be borne with the goods of the recusant.

I mean not here to include such principal recusants as have been heretofore committed, and been released upon bonds, taken by the archbishop of Canterbury. But that all they be presently committed to his custody; and their horses and armour seized for present service.

259 *Item*, If there shall be any woman, being a widow, of value to keep house, that shall be also a recusant, she shall be in like manner committed or bound as a man, being a recusant, shall be. Or any horse or gelding able to serve, either with armour or weapon, or for carriage, the same also shall be seized for the service of the country, and maintained at the charges of the owner.

Item, If it shall be found that there be any single man, able in person to serve, though they be no householders, and that are recusants, the same shall also be apprehended and committed to prison, there to remain during the pleasure of the lieutenant of the shire, as he shall think fit: and their charges to be borne by themselves or parents, or otherwise to be put to labour for their own living without liberty, &c.

Item, If there shall be any person that hath any of their children fled out of the realm as fugitives, that same person shall be bound to good abearing, and not to have any intelligence with their children, or any ways to relieve them.

Item, It shall be necessary that all bishops and clergymen be enjoined to have in readiness as many able men, both horsemen and footmen, as they or any others, whose livings they have, were charged withal in the year 1588. The same to cause to be presented to the lieutenant of the shire, or to his deputy; so as they may be ready to serve

in the army of the forces that shall be compounded of that county. ANNO 1596.

I think it very necessary, that if the enemy shall land, and take footing in any place, with likelihood to continue, order be given that all horses, and other [cattle] besides, and all other things that may serve the enemy for victuals, be driven from those ports, with charge to the owners to see them kept from the possession of the enemy. And that all commodities which the enemy might take by grinding of any corn, either by watermill or windmill, may be impeached: which may be done by removing of the grinding-stones of the mills, and by taking away the cross-sails with [of] the windmills.

Item, For impeaching of the landing, besides the service that her majesty's shipping may most aptly do therein, there would be made ready some fieldpieces, to be drawn with horses, upon the first view of the enemy upon the coast: whereby the enemy's boats might be repulsed from free or speedy landing. For the defence of which ordnance some banks of earth would be raised, to defend them from the shot of the enemy.

All other particular devices to impeach the coming forward of the enemy, besides main force of horse and foot, are to be referred to the knowledge of the general, and the council of war, as by trenching and scouring of the ways, and by crossing all strait passages with felling trees, where the places may serve thereto.

The places also for their fresh waterings would be in the night disturbed; or so guarded, as the same might be kept from the enemy.

Some provision of fireworks would be provided, to burn the ships in the haven.

Number CXCIII. 260

A publication of the queen's majesty's commandment to the generals of her navy, to offend no manner person of

ANNO 1596.

any nation, but the subjects of the king of Spain, her majesty's enemy; or such as shall manifestly aid the said king, for the intended invasion of the queen's majesty's dominions. Thus endorsed by the lord treasurer's own hand: the whole being of his drawing up.

Thus endorsed on the other side by another hand.

A declaration of the causes moving the queen's majesty to prepare and send a navy to the seas, for defence of her realms against the king of Spain's forces. To be published by the generals of the said navy, to the intent that it shall appear to the world, that her majesty armeth her navy only to defend herself, and to offend her enemies; and not to offend any other that shall forbear to strengthen her enemy; but to use them with all lawful favour. May 1596.

TO all Christian people to whom this declaration shall come to be read or heard, greeting. We, Robert earl of Essex, &c. and Charles lord Howard, lord admiral of England, &c. having the charge of a royal navy, prepared, and sent to the seas, by the most excellent princess, the lady Elizabeth, queen of England, France, and Ireland, &c. do give all men knowledge, that this said navy under our charge is by her majesty prepared and sent to serve on the seas, for defence of her majesty's realm, dominions, and subjects, against such mighty forces as we are advised, from all parts of Christendom, to be already prepared by the king of Spain; and by further provision of men and ships, daily sent for, are to be mightily increased, to invade her majesty's realms, (as heretofore in the year of our Lord 1588 was attempted; even when there was a treaty continued by both their commissioners for a peace, with a greater army than ever before in his time was set to the seas. Though by God's goodness, and the valour and wisdom of her noble and faithful subjects, the same was notably made frustrate.)

And because her majesty hath good intelligence of perfect amity with all kings and princes of Christendom, saving

only with the king of Spain, who hath these many years most unjustly professed openly great inimity by divers actions, both against her royal person, and her countries and people, without any just cause first given on her majesty's part: therefore we, the said earl and lord admiral, do ascertain all persons, that we are most strictly commanded by her excellent majesty to forbear from offending in this our voyage of any manner person of what nation soever, except the said king's natural subjects, or such other born strangers as shall give to the said king manifest aid, with men, ships, artillery, victuals, or other warlike provision, for invasion of her majesty: which her majesty's commandment we mean dutifully to observe. And do therefore give strait charge to all persons that shall serve in this navy underneath us, upon pain of extreme punishment, to observe the same. ANNO 1596. 261

Yet to avoid all occasions that may breed question who they are, being not the king of Spain's subjects, that shall be charged by us to be manifest aiders for the furnishing and strengthening of the king's said forces, provided either by land or sea, to attempt any invasion of her majesty's countries, we do, for the liquidation of this doubt, earnestly and in God's name require and charge all persons that are not the said king's natural subjects, and yet that have given him aid with their ships, victuals, and munition, as is above-said, to withdraw all their said ships prepared for the war, and all their provisions for hostility, out of any haven of Spain or Portingal, and from the company and service with the king's ships against our navy, and therewith to return, either to their own countries, or, if they so shall like, to come to our navy; to whom, in the reverend name of our sovereign lady the queen's majesty, we do promise all security, both for their persons and goods, to be used and defended as friends, and to suffer all their ships and provisions that were either taken by the king of Spain, or intended for his services, and that shall be by the owner withdrawn from his aid, to remain in their own free dispositions, so as the same be used in all sorts as friends, and

ANNO 1596. not enemies to the queen's majesty, and to us her generals. And if any shall, upon knowledge of this her majesty's most honourable order, and of our promise to observe the same as favourably as we may, willingly and manifestly refuse to accept this our offer, and shall not endeavour themselves to perform this reasonable request, tending to their good and liberty, we shall then be justly moved, as by the law of arms we may, to take and use all such, for refusing this our offer, as manifest aiders of the king of Spain with forces to invade her majesty's dominions, and so, manifest enemies to us. And in such cause of that refusal, if any harm shall happen by any attempts to be made against their persons, ships, and goods, by any of our navy for their aiding of the said king, there shall be no just cause for them hereafter to complain, or to procure their natural princes and lords to solicit restitution or amends for the same.

And for the more notification hereof, we have thought good to have the original hereof to be signed with our hands and with our seals, to be seen by any that will require to read or see the same: and likewise we have put the same in print, in French, Italian, Dutch, and Spanish. And have 262 also caused the same to be distributed into as many ports of Spain and Portingal as conveniently might be, for the better knowledge to be had in the said ports.

Number CXCIV.

A prayer of thanksgiving for the queen's success against Spain, in the year 1596*: composed by the lord treasurer Burghley, July* 3. *Printed in a sheet of paper. This transcribed from his own MS.*

O LORD God of hosts, everlasting and most merciful Father; we thine unworthy creatures yield unto thy divine Majesty all possible praise and humble thanks for thine infinite benefits, which thou hast of long time plentifully poured upon thine handmaiden and humble servant, our

sovereign lady and queen, and upon her whole realm, and us her subjects, the people of this kingdom. And namely, O Lord, for thy gracious respecting us in the merits of thy dear Son our Saviour, and by his interest passing over and forgiving our manifold sins: Thou hast this present summer so favourably conducted the royal navy and army, sent to the seas by our gracious queen, (not for any other worldly respect, but only for the defence of this realm and us thy people, against the mighty preparations of our enemies, threatening our ruin,) by safely directing them unto places appointed, and by strengthening the governors and leaders of the same with counsel and resolution; and blessing them with notable victories, both by sea and land: whereby the insolencies and pride of our enemies, which sought our conquest and subversion, is by these late victories daunted, repulsed, and abated. ANNO 1596.

Grant unto us, most merciful Father, the grace with due thankfulness to acknowledge thy fatherly goodness extended upon us by thy singular favour shewed to thy servant and minister, our sovereign lady and queen. And for thy holy name continue these thy wonderful blessings upon us, to defend us against our enemies, and bless us with thy graceful hand, to the endless praise of thy holy name, and to our lasting joy.

And direct our armies by thy providence and favourable support, to finish these late victories, to the honour of our sovereign, and safety of her realm, that hath most carefully made the same able to overmatch her enemies: so as the noblemen and all others serving in the same navy and army in their charge, may with much honour, triumph, and safety, return home to their countries, and to give thee due thanks for thy special favour marvellously shewed unto them, in preserving of them all this summer-time from all contagion and mortality by sword or sickness; notwithstanding their force and violence most manfully exercised against their enemies, to the vanquishing great numbers both by sea and land, and to the destruction of their most mighty ships that heretofore have attempted to invade this

ANNO 1596. realm, and of their forts and castles, and waste of their notable substances of their churches, without hurting any
263 person that did yield, or of any women or children, or religious persons. To whom all favour was shewed that they did require.

All which prosperous successes we do most justly acknowledge, O Lord, to have proceeded from thy special favour. To whom, with thy Son, and the Holy Ghost, be all honour and praise. *Amen.*

Set forth by authority.

Number CXCV.

Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: advising what is necessary to be done in this time of great danger: and for an ecclesiastical commission for those parts.

My most honourable good lord,

I WOULD be right sorry, that your lordship's want of health should hinder her majesty's service now, when the whole land standeth most in need of your wise and grave counsel. I pray God it be not an occasion of some great plague for our sins. The enemy groweth strong and prospereth: good men and valiant men are taken away on our side; wise men are enfeebled to do as heretofore, and as they would do: and yet the most of us live in security. The Lord be merciful unto us.

I beseech your lordship, give me leave to inform your good lordship what I wish were presently done. 1. That most special care be had of the guarding of her majesty's most royal person. 2. That all offices of state and in the court be presently furnished with the fittest men, &c. 3. That a perfect reconciliation be made among the nobility, wheresoever there hath been any jarring: that all may join together to fight *pro rege, lege, et grege;* but cannot be perfectly done, except by true repentance we be first reconciled to God. And indeed that is the first. I beseech your lordship pardon my boldness, and continue your care: that

this poor country [of York and the north] may have a lord president and lord lieutenant; and that the ecclesiastical commission may be renewed: it is for God's glory, and her majesty's service. And I have been a suitor to have it renewed, more than a year. And now I send my man for that purpose. ANNO 1596.

The Lord bless you, and restore you to your perfect health again. From York, the 3d of May, 1596.

Your good lordship's in Christ most assured,

Matth. Ebor.

Number CXCVI. 264

Part of a letter from a person unknown of the clergy, to a person of quality; shewing the rigour of judge Anderson towards the clergy and preachers of Lincolnshire, when he went the assizes there, in charging them with Brownism. Writ from Alford.

.....SHALL I presume to be tedious unto you, and to trouble you with a sorrowful discourse, if I may. The case of our country [Lincoln] is this.

Since my lord Anderson hath obtained to ride this circuit, [in the year 1596,] the ministry is grown into intolerable contempt: which is universally imputed unto him, both by those that would, and those that would not have it so. I am not ignorant how dangerous it is to speak the truth of mighty men, and how unlawful it is by the word of God to malign the rulers of the people. Neither, I thank God, have I any affection to blot paper with depraving words. And therefore I will only report to you what is done, and no further.

My lord Anderson, in his first and second charge at Lincoln, insinuated, with wonderful vehemency, that the country is troubled with Brownists, with disciplinarians, as he called them, and erectors of presbyteries. I speak the truth to you, sir: having been at Alford these fourteen years, I never heard of any Brownist, but only one Tho. Man, who

ANNO 1596.

presently fled upon his schism; nor do know any minister or other in all this country that doth so much as favour the erecting of a presbytery. Neither are the people made acquainted with the controversy of discipline in all Lindsey coast that I can perceive: for men have enough to do to stand by that religion which her blessed majesty hath approved unto us by her express laws. Nevertheless, the ill-affected people, upon the occasion these two charges, do think all religion will be made Brownism. And this judge, with so much wrath, so many oaths, and such reproachful revilings upon the bench, carrieth himself, that there is offence taken at it, by persons of principal credit and note, throughout all the circuits.

If he take information from covert papists of the state of the church there, how lamentable shall our case be!

There have been assayes given to extend the statute of recusancy to those that go to hear sermons elsewhere, though at other times they frequent their own church, and hear divine service most dutifully. In this charge this last time he called the preachers knaves, saying, that they would start up in the pulpit and speak against every body. And whereas there was the last Lent obtained by lord Clinton, and the deputy lieutenants for those parts, with other justices, the bishop's allowance, with certain conditions, for a meeting to be held at Lowth, to spend the whole day in the hearing of the word, wherein men might fast if they would; and thereupon certain preachers, being moved by them, preached there, and urged thereupon the statute for conventicles, and animated the grand jury accordingly, affirming, that he would complain to her majesty of any (though never so great) which should shew themselves discontented with the jury for any such matter.

Judge Anderson's charge at the assizes.

The demeanour of him and the other judge, as they sit by turns upon the gaol, (with reverence I speak it,) in these matters, is flat opposite: and they which are maliciously affected, when Mr. Justice Clinch sitteth upon the gaol, do labour to adjourn their complaints (though they be before upon the file) to the next assize: and the gentlemen in the

several shires are endangered by this means to be cast into a faction. The best is, that there is little faction likely to grow among the ministers hereby: for howsoever they differ otherwise, they hold this to be the common cause, and do heartily wish a more Christian proceeding. Now the reason why a faction is like to grow in the one, and not in the other, is very evident: and that is this, that there are very few in the ministry which are papists in their hearts. And the most must needs love the common cause of religion: for the other sort, you are wise enough to consider the difference. ANNO 1596. Ministers here.

Will you hear some instances of these proceedings. First, by credible information at Northampton, he shewed himself greatly grieved at him which preached at the assizes there. At Leicester likewise with the preacher there; where he also fell out with the high sheriff, and shewed himself displeased with the grand jury; both upon the same occasion. And at Nottingham there was offensive variance between him and one of the justices about such matters. Only they say, one Beaver, a preacher about Nottinghamshire, contentiously and dangerously, opposite to all the godly and learned preachers of those parts, in a question about the sacrament, to wit, that it was not necessary to inquire how Christ is present in it; preaching before him and others, shewing the contradiction of his spirit, pleased him well, and was kindly used by him. As for others, he is informed, (as seemeth by his own speeches,) and so taketh it also himself, (when he heareth them himself,) that they rail upon him: whereupon he cometh inflamed with wrath to the bench. When the cause is inquired into, they will lament, which may do no more than lament; and they will be angry, which may be angry by authority.

And that which is certainly known at Lincoln, Mr. Allen, some time the preacher at Lowth, a man well accepted, by occasion of some variance between a justice of peace and him about a lease, which the justice would have of his parsonage, was indirectly and strangely pursued. He was indicted by the said justice's means for not reading all [the prayers] at once, among other like things, being a good preacher, (as

ANNO 1596.

you know,) and using to omit part of it, for the sermon. Of his offence of law I can say nothing; but these two things I can avouch: first, that he sheweth conformable affections, being a man that is well liked of the bishop, and hath subscribed: secondly, that I have never heard in any cases of like quality (the party being so submissive and tractable) the like proceeding in all my life, nor of like effect. Mr.
266 Allen was caused to go to the bar, and commanded to hold up his hand there: and my lord Anderson standing up, bent himself towards him with a strange fierceness of countenance. To be brief, after he had insinuated some grievous faults (but unnamed) against the man, to move some offensive suspicion to the standers by, he called him one of the great distempers, putting him out of countenance, and not suffering to speak for himself. He called him *knave* oftentimes, and *rebellious knave*, with manifold reproaches besides: whereby (I am not about to speak at large, but a most true word unto you) all the honest hearts in the shire were grieved, and the ungodly were notably animated. The simple people rejoiced in their return homeward, saying, that a minister's cause could not be so much as heard at the assizes, and gathered, that all preaching was now, as it were, cried down.

My lord Anderson said indeed, in his charge, that he would hunt all the puritans out of his circuit: and so said his man Joh. Anderson, before he came to his circuit. And as for this John, I am afraid he meaneth by puritans all, both papists and atheists.

Allen's arraignment.

This one thing was worth the marking in Mr. Allen's arraignment, (for so it was generally called in the country,) that the bishop sitting by very silent, when Mr. Allen, upon some speech, wherein judgment in divinity is required, referred himself in that point to his ordinary there sitting, the judge entertained that speech with marvellous indignation, affirming, that he was his ordinary and the bishop both, in that place, and daring all that should take his part. Insomuch that sir George Sampal, sitting on that other side of the judge, might not be endured with patience to say

softly, that Mr. Allen was an honest man, and of good conversation, though he be universally so reputed. ANNO 1596.

To have qualified this proceeding, there was means used before. For many preachers, knowing the judge's humour, went to the bishop, to entreat him to labour the judge to more mildness than his custom was: which the bishop promised to do. And after it was past, in like manner a great number of the ministers, being that day in Lincoln about provision of their armour, lamented his proceeding as their general hurt.

There was another minister also at the assizes strangely handled, ever through the bare opinion which wicked men have of this judge. The name of the man was Aderster, of Gosbertowne: he had belike before, some years past, passed some undecent and undiscreet speeches, for which he deserved censure; and had been accordingly deeply censured, both ecclesiastically and civilly, until that at last the matter was advanced to the high commission at London. In conclusion, my lord's grace of Canterbury, wisely apprehending belike the distinction that was in the cause, to wit, both that the party had spoken intolerable words, and that his adversaries exhibited them in other construction than ever he intended, after that the man was sufficiently humbled by silencing and deprivation, and other like censures, (as he thought,) he thought fit to recommend him, and to license him again to preach through his whole province; dealing otherwise also very favourably with him. And yet this man, forsooth, was brought by his warrant to the assizes, and there had the old matter objected against 267
him again; and notwithstanding these allegations, could not be dismissed without divers encumbrances and bonds. In this proceeding, who seeth not what opinion these accusers had of this judge, to bring such a matter before him?

Alas! sir, what discontentments will these things breed, if there be no redress! The higher magistrates are very honourable and wise, and know best what they have to do. *Malo nodo malus cuneus*, is a true proverb: and the sense is true. But I will pray for some which are more employed

ANNO 1596. than watched, though well enough are known, that they seek not *nodum in scirpo.* Most certainly, sir, there are no schisms in this country that give occasion to these proceedings. I would to God it would please the rt. hon. lords of her majesty's council to cause an uniform interpretation of all the statutes for church causes; wherein the judges do differ in opinion. For want thereof it cometh to pass, that the same cause at the selfsame time, in divers parts of the realm, is diversly, yea in effect contrarily judged and enforced upon juries: the same cause, I say, without differing in any one circumstance, save only in the opinion and affection of the judges. And I would to God, that they which judge in religious causes, though in the name of civil affairs, would either get some more knowledge in religion and God's word than my lord Anderson hath, or else might be assisted in all such causes by those which have.

My lord Anderson was *bonus murus* (like) for Martin [Marprelate] and such like. But, alas! to what purpose have we kept the people ignorant all this while of all those questions and courses, if for our labour now, we and many more of her majesty's most loving subjects shall be introduced fautors of that which we have always oppugned? Well, we will not be discouraged in our loyal affection to her majesty; but we will comfort ourselves with our rude country proverb, that we are persuaded *that much water goes by the mill that the miller never knows of:* yea, we are assured, that her majesty would not have her own religion discountenanced, nor her quiet and loving people disquieted and grieved.

Number CXCVII.

Day, bishop of Winton, deceased this year: whose last will bare date Sept. the 11*th*, 1596; *and was acknowledged by the testator as his last will, Sept.* 15: *and was proved by the executors Oct.* 2. *Which will the pious bishop thus began:*

I WILLIAM DAY, by God's permission, lord bishop

of Winchester, being whole in mind, and sick in body, (thanks be to Almighty God,) make this my last will and testament, &c. First, I commend my soul into the hands of Almighty God, my Creator, trusting verily that he will receive it to his mercy for Jesus Christ's sake, my only redeemer, mediator, and advocate; nothing doubting but that the same Spirit that raised Christ from death will also quicken my mortal body, and make it like to his glorious body, by that power whereby he is able to subdue all things to himself.—By the legacies of his will it appears he left a wife; to whom he bequeathed one standing cup with a cover, whole gilt, weighing 35 ounces, and a chafingdish of silver, weighing 28 ounces, a spout-pot of silver, and feather-bed, &c. Two sons, William and Richard, his executors: and unto his son Richard all his books, saving such English books as his son William should choose. And a daughter, Elizabeth; to whom he gave 500*l.* to be delivered to her within two years after his death. Rachel Barker, his granddaughter, and Elizabeth Barker, his sister; legacies to them also. His daughter Ridley; to her, four angels, to make her a ring. To his daughter Susan Cox, and her sister Rachel Barker, and Elizabeth Day, one portague of gold to each; which commonly weigh value at seven angels. ANNO 1596. 268

Number CXCVIII.

This year put an end also to Fletcher, bishop of London, who seems to have died under the queen's displeasure: the occasion whereof was his marrying a lady not long before his death. See some account of it in Archbishop Whitgift's Life, book iv. ch. 13. *His letter to the lord treasurer in behalf of his brother Dr. Fletcher, to be made an extraordinary master in chancery, as Dr. Cæsar was.*

HE had a brother, Dr. Fletcher, a civilian, a person of note and use in those times, employed by the queen in several honourable embassies abroad: in whose behalf the

ANNO 1596. bishop in this last year of his life wrote an earnest letter to the lord treasurer, which was as followeth; *To be made as Dr. Cæsar, an extraordinary master in chancery.*

As I have found your lordship's honourable aid to me in my occasions, so I humbly pray your lordship to give me leave to be a mover and solicitor hereby for my brother, Dr. Fletcher, to your good lordship: whom, if he were not as he is, I might truly commend to your lordship, to be worthy of regard. But your lordship hath much signified your honour's respect of him, his service, in place where he is, being of much pain and employment without intermission, is notwithstanding accompanied by a stipend very unproportionable to his charge and labours. And yet is obnoxious to a people that are jealous of all dealing and solicitation even of their own agents; especially in matters of expenses and charges imposed, as if their negligence or subordination were the cause thereof. On the other side, there
269 followeth him the mislike and displeasure of great persons; for that he is enforced oftentimes to deliver unto them many unpleasing and denying messages on the city's behalf; and to solicit against the immoderate desires of some noblemen and others of the court. Wherein he cannot find that moderation, but in very few, to excuse the messenger for the duty of his place.

Your lordship also best knoweth his employments in his majesty's and his country's services in Scotland with Mr. Randolph, in Germany, Hamburgh, and Stade, with very good effect of the trade, till this day. In Russia, for the repair of the English intercourse then interrupted, and in a manner dissolved; but since greatly increased, and in special sort continued: the regard of all which toward him, consisteth yet in favour to come. It hath pleased her majesty, in other matters besides these, to take knowledge of him; and at his going to Russia, to admit him extraordinary of the requests. And if now it may like her highness, that in this infirmity of Mr. Rockbie he might stand as Dr. Cæsar did, and so, upon occasion befalling, to be called further to that place of service, he would be found faithful. Where-

unto if by your lordship's good and favourable word in his behalf, as opportunity may serve, he shall find furtherance, your lordship shall increase his duty and service with all faithfulness to your lordship, and add more to both our prayers and observance, which unfeignedly we owe always to your honour. Whom I pray God to bless with cheerfulness and comfort of body and mind in all your lordship's manifold and great affairs. From Fulham, the 17th of May. ANNO 1596.

Your lordship's ever in Christ bounden,

Rich. London.

Number CXCIX.

Henry earl of Huntington, lord president of the council in the north, concluded his life this year: of whom Hugh Broughton, the great learned man for all Jewish learning, soon after his death, had these words:

"MY honourable patron, whose rest is in paradise: "whom my pen must honour; for that he was so deep for "judgment in the chief heads of all the Bible: so sincere "for affection in the heart of religion, that he is not like "ever to be overmatched by any."

And Ockland, a learned poet in those times, in his book, entitled *Elizabetha*, (wherein are characters given of the queen's great ministers,) hath these verses of the said earl:

Hic veterum libros ineunte ætate studendo,
Qui Græce sophiam, vel qui scripsere Latine,
Volvit; collusor puero post seria regi:
Magnorum antiqua regum de stirpe propago.
Præconem hic sacrum satrapas attentior audit,
Exprimit, et vita morum pietate relucens.

Eduardi regis condiscipulus et collusor.

ANNO 1596.

Number CC.

270 *Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, to their high chancellor, concerning the lectures to be read at Gresham college. Jealous of the injury those lectures might occasion to the university.*

Right honourable my singular good lord,

MAY it please you to understand, that whereas certain lectures were lately founded by sir Thomas Gresham deceased, to be read within the city of London by professors of several arts, to be chosen by the lord mayor and commonalty of that city; the said mayor and his brethren have directed letters to our university of Cambridge, requesting us to nominate unto them two of our meetest men in every faculty; with like petition made to the university of Oxenford, to name two other. Out of which four they would elect one for every lecture, as by the copy of that letter may more at large appear.

Wherein doubting that in time it may be greatly prejudicial to our university, I have refrained to do any thing, until I mought have your honour's allowance thereof. So most humbly praying to know your pleasure therein, I recommend my service to your lordship's commands. At Cambridge, Jan. the 30th, 1596.

Your honour's most bounden ever,

Jo. Jegon, vice-chan.

Number CCI.

William Lambarde, a justice of peace in Kent, a learned antiquarian, that wrote the Perambulation of Kent, and Eirenarchia, his letter to the lord treasurer Burghley, concerning the last will of the lord Cobham, (who died this year,) and some of his legacies. He was constable of Dover castle, and lord chamberlain to the queen.

ALBEIT, my most honourable and gracious lord, that my lord Cobham will present your lordship with a brief

and large copy of the last will of that most honourable and Christian lord both in life and death, his late departed good father; yet forasmuch as his last disposition standeth not only in his known testament, but chiefly in the declaration of a secret confidence reposed in sir Joh. Leveson, Mr. Fane, the lieutenant of Dover castle, and myself; whereof he hath also in these his last desires recommended the oversight to your good lordship and Mr. Secretary, I take it to stand both with his own good pleasure and my duty, 271 to make known hereby (since your lordship's indisposition of body permitteth not mine access) the heads and very contents of the same. ANNO 1596.

His lordship therefore minding an undoubted accomplishment of his godly and fatherly intentions, as well towards the poor, as his own children, did in his lifetime put into the hands of sir John Leveson the sum of 5,600*l.* almost in ready money, over and besides rich furniture of his late lady's provision, amounting in his own estimation to the valore of 2000 marks. His commandment to us was, that with 2000*l.* or more of these monies, the late suppressed college of Cobham should be reedified, and endowed with livelihood for the perpetual maintenance of twenty poor. Next, that with 2000*l.* or thereabouts, his second son, sir William Brook, should be freed out of debt. For to so much he knew him to be endangered by mortgage of his lands and leases, and by other bonds. And lastly, that an interest for life in some competent dwelling-house be procured for his third son, Mr. Geo. Brook. And that some consideration should be taken of the poor estate of his daughter's children by Mr. Edward Bocher. As for these furnitures, he would have them to be delivered to such of his three sons as should first bestow himself in marriage.

Give me leave, most honourable lord, to add somewhat of his and of mine, concerning my now lord Cobham and his brethren: which neither it will grieve you to hear, nor I, without their wrong, may pretermit to write. We find them all not only to concur in most cheerful obedience to the utmost execution of their good father's will and pur-

ANNO 1596. poses, but also to contend among themselves, whether of them shall be more kind and bountiful to the other. Whereof I most humbly beseech your good lordship to take knowledge, and to confirm it in them with your good liking; their honourable father being moved by me to use them, or some of them, now, for the execution of his will, however in the setting down of his former wills he had pretermitted them, in regard, as I conceived, of their minorities. He answered thus, I would well to follow the example of my father herein; who, notwithstanding that I and other of my brethren were then of man's estate, ordained Benedict Spinola and Mr. Osborn to be his executors.

I have said enough, if not too much, considering the present weakness of your lordship's body: which I most heartily pray the heavenly Physician to recure. And so most humbly take my leave. From Lincoln's Inn, the 15th of March.

Your good lordship's most humble, and bounden,
by your manifold favours,
Will. Lambarde.

272 Number CCII.

The copy of a letter, written by Ribadeneyra, the Jesuit, to D. Juan de Idiaque. Bearing date the 10*th of March,* 1596. *Translated out of Spanish. Upon the defeat of the Spaniard at Cales. It seems to be a letter intercepted.*

I FEARFULLY behold the judgments of God hanging over our heads, and see that we live only by miracle: that the enemy so soon left Cales; that they so courteously used their captives; that the tumults of the grandees and gentry of this kingdom (which are swollen full of wrath against ye that govern the king) should be so soon pacified; that the India fleet escaped when the enemy was shipping at the Cape, watching for it, surely was by miracle; and your lordship knoweth what a great scourge it would have been to all Christendom, if any of these had fallen out

otherwise in this so necessitous a time. Certainly we cannot live always in this manner: and therefore must seek means to remedy it: for if we do not help it by one way or other, I fear I may too properly cite the sentence of a great author, *Quorum Deus vult mutare fortunam, corrumpit consilia.* ANNO 1596.

Verily, sir, I am much grieved, and my soul hath oftentime been thoroughly vexed to hear in this occasion how the multitude murmur against his majesty, saying, He neither doth any thing himself, nor will give way to others. Therefore are they determining to make the prince to rise, and with him to seek amendment of these many mischiefs. And the more discreet men of the best rank wish that God would take away the king, or the people possess themselves of the prince. And this resentment I understand is general. God my Saviour help us. What hath this holy man done, (for such I hold the king *coram Deo;*) what, I say, hath this man done, that even those that love him best, desire his life may endure no longer? I have asked the causes; it is answered, He neither doth, nor will suffer others to reform these abuses. [And so the letter endeth.]

Number CCIII. 273

Anthony Coply, a popish gentleman, now a prisoner; some time in service abroad: his informations after his return, concerning affairs in Flanders, Spain, &c. To Mr. Will. Wade, 1596. *Addressed to the lords.*

BEING in my return home to England, a faithful and voluntary return to all the duties of a true subject towards prince and country, I do willingly and humbly obey, so far forth as I am able, to advertise hereby such particulars of estate beyond the seas as may any ways redound to the good of my country; at least discharge my duty in so doing, according as I am thereunto by commission enjoined.

First therefore and foremost, touching the state of Flanders, so it is, (for ought I could ever gather of the speeches Flanders.

ANNO 1596. and discourses of men, as well natives of the land, as soldiers of all nations in those parts,) that the prince of Parma now of late hath lost his credit and the good-will of either kingdom; being his demeanour (ever since the time that the king of Spain withdrew the garrisons out of Placenza, and other his forts about Parma) much altered in the Low Countries from that it hath been heretofore; namely, as well in his services towards the said king, as in other his worthy conditions, which made him heretofore so much honoured and beloved. For being his estate in Italy, (by occasion aforesaid,) free from all Spanish subjection, since that time, as it hath been noted of the more politic sort of his court, (for myself, under correction, will not affirm for truth any thing I here set down touching the said prince, neither can I,) only I will explain unto your honours what I have perceived, during my being in Flanders, by the discourse of the better sort of men there, to be the present state of those parts.

And touching the prince of Parma, ... that he polled Flanders daily for Italy's sake: where in the town of Parma it is thought he hath an infinite treasure; and is supposed to exceed in riches at this present any one duke of Italy beside.

The means he useth in Flanders for such his enrichment is both upon the burghers and upon the soldiers too. Upon the burgher by mean of the soldier in this sort. He determineth beforehand what town to make his hand of: which being conceived, then conformably he giveth order to some one regiment or other to march toward that town, with commission to be billeted there that winter, or so long as is ordained. Now the poor burghers and inhabitants of that place, rather than to have soldiers harboured among them, (which is a wonderful undoing of towns in the Low Countries,) being the soldiers while they live so wondrous ill paid, that needs they must grate upon the poor burghers for mere necessity, they will rather present his highness, to
274 the end to be exempt of such distresses, a substantial sum of money at once, or else compound to be his tributary, so

long paying monthly or quarterly so much as between the prince and them shall be agreed upon. ANNO 1596.

This is one of his most ordinary and often means he useth every winter season. And this means is worth him yearly infinitely, as may be conceived.

Other shifts he useth, but of smaller moment, whereby he the rather easily bringeth his riches about, by reason divers naughty nobility of the land (who have their shares therein) endeavour to induce the commons to it for their own advantage. Insomuch as the burgher beginneth already to spy the fraud of their nobles; and wish in their common discourse, that rather a duke of Alva might govern them again: who indeed, quoth they, plagued our nobility; but in the mean time the commons were spared, and committed to their profit without extrusion.

Now touching the advantage his highness maketh of the soldier. He forceth them to be content with their pay in coarse northern baize, kersies, scammotts, base silks and satins, and such like trash, as is uttered to them at a price twice more than the worth. Insomuch as when with much ado a soldier hath obtained a libranca of an 100 crowns of his pay to be paid him in those kinds of stuffs, (which otherwise is not granted,) then goeth he to Antwerp to the librador, (which is an officer there purposely ordained to discharge such comers with such payment,) and is by one in the number, (and none may go to other than his shop,) he must, when all comes to all, be content with one part of three, and very little more. As, for his 100 crowns, to take an 100 franks. And so *Via*, away. Then doth the merchant in the town, who buyeth this stuff of the soldier, (for it is good for no use,) bring the said stuff again into the librador's shop, whence first it came, only accepting for his pains a miserie, God-wot, and so departeth. Insomuch as one piece, I have seen myself, in one day brought in and delivered out again to new comers [no] less than six times. So that one piece oftentimes serveth an hundred comers and more: which to the end it may be the better able to do, the merchants abroad in the town are secretly forbidden, not to buy of the soldier, but whole pieces ever, as

ANNO 1596. they are delivered out of the first shop, to the end it may be the more able to serve many. Mean time the clerks of the offices at Brussels, whence all these librancas or decrees of the prince proceedeth, and are enregistered, account them to the king, as importing good pay to the soldier; while in the mean time the king is thus abused, and the soldier wonderfully discontented. Thus of three parts, the soldier is glad of one, and the prince enjoyeth the rest.

Which dealing the Spaniard in Flanders perceiving, two regiments of them mutinied twice in one year's space. For the which the one was reformed and cast, to their wonderful discontentment, having been a regiment standing in their colours well nigh eighty years, and continually employed in the services of their country ever since the beginning. And the other is now in France; the duke of Pastrana grieved to see these abuses and disservices to his
275 king while he was in Flanders: and therefore, in very discontented sort, this time twelvemonth, took his leave, with much ado, of his prince, and returned to Spain: where it is thought he hath particularly informed the king of all.

The Spaniard supposeth the prince of Parma his alienation to proceed out of England, imputing much treason to him in his admittance of her majesty's ambassadors the year 88. At which time, in being faithful to the king in his action, and preparations for England, they say, he was more a friend to England than Spain. Briefly, the Spaniard seeing how much the prince wracketh all the riches of Flanders into Italy, and how little he hath availed the king since of late time, towards the recovery and subjection of his Low Countries; namely, and especially perceiving how at this present Italians they be for the most part about him, that rule the roast: also the nobility of the Low Countries, how much they begin daily more and more Italianated, and is very affectionated: likewise, seeing themselves disgraced in the court, and little set by in respect, they adjudge him in hucker-mucker an enemy to their king and the estate. Insomuch as the wiser of them suppose, that their king dared not all this while depose him from his charge of the Low Countries, lest having, as he hath, the

The Spaniard.

riches of the land, and the hearts of the nobility, he may chance to become a prince of Orange, and more than he, considering his present might and power in Italy likewise. ANNO 1596.

But, say they, if treason should shew itself, yet have we a son of his in Spain, in our king's hand. And

Touching the king of Spain's fleet, it is so that he hath one in perfect readiness in the port of Bisca and Gallicia, and his men in all readiness along these coasts, attending to be employed. Albeit they have written out of Spain to Spaniards their friends, in Flanders, that artillery is not yet all come out of Italy for the fleet, which is expected. Spain's fleet.

Hugh Owen. Persons.

Hugh Owen, at his late repair to Flanders, giveth out, that no action is apparently intended in Spain against England this year nor next ensuing. Howbeit Persons hath written down much assurance to the contrary; putting the matter out of all doubt and controversy.

Doway.

The citizens of Doway have sued of late to have the English seminary at Rhemes again in their town: were it not the wars along these parts of France, (which is likely to endanger their safe passage by the way,) it is thought they would: for, as I understand, English begin to be weary of Rhemes by reason of the wars thereabouts. In respect of which they are with the rest of the inhabitants put to watch and ward the town at their turns.

Sir William Stanley

Is in Spain lacking no maintenance, as I hear, but credit to be employed.

English catholics abroad. Cripps 276

Hath been lately well rewarded by the king of Spain for his sea-service against the Turk.

In fine, my good lords, so it is, that divers English gentlemen there are beyond the seas, whose faith to England and her majesty's happy estate is most sincere and loyal; and who only for their conscience (for ought I could ever know to the contrary) have betaken themselves to foreign infelicity and misadventures; willing, if occasion were, to lose life and all for England and her majesty, might they

ANNO 1596. by your honours' favours be but permitted to live at home. But, so it is, that surely the misery a great many of them sustain abroad, (not malice to our country,) makes them now and then speak at all adventures, as desperate men. Whereas, if with mercy, they say, they might be permitted to come and live at home, doubtless their truth to prince and country would be unfeigned.

I cannot indeed, neither will I, my good lords, execute the malice of a great many; who, as their state is desperate at home, so foresee they little what event betide our country. Such be those as either be condemned traitors at home, or have by their notorious disservices at home deserved amiss, as my lord of Westmerland, sir Will. Stanley, cardinal Allen, Paget, and the rest: or else such as being themselves but base fellows, and born to no good fortune in England, neither have they within themselves wherewith to deserve good fortune, being their minds but base either to do or suffer honourably, wish perchance, with all their hearts, mischief to our dear country, and a troubled water, wherein to catch fishes.

These are such as have either been base serving tacks in England, and fain would be gentlemen abroad, or else do come over for some egregious villainies by them at home committed, justly perchance deserving the gallows.

But now to make an end of mine own particular. Surely, right honourable, myself was always of those kind of gentlemen beyond the seas, as always did honour and pray for the happy state of my country, and am ready to [venture] 10,000 lives for the same against all the enemies and invaders thereof, if need require. And in this true and sincere mind I hope to continue to my life's end. And whereas I served with the enemy in Flanders, which is the demerit for which I rest presently in durance, and answerable to the justice of the law; my good lords and right honourable, I humbly submit my life to favour for the same with all humility. May my death in her majesty's service, in the behalf of my country, make amends hereafter for such my offence. I vow it, at all occasions in my heart; and by these lines of mine own writing, to her majesty, my coun-

try, and your honours all. And with this mind ventured I lately into England, my good lords, even at all adventures; not so much curious to come in with a pardon, as because I know my heart guilty of all love and duty to my country, willing and resolved in time to come well to deserve. Favour me, therefore, my honourable good lords, and pardon the fault of my indiscretion hitherto, humbly I beseech you. ANNO 1596.

If I departed the realm but a child, I am returned yet young enough to serve it many years. I am not waxed old in my offence to my country, but more able I return home to serve it, than when, but a child, I departed from it. And if I fare well at your honours' hands, it may chance other gentlemen will return home, who are yet beyond seas. Who because they thought themselves wiser a great deal than I, rather gave place to my ambition to return home foremost, than themselves would venture it. 277

Anthony Copley.

Number CCIV.

Another letter of Mr. Copley to the lords of the council, concerning English gentlemen abroad.

ACCORDING to your demand, I have here underneath expressed such particulars of particular English gentlemen and others of our nation as are known unto me beyond the seas; namely, their abodes; where their entertainment; what it is; and how I have found them inclined, so far forth as by conversation I could conceive of them, or by privy discourse of others attain unto.

Cardinal Allen and D. Lewis, who is presently bishop of Casane, a city of the kingdom of Naples, I understand are at odds with one another, and at jealousies touching points of honour. In respect of which, in a manner, all Englishmen in Italy, namely, the seminary in Rome, is divided into faction: the one holding with the cardinal, the other with the bishop. Cardinal Allen, D. Lewis.

ANNO 1596. The cardinal's living is valued at this present at 15,000 crowns by the year: which is 4500 of our pounds. His archbishopric of Macklin in Brabant, I hear, he will exchange for an abbey in Spain, or, as other say, exchange the revenues thereof with the king of Spain for a certain sum of money, yearly to be paid him out of the king's exchequer in Spain and Flanders: for by reason of the wars in Brabant the said bishopric is not yearly worth him alike; and therefore rather choosing a certain for it of the king yearly, than to stand at the courtesy of the wars, what it may afford him.

Bishop Lewis. Contrarywise bishop Lewis contenteth himself, as I hear, very well with the little he hath, in respect of the cardinal, and maintaineth his credit well in the pope's court: for he is a very courtly and courteous gentleman, affable, and withal esteemed very wise.

Of their affections and actions against England, surely, sir, I can say nothing. Only, I suppose, they are both presently so well settled, that if they will regard but their own particular, and be content with their own good fortunes, they need not of them be busy, in war matters, tending to the destruction of this their noble country. They hope for
278 a far greater preferment in Italy than England can yield them; if, as men say, to be one day pope is the sum of either their desires.

Cardinal Allen hath about him divers English gentlemen; as Mr. Banes, who hath been long out of England, and sometimes in Poland with the young cardinal of that country; a gentleman of some forty years of age, or rather upward, well languaged, and otherwise very well qualified, discreet, secret, and inclined to high matters. He is a cardinal's secretary of outlandish languages.

Tho. Hesket. Thomas Hesket is the cardinal's nephew; a virtuous young man: and that is all. He likewise is chief with his

John Thatcher. said uncle. John Thatcher is another: a Sussex youth well conditioned, of civil behaviour: discovered to bear the

Lampson. state of England great good-will. One Lampson, the prince of Liege's secretary, is this day concluded beyond sea for

another. Mr. Dethike is supposed placed there out of England for another. And indeed great matters are laid to his charge touching England. Of all which notwithstanding, I suppose, he hath by this time wisely cleared himself against his accusers. And there may remain many years to do his country service; if he be, as is thought, so well affected. ANNO 1596. Dethike.

Monsieur de Champaine is thought an extreme enemy to the present state of England.

It should seem by the discourses of Spaniards in Flanders, that their king in his next voyage now in hand for England, to the former pretence of religion, will add a claim to the realm by right of inheritance, as descended directly by the line of Portugal from Edmund Crookback; whom, they say, was in that respect unjustly put beside the crown; and therefore that line all this while unjustly defeated of the same.

It is supposed the prince of Parma will hereafter be passing slow in his services in France against the French king. And this is sure, that never yet, since his entrance into France, hath he joined his camp in battail or esquadron with the leaguers; and always hath had it apart from them.

Surely in this respect is highly commended abroad her majesty's policy, in not condescending to assist the states of the Low Countries against the Spaniards, unless they first yielded her majesty special assurance of their faith to her, and pawns for the charges of her wars in their behalf. In respect whereof it is easily noted her majesty hath gotten into her hands the chief keys of all the Low Countries: whereby she hath both means to hold the Spaniard tack, and the States at a bay, in case they should prove false.

Other gentlemen there be, attendants upon the cardinal. Because I know them not, I can aver nothing, either of their conditions or entertainment: only one Haselock, who was heretofore servant and secretary to the lord prior, sir Richard Shelly, and is now attendant upon the cardinal, is much reckoned upon among Englishmen beyond sea, considering the much dislike and odds had always been between the said parties heretofore. Haselock.

ANNO 1596.

The occasion of which their jealousies (for ought I could ever hear) did hereof arise. That the said lord prior always scorned the two seminaries, so far forth as the cardinal esteemed them the only means for the recovery of England by their practices within the realm; which the lord prior always esteemed a light avail; and was ever more inclined to foreign forces to do it. Notwithstanding that otherwise indeed he allowed it to be holy means for the good of our country, so far as tended to the saving of souls in it, but not as a substantial and sufficient means in policy wholly to reclaim it.

Shelly, lord prior.

279

There was a gentleman in the Florentine court, called Standen, a very sufficient man. I suppose he be yet living there in good reputation. His inclination is judged to be to a conquest of this realm.

Fitz Herbert is a sufficient gentleman, and civil, and attending upon the cardinal.

Smithson is another, but of no great moment.

The cardinal's sister, and his brother, with three of her daughters with her, remain at Namures. He maintaineth them all, but in mean estate.

Two seminaries are begun to be erected in Spain; the one in Toledo, the other in Valedolith. Warford, a sufficient man, a priest, is there. Mr. John Cicil remaineth in Salamanca; a gentleman, I suppose, passing well given to his country, and of very good desert.

There are not many Englishmen pensioners in Spain: but such as be, serve either in the galleys, against the Turk, or in the armada, which is for England.

There is Owen Eaton, once sergeant-major of sir William Stanley's regiment: he serveth in the galleys with Cripps: a man true enough to his country, no doubt. Henry Ireland, John Shelly, and two or three others, whose names I remember not, serve in the armada. I suppose young Stakely be one. All these have pensions, and well provided for. Their chancellor is an English pensioner of the king of Spain's in Naples, there married; and an old stander in those parts.

Olyver Price is very well entertained of the duke of Bavaria, who is much a friend to Englishmen, though not to the present state of England. ANNO 1596.

Now for English gentlemen, and pensioners of the king of Spain, either in France or in Flanders. For that they are many, if you please, I will hereafter give you a particular catalogue of them all, so far forth as either I do know them, or can call them to mind. Englishmen, pensioners of the king of Spain.

Touching sir William Stanley, no doubt he hath repented himself heartily of his undutiful action of Deventer; and considering the little he is now accounted of, both of the prince in Flanders, and the king in Spain. The undoing of the regiment is his extreme grief and discontent. For now it is almost come to nothing; scarce an 150 men remaining of it. Jaques, I suppose, wisheth himself in Ireland again, seeing how much his hope of advancement in Flanders by sir William Stanley is come now to nothing.

The elder Creake is most maliciously given out against the present state of England, and little careth how soon misfortune light upon it. He hath not his like Englishman for malice to her majesty and the realm in all Flanders: but he is of no judgment nor discretion; and therefore of no sufficiency to do it harm, or deal against it.

As for Paget and Morgan. Morgan's matter being yet 280
in bleeding, and himself still in prison, I suppose neither the one nor the other have leisure at this present to contrive actions against the state; albeit neither of them be esteemed beyond sea other than most true spies, as they call them, and intelligencers for England; having either of them been, by their practices, the death and occasion of many a catholic's trouble here in England; as is there not only believed, but hath been likewise laid to their charges this last year. Howsoever their practices have been from time to time, sure it is they are both accounted most unlucky men, and not at all beloved of catholics beyond sea.

Mr. Tho. Throgmorton is wondrous well liked of catholics beyond sea, and much pitied oft is, that a gentleman of so civil good nature should be so much conversant with

ANNO 1596. Paget and Morgan, persons so much supposed, as I have said, practisers for England, and the present state thereof.

Hugh Owen and N. Holt have the sovereign dealing for all Englishmen's matters in the Flander court. None can be preferred in that court without their favour, nor obtain any pension there without the liberality of their good word: the one being in credit with the prince's secretary, none more; the other but a very simple soul, none more. Gentlemen are ashamed to sue in court by his means; I mean father Holt; considering indeed he is a man adjudged of no sufficiency, nor good grace; but now held up in that place by cardinal Allen's favour and his own society.

Mr. Tressam, a man esteemed of far more speech than sufficiency any manner of way, either to do his country any good, or hurt it.

Sir Timothy Mocket I suppose no practiser, but content with his own private state as it is.

Mr. Pool no practiser, I suppose, but living after his accustomed manner. Enemy to none but to himself.

The lord of Westmerland, according to his want, poor and careless of all the world. Capstoak, his kinsman, and Lockwood, a follower of him, for late murdering of Alexander Suigo, because he took part with Italians against my lord, are lately absolved by his means.

Of sir Francis Inglefield I can say nothing, nor yet of Persons, other than what I have already declared.

But concerning the opinions and discourses I have heard touching the Spanish action for England. For the Spaniard in Flanders hath wished, that in their last armada their king had sent his daughter towards the Scottish coast directly, with a portion of six or seven millions; and there to have offered her to the Scottish king in marriage: which they suppose the Scottish king would not have refused; but most honourably have accepted of, and granted free landing to their nation; yea, and which is more, concurred with the duke, with the rest of his action for England. Conjecturing the just cause, they say, to revenge his mother's death, if he will prove a true child.

An oversight of the duke of Medina they condemn extremely; namely, whereas being advised at his first entrance into the Straits, by don Alonso de Leiva, to have fired her majesty's ships in Plymouth, he refused so to do; alleging only his commission for Flanders coast: wherein, quoth they, he was too just, and too, too precise an observant. ANNO 1596. 281

They affirm likewise, that their last ships were ill built for our seas; to wit, too huge, considering the dexterity of our English sail: which was, quoth they, their great disadvantage. This fault of their shipping, I perceive and understand, is corrected in the fleet which is now in hand for this next year.

But English gentlemen in Flanders at the time of the last armada in our seas, seeing what little countenance the prince of Parma gave them in the camp at land, even then, when the embarking was supposed, it grieved the better sort of them; yea, they sorrowed to see how they were even then disdained of the Spaniard: whose only speech was of combustion, and extreme destruction of our country, if ever they chanced to come ashore. It well appeared, that they little pretended the cause of religion, or any good to it, as our English catholics always supposed.

The lord of Westmerland being braved a little before at the court at Bruges by a Spanish cavalier, who reviled our nation, was told, his king had not need of any English catholics' assistance in that action: that he was of himself mighty enough: that the English catholics would prove but traitors if they were employed: with other like speeches of reproach. My said lord, not able to abide such terms, drew upon him, and surely had murdered the Spaniard, had not the fray been taken up for the present by such as stood by; and the quarrel afterwards taken up between them by the prince himself.

For myself.

Sir, I protest unto you, to see at that time the insolency of the Flanders Spaniards, and the vile destroying mind they shewed they bore towards our country, did so

ANNO 1596. much make me hate their action, then in hand, that while I live, I protested then in my heart to be true to my country against that nation in special, and all others the enemies thereof.

Lamot would (at that time the Spaniards' armada was understood to be arrived in the Straits) have wagered with sir William Stanley, that never our English fleet would dare abiden the fight with the Spaniard, but rather betake themselves to land; there perchance to resist awhile, and fight it out in defence of the realm. But sir William Stanley always maintained the contrary; and persuaded the enemy in his discourses, not to be too confident of their own, nor to be disdainful of our English forces, especially at sea. In which kind of service, he still affirmed, we passed all other nations in the world. The Spaniard was sorry that at least the duke of Medina spoiled not by the way the isles Gersey and Garnesey, as he came along.

The Spaniards' discourses of this next year's armada run much upon Ireland; as though somewhat either is or were best to be intended that way for England.

Strangers beyond sea, friends.

But touching such strangers beyond sea as are thought friends and intelligencers for the state of England. In Italy 282 the duke of Ferrara is suspected, and his brother, the cardinal Est, since his death notoriously known affected this way: for since his decease, his secretary, who was an abbot, a Venetian born, being convicted of heresy, (so they term it,) and other offences, was burnt at Rome. Before his death he bewrayed all his master the cardinal's actions under him with England, and his advices, what had passed in the synod of the cardinals, and the pope's consistory, from time to time, touching the estate; and all by the lord prior sir Richard Shelly's means at Venice. I knew the abbot myself very well; indeed great was his privity with my said lord prior.

The old duke of Florence, that dead is, was certainly thought a friend to England; nay, and partly suspected in his religion. Cardinal Cezeo was likewise supposed to have inclined this way. In effect all the estates of Italy, (Naples

and Lombardy excepted,) by reason they all hate the Spaniard extremely, may with reason be supposed our friends. Though otherwise perchance, in respect of the religion here professed, they would not pass one jot, what subversion might befall us. They esteem it their safety and advantage against the Spaniards, our holding him play; while in the mean time their good-will is no less. But these that I have already named have been particularly discovered to bear the state of England great good-will. ANNO 1596.

Number CCV.

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer, to appoint speedily a president and lieutenant for the north parts.

My honourable good lord,

ALBEIT I know very well that your lordship is as full fraught with the affairs of this kingdom as ever you were, yet I beseech you, give me leave, in discharge of my duty, to add somewhat thereto of the many wants in this country. First, In Westmerland, Cumberland, Northumberland, the bishopric of Durham, the places are little acquainted with training of soldiers. Secondly, In the county of York, though there have been some training to no great purpose; yet when the numbers shall be renewed, I fear they will be found much defective, both the horsemen and footmen. Thirdly, This country lieth to be invaded by reason of the many good ports and creeks, and few or no forts to withstand the enemy. As, Humber, the Spurne, Flambrugh, Birlinton, Filay, Scarbrough, Robin Hood's Bay, Stooton, Hartlepool, &c. Fourthly, As your lordship knoweth, there is neither lieutenant, nor any that have authority to deal in martial affairs, if any dangers should happen. Of these things I beseech your lordship take consideration as your leisure will serve.

For myself, though I am very willing to take any pains in her majesty's service, yet for the weal and good of this part of her majesty's kingdom, I think it as needful to have 283

ANNO 1596. a nobleman lord president and lord lieutenant, as it were at any time in her majesty's reign. Thus beseeching God to bless your counsels, to the honour and safety of the queen's most excellent majesty and her kingdoms, I bid your good lordship most heartily farewell. From York, the 24th of April, 1596.

Your lordship's in Christ most assured,

Matth. Ebor.

Number CCVI.

The archbishop of York and the council there to the lord treasurer: their reason why they stopped all suits commenced in chancery by those within their jurisdiction.

May it please your good lordship,

WE have received letters from our very good lord, the lord keeper, whereby his lordship signifieth a dislike that this council should direct process for the stay of any suits, commenced in the chancery for such matters wherein the plaintiff may have justice here. For answer whereof we have now written to his lordship, that in such cases where both parties dwell within this her majesty's commission, it hath been used by this court from the erection thereof to inhibit the plaintiff from promoting his suit in the chancery, or else to appear and shew cause why he should not, and to exhibit his complaint here. So that he is not simply inhibited, but conditionally. For upon a reasonable cause, as that the matter is for stay of a suit at the common law, or the plaintiff inhabiting without this commission, or such other matters shewed, as this court determineth not, the plaintiff is left at liberty to prosecute in the chancery. Which proceeding by this council hath been observed for the subjects' ease in these parts: for whose relief we have causes of equity determined near home.

Among other things, that commission was ordained because contentious persons do often enforce their adversation to a hard composition, rather for the avoiding of a tedious and chargeable journey, than by the goodness of their

cause. Which course between the chancery and this council hath been well allowed of by his lordship's predecessors. And a great number of precedents to be shewed thereof: whereby there hath been a good correspondence between them in the execution of justice; praying the like of his lordship. ANNO 1596.

Now may it please your good lordship, we having no lord president in these parts, who was wont (being a peer of the realm) to countenance the jurisdiction of this court, in respect of your lordship's long experience in the state, and favour to this commission, are bold to pray your lordship's favourable assistance as touching the premises, being 284
a matter so greatly importing the commission, and tending as it were to an innovation in matters of justice among the subjects of these parts, who ever sithence the erecting of this court have usually been eased here by the aforesaid means, if they were sued in the chancery by any dwelling within this commission, and had their causes determined here with expedition and small charge. Which course was so well allowed often in the times of that honourable counsellor, sir Nicolas Bacon, and of sir Thomas Bromley, that without contradiction, if the defenders had not prayed the help of this court, but alleged demurrer, that both the parties were resiant within this commission, his plea was allowed.

Wherefore we do eftsoons humbly pray your good lordship, that you would move the lord keeper to give the like allowance to our proceedings, that other his predecessors have willingly done to the ease of poor subjects. And so beseeching God to bless your lordship with his manifold gifts, we humbly take our leaves. At York, the 8th of June.

Matth. Ebor.

E. Stanhope. Ch. Hales. Jo. Gibson.

ANNO 1596.

Number CCVII.

A proclamation against such as took upon them to be messengers, entitled,

A proclamation against sundry abuses practised by divers lewd and audacious persons falsely naming themselves messengers *of her majesty's chamber; travelling from place to place, with writings counterfeited in form of warrants:* as also, *against another sort of vagabond persons, that carry counterfeit passports, wherewith to beg and gather alms.*

THAT her majesty being given to understand of certain most notable and lewd practices, put in ure by divers dissolute and audacious persons, to the great slander of her majesty's service, and abuse, charge, and hinderance of her majesty's loving subjects; which deceitful persons falsely taking upon them to be messengers of her chamber; and for that purpose undutifully wearing boxes, or escutcheons of arms, as the messengers do; being associated with others of like bad disposition; have, and still do go up and down the country, with writings in form of warrants, whereunto the names of the lords and others of her majesty's privy-council, and other ecclesiastical commissioners, are by them counterfeited: by colour whereof they do warn gentlemen, ministers of the church, women, yeomen, and others, that dwell in sundry counties of the realm, to appear before the
285 lords and others of her majesty's privy-council, and exact fees of them for their labour and travail, as though they had been expressly sent from the court to those whose names are inserted in such counterfeit warrants. By which slanderous practice divers gentlemen, and other honest persons, are not only defrauded of the money by this fraudulent means extorted from them, but, to their great charge and hinderance, do repair from countries far distant unto the court, supposing they were sent for. Notwithstanding divers of these shameless counterfeit persons (by such means as the lords had used) had been apprehended, and brought into the star-chamber, whereby divers of them

had been condemned, and set on the pillory, lost their ears, and some marked in the face for their notable abuses; yet such is their audacious, wicked disposition, that they continued more and more this practice, to the notorious abuse of the lords, and great hinderance and charges of the queen's subjects. ANNO 1596.

For reformation of these foul abuses, her majesty's pleasure was, that all justices of peace, and other public officers, should do their best endeavour, upon any notice or just suspicion given them, to apprehend these impostors, and see them safely sent up to the lords of her majesty's privy-council. And because these persons did practise this abuse especially to make unhonest gain of the same, the queen's pleasure was, that from henceforth no messenger of her chamber, groom, or other person, naming himself *pursuivant*, shall exact or take any fees of any person that shall be sent for to appear before the lords, until they have made their appearance at the court before them; neither shall the party warned give and make any allowance or other consideration unto the messenger, until upon his appearance order be taken for the same. The party required to appear is also to come up in the company of the messenger; and to be presented by him to the said lords, or to the clerk of the council attending. And if the messenger shall refuse to come in his company, pretending any further cause or excuse, the party warned may forbear his appearance. And if there be many named in one warrant, their appearance shall be on a certain day, when the messengers shall be there also. If the party warned shall have any suspicion of the messenger, or the warrant to be counterfeit, in that case he may cause the constable of the parish where he dwelleth, or the next public officer, to bring the supposed messenger before the next justice of peace; where the same may be viewed, and the party thoroughly examined. And if he shall find apparent cause of suspicion, to detain him in some prison, until the warrant be sent up to the privy-council, and the truth discovered; or else he shall send the party under safe custody to the court.

ANNO 1596. And where also these base and shameless kind of people, the better to cover their lewd dealing, and abuse her majesty's subjects, do often compound with the parties whose names are inserted in the counterfeit warrants, and to dispense with them for a sum of money, and to make their appearance before the said lords, whereunto the parties warned, to avoid expenses to come up to the court, or further cause of trouble, do often yield; the queen therefore did straitly charge and enjoin all and every person, served
286 with any warrant, requiring their appearance before her privy-council, not to offer to yield to any such agreement with any messenger, groom of the chamber, or pursuivant, to be forborne for his said appearance, upon pain of imprisonment, and her majesty's further displeasure; and all messengers charged and forbidden to take any composition, upon pain to lose their places, and to be imprisoned, and severely punished for their misbehaviour.

Number CCVIII.

To the lord treasurer.

Captain Price's account of the expedition of Cales, anno 1596: *concerning the taking of it, and damages done the Spaniards. Writ in June,* 1596.

It may please your honourable lordship,

THE 20th of this month, being Sunday, we came very early in the morning before Cales: many of our men were put into small boats for to land; but the sea was so very tempestuous and rough, and dangerous, that we could not land. That night little was done: but we played with our great ordnance upon the ships which we found at anchor in the bay of Cales. The 21st day, about six of the clock in the morning, we began to skirmish with them by sea very hotly, until about three of the clock in the afternoon. We sunk the Great Philip, which was their admiral, and two other principal ships, that they did set on fire themselves. The rest of the ships, which for the most part were rent

with our great ordnance, they flet, and went to Port Rial; ANNO 1596.
where they could not escape from us by no means. Then we entered in the island of Cales with our footmen, about four of the clock in the afternoon of the same day, where were many horsemen and footmen, ready to keep us from landing. We put them all to flight. We did, after our first landing, gain a sconce; fronting into the sea.

Then there was certain of our companies sent to win a bridge about eight miles within the island. And the lords generals marched to Cales, with a very few number of men at the first: and by God's goodness we wan Cales before some of our soldiers landed from shipboard. We were possessed of the strong and rich city of Cales by eight of the clock at night of the same day.

Sir John Wyngfield was killed with a bullet on the head after we had possessed the town. At that time were sundry others slain out of the castle. That night we kept a strong watch. Many of our soldiers did disorder themselves by drinking of much wine in this hot country.

The 22d day they yielded the castle. And once they offered two millions of treasure for their ransom and formal freedom, and for saving of their lives. But the duke of Medina, which dwelleth about eighteen miles from Cales, when he did understand of the offer made unto us, he 287
caused all their ships to be burnt that lay at Cales, at the Port Rial. There was of their ships burnt and made away about fifty-seven ships and two galleys: which were already laden very richly for the Indies. Their wealth that was burnt in them was reckoned by the Spaniards to be worth about three millions of treasure.

The 3d day the women and poorer sort of men were conveyed out of Cales, with their bag and baggages; and the dead bodies were buried; and the streets cleansed, for fear of infection: for the country is very hot.

The 24th day, they of St. Mary Port, and they from Port Rial, and from sundry other places, [moved] for a truce and composition.

The sixth day an ambassador, and the general of the Spa-

ANNO 1596. nish galleys, did likewise come unto our generals for to have a composition.

Thus being bold to trouble your honour, with all humble duty I shall continually pray to God, even from the very depth of my heart, to send your lordship good health; that your days may be prolonged, to the great comfort of all your friends. From Cales, the 28th of June, 1596.

Your lordship's ever most humble,
bounden to command for ever,
H. Price.

God preserve her majesty, and confound her enemies.

Number CCIX.

This letter was enclosed in another from Anthony Ashley to the said lord. And his was to this tenor.

Right honourable,

THERE were killed and hurt of our men about two hundred: of the enemy were killed not very many to speak of. Myself received some brushes with stones cast down from the walls, at our first entry, which was then but very few men and number of us: God make us all thankful to him: he did mightily defend us, otherwise we had been all slain that entered first into the forts of the town walls. Your lordship's letter is within this enclosed. Jesus preserve your good lordship, and all yours, with all your heart's desire.

The 27th of June our generals made fifty-five knights, whereof Mr. Ashley, clerk of the council of war, was one. He was to register all the counsels taken, and to record their actions and enterprises.

Number CCX.

288 *Sir Anthony Ashley, secretary to this expedition, and commissioner to the lord Burghley: concerning the action at*

Cales, in a relation drawn up by him of the action, by his lordship's order. ANNO 1596.

Right honourable,

THIS, I think, with your lordship's grave perusal and amendment, may serve for the present, till the next come forth. Wherein I have observed (upon my faith and poor credit) nothing so much as the truth; which, as I take it, is the true life and scope of your honourable intent, to the better satisfaction of the world, &c.

I must confess myself ambitious to affect to be remembered herein, and warranted at least with the truth, though not with modesty nor comeliness, if it should pass the press with any name thereto; which is needless. It may be also, that the relation will be thought too particular. All I refer to your lordship's censure.——I most humbly take leave, this 8th of August, 1596.

Your honourable good lordship's poor follower and true affected,

A. Ashley.

Number CCXI.

D. Pye's information of popery in Sussex, ann. 1596.

SINCE the lord Mountague's coming to live at Battel, religion in that country, and especially in that town, is greatly decayed. Dr. Withens, dean of Battel, where the lady Mountague lives, is suspected to be very backward in religion: for this two years and more he neither ministereth the communion nor receiveth it; but commonly, if there be a communion, he getteth some other to do it. And either getteth some other to do it, and getteth himself out of the town, or keepeth house. His wife cometh scarce twice a year to church. He keepeth company with recusants, especially Dr. Gray, a priest, whom sir Francis Walsingham committed, and about a year ago confined; and now liveth in my lady's house, being suspected to do much harm, both with the dean, and other thereabouts.

ANNO 1596.

Of late he hath found out a holy well in Battel park, whither many, especially women, resort, like a young pilgrimage, and call it Dr. Gray's well. I have heard that there hath been about a score there at even prayer time on
289 a Sunday. The dean also consorteth with Terry, that was a schoolmaster in Battel, and had the bringing up of most of the gentlemen in that country. He also was committed, as I remember, by sir Francis Walsingham, and hath continued in prison till Lent last, and then came to Battel, where he now dwelleth a recusant; and is supposed to do much harm. These two and the dean are great companions.

The jurisdiction of the place is in the dean, wholly exempt from civil jurisdiction, and is altogether neglected by him; so that they do what they list. Many in the town that never received the communion, and come very seldom to church.

At the outside of Battel park dwelleth Mr. Edm. Pelham, the chiefest justice of peace in that repe, and ruleth most; who is very backward in religion. Himself cometh to church but slackly: hath not this twelvemonth or more received the communion. His wife a professed recusant; but since the last parliament she hath been at church, and now useth it twice or thrice a year, but never receiveth the communion. He hath two daughters married, that never received the communion, and come to church as the mother doth. He is chief of my lord Mountague's council, and a great man with the dean of Battel. There are many recusants frequent his house. A little before the siege of Calis, and at the same, one Mr. Dorel, of Scothey, a notorious recusant, lay there, hovering about toward the sea-coast; and at the point that our men were to be shipped from Rye and Dover to Calis, a servant of the said Mr. Dorel, mounted upon a gelding worth twenty marks, and well appointed, having a case of pistols, rid there to Sussex, and a great part of the wild of Kent, with an alarm that the Spaniards were landed at three places in Sussex: had burnt Borne and Pemsey, &c. And could not be stayed, but left his cloak in a constable's hand; and being pursued,

forsook his horse, and ran two miles on foot, till he was taken and brought to Rye, to the said Mr. Pelham, and other justices, who rebuked him, and committed him to the Town-house a few hours, though many gentlemen there were of opinion that he should be sent to the lords. Upon that false alarm there was the greatest hurlyburly, woful outcries of the people, &c. that ever was in any memory; the soldiers at Rye ready to march out of the town towards Borne, and the service greatly hindered by that means. At the same time my lady Mountague's people, seeing the town of Battel in that uproar and miserable state, rejoiced, and shewed signs of joy; insomuch that the people fell into great exclamation and cursings of them openly in the streets. ANNO 1596.

When news was brought that Calis was won, they gave out these speeches, God be thank it, we shall have better neighbours.

A little before the siege of Calis, there was apprehended at Battel a well aged man, who confessed that he was servant of Mr. Dacres, brother to the lady Mountague; that he then came from his said master with letters and messages to ——. When Calis was taken, there was much speech in Battel (his master's daughter being then with the said lady) of the great services did in the taking of it [by the Spaniards]. The constable threatened to send him away, unless he could find sureties; whereupon he sent into my lord's house, and some of her gentlemen became sureties for him. The next 290
day Mr. Hen. Apsley came to the town, the constable desired him to examine the man: he pretended haste then, and desired him to carry him to Mr. Edm. Pelham. Next morning Mr. Pelham came to the town, took the man from the officer, thanked the constable for his good service, and said he would send him up to the lord treasurer. But is doubted by the constable and other honest men that it was not so done; but only given out, to stop their further complaints.

ANNO 1596.

Number CCXII.

Vagabonds and rogues in Somersetshire increase: and why; signified in a letter to the lord treasurer, from Edw. Hext, some eminent justice of peace in that county.

The calendar of the assizes in that county, an. 1596.

IN Lent assizes were 134 prisoners criminals: whereof nine executed, fourteen burnt in the hand. Fifteen felons, but whipped, for that in favour they were found petty larceny. Divers reprieved, and sent back to the gaol: others sent back to the gaol, to be tried at the sessions. Nineteen found guilty of several felonies by the grand jury, but acquitted by the petty jury. Forty-seven committed for felony, and indictments preferred against them by the grand jury: but *ignoramus* found of them all; and so they were acquitted.

Of this calendar ninety-seven set at liberty; all for the most part desperate and wicked persons, and must of necessity live upon spoil.

The calendar of the summer assizes. Of this assizes sixty-seven delivered: most part of which must of force live upon spoil of the country.

Calendar of Ilchester sessions. Twenty-four soldiers committed: abroad again. Eight malefactors executed.

Calendar of Wells sessions. Four executed.

In all, executed this year, 1596, forty. So it appeareth, that besides those that be executed, and those that be burnt in the hand, 35. Whipped for felony, 37. Felonies acquitted by the grand jury, 67. Felonies acquitted by the petty jury, 45. That be cast men, and reprieved to the gaol, there are set at liberty this year of men committed, or bound over for felonies, 183. The greatest part whereof must of necessity live by spoil.

Number CCXIII.

ANNO 1596.

291

With the calendar as above, Mr. Hext sent this letter to the lord treasurer at the same time.

Rt. honourable, my very good lord,

HAVING long observed the rapines and thefts committed within this county, where I serve, and finding they multiply daily, to the impoverishing of the poor husbandman, that beareth the greatest burden of all services, and knowing your most honourable care of the preservation of the peace of this land, do think it my bounden duty to present unto your honourable and grave consideration these calendars enclosed, of the prisoners executed and delivered this year past, in this county of Somerset: wherein your lordship may behold 183 most wicked and desperate persons to be enlarged: and of these very few came to any good; for none will receive them into service. And, in truth, work they will not; neither can they, without most extreme pains, by reason their sinews are so benumbed and stiff through idleness, as their limbs being put to any hard labour, will grieve them above measure: so as they will rather hazard their lives than work. And this I know to be true: for at such time as our houses of correction were up, (which are put down in most parts of England, the more pity,) I sent divers wandering suspicious persons to the house of correction; and all in general would beseech me with bitter tears to send them rather to the gaol. And denying it them, some confessed felony unto me, by which they hazarded their lives, to the end they would not be sent to the house of correction, where they should be forced to work.

But, my good lord, these are not all the thieves and robbers that are abroad in this county. For I know it, in the experience of my service here, that the fifth person that committeth a felony is not brought to this trial: for they are grown so exceeding cunning, by their often being in the gaol, as the most part are never taken. If they be, and come into the hands of the simple man that hath lost his goods,

ANNO 1596. he is many times content to take his goods, and let them slip; because they will not be bound to give evidence at the assizes, to his trouble and charge. Others are delivered to simple constables and tithingmen, that sometimes wilfully, and other times negligently, suffer them to escape. Others are brought before some justice, that either wanteth experience to examine a cunning thief, or will not take the pains that ought to be taken, in sifting him upon every circumstance and presumption; and that done, see that the party robbed give full evidence. And if he find an *ignoramus* found by the grand jury, and know by the examination he hath taken that it is in default of good evidence, then he ought to inform the judge, that the party robbed may be called, and enjoined by the court to frame a new bill and give better evidence. And then ought the justice to be present at the trial of the prisoner, that he may inform both
292 judge and jury what he found by examination; and likewise see that the party robbed give true evidence to the petty jury that he can: in which default of justice many wicked thieves escape. For most commonly the most simple country man and woman, looking no further than to the loss of their own goods, are of opinion, that they would not procure any man's death for all the goods in the world. Others, upon promise to have their goods again, will give faint evidence, if they be not strictly looked into by justice.

And these that thus escape infect great numbers, emboldening them by their escapes. Some having their books by entreaty of the justices themselves, that cannot read a word. Others, having been burnt in the hand more times than one; for after a month or two there will be no sign in the world: and they will change both name and habit, and commonly go into other shires, so as no man shall know them. And the greatest part are now grown to these petty felonies, for which they may have their book: by which they are emboldened to this great wickedness. And happy were it for England, if clergy were taken away in case of felony.

For God is my witness, I do with grief protest in the

duty of a subject, I do not see how it is possible for the poor countryman to bear the burdens duly laid upon him, and the rapines of the infinite numbers of the wicked, wandering, idle people of the land: so as men are driven to watch their sheepfolds, their pastures, their woods, their corn fields: all things growing too, too common. ANNO 1596.

Others there be, and, I fear me, emboldened by the wandering people, that stick not to say boldly, *they must not starve, they will not starve.* And this year there assembled sixty in a company, and took a whole cart-load of cheese from one driving it to a fair, and dispersed it among them: for which some of them have endured long imprisonment and fine, by the judgment of the good lord chief justice, at our last Christmas sessions. Which may grow dangerous by the aid of such numbers as are abroad, especially in these times of dearth: who no doubt animate them to all contempt both of noblemen and gentlemen, continually buzzing into their ears, that the rich men have gotten all into their hands, and will starve the poor.

And I may justly say, that the infinite numbers of the idle wandering people, and robbers of the land, are the chiefest cause of the dearth: for though they labour not, and yet spend double as much as the labourer doth. For they live idly in the alehouses, day and night eating and drinking excessively.

And within this three months I took a thief, that was executed this last assizes, that confessed unto me, that he and two more lay in an alehouse three weeks: in which time they eat twenty fat sheep: whereof they stole every night one. Besides, they brake many a poor man's plough, by stealing an ox or two from him: and not being able to buy more, leaseth a great part of his tillage that year.

Others leese their sheep out of their folds; by which their grounds are not so fruitful as otherwise they would be. And such numbers being grown to this idle and thievish life, there are scant sufficient to do the ordinary tillage of the land. For I know, that some having their husbandmen sent for soldiers, they have lost a great part of their tillage 293

ANNO 1596. that year: and others are not to be gotten, by reason so many are abroad, practising all kind of villainy.

And when these lewd people are committed to the gaol, the poor country that is robbed by them are forced there to feed them, which they grieve at: and this year there hath been disbursed to the relief of the prisoners in the gaol 73*l.* and yet they allowed but 6*d.* a man weekly. And if they were not delivered at every quarter sessions, so much more would not serve, nor two such gaols would hold them. But if this money might be employed to build some houses adjoining to the gaol for them to work in, and every prisoner committed for any cause, and not able to relieve himself, compelled to work; and as many of them as are delivered upon their trials, either by acquittal of the grand jury or petty jury, burning in the hand, or whipping, presently transferred thence to the houses of correction, to be kept in work, except some present will take any into service; I dare presume to say, the tenth felony will not be committed that now is. And if some like course might be taken with the wandering people, they would easily be brought to their places of abode; and being abroad, they all in general are receivers of all stolen things that are portable.

As namely, the tinker in his budget, the pedlar in his hamper, the glassman in his basket, and the lewd proctors, which carry the broad seal and green seal in their bags, cover infinite numbers of felonies: in such sort that the tenth felony cometh not to light; for he hath his receiver at hand, in every alehouse, in every bush. And these last rabble are very nurseries of rogues.

And of wandering soldiers, there are more abroad than ever were, notwithstanding her majesty's most gracious proclamation lately set forth for the suppressing of them; which hath not done that good it would, if it had been used as it ought. For the justices in every shire ought to have assembled themselves upon it, and upon due consideration had of her majesty's pleasure therein, acquainted all inferior officers with it; and so taken some strict course for the apprehending of them: but the proclamations being sent to

the sheriffs, they deliver them over to the bailiffs to be proclaimed. There a few ignorant persons hear a thing read, which they have little to do with, and less regard: and the tenth knoweth not yet that ever there was any such proclamation. ANNO 1596.

Your lordship may perceive by this counterfeit pass that I send you enclosed, that the lewd young men of England are devoted to this wicked course of life: for the man that travelled by colour of it is inheritor to 40*l.* land, after his father; and his name is Limerick. His father a gentleman, and dwelleth at Northlache, in the county of Gloucester. I kept him in prison two months, and examined him often, and yet still confirmed the truth of his passport with most execrable oaths. Whereupon I sent into Cornwall, where he said his mother dwelt: and by that means discovering him, he confessed all. By which your lordship may see, it is most hard to discover any by examination, all being resolved never to confess any thing, assuring themselves that none will send two or three hundred miles to discover them for a whipping matter, which they regard nothing: for all that were whipped here, upon my apprehension, are all abroad.

And otherwise will it never be without a more severe 294
course, that liberty of their wicked life is so sweet unto them. I may justly say, that the able men that are abroad, seeking the spoil and confusion of the land, are able, if they were reduced to good subjection, to give the greatest enemy her majesty hath a strong battle, and (as they are now) are so much strength to the enemy. Besides, the generation that daily springeth from them is like to be most wicked.

The corn that is wastefully spent and consumed in alehouses by the lewd wandering people will find the greatest part of the poor; for it is most certain, that if they light upon an alehouse that hath strong ale, they will not depart until they have drunk him dry. And it falleth out by experience, that the alehouses of this land consume the greatest part of the barley: for upon a survey taken of the alehouses only of the town of Wells, leaving out the taverns and inns, it appeareth by their own confessions, that they

ANNO 1596. spent this last year 12,000 bushels of barley malt; which would have afforded to every market in this shire 10 bushels weekly, and would have satisfied a great part of the poor. A great part whereof is consumed by these wandering people: who being reduced to conformity, corn, no doubt, will be much more plentiful.

By this your good lordship may inform yourself of the state of the whole realm, which, I fear me, is in as ill case, or worse than ours: for we are wonderfully aided by the best lord chief justice that ever was, and the good baron Mr. Evans, and our justice of assize, very reverend good men, and most careful in their calling.

But the greatest fault is in the inferior ministers of justice, which should use more earnest endeavour to bring them to the seat of judgment and justice: wherein if every justice of peace in England did, in every of their divisions, quarterly meet; and before their meeting cause a diligent search to be made for the apprehending of all rogues and vagabonds and suspicious persons, and to bring them before them, where they should receive the judgment of the law; and the sturdiest of them (that are most dangerous) committed to the house of correction or gaol; and at this meeting, inquiry of the defaults of alehouses which harbour them, of constables, tithingmen that suffer them to wander, and of inhabitants that relieve them contrary to the law; and inflict punishment according to the statute; a rogue could hardly escape.

Egyptians.

Experience teacheth, that the execution of that godly law upon that wicked sect of rogues, the Egyptians, [Gypsies,] had clean cut them off; but they seeing the liberties of others, do begin to spring up again: and there are in this country of them, but upon the peril of their lives. I avow it, they were never so dangerous as the *wandering soldiers*, or other stout rogues of England: for they went visibly in one company, and were not above thirty or forty of them in a shire. But of this sort of wandering idle people, there are three or four hundred in a shire: and though they go by two or three

in a company, yet all or the most part of a shire do meet, ANNO 1596.
either at fairs or markets, or in some alehouse, once a week.
And in a great hayhouse, in a remote place, there did resort 295
weekly forty, sometimes sixty; where they did roast all kind of good meat. The inhabitants being wonderfully grieved by their rapines, made complaint at our last Easter sessions, after my lord chief justice's departure: precepts were made to the tithings adjoining for the apprehending of them. They made answer, they were so strong that they durst not adventure of them: whereupon precepts were made to the constables of the shire; but not apprehended, for they have intelligence of all things intended against them. For there be of them that will be present at every assize, sessions, and assembly of justices, and will so clothe themselves for that time, as any should deem him to be an honest husbandman: so as nothing is spoken, done, or intended to be done, but they know it. I know this to be true, by the confession of some.

And they grow the more dangerous in that they find they have bred that fear in justices, and other inferior officers, that no man dares call them into question. And at a late sessions a tall man, a man sturdy and ancient traveller was committed by a justice, and brought to the sessions, and had judgment to be whipped, he, present at the bar, in the face and hearing of the whole bench, swore a great oath, that if he were whipped, it should be the dearest whipping to some that ever was. It strake such a fear in him that committed him, as he prayed he might be deferred until the assizes; where he was delivered without any whipping or other harm, and the justice glad he had so pacified his wrath. And they laugh in themselves at the lenity of the law, and the timorousness of the executioners of it.

Calendars.

And if it please your honour, for the good of your country, to command a view of the calendars of all the gaols in England, you shall behold a lamentable state, whereby your good lordship may inform yourself, and receive nothing from me: which I humbly crave, fearing lest it

ANNO 1596. should be conceived amiss by some. But knowing the danger that may grow by these wicked people to my dread and most dear sovereign's most peaceable government, I will not leave it unadvertised, though I should hazard my life by it: and so most humbly crave pardon for this my boldness, with your honourable acceptance of my most bounden duty and love.—From my poor house at Netherham in Somersetshire, this 25th of September.

Your good lordship's in all humbleness,
to be commanded,

Edw. Hext.

296 Number CCXIV.

The false certificate before mentioned.

TO all and singular the justices of the peace, mayors, &c. know, that I Tho. Scroope, knt. lord Scroope of Bolton, lord warden of the middle marshes of England, and captain of her majesty's city of Carlisle—

That this bearer, John Manering, lately arrived from Scotland, and came before me, bringing just proof, by his conduct, from the lord warden of Scotland, of the cause of his arrival in England and country: these are therefore to certify of the truth, that the said John, with other of his company, through tempest of foul weather, were driven ashore upon the north parts of Scotland, whereby they were by the northland, called the Scottish Irish, robbed, and spoiled of their bark, and all therein. Wherein the said John lost of his own part the value of threescore pounds and better, and being grievously wounded in the thigh with a dart, and in the arm with an arrow, upon the grappling of the ship: these are therefore, upon consideration of this his loss, his hurt, and great necessity, to request you to permit him to pass unto Wormyl in Cornwall, to his mother and other his friends there; and in her majesty's name require you to relieve him.—Signed with the name and seal of lord Scroope; and in the names of the earl of Cumber-

land, Rich. Louther, and divers other justices in Westmerland, York, Stafford, Worcester, Glocester; and so as far as Somerset: when this gentleman and justice, Mr. Hext, found out the cheat, and sent his pass to the lord treasurer, enclosed in his letter to him. ANNO 1596.

Number CCXV.

Sir John Smyth, committed to the Tower of London, for words spoken by him to the militia that were training near Colchester under sir Thomas Lucas: which Smyth was cousin-german to king Edward VI. by the lady Jane Seimour's sister, and had been sometime ambassador by the queen to the king of Spain; a man of Spanish comportment, and well known to that king. And before that, a volunteer with other English gentlemen in the wars of Hungary against the Turk.

BEING brought this year, 1596, into the star-chamber, he confessed that he came the 12th of June, 1596, with Mr. Seimour, the second son of the earl of Hertford, Mr. Brome, Mr. Tho. Manock, into a field called Windmill 297
Field, near Colchester, where the band of sir Tho. Lucas was trained, and presented himself before the pikemen, as they stood there in rank, and rid about the companies of the pikemen, and termed Mr. Seimour of the blood royal, and moved them to go with him and Seimour, and he would be their captain. And the like to which he confessed, being in the Tower, in these words:

"My masters, if you will go with me, you shall go with "a better man than myself or sir Tho. Lucas. Here is a "nobleman of the blood royal, brother to the lord Beau- "champ, that shall be your captain, and I myself will be "an assistant unto him. The common people have been "oppressed, and used as bondmen these thirty years: but "if you will go with me, I will see a reformation, and you "shall be used as freemen. All that will go with me, hold "up your hands, and follow me:" commanding twelve of

ANNO 1596. the best archers to follow him; and that as many as would follow him, to march on.

To which confession he set his hand, *John Smith:* and underwritten, *Examined by us, Edward Cooke, Tho. Fleming, Fr. Bacon.*

These speeches he confessed he uttered, being heated the day before with too much eating and drinking in good company, which caused a wind in his stomach, and a distemperature in his head, as he wrote in a penitent letter from the Tower to the lord treasurer; to whom he bare a spite, and by those bold expressions to the soldiers intended as much. Which that lord well understood: as appeared by Smith's letter following.

Number CCXVI.

Part of a letter from sir John Smyth to the lord treasurer.

PRAYETH him to inform her majesty, that his disordered words at Colchester proceeded of nothing else but by distemperature of eating and drinking.

Whereas I understand, by Mr. Lieutenant of the Tower, that your lordship required him that I should signify unto your lordship, in respect of the most grievous and infamous words that I used of your lordship unto those soldiers, what treasons I could object against your lordship; I for answer do say, that I know not, but do very well know, that your lordship in the whole course of your counsellorship and managing of affairs under her majesty, from the beginning of her reign hitherto, hath performed them to the praise and honour of yourself and all yours, and to the benefit of her majesty and the commonwealth. And therefore do of myself very willingly offer myself to make satisfaction unto your lordship the last star-chamber day in this term, in public audience, by confessing great fault and misbehaviour committed to the offence of her majesty, and to the great wrong and undeserved injury of your lordship, through
298 the great fume, heat, and distemperature of drink and pas-

sion that was in me at that time: craving therefore most humbly pardon. And I do further offer, that if it may please your lordship to be a means unto her majesty, for a final punishment, to banish me out of all parts of the world and her realm to mine own house in the country, [Little Baddow in Essex,] never during my life to depart without her special licence, above one mile from thence,——or upon any severe punishment that shall be allotted unto me. And I will here set down in the Tower another satisfaction in writing, which your lordship shall see and consider of, for the uttermost restoring of your lordship to your honour by me, by my distemperature and passion, detracted and touched. And the same, being copied out in divers copies, I will send them the first market-day after my deliverance out of the Tower and banishment, by one of mine own men, to Colchester, there to be set up on divers posts and corners of the town, whereas they may be publicly read,..... In the conclusion, wishing your lordship again and again, and many times again, to set aside all kinds of heat towards me, and by Christian charity and heroical compassion to win me again to be one of your most affectionate and assured friends to my power. ANNO 1596.

He had likewise desired in his letter to the lord treasurer that this punishment might suffice, and that he might suffer no pecuniary punishment in his wife's jointure, being all the estate in lands that was left: all this the good lord treasurer complied with. And he was confined to his own house, and the extent for his estate to the queen stayed: for which he writ another letter of thanks, dated, July, 1598, from his house and prison, as he called it, at Baddow.

Number CCXVII.

A letter of sir John Smyth to the lord treasurer, touching his submission in the star-chamber; the attorney-general, and Mr. Solicitor, and Mr. Bacon being sent unto him, Feb. 6, 1597.

Right honourable, and my very good lord,

MY most humble duty to your lordship remembered.

ANNO 1596.

Your lordship may well consider and see by that which I have done, upon this message and advice of Mr. Attorney, Mr. Solicitor, and Mr. Bacon, the wonderful confidence and assurance that I have and do conceive of your lordship's great honour and worthiness, and of that which of all things is the chief, and all in all in princes, rulers, and magistrates in this world, that is, that your lordship doth love and fear God, with all charity. Which causeth all magistrates to have great respect to their honours and reputations among men. Without which conceit, by me conceived of your lordship's great virtue and worthiness, and great favour towards me, there is no advice nor authority that should
299 have moved me to have put my hand to any writing, knowing mine own conscience (as it is to others also) the poor and sinful state that I at that time stood in, I was instructed by those three learned men (of whom I have a great good opinion) of the course I should hold in the star-chamber in my speeches and behaviour; and that your lordship will not any way that I should make my satisfaction to your lordship there, for the great injuries that I in my distemperature did offer unto your lordship, nor that I should so much as name your lordship upon any occasion of these matters. Which although it seemed unto me strange, yet I have resolved to observe that course, with the rest of their instructions, and in very great sort to humble myself; most humbly beseeching your good lordship it may please you to remember me, that according to the promise in your lordship's name made unto me by those three learned men, of so great account, I may be called some day this term to the star-chamber; and that there my offence (in respect of my wife's and my great afflicted state) may receive some good end by the censure of that most honourable court, through your lordship's most noble and charitable dealing: and that I may have a whole day's warning at the least, before the star-chamber day, of the hearing of my matter.

In performance whereof, I assuredly believe your lordship shall not only greatly please Almighty God, who is the author and fountain of all wisdom, truth, and charity; but that your lordship shall also win great honour and reputa-

tion in the opinion of the world, whose eyes are greatly bent, and do expect how your lordship will deal with me, who have so greatly offended your lordship; beside the wonderful obligation that I shall continually stand bound to your lordship and all yours, during my life, as knoweth Almighty God; who send unto your lordship long life and health, with continual increase of honour. From the Tower, this 6th of February, 1597. ANNO 1596.

Your lordship's most humble and bound always to do your lordship all honour and service,

Jo. Smythe.

Number CCXVIII.

His letter of gratitude to the lord treasurer; being now at liberty from the Tower. Dated from his house at Badow, under confinement there.

Rt. honourable, and my very good lord,

MY most humble duty to your lordship remembered. My wife and I do yield unto your lordship most humble thanks for the very great favour that your lordship shewed unto us, in staying the extent for our debt to the queen, that the last Lent was coming out against my wife's jointure and lands, that are in our present possession. Certainly, there is 300
no favour nor friendship, how great or small soever, that your lordship hath in mine imprisonment or shall hereafter at any time shew unto me, but that they are, and shall be, double and treble greater in mine account than they should have been before my frantic offences, when, (through misdiet and distemperature,) for my sins, I was not myself. However, there is no error nor offence once past that can be revoked again: and therefore I and all other, that have any fear of God or reputation in them, that have any ways transgressed, I think, make greater satisfaction to God, to themselves, and to the offended, to be sorry for their faults, and to make satisfaction by all the ways and means they possibly can. Which, by the grace of God, I will never be

ANNO 1596. ashamed or negligent to perform, although greatly ashamed of my frailties and transgressions committed.

And therefore, as there was no man in England that did more respect and honour your lordship than I did, until one of your lordship's own, by misinformation, and upon some second malicious meaning, brought me first to doubt, and afterwards greatly to mislike of your lordship; so now I having found the contrary by your lordship's most honourable dealing with her majesty for me in my great affliction in your friendship, may be assured that you have not found in England that will dispose himself to do more honour and service unto your lordship, than I to the uttermost of my power.

I have sent unto your lordship herewith a petition of mine; which if it may please your honour either to read, or cause to be read unto your lordship, and to dispose of the matter as your lordship shall think good, your lordship shall do me a very special favour. And if there be no occasion of employment for me, then I content myself as well with this my restraint, as if I had all England and Europe to travel in at my pleasure. From my poor house and prison, this 13th of July, 1598.

Number CCXIX.

Edward lord Crumwel, to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley: a protestation of his unfeigned love and service, by his father's commandment, late deceased: who was Henry lord Crumwel.

My most honourable good lord,

AT my taking my leave of your lordship, finding that your lordship was not well, I feared to be any ways tedious or troublesome to your lordship, and therefore forbear to deliver that thankful acknowledgment whereunto your lordship hath bound me. I have notwithstanding made bold to present the same by these few lines, as a pledge of that everlasting, unfeigned love which I and mine do owe and will

perform to your lordship and yours: which I desire rather to witness by deeds than protestations. And as by my late father's last command it was enjoined me, after my prince, to endeavour myself to the obedient service of your lordship, which to my power I will religiously observe; so being by him recommended and left to the good favour of your lordship, as of a second father, I desire only to patronise myself under your honourable love. ANNO 1596. 301

And therefore I humbly beseech your good lordship to accept and take in good part the continuance of my humble offer of the same: and in this so dangerous a time you would vouchsafe to protect me with your good favour, desiring nothing more than the good opinion of her majesty and yourself; which as I well hope your lordship will be pleased to afford the one, so by your good means the other may be continued. And if either in my absence, or else whensoever, as occasions are or shall be presented, I may be so happy as to be remembered in any thing wherein I may do her majesty service. And my endeavours and proceedings shall, God willing, be so answerable, as none shall more loyally serve her highness, nor more truly honour yourself. I shall ever think myself most happy in being any way obliged by your lordship: to whose good favour I will ever attribute any good that may betide me. All my endeavours shall be to deserve the good opinion and favour of her majesty and yourself. And so, humbly praying pardon to have thus much troubled your lordship, I take my leave. From Westminster, the 6th of Sept. 1596.

Your good lordship's most assured to do you service,

Ed. Crumwel.

Number CCXX.

Articles annexed to the commission for recusants. This was a second commission for their examination, that was issued out some years before to the justices of every shire: occasioned (as it seems) upon the holy league of the pope

ANNO 1596.

and king of Spain to invade the realm. These articles seem to be drawn up by the lord treasurer Burghley. They were printed, and thus entitled: Articles annexed to the commission, for a further instruction to the commissioners how to proceed in the execution thereof. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*

FIRST, You, to whom the commission shall be brought, shall without delay notify to the rest of the commissioners that shall be in that country, or that may shortly repair thither, the receipt of the said commission, with some signification of the contents thereof, and shall require them to
302 meet at some convenient time and place, to consider of the contents thereof; and thereupon to accord upon sundry days and places in every quarter of the shire ordinarily to meet about the same: so as now at the beginning, the oftener they shall meet, the same shall be the better. And after the first meeting you may, according to the quantity of that shire, make some partitions among yourselves to execute the commission with more ease. And yet you shall every forty days, for this present year, assemble all together, to confer upon your several proceedings: so as you may once every quarter give knowledge to her majesty's council of your actions.

Item, You shall send to the bishop or ordinary of the diocese, and to his chancellor and his official, and to the archdeacon in the same, to certify you of all persons, with their dwelling-places, whom they shall know to have been presented to them as recusants, and that do so continue in their recusancy. And the said certificate you shall require from the *custos rotulorum*, or the clerk of the peace, and from the clerk of assize of that county, to know such as have been presented and indicted as recusants, as well women as men, and what process hath been sent forth against them. And likewise you shall, by any other means, inform yourselves of all such as within that county are commonly noted to be receivers and comforters of persons that are suspected to come from beyond seas, as seminaries, priests, Je-

suits, or fugitives. And after that you shall be duly informed by these or any other means of such persons to be suspected as principal offenders or accessaries, you shall receive to yourselves secretly the names of the same without any publication thereof, until you shall afterwards find probable and good cause to warn any of them to come before you, or otherwise to apprehend and examine them according to the contents of your commission. ANNO 1596.

Item, In your examination of any person by this commission, you shall not press any persons to answer to a question of their conscience or matters of religion, otherwise than to cause them answer, whether they do usually come to the church, and why they do not. And if you shall perceive that they are wilful recusants, then you shall examine them upon any matter concerning their allegiance to her majesty, and of their devotion to the pope or to the king of Spain; or upon their maintenance of any Jesuit, seminary priest, or other person, sent from Rome, or from any parts beyond seas, to dissuade any subject from their obedience to the queen's majesty. And to give you some particular instructions in what sort you may conceive convenient questions, whereupon to examine persons that are to be suspected to adhere to the pope or to the king of Spain, contrary to their duty of allegiance, you may observe the form of these questions hereafter following.

The questions ensuing to be answered by oath, by such as shall be verily suspected to have been moved to give assistance to the forces of the pope or king of Spain, when they shall happen to invade this realm; whereby such like seducers may be discovered.

Whether have you been moved by any, and by whom, 303
and when, and by what persuasion, to give aid or relief, or to adhere to the forces of the pope, or king of Spain, or other foreign forces, when they should happen to invade this realm for any cause whatsoever, or to forbear to join to take part with her majesty or her forces.

The questions following to be ministered without oath, to

ANNO 1596.

discover such as shall be suspected to be priests, seminaries, or fugitives, dangerous to the state.

Whether have you been at Rome, or Rhemes, or in Spain, at any time within these five years? When you returned last into this realm, and to what purpose? And where have you been ever since your coming from thence?

Be you a Jesuit or priest, made after the Romish order? Where and when were you so made priest, and by whom? Have you been at the seminaries or colleges for the English, Welsh, or Irish nation at Rome, Rhemes, or Spain, or elsewhere? How long were you in any of them? And when were you last sent from any of them, to the intent to come into England or Wales, or other her majesty's dominions; and to what end?

Item, Where by her majesty's late proclamation (whereof you shall take knowledge) it is ordered, that all manner of persons, of what degree soever they be, without any exception, spiritual or temporal, and so forth, shall make particular inquisition of all manner of persons that have been admitted or suffered to have resort, diet, lodging, &c. within the space of all years past, &c. if you shall be informed of any such person to have been so lodged or comforted, &c. as in the proclamation is at large expressed; in such case you shall require the party that is appointed to make such inquisition, to deliver the same his inquisition to you in writing; and thereupon you shall do your best to try out, if there have been any suspected person so lodged or comforted by the said party appointed to make the inquisition; and him you shall demand to be delivered to you, to be committed, and further used according to his deserts.

Item, Because the like commission is sent into all the shires of the realm, and like instructions annexed thereto, as these are, and that you may percase be informed of some persons meet to be apprehended or examined, which are gone out of that shire into some other part, or do remain in places out of the jurisdiction of your commission, in such cases we require you to send secret knowledge thereof to the commissioners of the countries where you shall think

such suspected persons do remain; requiring them, in her majesty's name, to use all diligence by the apprehension of such, and, by such information as you shall give them, to examine the parties, and to proceed against them according to their commission. ANNO 1596.

Item, You shall do well to make choice of some persons of honest behaviour, and loyal in religion, in every quarter of the quire, and especially in every port-town, market-town, or large great parish, and where the parsons or vicars are faithful and careful over their cures, to join them together, with charge to observe all such as refuse obstinately 304 to resort to the church. And such persons you shall call before you, and, without dealing with them for their recusancy, (for which they are to be otherwise by law punished,) you shall (as you shall in your discretion think meet respecting the quality of their persons) require them to answer to the two former questions, or to either of them; for that by their recusancy they do give cause of suspicion to be disloyal in their duties to the queen's majesty and the estate, or to favour the common enemies.

Number CCXXI.

Notes taken out of the new commission for spies, recusants, missionaries, and such like, about London or ten miles of it.

TO inquire of all persons who, since the 21st year of her majesty's reign, are come, or shall hereafter come into this realm, &c. of whom any direct proof or suspicion may be conceived, that they intend or purpose to practise or attempt any thing to the danger of her majesty, or of the state of this realm.

All persons of what degree soever, &c. that shall wilfully abstain to resort to the church to hear divine service, &c. and do secretly reside and continue in the city of London or suburbs thereof, or within ten miles of the same; and likewise of such persons which at any time heretofore have

ANNO 1596. committed or hereafter shall commit any offence contrary to the laws and statutes of this realm, in falsifying or transporting of any coin or current money of this realm; and all abettors, aiders, counsellors, receivers, and maintainers of the several offenders aforesaid; any four of the commissioners, whereof, &c. may by their letters send for any such like suspicious person, and after examination bail him, or commit him, and send him with his examination to be tried according to the laws, before the justices of the several circuits, &c. or the chief justice, &c. Allowance to be made by four aforesaid, under their hands, for the charges of the bringing up or removing of any prisoners. The same to be paid in the exchequer, if it exceed 6*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* If it do, then *by the order of the council*, [so it stood in the first paper of notes: altered thus by the lord treasurer's own hand, *to certify the council to procure further warrant*,] and further authority to apprehend all such vagrant and idle persons, terming themselves soldiers, wandering within the limits aforesaid, and to punish them according to the laws and statutes, &c. To follow instructions and directions herein, as at any time they shall receive under the hand of any six of the council.——A commandment to all justices and officers to assist. *See the instructions above, in the Articles.*

305 Number CCXXII.

Anno 1597. *Hutton, archbishop of York, to the lord treasurer: for a pardon for Dawson, a priest, converted by the said archbishop. His converting also of Ri. Stapleton, constable, &c. Recusants in those northern parts.*

My honourable and very good lord,

I AM bold at this time to inform your lordship, what ill success I had in a suit for a pardon for Miles Dawson, seminary priest, whom I converted wholly the last summer from popery. Upon his coming to the church, receiving the holy communion, and taking the oath of supremacy, I

and the council here, about Michaelmas last, joined in petition to her majesty for her gracious pardon, and commended the matter to one of the masters of requests, and writ also to Mr. Secretary to further it, if need were; which he willingly promised to do. In Michaelmas term nothing was done. And therefore in Hilary term, I, being put in mind that all was not done in that court for God's sake only, sent up twenty French crowns of mine own purse, as a small remembrance for a poor man's pardon; which was thankfully accepted of. ANNO 1597.

Some say, that Mr. Topcliff [whose business was to look after recusants] did hinder his pardon: who protesteth that he knoweth no cause to stay it. There is some fault somewhere. I know it is not in her majesty: of whom I will say, as the prophet David speaketh of God, *Hath queen Elizabeth forgotten to be gracious? And is her mercy come to an end for evermore? Absit.* The whole world knoweth the contrary. Your lordship may do well, in mine opinion, to move Mr. Secretary Cecil to deal often in these works of mercy. It will make him beloved of God and man.

May it please your lordship further to understand, that since the conversion of Ri. Stapleton and his wife, (who received the holy communion publicly in the minster of York, on Whitsunday last,) I have been dealing with Joseph Constable and his wife, and have brought him to hear divine service, and she, being great with child, promiseth to do the same with all dutifulness. In consideration whereof my humble suit is in their behalf, (because he is passing poor, and the prison very chargeable,) that he may be set at liberty upon good sureties, that they shall not only dutifully repair to hear divine service, but also appear before the council here, or the justices' assize, &c. This council are precise in this matter, because he is indicted and outlawed for receiving a seminary priest. And yet your lordship, in Lent past, sent a letter touching that matter, with a letter enclosed directed unto yourself and Mr. Attorney-general, shewing his opinion in that the indictment was er-

ANNO 1597. roneous in two or three points: and therefore the outlawry void. So that I must earnestly pray your lordship, that, if it seem good, we may have some direction for his enlargement upon bonds, as is aforesaid.

306 Thus, besecching God to bless her majesty and the whole realm with your lordship's long life in good health, I bid you most heartily farewell. From York, the 27th of May, 1597.

Your lordship's in Christ most assured,
Matth. Ebor.

Number CCXXIII.

Matthew, archbishop of York, and the rest of the council in the north, to the lord treasurer Burghley; informing of the execution of certain papists. The plague in the north.

MAY it please your lordship to be advertised, that the assizes and general jail delivery for this county of York being ended here, there was executed the fourth of this month, [of July,] for high treason, one Fulthorp and Abbot; being reconciled to the pope, and condemned at a jail delivery holden by this council in November last. There was likewise now executed Auleby, a priest, made at Doway, and one Warcop, that received him: the same Warcop having also formerly received one Neal, a seminary priest; for the which being prisoner in the late earl of Huntington's time, escaped by breach of prison. The two last were condemned at these assizes. All of them persisted in their obstinacy. And at their being willed to pray for her majesty, they answered, God make her his servant. And being required to pray for her preservation against her enemies, they would not answer any thing.

Joseph Constable did openly at the bar, before the justices of assize, confess his errors in religion, and his offence against her majesty and her laws; making his submission in very humble manner, and discovered what seminaries

have had resort unto him. He hath taken the oath of her majesty's supremacy before this council most willingly; and he promiseth to receive the sacrament, and to bring in his son. And it seems to me, the archbishop, that he is fully reclaimed from popery. ANNO 1597.

The justices of assizes have adjourned the assizes and jail delivery for the county of Duresme and Northumberland, in regard of the great infection of the plague in those counties, especially in and about Duresme and Newcastle. For which respect likewise we have adjourned all causes depending before this council, between such parties as are inhabiting within those counties, until the sitting after Michaelmas: before which time we hope the sickness will stay. And so, beseeching God to bless your lordship with his manifold graces, we humbly take our leaves. At York, this 6th of July, 1597.

Signed by the archbishop, Ch. Hales, Jo. Ferne.

Number CCXXIV. 307

Sir Edward Coke, the queen's attorney-general, to the lord treasurer Burghley: concerning his examination of Gerard, a Jesuit.

Rt. honourable,

MY duty most humbly remembered. Yesterday, in examining Gerard, the Jesuit, I find him to deny such things as I know to be *perspicue vera:* and doubting him to be of that opinion that others of his profession had been, I charged him therewith; who discovered himself in such sort, as by this enclosed your lordship may perceive. Whereby what good may be expected by their examination it may easily be seen; and what desperate and damnable doctrine this is, that taketh away the use of an oath, that God hath appointed to be a mean to decide controversies, or rather to bring in a most horrible abuse thereof, by condemning the innocent and justifying the wicked, it manifestly appeareth. And because this strange opinion of these boy priests

ANNO 1597. and devilish good fathers might be the better testified, I thought it good to have Mr. Lieutenant, Mr. Solicitor, Mr. Ward, [clerk of the council,] and myself to testify it. And thus I most humbly take my leave. This 14th of May, 1597.

Your lordship's most humbly at commandment,

Edw. Coke.

Number CCXXV.

The examination of John Gerard, a Jesuit, before Coke, attorney-general, and others, May the 13th, 1597: concerning an oath. Enclosed in the letter above.

JOHN GERARD, the Jesuit, being told, that upon the arraignment of Southwel, the priest, of high treason, one of the witnesses being asked upon her oath by one of the judges in open court, whether Southwel was ever in Bellamy's house, said, that she had been persuaded by Southwel to affirm upon her oath, that she did not see Southwel in Bellamy's house, and to keep this secret in her own mind, *of intent to tell you;* whereas, in truth, she had seen him divers times in Bellamy's house. And Southwel being charged herewith, openly confessed the same; and sought to justify the same by the place out of Jeremiah, that a man ought to swear *in judicio, justitia, et veritate.* And this John Gerard being asked, what his judgment and opinion concerning Southwel's opinion abovesaid, said, that he
308 was of the same opinion; and seemed to justify the same by the example of our Saviour Christ, who said to his disciples, that you shall go to Jerusalem. *Ego autem non ascendam:* keeping this secret to himself, *of intent to tell them.* And also saith, that our Saviour Christ saith, that the Son of man did not know the day of judgment, keeping this secret to himself, *of intent to tell them.* For he said, that as he was the Son of man he knew it, and could not be ignorant of any thing. And further saith, that a witness being examined *juridice*, and of temporal things, not

concerning religion or catholics, cannot answer with such equivocation as is above said. ANNO 1597.

And forasmuch as this opinion, and the defence thereof, seemed to be damnable and blasphemous, he was requested to set down his own opinion therein, lest he should be mistaken. But he denied the same; not because it is untrue, but because he would not publish it. Then being requested to subscribe the same, he denied the same also.

Richard Burkley. Edw. Coke.
William Ward. Tho. Fleming.

Number CCXXVI.

Adam Loftus, archbishop of Dublin, to the lord treasurer: concerning Mr. Rider's case: who had a mandamus *for the deanery of that cathedral church of St. Patrick, being no member thereof.*

It may please your lordship,

IMMEDIATELY after the receipt of your letters, signifying her majesty's pleasure and commandment in the behalf of Mr. Ryder to the deanery of St. Patrick's, I assembled my chapter, and made the same known unto them, whom I found humbly willing, according to her majesty's pleasure, to make election of him. But forasmuch as they made a scruple to elect him, until he were a member of themselves, which they allege to be done by them in discharge of their consciences, being sworn to the form of their foundation, I have, to remove that scruple, reserved a prebend now void, in my gift, for Mr. Ryder; which presently upon his arrival I will admit him unto: and have taken the hands of my chapter thereupon, to elect him; which I assure your lordship, upon my credit, (which I would not break with you for all the deaneries and bishoprics of Ireland,) shall be done within ten days next after his coming. Whereunto I find my said chapter the more willing, (although there be among themselves as many learned gra-

ANNO 1597. duates as belong to any one church that I know in England,) because they acknowledge your lordship to be a chief pillar for the upholding of their church.

And so, hoping that your lordship will rest well satisfied for this time with the proceedings aforesaid, I commend you with my prayers to God's blessing. From Dublin, 29th of November, 1597.

Your lordship's humble at commandment,

Ad. Dublin.

309 If this course before mentioned be not to your lordship's liking, then if it please your lordship to signify to me by the next post what you would otherwise have to be done therein, I will not fail to expedite and effect the same.

Number CCXXVII.

William, bishop of Coventry and Litchfield, to the lord treasurer: to suspend his opinion of him upon a false information, as if he were a maker or maintainer of incestuous marriages.

My humble duty premised,

I UNDERSTAND your lordship, upon some sinister information, hath conceived hardly of me, namely, for making or allowing of incestuous marriages, or some other like, as was pretended. I know your lordship to be wise; and therefore doubt not but you will suspend your judgment till you hear me speak, and defend my innocency that way, when your lordship will: and am contented to clear mine innocency openly, (if it may be so thought good,) in the presence of all the honourable of our house; so far off am I from any fear or mistrust of my cause. I was once or twice coming to do my service to your lordship in the parliament house: but I thought better to forbear, till I had satisfied your lordship by my letters touching those slanderous reports; but I am nevertheless ready to do you all

duty and service. And so I humbly take my leave. From my lodgings by Holborn Conduit, the 16th of November, 1597. ANNO 1597.

Your lordship's always to command,
W. Coven. and Lich.

Number CCXXVIII.

Rogers, suffragan bishop of Dover, and dean of Christ's-church, Canterbury, died in May this year, 1597. *A letter of his (the year uncertain) written to Mr. Bois, a learned civilian: concerning the validity of his leases.*

Sir,

I UNDERSTAND that you have oftentimes, and in any places, given it out, that I, as dean of Christ's-church, with the chapter there, cannot make any leases of further continuance than for my lifetime, by reason of my suffraganship. If this be your opinion and report, I doubt not but you have law and reason for it. And inasmuch as I do hear that you are of council with us, the dean and chapter, I am bold to desire you to advertise me with as much speed as you may, upon what law and reasons this your opinion is grounded; that thereupon I may provide such remedy as by counsel I shall be advised.

The matter in respect of myself I weigh very little; but in respect of the church's estate, (which is maintained much by fines raised of leases,) and in respect of the fermours, which may be much prejudiced by not renewing their leases, I will endeavour to remedy of this inconvenience as much as I may, and as I shall see it needful. But I cannot learn, either of her majesty's attorney-general, either of Mr. Baron Flowerdew, (which both are of council with us,) that there is any thing in law, whereby I may not as lawfully, to all intents and purposes, make leases with the chapter, as any other dean. And sure I am, that the dean of Norwich, (which immediately preceded the present dean,) [i. e. Salisbury, bishop of Man,] being a suffragan, as I am, did in

ANNO 1597. his time lease out all the lands appertaining to the dean and chapter there: which leases stand yet in good force. And yet have they been thrice sifted and called in question in the best courts of this land, and once in the parliament house, as the new dean tells me; saying withal, that he would gladly give a 1000 mark, if he could in law overthrow those leases against the bishop of Salisbury that now is, [Piers,] being heretofore dean of that church and bishop of Rochester together, did make leases, as dean, which stand in good force still; as the now dean of Salisbury, Dr. Bridges, telleth me.

Moreover, king Edward in his nonage, and queen Mary in her coverture, being invested in the duchy of Lancaster, the one as duke, the other as duchess thereof, made leases of land appertaining to that duchy; which are in law holden to be good: because neither the nonage of the one nor the coverture of the other was judged in law to be prejudicial to the corporation of the said duchy, in respect that it was a corporate thing. And so, by the like reason, my counsel here saith, that my being of a bishop cannot prejudice any act that I and the chapter shall do, because I do it not as a private person, but as one of that corporation. In the time also of king Edward VI. Mr. Hooper had two bishoprics together, viz. Gloucester and Worcester, which are more incompatible than a deanery and a suffraganship; yet he made leases pertaining to either of those bishoprics: which were as effectual as any lease of any other sole bishop. And I do persuade myself, that if I would enter into searching of records in that faculty, I should find many mo precedents of those which have had bishopries and deaneries together, whose leases were never to this day called in question. And therefore till I hear from you, I shall think that you, in holding the contrary, are much deceived.

I could allege an old suffragan, dean of York; by whom the dean of that church came to be first called *lord dean*, because he was a bishop: whose leases of things appertaining to that deanery never yet came into question. Neither

did the foresaid leases of the foresaid bishop suffragan of Norwich come in question in respect of his suffraganship, but upon other points. ANNO 1597.

To conclude, I do not hold my deanery as other bi- 311
shops hold benefices in *commendam*, but I hold it by mere dotation from the queen, and am by her letters patents put in possession thereof, as all other deans are. And for avoiding all cavil, I am besides under the like letters dispensed withal to hold it, either with or without my suffraganship, notwithstanding any constitution or canon to the contrary: which dispensation I take to be sufficient against all canons and civil laws. Out of which the greatest question in this matter doth arise, as I suppose.

But howsoever it be, let me, I pray you, have your reasons to the contrary, and I shall thank you for them: but much more would have thanked you, if you had at the first imparted your opinion to me, as ordering the church's estate, whereunto you are a counsellor, and not published the same abroad, so much as I hear you have done, to the impairing of my credit in that place, and much more to the hinderance of the church's estate, in giving occasion thereby for our fermers to be afraid to renew their leases at my hands. Howbeit, I am persuaded you had no ill meaning either towards me or the church in this report: neither have I towards you in this my expostulation for the same; but will be ready, in any thing I may, to stand you in stead, as I hope you will be the like towards me. And so, after overlong troubling of you, I end; committing you to the grace of the Almighty. Sothewark, the 7th of December.

Your very loving friend,

Ri. Dover.

ANNO 1597.

Number CCXXIX.

Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge, and the rest of the heads, to the lord Burghley, their high chancellor: complaining of their privileges infringed by the town; that they shall be forced to seek relief extraordinary.

Right honourable,

OUR humble duty remembered. May it please you to give us leave to acquaint your honour with the hard courses that the mayor and townsmen of Cambridge hold with us. All matters of variance and grief betwixt both bodies have been referred, at the direction of the lord chief justice of England, to conference among ourselves: and articles have been exhibited of either to other in writing, and answers given in on both sides, and a treaty which the council thereupon appointed and yielded unto. Notwithstanding all this, they still injuriously exhibit complaints against us of untruths, foul and odious, as of late to your honour, and to the lord North [who was their high steward and friend] in court; and here to the lord chief justice and his assist-
312 ants, they do in open speeches except against our established jurisdiction or consistories, lawful censures, the best of our ancient proclamations, the right of our leet; and have notoriously disfranchised many of their own corporation, for serving the queen at our leet lately holden. They summon our known privileged persons to their town sessions: they award process against them: they daily commit them: they openly discharge victuallers: they take scholars' horses to serve post upon ordinary commission: and generally they adventure to do any thing against our charters with such unwonted boldness and violence, that we shall be driven of necessity to seek relief extraordinary.

Whereof, before we make any resolution, we most humbly crave your honour's direction, ready to attend your pleasure in person, if it shall seem so good to your honour's wisdom. And so, with our most hearty prayers to God for

the long continuance of your happy days, we humbly take our leave. At Cambridge, the 23d of June, 1597. ANNO 1597.

Your honour's in all duty most bounden,

Signed, John Jegon, vice-chan.

Roger Goad, Laur. Chaderton, Humfrey Tyndal,
Robert Some, Edward Barwel, Thomas Preston.

Number CCXXX.

Dr. Jegon, vice-chancellor of Cambridge; in answer to the lord their chancellor: who had advised him to carry himself temperately towards the mayor and his company.

Rt. honourable my singular good lord,

AFTER my last answer returned to those slanderous complaints that were exhibited by Mr. Mayor of Cambridge, it pleased you to respite my appearing till you sent for me: and also to advise me (in your honour's favour) to carry myself temperately, in regard that the mayor and his company had received hard opinion of my proceeding. Since which time, (and also before,) I have forborne to do any thing that might justly occasion any grievance whatsoever; in regard of your most gracious love to myself, and tender care of this university, so reverently acknowledged by us all, as that we are even afraid, lest our own complaints made to your honour should be offensive. Notwithstanding, whatever we do, the mayor still with great violence doth so cross my proceedings, and abet offenders, whom with assistances of wise men I do censure, as that except it please your honour to look into his endeavour, and to restrain his factious endeavours, neither shall I be able any way to govern in my place, neither the poor town reap those benefits and relief by scholars that it hath always received.

For myself, although by reason of my place I sustain 313
under your honour, and my oath taken, I must maintain the privileges of the university, (which, with the loss of all the livings I have, I am willing to do,) yet for the common

ANNO 1597.

peace of both the bodies, and the good of the poor town wherein we live, I refer myself to any man, whomsoever you shall appoint to hear and order, confirm or reverse, whatsoever I have done or shall do. For our charter, which we have from so many noble princes, so many hundred years so inviolably enjoined, (in the name of the whole university,) I most humbly crave, that your honour would be pleased, either by yourself, or some at your honour's appointment, to take knowledge and view of them. And if ought therein be unequal, to cause it to be revoked; or otherwise reasonable, to confirm and strengthen them against the bold and intolerable attempts of insolent and unmannerly men, that live by us and our societies, and yet would never endure us, or freedoms granted; but have always grown from envious mislike to malicious practice, and open tumultuous mutinies, to their own overthrow and utter disfranchising, as in former princes' times is notoriously recorded.

Wherefore, in tender care of the commonwealth of both these bodies, we humbly beseech again and again your honour's advice and assistance to withstand the beginnings of their malicious purposes; shaming to make (as they use to do) any particular or personal complaints to your honour. Whereof, if it please you to vouchsafe the hearing, this bearer, one of the proctors of the university, can deliver many just, grievous, and very foul. So, most humbly recommending to your honour's wisdom the fatherly care of this your university, I beseech the Lord God long to preserve your honour in happy days. At Cambridge, this 23d of July, 1597.

Your honour's most bounden at command always,

Jo. Jegon, vice-chanc.

Number CCXXXI.

ANNO 1597.

Questions disputed at a commencement at Cambridge in the year 1597: *of law, divinity, and philosophy.*

Quæstiones juris civilis.

1. POTESTAS gladii est penes solum principem.
2. Civitas, quæ se protectioni alicujus submiserat, ei subest.
3. Factum principis præstare tenetur respublica.
4. Alienigenæ apud nos commorantes legibus et statutis Angliæ obligantur.
5. Ubi princeps est, ibi patria est.
6. Statutum generale, licet contrarium, statuto priori speciali non detraxit.
7. Beneficium principis latissimam interpretationem ha- 314
bere debet.
8. Judex pœnam quam irrogavit, remittere non potest.

Quæstiones theologicæ.

1. Politica Mosis non sunt Christianis rebus publicis obtrudenda.
2. Unio personalis non tollit carnis Christi circumscriptionem.

This against the papists' real presence: the former against the Calvinists, that fetch the church government from Moses.

Quæstiones philosophicæ.

1. Omnis mutatio reip. est perniciosa.
2. Mediocritas est tutissima ratio conservandi respublicas.
3. Metus magnatum est causa seditionis.
4. Magistratus iisdem semper sunt committendi.
5. Æqualitas in republica est periculosa.

1. Animus est aut numerus vel figura.
2. Natura non admittit infinitum.
3. Sensus non falluntur.
4. Cerebrum est principium sentiendi.
5. Anima sequitur temperaturam corporis.

ANNO 1597.

Number CCXXXII.

Charisma, sive Donum Sanationis:

Being a book in quarto; written in Latin by William Tooker, queen Elizabeth's chaplain, and dedicated to her; dated prid. id. Jan. 1597: *treating concerning her cures in the king's evil, by this miraculous gift of healing, imparted to her.*

IT was written against such as denied that gift to the queen. He shewed in this book, how this queen excelled all other princes and her own ancestors in this gift. He hath a chapter of the manner and form of healing: wherein is discoursed concerning the simplicity and chastity of the ceremonies and rites in healing those afflicted with the king's evil; and of the piety, charity, and humility of the prince. There is another chapter, of the certainty of the effects, and the wonderfulness of the events in those who have obtained their health.

This Tooker was for some years present when the queen touched, and when many miserable mortals, as he writ, were restored to their former soundness and health: and avowed, and gave his faith, [in these words, *obligavi fidem meam*,] that he could produce many who had been restored to their healths, even of such who were ready to believe
315 that that power of healing was ceased, but, as it were, astonished at it, held their peace. He mentioned a man who, going into the country from London, met another of good carriage, but a Romanist, who after divers words asked him, what news? He said, he was lately come out of prison, and being grieved with the *king's evil*, after the trial of many remedies, kneeling before the queen Elizabeth had been perfectly *et sanissime* [as the word is] cured; and ingenuously acknowledged, that he now at length found by experience, that the pope's excommunication denounced against her majesty was of no moment: for if she had not by right obtained the sceptre of the kingdom, and her throne established by the authority and appointment of God, what she attempted could not have succeeded; be-

cause the rule is, that God is not any where witness to a lie. ANNO 1597.

He said moreover in his said book, that he met with several afterward, who had been touched by the queen; and he asked them, if their disease returned; but they confessed ingenuously to him, *sanissimos esse ex illo tempore*, that they were in perfect health from that time, and freed from all *incommoditate morbida*.

That in the city of Exeter, John Capel, son of an honest citizen, and another, daughter to one Appelin, were both healed of the king's evil. Both which, when they had in vain tried other remedies, were bid by Francis Brine, an Italian, and exile for the gospel, a doctor of physic, to go to the queen, and desire to be healed. Who came home joyful and glad, and as sound as fishes.

John Sherland of Molton, in the archdeaconry of Barum, now alive and well, openly professed, that he sunk with despair; found no ease, but the touch of the queen's hand.

The writer added, that he knew a certain woman, of the family of the Turberviles, who for ten years remained cured of that disease. He looked upon her, and asked her, where her gold was of the queen's gift that was wont to be hanged about her neck. She blushing said, that because she was poor, she had sold it for necessary uses. I presently understood, that the gold was nothing else but the symbol of health; and that health lasted without gold. At length he concluded, that it was sure the queen had cured many thousands; and that it would make a great volume to set them all down.

Once in Gloucestershire the people came in vast flocks and crowds, to see the queen touch certain that had the evil; when the queen used these words to them: "I wish "I might afford you help and assistance. It is God that "is the best and great physician of all. He is the wise and "holy Jehovah, who will help your diseases. He is to be "prayed to." Wherever she came, she set before her eyes

ANNO 1597. God, the giver and founder of the help of body and soul. And made God her helper, whensoever she cured those that were brought to her affected with these diseases. But that it was clear, by the confession of these diseased persons, by the relation of physicians, by the recitation of pamphlets, and the certainty of what had happened, that some were healed presently, others more quick, others more slowly, at the distance of longer time; very many were restored to the best temper of body, and a continual habit of health.

316 Number CCXXXIII.

A book of prayers printed this year, 1597; *being certain prayers, set forth by authority, to be used for the prosperous success of her majesty's forces and navy. They were eight in number. The first whereof was of the queen's composing; and was as followeth:*

OH GOD! almaker, keeper, and guider: inurement of thy rare seen, unused and seeld heard of, goodness poured in so plentiful sort upon us full oft, breeds now this boldness to crave, with bowed knees and hearts of humility, thy large hand of helping power, to assist with wonder our just cause, not founded on pride's motion, or begun on malice-stock; but, as thou best knowest, (to whom nought is hid,) grounded on just defence from wrongs, hate, and bloody desire of conquest. For since means thou hast imparted to save that thou hast given, by enjoying such a people as scorns their bloodshed, where surety ours is one. Fortify, dear God, such hearts in such sort, as their best part may be worst, that to the truest part, meant worse, with least loss to such a nation as despise their lives for their country's good: that all foreign lands may laud and admire the omnipotency of thy works, a fact alone for thee only to perform. So shall thy name be spread for wonders wrought, and the faithful encouraged to repose in thy unfellowed grace: and we that minded nought but right, en-

chained in thy bonds for perpetual slavery, and live and die the sacrificers of our souls for such obtained favour. Warrant, dear lord, all this with thy command. *Amen.* ANNO 1597.

This was that queen's stiff, affected language. Imprinted at London by the deputies of Chr. Barker, printer to the queen's most excellent majesty, 1597. 4*to.*

The first prayer is in a different character from the rest, to shew it, as I presume, to be composed by a different hand. The queen's arms prefixed.

Number CCXXXIV.

The captain-general of the king of Spain's army: his commission Englished; in the year 1597.

Don Martin Padilla, governor of Castile, lord of Gadea and Buendia, captain-general of the army of his majesty, and of the Spanish galleys, and of the royal army in the ocean seas.

BEING commanded by his majesty to raise in this kingdom a quantity of footmen, for to serve him at sea and land, wherein to me it shall seem good, serving upon wages in this army, because of the news that we have that the enemy armeth; by reason of the small number we have in 317
our army, that they cannot go to such parts needful; and thither being come, that they may have sufficient defence as well in the sea as land, for the execution and accomplishing that which his majesty commandeth; it is fit to provide persons for captains to levy them, order, and govern them to the parts of service in Christendom, with ability and sufficiency as to this effect is required. And being satisfied of the good parts in you, Francisco de Godoy, in this and many other services, I trust you will put forward yourself for the service of his majesty, as you have always done for the space of twenty-four years, in Italy and in Spain, in Granada, having the charge of the captainship of one hundred and fifteen men, being master of the camp Antonio

ANNO 1597. Moreno; and also in all the journeys of Portugal, Tercera, and in the army of the duke of Medina to England, being then ancient to the said Antonio Moreno de Godoy, your brother. And since you have served in the galleys at the enemy's coming to Cales. Whereof you have given good account, and reason of your said service; hoping, that the like you will do in all that is committed unto you, at this present I do make choice, create, and name you, in the name of his majesty, for captain of the Spanish footmen; and as such an one, I give you charge that you take up the greatest numbers of men you can in the towns of the Mores, and in the liberties thereof, and in six leagues' compass; that is, in the towns of Noye and Vergantines; notwithstanding the same liberties are appointed to other persons for the same effect. If you find resistance, let the parties come to me, that I may appoint them in such places thereabouts, being places of more account.

In behalf of his majesty I exhort you, and for my part I pray you, the justices of the said kingdom, of whatsoever quality or condition they be, that they give all the favour and help they can, or you shall need of, to raise the same number to that effect and intent of his majesty, providing you place to lodge, for you and yours, every one in their places and liberties, without taking any thing of you, as they were accustomed, nor also to suffer them to make any tumult or offence; but rather to use you with good entertainment, as men that remain in his majesty's service, giving you for your monies such provisions and other things you shall have need of, at reasonable prices without extortion.

Also I ordain and command, that all such soldiers or officers of companies, that they acknowledge and repute you to be their captain, and obey such orders as you shall make for the service of his majesty, as if they were serving under myself. And the like commandment I give to all masters of camps and sergeants, or their assistants, and to all other officers and soldiers of this army to allow you for a captain of footmen; and that they observe unto you the

like honour and reverence, with all other preeminences and privileges that they enjoy, or shall enjoy, in any captain of footmen of his majesty's. ANNO 1597.

And in having any quantity of men you shall give advice to us, that we may send a commissary, to take the muster and list of them, and to put them down upon the king's pay from that day that you begin to enjoy them, or take your charge; and likewise of all the officers and soldiers of your band.

And for the present I do ordain don Francisco de Mosco 318
to be overseer general of the said army; and to the paymaster, that he put it down in his books of office, to put it in execution, and to pass you over unto the paymaster of the said army, to allow you your due in pay. And for your better confirmation, I give you this firmity with my name and hand, sealed with the seal of my arms, ratified by the secretary within written. Who shall return you the original. To the end that you may have it for your style or title of your office. Made in Ferol, the 28th of May, 1597.

Number CCXXXV.

GEORGE ABBOT, afterwards archbishop of Canterbury, this year, 1597, read theses upon six questions in the divinity schools in Oxford: *pro forma discussæ, et discutiendæ.* Whereof the sixth question was, *An Deus sit author peccati? Negatur.* They were afterwards printed at Oxford, by Jos. Barnes, university printer.

Number CCXXXVI.

A relation of the stirs in Wisbich castle among the secular priests and Jesuits. A book set forth 1597.

WHEREIN is shewn how the Jesuits and seculars made such quarrels, that they divided their tables; and one, the greater part of them, was driven out of the common hall by the help of the gaoler. And to prevent the

ANNO 1597. Jesuits charging the seculars to make a separation here in the castle of Wisbich, they sat at every table in the hall. For had the Jesuits' faction been so much against the lesser number, that they had flocked together at one table, the separation should have been fathered upon them, although they never dreamt thereof. And this humour of the Jesuits being known by them, they used to sit at every table some; because it should be manifest, that the other side made the separation.

Number CCXXXVII.

Dr. Elie's Notes. And Dr. Bagshaw set forth some things in the end of those Notes. Both seculars. Which Notes related to the controversy in the business of Wisbich.

THE quarrel at Wisbich among the prisoners was between the secular priests and the Jesuits, or between the priests and archpriest; and with what ambition they sought their own preferment in the castle of Wisbich; and by what
319 scandal they wrought it by a most wicked separation or schism. At what time the true state of the question was, Whether the Jesuits and their fellow-factions committed any sin, and did like Christians, in making their division in Wisbich from their fellow-prisoners and priests as they were..... The question was, Whether the priests were bound to subject themselves to the authority procured by falsehood, as the letter of institution shewed, and promoted with falsehood; as then the archpriest could not deny, being taken in the manner, and put in execution contrary to the tenor thereof; having no letter from his holiness.

Mr. Blackwel [that was the archpriest's name] sent for Mr. Collington and Mr. Charnock, and urged them to like of the said institution, and threatened them, that unless they would positively affirm that they did like thereof, he was to send information to Rome, that they did dislike thereof. But would give no other answer than this, that they did neither like nor would dislike, but would bear themselves as became catholic priests to do.

Number CCXXXVIII. ANNO 1597.

The former of these, John Collington, afterwards wrote a book of this matter, entitled, An Appeal to Rome, *made by the priests from the archpriest. Subscribed by several priests, Oswald, Needham, &c.*

THIS gave great offence to the archpriest; that in a letter to a lay-gentleman, in the year 1601, April 16, he affirmed, that he writ to him to make him privy of the spiritual danger wherein he and all that received any spiritual sacrament of Oswald, Needham might be; if it were so, that the said Needham had subscribed unto a seditious pamphlet, coloured with the name of *An Appeal.* And he denounced Mr. Rob. Drewry to have incurred the penalty of the decrees for subscribing the same. And he sent him a form of submission which he was to make, or not to be restored; viz. *Ego N. confiteor, &c.* in English, "I do confess and acknowledge, that without any just cause I have "complained of grievances, and many injuries offered me "by the most reverend archpriest, and have cast upon him "the blame of these dissertions, tumults, and deadly wars; "and that I have transgressed his wholesome decrees. Of "all which I humbly crave pardon, restitution of my faculties, and the removing of censures if I have incurred "them. I recall all these aforesaid, and do greatly wish "that I had never spoken, written, or approved them. "Moreover I do swear that I will hereafter behave myself "peaceably and obediently towards this my superior, and "will procure, according to my bounden duty, what lieth in "me, that others do the same." London, March 1600.

But about a year after this constitution of the archpriest came the pope's breve, that confirmed his said authority. It bore date the 17th of August, 1601. Upon which all without delay yielded themselves.

ANNO 1597.

Number CCXXXIX.

320 *Dr. Mey, bishop of Carlisle, deceased at Dalston Feb.* 15, 1597*: and interred in the cathedral the same day in the evening. From the register of the parish of Dalston in Cumberland. He was elected fellow of queen's college, Cambridge, anno* 1550.

FEBRUARY 15, 1597. Reverendus in Christo pater Johannes Mey, divina providentia episcopus Carliolensis, hora octava matutina, decimi quinti diei Februarii mortem oppetiit, et hora octava vespertina ejusdem diei Carliolensi in ecclesia sepultus fuit.

Cujus justa celebrabantur die sequente Dalstonii.

Number CCXL.

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: touching the loan; which some of the clergy were assessed to lend.

My honourable good lord,

ACCORDING to direction, the council and I called before us such as Mr. Scudamore, his majesty's receiver here, informed to be slow in the loan money. Some did allege, that at the last loan they were unpaid, some two, some three years. Some openly protested, and offered to swear, that they were not worth in all the world so much as was demanded. Others were humble suitors to be borne withal till the spring, that they might make money of some of their goods. But in fine, many of them have paid willingly; not one refusing in mutinous manner, though some in mourning manner complain of the hardness of the time, and great dearth of all things.

I wish there had been more indifferency in direction of the privy seals: for I know some clergymen that are not worth so much as they are assessed to lend, and yet must they pay tenths and double subsidy; which will go very hard with them.

Mr. Scudamore hath been very painful and diligent in

this her majesty's service: and yet useth himself so, as there is no exclamation against him. Which is a plain demonstration of a settled opinion in the subject, of her majesty's very wise and godly government, and of his discreet and good carriage of himself in a matter that hath often been unpleasant unto the people. And thus beseeching God long to bless your lordship with his manifold graces, I bid you most heartily farewell. From York, the 9th of February, 1597. ANNO 1597.

Number CCXLI.

321

The archbishop of York to the lord treasurer: upon directions for keeping sir Rob. Car, lord Sesforth, an hostage from Scotland.

YESTERNIGHT very late I received your lordship's letters of the 21st of this month, to receive sir Rob. Car, alias the lord of Sesforth, and him to keep in safe effect at Bishopthorp, or some other place without the city of York; so that no access of strangers be unto him. The last hostages in the time of besieging of Edenburgh castle were placed by my lord of Huntington in her majesty's house there; which is without the city, and much more in safety than either Bishopthorp or any other place near hand. They had them sometime in their chamber, and sometimes at the council-table. If it please her majesty, I will lodge him in this house under the charge of some of mine own men, and of Mr. Rafe Westthorp, sergeant at arms, who liveth in this house, and hath nothing else to do.

The sitting continueth the three first weeks in Lent; and the assizes the fourth week: therefore I am desirous to have him near unto me, that I may have a vigilant eye upon him: for I understand that the gentleman is wise and valiant, but somewhat haughty here and resolute. I would pray your lordship that I may have directions too, whether he may not go with his keeper in my company to sermons, and whether he may not sometime dine with the

ANNO 1597. council, as the last hostages did. And thirdly, whether he may sometimes be brought to sitting to the common hall, where he may see how careful her majesty is, that the poorest subject in her kingdom may have their right, and that her people seek remedy by law, and not by revenging themselves. Perhaps it may do him good as long as he liveth.

Thus beseeching God long to bless your good lordship with his manifold graces.....From York, the 25th of February, 1597.

Your good lordship's, &c.

Matth. Ebor.

Number CCXLII.

The archbishop to the lord treasurer's answer.

Right honourable,

THIS morning, at eight of the clock, I received sir Rob. Car, the lord of Sesforth, whom I am now sending to Bishopthorp by Mr. Sergeant Westthorp my comptroller, and other of my servants, to be kept according to her majesty's
322 direction and commandment. Who tells me that he hath been used to open air; and therefore prayeth me to write to your lordship to be a means to her majesty that he may have some more liberty for his health's sake; and he will give security, or his word, (which it is said he doth chiefly regard,) that he will be true prisoner. Thus beseeching God.....From York, 16th of March, 1597.

Number CCXLIII.

Otto duke of Brunswick and Lunenbergh to the lord Burghley. Salutatio. *Wishing success to the queen's fleet, preparing against her enemies.*

Dei gratia Otto dux Brunsvicensium et Lunæburgensium.

S. illustris et generose comes, amice carissime,

POSTQUAM cognovimus te Dei beneficio salvum et incolumem adhuc esse, non potuimus intermittere, quin te ve-

terem atque singularem nostrum amicum hisce nostris inviseremus, tibique de felici tuo statu gratularemur. Deus Opt. Max. te multos annos valentem et incolumem conservet. Cumque nobis perlatum sit serenissimam Angliæ reginam contra hostes suos et refractarios iterum magnam classem reparasse, et omni apparatu bellico instruxisse, quæ brevi a littore solvet, quare a Deo Opt. Max. felicem successum et prosperum exitum, precamur, et optamus; ut, rebus gnaviter expeditis, salva et integra in amplissimo Angliæ regno appellere possit. Tum quoque ardentibus votis Omnipotentem precamur, ut regiam illius majestatem ab omnibus insidiis inimicorum semper et ubique, uti hactenus fecit, clementissime protegat, ac plurimos in annos regno amplissimo salvam, et superstitem benigne conservet; omniaque consilia et actus ad nominis sui gloriam porro dirigat et secundet. ANNO 1597.

Vale, amice carissime, et reginæ vestræ clementissimæ de meliori nota nos commendare haud graveris. Datæ in arce nostra Harburgo, 28. Junii, MDXCVII.

Otto dux Bruns. et Lunenb.

Number CCXLIV.

The said duke of Brunswick to the said lord Burghley, upon the queen's declaration of sending forth her fleet against Spain.

Dei beneficio Otto Brunovicensium et Lunæburgensium dux, &c.

S. LITERAS tuas, illustris et generose comes, amice singulariter dilecte, serenissimæ reginæ Angliæ aula regia Grenovici, 23. Julii datas, una cum implicito exemplari declarationis clementissimæ nostræ reginæ, quam cuilibet innotescere et voluit et fecit; quibus causis adducta hanc clas- 323
sem adornaret, et instruxerit; minister noster 5to Augusti bene tradidit. Et quanquam antehac ejus declarationis exemplar Belgicæ linguæ ad nos pervenerit, nihilominus tamen hæc quoque tua Latini exemplaris communicatio, ut

ANNO 1597. singularis tuæ erga nos benevolentiæ argumentum, gratissima fuit. Dolemus profecto, quod classis illa, contrario et impetuoso vento, magno cum periculo, a recto cursu repulsa sit; e contra lætamur quoque quod Dei beneficio (cui laus et honos) sine ulla vel hominis vel navis jactura, salva in optimum portum delata est. Unde propositum primum iter, optimo favente orientali vento jam cum cœpit, quo, Deo volente, (a cujus nutu omnia pendent,) dies aliquot continuente, non diffidis, quin optatos exitus sit nactura.

Neque sane est, quod dubitas, quin Deus Opt. Max. regiæ majestatis tam justum defensionis opus optimo et fælicissimo exitu sit beaturus; atque omnia hostium et adversariorum consilia, conatus et molitiones, ut antehac sæpius, (pro quo illi laus et gloria,) benigne et clementer fecit, in propriam perniciem retorqueat, et regiam majestatem sub tegmine alarum suarum protegat et defendat, longa vita, quieto regni sui statu, et omni fortunæ flatu secundo uti, frui faciat. Quod profecto regiæ ejus majestati ex animo precamur et optamus, petentes amice ut nos ames, et regiæ majestati de meliori nota commendare non graveris. Deus Opt. Max. te diu salvum et incolumem servare non dedignetur. Datæ 3° Septembris, anno 97°.

Otto dux Bruns. et Lunenb.

Number CCXLV.

The said duke of Brunswick's letter to the lord Burghley, writ the next year, 1598. *upon the return of the queen's agent, Lesieur, sent to the electors and princes of Germany.*

Otto, Dei beneficio dux Brunswicensium, et Lunæburg. &c.

Anno 1598. POSTEAQUAM, illustris et generose comes, amice singulariter dilecte, præsens clementissimæ vestræ reginæ legatus generosus, nobisque singulariter dilectus vir, dominus Stephanus Lesieur, demandatis sibi a regia majestate negotiis apud electores et principes quosdam imperii feliciter expeditis et confectis, Angliam repetit; nolumus in-

termittere, quin hisce nostris te inviseremus, et memoriam pristinæ familiaritatis refricaremus. Jucundum nobis auditu fuit, te secundo rerum statu et bona valetudine frui. Deus Opt. Max. ea largiri velit, quæ ad præsentis et futuræ vitæ beatitudinem salutaria sunt. ANNO 1598.

Quo successu legatus clementissimæ vestræ reginæ negotia expediverit, ipse coram prolixius enarrabit. Omnipotens Pater faxit, ut hujusmodi publicæ tranquillitatis perturbationes propediem tollantur, et magno totius Christianæ reip. commodo, pax et tranquillitas publice stabiliatur et confirmetur. Quod a Deo Opt. Max. ex intimis animi votis precamur, et paternæ ejus tutelæ te diu salvum et incolumem conservandum committimus; tibique propense bene 324
volumus, et favemus. Quod itidem ut tu quoque facias, nosque clementissimæ nostræ reginæ de meliori nota commendare non graveris, amice petimus. Datæ ex arce nostra Harburgo, 17 Martii, anno MDXCVIII.

Otto dux Bruns. et Lunenb.

Number CCXLVI.

Considerations of a motion for a treaty of peace with the king of Spain: upon a motion of the French king: drawn up by the lord treasurer Burghley, and writ by his own hand: and seems to be some of his last writings.

IF it shall be held for a certainty, that there can be no condition obtained by her majesty for assurance of the United Provinces, to continue their estate, without evident danger to be in short time subdued to the king of Spain's absolute power, as they were in former times, then it were in vain to send any to treat for any particular peace for England: for that the queen of England can have no assurance to continue a particular peace, except she may be also assured that the United Provinces may be free from the danger of such conquest, as by good proofs are known to have been intended at the first coming of the duke of

ANNO 1598. Alva with his armies into those countries. And so also the like purposes continued by the king of Spain's ministers, with intention thereby to invade and conquer England.

So if upon these grounds no treaty shall be convenient for England, then may the French king be answered, that though there be a commission sent for the Spaniard to treat of a peace with England, yet considering without a good accord to be made for the United Provinces, for their assurance against the former purposes of Spain, her majesty can make no account for continuance of any peace with Spain. And for that the deputy of the States have peremptorily answered the French king, that they will not, nor may, with their safety, yield their consent to hearken to a treaty with Spain. And so also other their deputies, being sent hither to her majesty, do concur in the same opinion, to refuse such treaty; notwithstanding that they have been with sundry reasons moved to the contrary. Whereunto they will in no wise yield; but do rather choose to continue in their defence; earnestly urging the queen's majesty to continue her confederacy with them. Though it hath not pleased the French king, according to the former joint league, both offensive and defensive, to perform the same, but to hearken to make a peace apart for himself. And hereupon her majesty, considering with herself that her danger from Spain shall continue, notwithstanding any form of peace to be made by her apart, if the United Provinces shall not have a good accord with Spain; whereof
325 they do despair; and whereof also her majesty hath mo causes of doubt, being no wise informed of any good disposition in the king of Spain's commissioners, or in the cardinal, to make any good accord with the United Provinces, but to the contrary by good proof, which her majesty hath seen in the very letters and writings between the cardinal and the deputies concerning hard conditions for the States, that cannot be denied.

And so upon these former reasons, her majesty may with honour, and without misliking of the French king, impart these reasons to him, why her majesty cannot with her

safety accept any treaty for peace with Spain, except she may also see the States better assured of a peace than she seeth a disposition thereto on their part. And so the king may be thanked for his intercession made for his obtaining of the commission from Spain; but to require him, that his commissioners may be directed to inform the Spanish deputies upon what grounds and for what reasons for this time her majesty will forbear to send any commissioners to treat of any peace with the king of Spain, except she may be more certainly informed how the United Provinces shall continue in surety from their manifest dangers of subversion; and thereby also her majesty ensured from the dangers that have been intended against her realm by the Spaniards' absolute conquest of those Low Countries, thereby to invade her countries. A true knowledge whereof being had, her majesty will never refuse to assent to any peace: a matter very profitable for all parts, and therefore to be approved. ANNO 1598.

A consideration of a second course to be held for the treaty.

Considering an offer is made by a sufficient commission from the king of Spain, to treat with her majesty of a peace, and that it is to be confessed of all Christians, that where peace may be had, there the refusal thereof, by continuing of war, will displease Almighty God, who is a God of peace, and an avenger by way of war: and for that no war can be ended by form of a peace without treaty; and for that without a treaty it cannot be certainly known with what conditions at this time a peace may be had, with consent of the parties that are in war, without proof by conference and treaty to be had by ministers thereto authorized: therefore there is great reason, both to content Almighty God, who is best pleased with peacemakers, and to satisfy the opinion of all men that shall hear of this offer, and to comfort the good people of the realm that desire to live in peace, to authorize and send some convenient number of persons of respective qualities to join with the Spanish de-

ANNO 1598. puties, to treat hereof according as they shall be instructed from her majesty to enter into the same with due respect to her honour. And if in their precepts they shall perceive, that by treaty there cannot be obtained such conditions as shall be by her majesty precisely required according to reason, and indifference for all parties now in war, to enjoy an assured peace; then it shall be no displeasing to God, nor to be disliked of any indifferent persons for the commissioners of England, to forbear to prosecute the treaty upon the wilful refusal of the Spanish, either to allow her majesty's demands, or by their urging from her majesty of unreasonable conditions to be granted by her.

And for the prosecution of this purpose for sending, an-
326 swer would be sent to the French king, that according to his request reported by her ambassador, her majesty's principal secretary to be advertised within forty days, from the coming away of the ambassador, whether her majesty would consent to send her commissioners to treat with the Spaniards, her majesty hath yielded to with some difficulty, how to resolve, and to return answer within that number of days; considering of those forty days there were ..... days past before her ambassador, or any from him, could come into England; partly, by the long and tedious journey he had from Nantes through Bretain to the seaside, to take his passage into England, which he adventured against all favourable winds, having spent of the time limited two days and two nights on the seas with great hazard. But at his coming, being informed of the French king's earnestness to have answer within forty [days], her majesty weighing the cause to be of a great weight, as it is, either to proceed, or of so short a time to consider thereof, having a mind not to be noted in the world to refuse to live in peace, being offered, neither yet to fear her enemy, that shall refuse to accord to reasonable conditions, she hath yielded to send certain commissioners into France, to some convenient place; to meet with such as shall be authorized from the king of Spain to meet and treat hereof.

And therefore she requireth of the French king these things following, to be reported to this her messenger Edmonds [sir Tho. Edmonds.] ANNO 1598.

1. That she may know who shall be authorized on the Spanish part to treat. For it is not convenient, that any authorized by the pope, as either the legate, the nuncio, or any other, be admitted to be participant in this treaty, which properly belongeth but to the king of Spain and the queen of England: except the French king shall offer to name some of his council as indifferent persons, to further the treaty by reasonable motions to both parties.

2. To have a copy of the king's commission, and of their deputation, to the end that her majesty may, finding the same sufficient, form the like in her commission.

3. That a place indifferent may be named for meeting, being as near in some parts of Picardy as may be to the seaside: and that a large safe conduct may be given on the king of Spain's part for the commissioners of England and their train to land in any place; and to pass safely from their landing to the place of the meeting. And so also to return safe without let or stay, by any of the king of Spain's subjects, or ministers, or by any of his soldiers.

After these things had, and her majesty's commissioners thereby warranted to proceed, these things following seem to be necessary to be delivered to them, besides their general commissions by way of instruction.

Instructions.

At their first meeting, after an interchangeable view of the commissions on both parts, and finding them agreeable to the copies afore delivered, either party shall deliver to the other true copies of their commissions in writing, subscribed with their hands. That being done, our commissioners shall require, that before they shall begin to treat of any condition of peace, they may deliver some speeches by way of a preface, to declare our sincerity in proceeding, since we heard from the French king of any offer by the 327
cardinal for the king of Spain to treat of a peace with the French king, and consequently with us. Hereof what re-

ANNO 1598. port hath been made of her majesty's dealing herein, this in brief is the truth: Here being, by a message sent by one of the French king's council, named mons. De Mezzy, informed, that the French king had an offer from the king of Spain to treat with him for a peace, and that the cardinal had authority so to do, and also to treat with her majesty; and therefore, considering he was bound by a league both with her majesty and the states of the United Provinces to continue the war against the king of Spain, the common enemy, he required the queen's majesty to certify him whether she would make choice to continue the war, or to hearken to peace: for thereto would he conform himself in answering the cardinal. To this her majesty made answer, that she had cause to doubt, that though this offer to the French king to make peace with him might have warrant, but yet for any treaty for peace to be offered to her majesty, she understood of no good warrant from the king of Spain. And when De Mezzy said that he thought that the cardinal might have authority, then her majesty, to increase her doubt of insufficient dealing, called to remembrance, and so told monsieur De Mezzy, how deceitfully she had been used by the king of Spain in the year of 88, to take advantage of her, by offering her by the duke of Parma, both by sundry messages and letters, that he was authorized from the king of Spain to treat for a peace. Whereon the said duke, with as good earnestness of good meaning as by words and oaths he could, did affirm the same: and thereupon the queen's majesty, trusting that the king of Spain was of the same mind, she did send a solemn ambassade of her privy-counsellors, whereof one was an ancient earl of the realm, the other also an ancient baron of the same, and others of the council of her state: who when they came to the place appointed for their meeting, and demanding to see the commission from the king, whereof the duke of Parma had made mention, there was none extant; but by speech it was said that they looked for one shortly out of Spain. But while such one was thus promised, and treaty held on, her majesty had certain knowledge of the king's

preparation of a navy and army, so mighty, as the like never was made in any men's memory, and with all haste possible, to come to the narrow seas to invade this realm, with an opinion to conquer it: and for that purpose so published, and whole families shipped to have inhabited this realm. Whereupon her majesty, for defence of her realm, armed some number of ships, far inferior in number to the king of Spain's; yet Almighty God, for her defence, and to be justly revenged upon this manner of deceitful dealing of the king of Spain, to further his dangerous attempts by colour to treat of a peace, did subvert the king of Spain's great army with such a ruin, as to this day he hath not been able to make the like. ANNO 1598.

This dishonourable accident hath been known to the world to be true. And you our commissioners may boldly say, if Richardot the king's president shall be there, he cannot truly deny it; but rather may be charged as privy to the same, as he was openly at Burborough by our com- 328
missioners charged. And doubting of some like accident to accompany this, here offer in the name of the cardinal, did forbear to give any resolute answer to De Mezzy; but sent soon our principal secretary, with some others, to the French king, to understand the truth, how any offer was made from the king of Spain to treat with us: but in fine we could not understand that there was any commission indeed from the king of Spain to treat with us, but the commission from the king of Spain was only to treat with the French king. And as this was discovered to us by the sight of a multitude of writings of the cardinal and his deputies, being at Vervin, so the French king also, by his deputies, found that to be true which we formerly doubted, that indeed there was no commission from the king of Spain. Whereupon, to reform this abuse, the Spanish commissioners offered to send into Spain for a commission, requiring the French king to give a safety for their messenger to pass into Spain: which he did. And after some good time spent at the return of our ambassador, told him, that his deputy

ANNO 1598. affirmed, that there was now come a sufficient commission, though they could not have a copy thereof. Which had not been inconvenient to have been seen, that the like might have been made by us.

Now you shall have, sir, his Spanish deputies, to consider whether we have not dealt sincerely, in prolonging of the time of our answer, whether we would assent at this time to treat, or no: and so you shall conclude that you will enter to treat. For prosecution whereof you shall observe these directions following.

First, You shall require to know of them, whether there be any intention in them to debate upon the occasions that have ministered these great hostilities between these two crowns, that aforetime had such perfect amity betwixt them, and of the long continuance, as the like was never, of such perpetuity, nor for such utility for the subjects on both parties; but especially for those of England, from the house of Burgundy, and all the Low Countries: insomuch, that not only the kings of England, and the dukes of Burgundy, and the earls of Flanders, Holland, and some other provinces, did make treats, both for amity with the nobility, cities and great towns of England, for mutual defence of one to the other. For the which there do remain particular bonds and seals here among the queen's records, for performance thereof; which strict manner is not to be seen in any other foreign dominions. And by force of such mutual bonds, never repealed, there remaineth just cause for the subjects on both sides to regard their mutual preservation and their safety. But considering it hath been publicly and truly witnessed to the world the first notable unfriendly actions of the king of Spain, refusing at the beginning of the queen's reign to ratify his father's treaties, commonly named, *Fœdus structum amicitiæ:* and so by degrees did incite certain of the greatest of the nobility of England to rebel; and at the same time sought how to invade this realm, and acquiring into the absolute possession of the towns and ports of Holland, Zealand, and other places of the Low Coun-

tries: whereupon she did also for her defence strengthen herself sundry ways, to the misliking of the king of Spain, and to withstand his great hostility. ANNO 1598. 329

But you shall say, since this meeting is to treat of peace and not of war, and how friendship that hath been exiled may be reduced home again, it shall be convenient to pass over the discussion of the cause, that hath produced such hostility, and to consider the state of the former treaties, both for mutual amity between the princes, and for the intercourse for the merchants and subjects on both sides: how conveniently the same are to be renewed by mutual covenants on both parts: and for a new treaty to be made with sufficient words, and in good form, to confirm and ratify all former treaties that were in force at the entry of the king of Spain to his duchy of Brabant, being termed his *joyous entry;* foreseeing to the beginning of the act of confirmation there by one general capitulation, that every of the princes, so for the love of peace, accord, that all actions past before this treaty of confirmation shall take place, that may any wise be pretended to have been done by either of the two princes or their subjects, or any other by their commandment, contrary to the treaties, either of the amity or of the intercourse of merchandise, shall be remitted, and a perpetual oblivion enjoined to be held and professed, without permitting any person by way of law or other fact to pursue, either for recompense or restitution of any thing taken from either part afore this confirmation. And that all prisoners of either side, that have not compounded or agreed for their ransom, to be delivered.

And this motion may be alleged to be reasonable from both parts, considering, that otherwise the diversity and multitude of acts committed on both parts on one another, in so many years, and so various places, it is not only difficite to discuss, but impossible to reduce them to any certainty; but whatsoever may be on the one side alleged to have been justly committed, there may be, both for the number and for the quality and greatness of the fact, as much alleged on the other side, to counterpoise the other;

ANNO 1598. and so must follow that which is called *compensatio delicti.*

When you have thus far proceeded, whereby in outward appearance a form of a peace between us may seem to be assented to, you shall require them to consider, that it behoveth us, as well for the continuing of a peace, as for the framing of one in words and sentences; therefore you must let them understand, that the time hath given just occasion for us to add to this treaty some other matters, whereby we may be assured of the fruit of this peace. Which are these; not newly now devised, but the same whereof our commissioners at Borborough, in the year 1588, did treat; and if the navy of Spain had not then arrived and broke up that treaty, the commissioners were in good hope to have obtained their desires, having found the duke of Parma, in his private conference with some of our commissioners, well inclined to our commissioners' demands. And now you shall say, that we must, for our surety, renew the same to be now required, as then it was.

The first and principal matter that we are to demand is, to have the United Provinces, with whom now for our safety we are bound to a mutual defence, to have such assurance
330 made to them, and promised to us also by special covenant, as they may continue in the state wherein they are, both for the government of the people and country, for their ancient liberties, and defence of their towns and ports, without changing of their profession or religion: which being granted with good assurance, we shall have just cause to accept that peace, before treated on, and to make account of the continuance thereof. But otherwise we manifestly see aforehand, that what manner of peace soever shall be offered in words and writing to us for ourselves will not be firmly kept; but opportunities taken to renew the Spanish counsels to attempt the subjecting of the principal towns and ports of the Low Countries, and to obtain the possession of their great shipping; to make with the same an invasion of England, as it were a bridge to come over into this realm. And you may well avow this to be no vain doubt, new invented by us, but

that we have very notable good proof by sundry former actions, attempted in the duke of Alva's time, and the same continued by others the governors that succeeded him. And for more evidence to prove the intention of these actions merely against England, the same hath been manifested by sundry letters and discourses, in way of advice and counsel, intercepted, that have been by the king of Spain's counsellors and ministers so written at sundry times. And such hath been their earnestness therein, fraughted with diabolical malice, as divers of them, among whom some have been of the general governors, that have, to accomplish their purposes, hired certain persons to have killed us, and some to have poisoned us. Which purpose Almighty God in good time discovered to us, and the parties apprehended, and voluntarily confessed the same, and received their death for the same without repentance. But the author that moved them thereto, even with tokens from the king of Spain, being at the time of his procurement a governor of the Low Countries, though he could not but hear how the parties executed did openly avow him to have procured and hired them to the said horrible fact, did never give any cause to excuse himself. ANNO 1598.

Now for that it is like that the Spanish deputies will answer, that the people of the United Provinces are the king of Spain's subjects in right of his dukedom of Burgundy, and being earl of Holland and Zealand, and that we have no more interest to join with them than we will suffer the king to deal with our subjects in England; you may see, that if the king had not by his tyrannous governor oppressed them, and attempted to subdue them, to have exiled them that were natural and obedient, to have inhabited the country with Spaniards, as he hath generally done in other countries, and especially in India, by the destruction of more creatures than all Spain hath living, then in truth their answer to be allowed. But they are also to consider that this is not the question, whether we shall or may intermeddle in the causes concerning the king's subjects in general, but whether upon good proof finding that he doth

ANNO 1598. earnestly suppress his subjects, and seeketh by conquering of them both to plant his Spanish nation there, and with them, by possessing and conquering of those countries, to proceed thereby to the invasion and conquest of England;

331 these circumstances being certainly proved true by many certainties that cannot be justly denied, the question then, accompanied with those circumstances, is to be answered, that both the states of the provinces have just cause, even by the law of nature, to arm and defend their natural country and their families against the tyrannous, bloody attempts for their subversion, and planting of strangers, Spaniards, not unlike to tigers, in their habitations. And so have we as just cause, for our own surety and our country, to join with the said States and their countries, to preserve them so in their liberties, as the Spaniard, intending to conquer them, shall not also prosecute their intention to conquer England.

And for that it is like the Spanish commissioners will, for answer to these your arguments, peremptorily deny, that any good proof can be made of the king's intention to subdue or to oppress the Low Countries, or to invade England, you shall have a collection made of the sundry actions committed by his governors, and of sundry other his ministers: which are so many in number, and so various in their qualities, as were a tedious work to be inserted in these instructions. To which collection we do remit you, to use the same, or any part thereof, for maintenance of the foresaid matters alleged for the defence of the said States; as well by themselves as by us, against the common enmity professed and executed by the enemy.

After this manner of proceeding, to demand in general a surety for the States, you shall say, that you would be glad to understand in what sort and with what conditions they will offer to the States such good assurance as shall be necessary. Whereto, because we think it likely they will offer none, or very slender, you shall say, you will change your general demands into some particular. As first, that the provinces united may be permitted to continue themselves

in arms for their defence, and that no forces be sent against them, they only continuing in their possessions, without attempting by any hostility upon any of the king's territories now in his possession. And for maintenance hereof, that some form of truce, or abstinence of war, may be accorded for some number of years. Secondly, that the people of the provinces may be governed, as they now are, by the natural officers of every province. And that it may be lawful for them to resort to any of the king of Spain's countries without restraint, either for their religion or any other cause, not being to the breach of peace, or to do injury to any man. Thirdly, to comfort them with opinion, that the king will not attempt by any outward force to invade them against his promise, that it may be ordained to send away out of all the Low Countries all strange soldiers; and that the necessary garrisons to be kept in the Low Countries may consist of the native people of the countries: as it is manifest that the whole States of every province have of late in their request to the cardinal desired. And so the same more reasonable to be granted, considering the peace now intended between the French king and the king of Spain; whereby the Low Countries shall enjoy a general peace, being a greater happiness to the cardinal, if he shall have with the infante the Low Countries, than hath happened to any per- 332
son since the death of the emperor Charles. ANNO 1598.

And for more certainty, to avoid length in the treaty, you shall require, that the assurance may be agreeable to the pacificat of Gaunt, which was confirmed by the king, and sworn to by don Jhon.

Now you may say, that as by the former demands you have dealt specially for the States, so should you commit a great error, if you should not specially require some necessary things for us your sovereign. And for that purpose you shall require that no impediment be offered us by the king or his ministers, but that we may retain the possession of the two towns of Flushing and Brill, according to such covenants as are made between us and the States. Secondly, that if the States shall for their defence have need

ANNO 1598. to be supported with any number of English soldiers, that it may be leeful for them to wage any convenient number of English, without charge of breach of covenant contained in our peace with Spain. [*This second condition hath cross set on the side.*]

Number CCXLVII.

The lord treasurer, lord Burghley, slandered by one Johnson, the queen's farmour of Claxby; whereof one Savyl was the bailiff, and Dobby and Goodwin two of the tenants, June 1598, *that is, about a month or two before his death. The examination of this slander.*

THIS farmour and his bailiff raised a slander of the said lord treasurer: of which, coming to his ears, he caused examination to be had about it; which was as followeth:

Brian Cottingham was sworn. The evidence was, that there being talk with Savyl about Mr. Johnson's affairs, he urged him to know of him for whom the kine were bought; he answered, for one of my lord treasurer's gentlemen. Whereupon Savyl said, "Let me entreat you to say, they "were bought to give to my lord treasurer for a bribe, for "that he had been so good a lord unto them; and I will "promise you the best pair of hose that ever came on your "legs: and if you can do so much for me and my master "as to procure one Beck to say the like, I will give you "three shillings more. And if you get a wife, my master "will bestow an house on you, and you shall win his favour "for ever. For the truth is, my master can have neither "law nor justice at my lord treasurer's hands. And said, he "hoped my lord would die before the next term, and then "they may go shake their ears like villains." And this deponent denying to do any such thing, he desired him to hold his peace, or else his master and he were undone.

William Long sworn, That Savyl, Mr. Johnson's bailiff, told him, that his master said, that Dobby and Goodwin did buy ten kine and a bull, to give my lord treasurer for

a bribe, and that his master said he was like to lose 500*l.* and two hundred acres of ground; for that they made such means to my lord treasurer, as that he could not have law nor justice at my lord's hands. And that if he would go to London, and swear, as James Wilson promised him to do, that the same kine were bought for my lord, whereby my lord's displeasure might be had against them, he should have a farm of his master's: otherwise his master was like to lose a deal of his best ground. But he denying to meddle in the cause, he entreated him not to betray it. ANNO 1598. 333

Harrison sworn, That whereas, as one of Mr. Johnson's men depose, that this deponent said, that Dobby and Goodwin told him, that they bought ten kine to give to my lord treasurer for a bribe, he utterly upon his oath denieth the same. That Mr. Johnson, at Candlemas last, sent to him, and desired him to tell him, if he could, for whom the kine were bought: he answered, he heard they bought them to send to Theobald's, [the lord treasurer's house,] to Mr. Stileman. To which Mr. Johnson replied, I can have no law; but I hope, said he, ere long to bring the copyholders about: but if that which is done were to do again, I would never do it. I would rather lie in prison.

Another sworn, That Dobby would have bought kine of him, which he proposed, as he said, to send to Mr. Stileman. And was afterwards urged by Savyl to tell him for whom the kine were bought: the said Savyl saying, We hear they are bought for my lord; but would we could prove it. For the truth is, my master saith, he can have no law.

The lord treasurer to sir Will. Periam, chief baron: committing this matter to him.

After my very hearty commendations to your lordship, I have received from Mr. Irby the examination of certain tenants of Claxby, touching a false report made of me: by which examination it seemeth the poor man Dobby hath cleared himself; and that Johnson hath been the deviser of the slander. And for that Mr. Irby is able to inform your lordship of the particularities thereof, I desire you to hear

ANNO 1598. him. And if upon due proof it shall appear that Johnson hath made this lewd report of me, or procured the same to be made by any others, that your lordship would let me understand the truth thereof, that he may be punished, as he well deserveth. The breviat of the examinations I send herein enclosed, and refer the rest to Mr. Irby's report. From my house in Westminster, the 27th of June, 1598.

Your very loving friend,

W. Burghley.

The lord baron's answer, having perused the depositions at large of the persons mentioned in this abstract or breviat:

" I find them to agree with the breef: and as it seemeth " unto me, there is some fault in Mr. Johnson, but much " more in Will. Savyl, his servant and bailiff: who hath " behaved himself very lewdly herein.

" Wy. Periam."

This Johnson a little before was laid in the Fleet for some crime, perhaps relating to his farm of Claxby, held of the queen.

Number CCXLVIII.

* 334 From his Life, MS. at Burleigh-house.

The lord Burghley, lord high treasurer of England, was born the 13th of September, 1521, *and died the 4th of August*, 1598: *and was interred at Stamford, under a fair monument. The pious preface to his will, bearing date October* 20, 1579, *and revised afterwards, April* 7, 1580, *and June* 1, 1580, *and February* 22, 1582, *was as follows.*

CONSIDERING by the goodness of Almighty God, I have been created a reasonable creature, and thereby ordained to serve him, and born of Christian parents, and christened in the name of the Father, of the Son, and the Holy Ghost; and consequently, brought up and instructed, in my young years, in the knowledge of the gospel of our

Saviour Jesus Christ; which was more clearly revealed in the times of my young years than it had been many years before; being thereby taught, that there was no other means for the salvation of my soul but by the death and resurrection of Christ the Son of God, wherein I do put my whole confidence and trust, and do desire the assistance of his holy Spirit to have grace to be thankful for the same, and to have a desire to obey his will and commandment, as far forth as the infirmity of my flesh will suffer, in living religiously and virtuously; whereunto adding the inevitable certainty of the death of my body, though I am uncertain of the time; and yet by the increase of time, and infirmities of my body, necessarily induced to look shortly by order of nature for my worldly end; and that whatsoever worldly goods God hath given, or rather lent unto me, I do certainly know that by death I must leave them all to the world; and that whatsoever godly and spiritual graces and gifts hath been by God's special grace bestowed upon me, I hope certainly by God's goodness and mercy, though my body shall be committed to earth, yet to enjoy the fruits thereof in heaven, after this mortal life, if I shall use and dispose them in this life to God's glory; acknowledging them to have proceeded of his mere goodness, and that more plenteously than to many others. ANNO 1598.

Upon all these, and many other like considerations, I being at this present time occupied with the cogitations of my mortality, and yet of whole mind and memory, (for which I humbly thank Almighty God,) do determine, as many times heretofore I have done, to declare my last will and testament in writing, concerning the disposition of my lands and goods, which are worldly; what my mind is therein, and to whom I will and desire that the same shall remain after my decease, in such sort as by the laws of the realm I may, and as I hope shall not offend God, the giver of them all to me: considering, as it is in the Psalm, *Cœlum cœli Domino, terram dedit filiis hominum.* And therefore first, this 20th day of October, in the year of our Lord 1579,

ANNO 1598. and of queen Elizabeth the 22d, I do revoke all my former wills in writing, which are many, and do mean that none shall, from this time forward, be of any force, but this now written, and that which shall from time to time be added hereunto.

335

Number CCXLIX.

August the 3d, 1598. Oratio expirantis Domini. *So is the title of the prayer, made by Mr. Thompson, the lord treasurer's chaplain, the night before he died.*

O GOD of heaven, father of spirits, thou founder and restorer of mortality and immortality, open thine ears at this time to our humble requests, and favour the deep sighs and last prayers of us sinful men, for this thy true and faithful servant, our honourable lord and master, so deeply strucken, and so grievously wounded with the arrows of sickness, and the terror of death, that the venom thereof hath drunk up his spirits, and so utterly consumed him, that he refuseth all hope but in thy protection, and will not have any rest but under the shadow of thy wings. Look down, O Lord, from heaven upon him, with the eye of thy pity and compassion in this his last extremity. Let the saving beams of thy mercy shine upon him in this day of his redemption. Assuage the fury of his sickness with the joyful remembrance and present hope of a better life at hand: support his weakness with thy right hand, and assist him now and evermore with thy blessed Spirit, which is his only comfort in the hour of death.

And because the day of his death is the day of his judgment, and the hour of his dissolution the entrance into another estate, grant him, O Lord, grant him a joyful passage from death to life. Forgive him, O Father of mercies, forgive him all that is amiss. Wash away his sins in the blood of the unspotted lamb, Christ Jesus, his redeemer. Let his obedience take away the guilt of his sin. O! let the day

of his death in this world be the day of his nativity in the world to come; and the hour of his dissolution here be the full fruition of thy glorious presence in heaven. ANNO 1598.

Lord, look upon him in thy Son Christ Jesus. Cover his nakedness with the robe of his innocency, that so he may be without spot. Release him out of these grievous bonds, if it be thy heavenly pleasure, wherewith he is tied, that this mortal may be swallowed up of life. Receive him to mercy, whom thou hast most mercifully this long time preserved. Open him the gate of life, that in thy righteousness he may enter in. And as thou hast satisfied him with long life and fulness of years here on earth, and brought him to great honour in the eyes of his prince and country, so give him now, O Lord, eternity and length of days at thy right hand, and the desire of his heart in the world to come, and translate him out of this vale of misery, wherein he hath long groaned and sighed, to the kingdom of thy blessed Son Christ Jesus. Give him full possession of that heavenly city which thou hast purchased and promised; to which he hath travailed all the days of his pilgrimage. And since on earth thou hast granted and favoured him many years above others, for the glory of thy name, and the government of thy people, so now in his death make him a fixed star of light in the firmament of thy glory, to shine among thy chosen saints in heaven for evermore.

Leave his body to the earth, from whence it came, there 336
to rest, in assured hope of restitution; but his soul, O Lord, the work of thy hands, created to joy and eternity, redeemed to glory and immortality, let it with eagle's wings fly up to heaven, from whence it came, and be carried by the hands of angels into the bosom of Abraham, the father of faithful men, there to be kept blameless and unspotted, until the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ in the clouds. For he knoweth, O Lord, for he knoweth, and we all here confess before thee, that though his strength be dried up like a potsherd, and his kidneys appear within his body; and though his body be brought into the dust of death, and lodge in the land of forgetfulness, yet his Redeemer liveth as a faith-

ANNO 1598. ful witness in heaven, that will never shrink, but that one day he shall redeem him. For with his own eyes he and no others shall behold his dear Saviour Christ, coming in the clouds to judgment, with thousands of angels: and that in soul and body he shall be made a joyful heir of the kingdom of bliss, there to live for ever with God and the Lamb Christ Jesus, to enjoy all the blessings of the kingdom of God in a better life. For which graces we bow the knees of our hearts, and lift up the eyes of faith, praying, as thou, Lord, hast taught us in thy gospel, *Our Father, which art*, &c.

Number CCL.

Of this great statesman and counsellor, Will. Lambard, that great antiquarian, gave this short character to his son, sir Robert Cecill, in his epistle dedicatory before his learned book Archion, *in his commentary upon the high courts of justice, in these words:*

THAT as he was already by nature his son, so, he prayed, that he might at the length, by imitation, become the very heir of that renowned Nestor, and only Atlas of the English country and commonwealth.

Number CCLI.

Another writer, that translated the history of France out of French, about the latter end of queen Elizabeth's reign, in his dedication thus styled the said lord Burghley.

THE ancient counsellor of Europe, *pater patriæ*, pillar of the state. Through whose prudent policy and careful watchings that may justly be applied, *Neque periculum in rep. fuit gravius unquam, nec majus otium.*

Number CCLII.

ANNO 1598.

A large Latin inscription upon a fair monument of this nobleman: composed by himself soon after the deaths of the countess of Oxford, his daughter, and his own lady. 337

SI quæratur quis sit hic vir senex, genua flectens, canitie venerabilis, toga parliamentaria amictus, ordinis garteriani eques: quæ etiam sunt illæ duæ feminæ nobiles, splendide stolatæ: quique sunt ad earum capita et pedes genubus nixi; ex sequenti sermone senis, et ex inscriptionibus cuique subjectis, hæc omnia intelliget.

Illa cujus imago est infima, fuit, heu! fuit mea Mildreda uxor longe charissima. Altera fuit Anna, mea filia dilectissima.

Mildreda vero uxor mea ab anno Dom. 1546. vixit mecum perpetuo ad annos 43 conjunctissime, fuitque particeps omnium fortunarum mearum, temporibus et secundis et adversis, regnantibus regibus, Henrico Octavo, Edwardo Sexto, reginisque Maria, et Elizabetha, jam felicia sceptra tenente. Peperitque mihi multos liberos, sed ad maturam ætatem tantum tres pervenerunt; nempe duæ filiæ, Anna et Elizabetha, ac filius unus, Robertus: Anna autem filia mea semper fuit mihi in deliciis, atque in matrimonium data Edwardo Veero, illustriss. comiti Oxoniæ, dno. magno camerario Angliæ. Ex eoque fit comitissa Oxon. Peperitque viro suo, præter aliquos liberos, non diu superstites, filias tres, adhuc vivas; quarum imagines visuntur genua flectentes, ad caput matris. Prior est dna. Elizabetha: secunda est dna. Brigitta: tertia dna. Susanna. Vixit illa filia mea Anna a teneris annis, multa cum laude semper apud omnes, tam in aula, quam domi, tam virgo valde pia et pudica, quam uxor vere casta suo viro: tandem magno mærore meo ac matris, nobis prærepta; spiritumque reddidit Deo, qui illum dedit. Cujus corpus, et animam post Deo redditam, ego et uxor mea multis cum lachrymis, sub hac mola lapidea reponi curavimus.

Non multo autem post sequitur mater filiam; de qua quanquam nunquam sine lachrymis serio cogito, aliqua ta-

ANNO 1598. men occurrunt, quæ mærorem meum paululum lenire videntur; nempe cum in memoriam repeto, quomodo per totam vitam versata sit in sacrarum literarum et sanctorum virorum scriptis, eisque maxime Græcis, ut Basilii Magni, Chrysostomi, Gregorii Nazianzeni, ac aliorum similium. Maxime autem consolatur, (quod quidem jam post mortem omnibus magis patet, quam cum viveret,) recordari quanta beneficia secreto in doctos, quantasque eleemosynas in pauperes contulerit.

Quomodo etiam collegia in utrisque academiis donariis ornaverit, ad sustentationem scholarium redditibus perpetuis, præsertim collegium D. Johannis evangelistæ Cantab. dotaverit: de egenis etiam fovendis in villa Romfordiæ, unde ortum familiæ habuit, et Chestoniæ, ubi ædes nostræ sitæ sunt, curam magnam habuit. Ita ut singulis primis sabbatis omnium mensium et commeatus et pecuniam perpetuo pauperibus, maximeque viduis et orphanis Chestoniæ
338 degentibus, et ad frequentes conciones verbi Dei ibi habendas, distribui curaverit: ac in utrisque eisdem villis pauperibus mecanicis perpetuis temporibus singulis bienniis pecuniarum bonam summam utendam, distribui ordinaverit.

Post ista autem multaque alia ejus generis præstita officia, et Deo et patriæ, mihique conjugi, ac liberis suis, doctisque et pauperibus, sponte in anno suo climacterico, viz. LXIII. spiritum reddidit Deo, quarto Aprilis anno 1589. Cujus corpus ego maritus et pater adjungendum duxi corpori filiæ nostræ Annæ, paulo ante sub isto lapide repositæ. Ut conjunctæ reservarentur ad spem resurrectionis.

Ecce adhuc quatuor alios viventes, Robertum meum unicum ex Mildreda filium ac pedes matris, ac tres alias virgines, dnam. Elizabetham, dnam. Brigittam, ac dnam. Susannam, Annæ meæ tres filias, ad capita matris, et aviæ, genubus incumbentes.

Sed quo pergo? Finem et loquendi et plorandi faciam. Solumque hoc affirmo, spectaculum hoc mihi tam plenum esse doloris, ut quanquam aliquam mixtam consolationem offerant hi relicti mihi optimæ spei dulces liberi; tamen ne-

que hi quatuor valde mihi chari, neque dilectus filius meus major natu THOMAS CECILIUS eques auratus, neque omnes qui ex eo prognati sunt, ac jam vivunt, nepotes ac neptes, numero undecim, cui etiam jungo puerulum suavem Gulielmum PAULET Luciæ Ceciliæ, neptis meæ filium ex Gul. Paulet marchionis WINTON, filio ac hærede, unquam dolorem meum huic spectaculo adhærentem, deleturi sunt. ANNO 1598.

Hic infra meis oculis lachrymis suffusis, animoque maximo mærore oppresso, apparent imagines duarum illustrium feminarum, quæ dum vixerant fuerant mihi, super omne genus humanum, longe charissimæ.

ANNA comitissa OXON. filia Gulielmi Cecillii, baronis de Burghley, nata est quinto Decembris, anno Dom. 1556. Uxor fuit EDWARDI VERI, illustriss. comit. Oxon. anno ætatis suæ 15. Ex cujus connubio mater fuit plurium liberorum, sed reliquit tantum tres filias virgines superstites, dnam. Elizabetham Vere, ætate jam 14, dnam. Brigittam Vere, ætate 5 annorum, tertiam infantulam, dnam. Susannam. Vixit hæc Anna virgo semper pudica et casta, uxor erga virum in amando mire constans, filia in parentes per omnia obsequens, in colendo Deo valde diligens et devota; febre ardente correpta, certa spe regni cælestis spiritum ultimum cum anima ardentiss. precibus Deo, et Creatori et Redemptori suo, reddidit, quinto Junii anno Dom. 1588. in palatio reginæ Elizabethæ Grenwici.

ROBERTUS CECILIUS filius Gulielmi dni. de Burghley, et Mildredæ dnæ. de Burghley, natus est primo Junii, anno Dom. 1563. parum ante matris obitum, ambiebat, conscia matre, nobilem virginem dnam. Elizabetham Brook in privato cubiculo reginæ inservientem, filiam præclari baronis regni W. dom. de COBHAM, eamque post mortem matris, consensu patris, in uxorem duxit ultimo Augusti anno Dom. 1589. Memoriam hic colit magno cum dolore piissimæ matris, et chariss. sororis; agnoscitque patrem jam grandævum omni obsequio, sibi charissimum. In quo si permanebit dies sui prolongentur super terram, quam Dominus Deus dedit.

MILDREDA primogenita filia nobilis dni. ANTON. COCI,

ANNO 1598. equitis aurati, viri pii et insigniter docti, omniumque literatorum Mecænatis optimi. Matrem habuit dnam. Annam fi-
339 liam dni. Gulielmi FITZWILLIAMS, equitis aurati: utroque parente propter eorum antiqua stemmata multis familiis magnatum hujus regni deducta, clara et nobilis. Sed propter eruditionem conjunctam cum constanti Christianæ religionis professione, et Latinæ et Græcæ linguarum singularem cognitionem, quam solummodo a patre docente accepit, non minus clara, et ab omnibus doctis eximie laudata. Uxor anno ætatis suæ 20 fit dni. Gulielmi Cecilii dni. de Burghley, posteaque ratione viri titulo baronis regni nobilitati facta est baronissa de Burghley. Multos ei peperit filios; sed tres tantum, qui ad ætatem adultam pervenerunt; nimirum Annam, Robertum, et Elizabetham.

ANNA conjuncta fuit connubio Edw. comiti Oxoniæ, ut hic supra patet.

ROBERTUS jam vivit. Hic ad pedes matris ac sororis, genubus flexis.

ELIZABETHA moritur, statim a morte viri Gulielmi Wentworthi, primogeniti filii Tho. dno. Wentworth.

Ista pia dna. Burghleia vixit ad ætatem sexaginta trium annorum, multaque testimonia reliquit pietatis in Deum, charitatis in doctos et pauperes, quæ, dum vixerat, celavit sub aliorum virorum bonorum nominibus; quæ tamen coram Deo fuerunt tam cognita, etiam post vitam sine ullo dubio in cælis sibi certo reposita. Obiit vero supremum diem quarto die mensis Aprilis ann. Dom. 1589. in ædibus viri sui dom. Burghleii Westmonasterii.

Dna. Elizabetha Vere, filia illustriss. comitis Edwardi Oxon. et Annæ uxoris, filiæ dnæ. de Burghley, nata 22 Junii ann. 1575. agitque annum 14. et dolet graviter, et non sine causa ob amissam aviam et matrem. Sed consolatur, quod sereniss. regina eam habet in cubiculo privato servientem.

Dna. Brigitta, secunda filia dicti comitis Oxon. et Annæ, nata sexto Aprilis anno 1584. et quanquam vix excessit annum quartum, cum matris corpus in sepulchrum reponeretur, tamen non absque lachrymis agnovit ereptam matrem,

et paulo post aviam. Verum non est relicta orphana, cum habeat patrem viventem et avum charissimum, tutorem maxime solicitum. ANNO 1598.

Dna. Susanna, tertia filia, nata 26 Maii anno 1587. Quæ per ætatem non potuit agnoscere aut aviam aut matrem, verum solum jam agnoscit avum charissimum; qui omnium harum curam habet, ita ut nec pia educatione, nec congrua vivendi ratione, destituantur.

Number CCLIII. 340

The lord Burghley's instructions to his son Robert Cecil, when young.

This is printed, but from a vicious copy, but is corrected from an original.

Son Robert,

THE virtuous inclinations of thy matchless mother, by whose tender and godly care thy infancy was governed, together with thy education under so zealous and excellent a tutor, putteth me rather in assurance than hope, that thou art not ignorant of the *summum bonum*, which is only able to make thee happy, as well in thy death as life: I mean the true knowledge and worship of thy Creator and Redeemer; without which all other things are vain and miserable. So that thy youth being guided by so sufficient a tutor, I make no doubt but he will furnish thy life both with divine and moral documents. Yet, that I may not cease of the care beseeming a parent towards his child, or that thou shouldest have cause to derive thy whole felicity and welfare rather from another than from whom thou receivedst thy birth and being, I think it fit, and agreeable to the affection I bear thee, to help thee with such advertisements and rules for the forming of thy life, as are gained rather by long experience than much reading; to the end that thou, entering into this exorbitant age, mayest be the better prepared to shun those cautelous courses, whereunto this world and thy lack of experience may draw thee.

ANNO 1598. And because I would not confound thy memory, I have reduced them into ten parts; and next unto Moses's tables (if thou imprint them in thy mind) thou shalt reap the benefit, and I the contentment. And these they are:

I. When it shall please God to bring thee to man's estate, use great providence and circumspection in the choice of a wife; for from thence will spring all thy future good or evil: and it is an action like a stratagem of war, wherein a man can err but once. If thy estate be good, match near home, and at leisure; if weak, far off and quickly. Inquire diligently of her disposition, and how her parents have been inclined in their youth. Let her not be poor, how generous soever; for a man can buy nothing in the market with gentility. Nor choose a base and uncomely creature, although for wealth; for it will cause contempt in others, and loathing in thee. Neither make choice of a dwarf or a fool: for by the one thou shalt beget a race of pigmies: the other will be thy daily disgrace, and it will irk thee to hear her talk; and thou shalt find to thy grief, that there is nothing more fulsome than a she-fool.

And touching the government of thy house, let thy hospitality be moderate, and according to the measure of thy estate; rather plentiful than sparing, but not costly. For I never knew any growing poor by keeping an orderly table: but some consume themselves through secret visits, and
341 then hospitality beareth the blame. But banish swinish drunkenness out of thy house: which is a vice which impaireth health, consumeth much, and maketh no show. And I never heard praise ascribed to a drunkard, but the well-bearing of his liquor; which is a better commendation for a brewer's horse or a carrion, than either for a gentleman or serving-man. And beware to spend not above a third of the four parts of thy living, nor above a third part of that in thy house; for the other two parts will do no more than defray thy extraordinaries, which will always surmount thine ordinaries by far: otherwise thou shalt live like a rich beggar, in continual want. And the needy man can never live happy nor contented; for every least disaster makes him

ready to mortgage or sell. And the gentlemen that sell an acre of land sell an ounce of credit; for gentility is nothing but ancient riches: for that if the foundation sink, the building must needs follow. ANNO 1598.

II. Bring thy children up in learning and obedience, yet without austerity. Praise them openly, reprehend them secretly. Give them a good countenance, and a sufficient maintenance according to thy ability: otherwise thy life will seem their bondage; and what portion thou shalt leave them at thy death, they will thank death for it, not thee. And I am persuaded, that the foolish cockering of some parents, and the over-stern carriage of others, causeth more men and women to take ill courses, than their own natural inclinations. Marry thy daughters in time, lest they marry themselves. And suffer not thy sons to pass the Alps: for they shall learn nothing there but pride, blasphemy, and atheism. And if by travel they get a few broken languages, they will profit them not more, than to have meat served in divers dishes. Neither by my consent shalt thou train them up to the wars. For he that setteth up his rest to live by that profession can hardly be an honest man or good Christian: for every war is of itself unjust, unless the cause make it just. Besides, it is a science no longer in request than in use: soldiers in peace are like chimneys in summer.

III. Live not in the country without corn and cattle about thee: for he that puts his hand to purse for every expense of household, is like him that thinks to keep water in a sieve. And what provision thou shalt want, lay to buy it at the best hand: for there is one penny in four saved, between buying at thy need, and when the markets and seasons do serve fitly for it. And be not served with kinsmen, friends, or men entreated to stay; for they will expect much, and do little: nor with such as are amorous; for their heads are always intoxicated. And keep rather two too few than one too many. Feed them well, and pay them with the most; and then thou mayest boldly require service and duty at their hands.

ANNO 1598.

IV. Let thy kindred and allies be welcome to thy table. Grace them with thy countenance, and further them in all other honest actions: for by this means thou shalt so double the bond of nature, as thou shalt find them so many advocates to plead an apology for thee behind thy back. But shake off those glowworms, I mean those parasites and
342 sycophants, who will feed and fawn upon thee in the summer of thy prosperity, but in adverse storms they will shelter thee no more than an arbour in winter.

V. Beware of suretyship for the best friends: for he that payeth another man's debts seeks his own decay. But if thou canst not otherwise choose, rather lend thy money thyself upon good bands, though thou borrow it: so shalt thou both pleasure thy friend, and secure thyself. Neither borrow money of a friend; but of a mere stranger, where paying for it thou shalt hear of it no more: otherwise thou shalt eclipse thy credit, lose thy friend, and yet pay as dear as to another. But in borrowing money be precious of thy word: for he that hath care to keep days of payment is lord of other men's goods.

VI. Take no suit against a poor man, without receiving much wrong: for besides thou makest him thy competitor, it is a base conquest to triumph where there is small resistance. Neither attempt law against a man before thou be thoroughly resolved that thou hast right on thy side; and then spare neither for money nor pains: for a cause or two so followed, and obtained, will free thee from suits a great part of thy life.

VII. Be sure to keep some great man thy friend; but trouble him not for trifles. Compliment him often. Present him with many, yet small gifts, and of little charge. And if thou have cause to bestow any great gratuity, let it be some such thing as may be daily in his sight. Otherwise, in this ambitious age, thou shalt remain as a hoop without a pole, live in obscurity, and be made a football for every insulting companion.

VIII. Towards thy superiors be humble, yet generous: with thy equals familiar, yet respective: towards thy infe-

riors shew much humility, and some familiarity; as, to bow thy body, stretch forth thy hand, and uncover thy head, and such like popular compliments. The first prepares way to thy advancement: the second makes thee known for a man well bred: the third gains a good report; which once gotten is easily kept. For high humility taketh such deep root in the minds of the mighty, as they are easier won by unprofitable courtesies than churlish benefits. Yet I advise thee not to affect or neglect popularity too much. Seek not to be C. and then to be R. ANNO 1598.

IX. Trust not any with thy life, credit, or estate: for it is mere folly for a man to entrail himself to his friend; as though, occasion being offered, he shall not dare to become his enemy.

X. Be not scurrilous in thy conversation, nor satirical in thy jests: the one will make thee unwelcome in all company; and the other will pull on quarrels, and get thee hatred of thy best friends. For sulphurous jests, when they savour too much of truth, leave a bitterness in the minds of those that are touched. And although I have already pointed at this inclusive, yet I think it necessary to leave it to thee as a special caution, because I have seen many so prone to quip and gird, as they would rather lose their friend than their jest. And if by chance their boiling brains yield any quaint scoff, they will travail to be delivered of it, as a woman with child. These nimble apprehensions are but the froths of wit.

Number CCLIV. 343

Lord Burghley to his son, sir Robert Cecil. Superscribed, To my very loving son, sir Robert Cecil, knt. principal secretary.

Thus endorsed: Xmo. Julii. My lord's last letter that ever he [the lord Burghley] wrote with his own hand.

THOUGH I know you count it your duty in nature so continually to shew you careful of my state of health, yet

ANNO 1598. were I also unnatural, if I should not take comfort thereby, and to beseek Almighty God to bless you with supply of such blessings as I cannot in this infirmity yield you.

Only I pray you diligently and effectually let her majesty understand, how her singular kindness doth overcome my power to acquit it; who, although she will not be a mother, yet she sheweth herself, by feeding me with her own princely hand, as a careful nurse. And if I may be weaned to feed myself, I shall be more ready to serve her on the earth: if not, I hope to be in heaven a servitor for her and God's church. And so I thank you for your partritches.

Serve God by serving of the queen: for all other service is indeed bondage to the Devil.

10 *Jul.* 1598. Your languishing father,
[So dated in the original.] W. Burghley.

This was transcribed from a volume of original letters of the lord Burghley to his son, sir Robert Cecil, remaining among the MSS. of Dr. More, late lord bishop of Ely, now in the Cambridge library.

Number CCLV.

Matthew bishop of Durham to the lord treasurer Burghley: concerning his apprehending the lady Katharine Gray, widow, one of the daughters of the earl of Westmerland; and other harbourers of popish priests in those northern parts.

Rt. honourable,

MAY it please your good lordship to be advertised, that I have lately caused the lady Katharine Gray, widow, one of Westmerland's daughters, to be apprehended by Mr.
344 John Conyers, the sheriff of this county, and Mr. Robert Tailbois, one of the justices of peace; and have committed her to the safe custody of Christopher Glover, gaoler of Durham castle, to be kept forthcoming in his private house, not in the gaol. This lady was many years sought

by the late earl of Huntington, [late lord president of the council in the north,] and was detected for the receiving and relieving of sundry seminary priests; as Stafferton, with the flesh-mark on his face, (with whose too much familiarity she hath been touched in honour;) Bost, who since was executed; Musske and Pattison; besides some others, whose names come not presently to mind. She hath always illuded the processes and messengers of the ecclesiastical high commission, by eloigning, and withdrawing herself hitherto from all appearance. Of late time, sometime since Martlemas last, she took to farm a house and land, called Grenecroft, nigh Lanchester in this county, eight miles hence north and by west, let unto her by Mrs. Hall, a widow, conformable, and sister to Nicholas Tempest, wife of Stella, that great recusant: where the lady hath been coming and going ever since; and sometime made good cheer to twenty of her friends at once, specially at Christmas; and where, if I be truly informed, there was bad rule kept, (both spiritually and carnally.) Within half a mile of that house, on this side Lanchester, dwelleth at the manor house one William Hodgson, an old servant and follower of the earl; whose son, called John, is a special recusant, and is reported (but how certainly I cannot say) to have married this lady. ANNO 1598.

This William Hodgson is a perilous fellow, conformable to all her majesty's proceedings, and farmour to her highness of the whole deanery of Lanchester dissolved, worth, as it is said, some 200 ma. or better, above the yearly rent. In Lancheston town dwelleth Lancelot Hodgson, when he is at home, but he is now in prison for recusancy; a dangerous person, and not unlearned: who the last year was married, as himself confesseth, by an old popish priest, (but no seminarist, nor at a mass, as he allegeth,) to Mary Lee, daughter to another of the earl's chief old servants and officers at Brancepeth in these days.

The manor of Lanchester belonging to me, and Brancepeth lordship to her majesty by the earl's attainder, do adjoin together; and therefore I think the lady Gray did

ANNO 1598. there mean for the time to set up her rest, so nigh her father's old tenants: the house also itself standing towards the fells, [hills,] and nigh a pretty wood, strongly built of new, and with many shifting conveyances, may yield good opportunity to entertain and lodge, not only old ill guests, but percase the earl himself, *si et quatenus*.....

Now she is in hand, I would by your lordship be directed with some expedition, how she shall be dealt with and used; whether detained in durance, or bailed upon good bonds for her appearance from time to time. 2. Whether she shall be touched only for recusancy, or charged with any other matter that may occur. 3. Whether any thing amounting to felony, &c. shall arise against her, she shall be tried thereof at the next assizes here, or at Northumberland, as her sister the lady Margaret was, anno 1593, and by her majesty most graciously pardoned, in hope of the continu-
345 ance of her pretended conformity; from the which, I hear, she is relapsed since. 4. Whether she shall be suffered to keep house of herself with some of her own servants about her, and her friends sometime resorting to her, as she desireth earnestly; or live as her keeper shall provide for her in a more private and close manner. 5. Whether she shall be permitted to ride abroad and take the air, or continue within her lodging. 6. Such other particulars as your lordship in your wisdom shall think fit to impart unto me.

My health will not yet serve me, either to send for her or to go unto her; but at the time of my visitation, about a fortnight hence, or eighteen days, I shall take occasion to speak with her, and examine her, if your lordship before that time shall so advise me, and if God will give me leave. The while, with humble thanks unto your good lordship for the allowance of my impost, I betake your lordship to the grace of God. At B. Aukland, the 27th of May, 1598.

Your lordship's most humble in Christ,
Tobie Duresm.

Number CCLVI.

ANNO 1598.

Regin. Elizab. ann. 35. *A warrant to the lord keeper Puckring, [a rough draught, corrected with some additions, by the lord treasurer's hand,] to grant commissions for visiting hospitals, almshouses, colleges, &c.; the revenues having been abused and swallowed up by evil men. The effect, as it seems, of that statesman's former speech to the queen, in the year* 1594. 346

ELIZABETH, &c. by the grace of God, &c. To our trusty and well beloved counsellor sir John Puckring, knt. lord keeper of our great seal of England, greeting. Forasmuch as we are credibly informed, that many colleges, hospitals, and almshouses, and other rooms and places within this our realm, which have been founded and ordained, some of them by us and our progenitors, some of them by divers other godly and well-disposed persons, for the charitable relief of poor, aged, and impotent people, are of late years greatly decayed and impoverished; and that the possessions and revenues thereof, and divers lands, tenements, and hereditaments, leases, sums of money, goods, and chattels, which have been given, assigned, and appointed to and for other the like good and charitable uses, are most unlawfully and uncharitably converted to the private lucre and gain of some few greedy and covetous persons, contrary to the godly intent and meaning of the founders and givers thereof, and to the great offence of Almighty God: and being moved with a most godly zeal to have all such poor, aged, and impotent people, and especially soldiers and mariners, and other our good subjects, which have been or may be hurt or maimed in the wars for the maintenance of God's true religion, and for the defence of us and their native country, to be godly and charitably provided for, relieved, and maintained; and having a princely care and regard to have all such colleges, hospitals, and almshouses, and all lands, tenements, rents, revenues, leases, sums of money, and goods and chattels whatsoever within this our realm, as have been founded, ordained, given, or appointed

ANNO 1598. to or for any such godly and charitable use and purpose, to be ordered, disposed, used, and employed according to the true intent and meaning of the founders and givers; and all such enormities and abuses as have been committed or suffered for or touching the same, to be with all convenient speed corrected or reformed:

We do therefore will and authorize you, by virtue hereof, from time to time, and at all times hereafter, when and as often as you shall think it requisite and convenient, to direct forthwith, under our great seal of England, such and so many commissions, as have been devised by you and our learned council, to such persons, and into such countries, cities, towns, and places, as in your wisdom and discretion you shall think meet, with the advice of our privy-council, or of any six of them, whereof our treasurer of England, or
347 our admiral of England, to be always one, for the acquiring and searching, doing and executing of all such matters and things whatsoever, touching or concerning the premises, or any of them, as in the same commission, and in certain articles, accorded on by our privy-council, to be thereunto annexed, shall be contained and appointed, and in such order, manner, and form, as you shall in that behalf suppose most fit and convenient for the accomplishment of our pleasure and intent concerning the same, as aforesaid: commanding by our said commission, that return be made of their doings into our chancery without any unnecessary delay, &c. In the 35th year of our reign.

Examined by Tho. Egerton, [attorney-general.]

Number CCLVII.

ANNO 1598.

A remark upon this statesman, who was principal secretary of state in king Edward's reign; upon a consultation at that king's decease of altering the succession to the crown, and advancing the lady Jane Gray thereunto. Being a private letter to that lord by Roger Alford, one of his chief servants in the office of secretary in king Edward's reign. Writ on the said lord's desire. Which letter is thus endorsed by lord Burghley's own hand: Oct. 4, 1573. Roger Alford, concerning his knowledge of the times, 1553. *Cott. Library. Titus, B. 2.*

To my very honourable good lord, the lord treasurer.

AFTER my humble remembrance of duty to your lordship, it may please the same to understand, that upon my return out of Cambridgeshire to Hitcham, upon Wednesday last at night, I received your letter, sent to me enclosed in a letter of Mr. Mitchel's [his lordship's secretary] the Friday before; whereby you require mine answer to the matter thereof, as particularly as I can: which as I do remember, I thought good to write from the beginning, choosing rather to write you more than you desire, than less than you would be remembered of.

I remember you first opened the matter to me covertly in Greenwich Park, by asking of me, what was reported of the marriage of the lord Guilford to the lady Jane, the duke of Suffolk's daughter; wherein you said, that the lady marquis of Northampton was then the greatest doer. This was even upon the marriage, which was concluded when king Edward was extremely sick of the sickness whereof he died. Wherein a few days after, you brake with me of a device of king Edward's, whereby the succession of the crown should be settled here: whereunto, as you then said, you were a mere stranger, and not of the council, but understood it secretly by your friend. Afterwards, in the chamber at Greenwich, you told me, that by devices among certain of the council, which you must use as one not knowing of

ANNO 1598. them, because they called you not to them, and they were not as then known, but to a very few of them. There was
348 a determination concluded, to make the said lady Jane queen: and said further, you thought, when the matter was more riper, it is like you should be called to it; but whatever became of you, said you, you would never partake of that device.

This matter resting in consultation, you went to London by water divers nights oftener than you accustomed, and appointed yourself, to my thinking, as one that stood in awe of violence to be offered to you; for you went weaponed, which you had not used before. At this time of misliking, you refrained also your ordinary going to council, except you were sent for. And one afternoon, when you looked to be sent for, to be moved in this matter, you laid out certain books in gay order for your night gear; supposing they would have committed you. That afternoon you went up to council: and at your return, you said nothing was done in that matter. Hereupon I went to London by your appointment, and conveyed such money and plate that you had, together with your evidences, out of your house; for that you stood in some doubt, whether it were better for you to fly, or to submit yourself to their courtesy, and reject this trouble: you said, you thought you should not be called at all. I remember also, you told me at that time, that Mr. Gosnald and Justice Hales would not consent to it; and that the judges, at that time, in their device of the instrument by reason of the statute made, that whosoever by overt deed or act, &c. was *ipso facto* a traitor, told the king he might do what he listed, but if any of them set their pen to devise the instrument, he was *ipso facto* traitor: which made a pause for that time.

Hereupon the judges referred the further consultation, devised pardons. In telling of which device to me, you seemed marvellously to dislike them for their device; saying further, that if they had held them in their first opinion, they had stayed it. Afterward they changed that device,

and said, there was no treason to the king's successor living the king himself, whom they need not doubt. And so the pardon stayed, being then making out. ANNO 1598.

This matter being brought thus far, and you thinking then that your misliking was discovered, and that your consent would not have been required at all, was yet sent for to council, when the duke of Northumberland was present: where, after others had ordinarily set their hands, you were called on (as after you told by the old earl of Shrewsbury, and after by others, the said duke present saying nothing) to put yours. And after the declaration of causes which moved you not to agree thereto, you were respected, without that hardness of dealing which you looked for at that time. Yet afterwards the matter thus proceeding, and the judges' opinions prevailing so far, (who together with Mr. Gosnald and all others required thereunto, had subscribed, saving yourself,) you told me, that being called for before the king, upon his commandment that you should subscribe his instrument, you answered it, that allowing it, as a counsellor you could not, for causes you shewed him. Whereupon as I remember also, he said, he willed you to subscribe as a witness, that it was his pleasure to have it so to pass: which you have no reason to deny. And so as the last man you subscribed.

After the king was dead, which they meant should not 349
be known a fortnight after: yet the next day it was through the court. Wherefore they meant to proclaim the lady Jane queen out of hand; and that they would have had you to draw the same proclamation. But said you, they shall draw it who list. I have shifted from me to the king's attorney, or solicitor, to be sent for: for that it touched matter in law. And that being afterward thought to be too long a destract, it was devised, that sir John Throgmorton should draw it, as I think he did. Afterward also in the Tower you continued your misliking of the enterprise, and said it was against your conscience to meddle in it, whatsoever became of it. And so having before conveyed your writings, with such plate and money as you had, to one Mr. Nelson's

ANNO 1598. house in London, and Sere's house, your servant, I took order, that for our escape, Nelson's house in Essex, within a mile of Thames at Alveley, should be also in a readiness, and my mother's house in London, with other.

I am here to remember you, that perceiving your mind to persevere thus, I moved you further to assure your land to Mr. Thomas your son; which you so did; using therein the advice of Mr. Walpole and Mr. Attorney that now is, which you afterwards declared to Mr. Gosnald, who misliked you therein; saying it would be construed as a thing done of a set will in you. After this, you shewed me in the Tower that you had a conference with the last lord treasurer; and withal shewed me out of your bosom a letter of credit of his to my lord marquis of Winchester, that now is, his son, to credit you, and to follow your devices and directions. And for the better execution of this your determination, I kept in store certain blank passports, before in my custody, where the council's hand was already set; for that the despatches then were quick, to escape more surer.

I remember further at that time of a wrote postscript in a letter of the council's to the duke, whereby was signified to him the revolt of Bethal and others with the navy to the late queen, that your horsemen, which should have gone to the aid, were impeached by John Villers, because you meant not to give any aid at all to their so much misliked enterprise. And at that time you remembered all to me that the late earl of Bedford was broken withal, as a misliker of that device, and sir Will. Peter also. And Roper Mellye, then his secretary, told me then, that he had conveyed his lordship's money, &c. out of the Tower, and thought his lord would go quickly after. After this, the lords not long after agreed to go to Baynard's castle, to the lord of Pembroke, upon pretence before in council, to give audience to the French king's and emperor's ambassadors, that had been long delayed audience, and that the Tower was not fit to him to enter into at that season. At which time my lord of Arundel, upon some overture of frank speech to be had in council in respect of that present state, said secretly to

his friend (as I take it, yourself or sir Will. Peter) that he liked not that air. And thereupon it was deferred to Baynard's castle. From which place the lords went and proclaimed queen Mary. And yourself was despatched after my lord of Arundel and my lord Paget to her grace, being at Ipswich; where being sent by you thither a little before, my lady Bacon told me, that the queen thought very well of her brother Cicil, [viz. sir William Cicil,] and said, you were a very honest man. Marry, there was a letter of late, written from the council to the duke, intercepted, whereby it appeared you had armed horsemen against her, but that they were impeached by Northamptonshire men, which had done you much hurt. Whereupon, being privy to the matter before, I laughed, and told her the matter. ANNO 1598.

At your coming to Newhall you exhibited your submission to her majesty: wherein you repeated your whole actions in that case: which I wrote. Upon the delivery whereof you kissed her hand at sir Will. Peter's house at Ingerstone, before any other of the council-men. And I am to remember you further, that Mr. Cheke answered queen Mary's letter, sent by Hungate to the council; for that you shifted as you could all dealing in those matters; and said, if Hungate had taken a good time to deliver his letter, you thought the council would have taken her offer. This all for this present. From Hitchin, the 4th of October, anno 1573.

Your lordship's ever to command,

Roger Alford.

You have the copy of your submission: wherein your whole dealing therein is remembered. If not, I think if Mr. Fothergil, who had the keeping of the council-chest at that time, were spoken to, he would find it among the council-matters at that time.

ANNO 1598.

Number CCLVIII.

Anno Elizab. 40. 1598. regia authoritate fuit convocatio. *From notes taken by one of the ministers of London, then present. Ex MSS. D. Joh. D. episc. Ely. In which convocation these canons were made and printed.*

1. UT homines idonei ad sacros ordines admittantur.
2. De beneficiorum pluralitate cohibenda.
3. De curatis, ut hospitalitatem exerceant.
4. Ut decani et prebendarii conciones habeant.
5. De moderatione indulgentiarum matrimonii.
6. De sententiis divortii non temere ferendis.
7. Circa excommunicationem reformandam.
8. De recusantibus et aliis publice denunciandis.
9. De commutatione pœnitentiæ.
10. De officiariis ecclesiasticis et eorum ministris ratificatio.
11. De excessibus apparitorum numeror.
12. De libris, registro, matrimonio, baptismo, sepultura. Quod fiant in pergameno.

351

Number CCLIX.

Martin Heton, D. D. was preferred to the see of Ely this year 1599. *vacant from the year* 1581. *when Cox the last bishop deceased, being about nineteen years. He was consecrated Feb.* 3. *Of whose family, studies, and preferment, and death, the rev. Mr. Heton of Buntingford gave this account.*

Anno 1599. HE was the son of George Heton, esq. of Heton hall, in the township or hamlet of Heton, in the parish of Dean in the county of Lancaster, the ancient seat of that family for many centuries, and where it still remains. His mother was Joanna, the daughter of sir Martin Bowes; who was lord mayor of London in the year 1545. He was bred up at Westminster: thence went to Christ Church in Oxford, 1571, and was made student there: was M. A. 1578: one

of the canons 1582; and vice-chancellor 1588: dean of Winchester 1589, being but thirty-six years of age. And in the latter end of 1599, Feb. 3, he was by queen Elizabeth preferred to the bishopric of Ely; where he sat nine years and six months; being very famous for his good preaching and great hospitality: and died at Mildenhal in Suffolk, July the 14th, 1609, of the age of fifty-seven; and was buried in Ely Minster; where his two daughters (the one of them married to sir Robert Filmer, of Sutton in Kent, bart. the other to sir Edward Fish, bart. of Bedfordshire) erected a monument to his memory; which is one of the finest in that cathedral; though it hath in some measure shared in the violence of the great rebellion. ANNO 1599.

The epitaph upon bishop Heton's monument.

M. S.

Martinus Heton ex antiqua Hetonorum familia in agro Lancastrensi oriundus. Filius Georgii Heton armigeri, et Johannæ ejus uxoris, filiæ Martini Bowes equitis aurati. A qua parturiente et expirante Deo et ecclesiæ reformatæ dicatus est.

Ab academia Oxoniensi ad omnes scholasticos gradus, et honores evectus. Ibique in Ædc Christi unus octo canonicorum constitutus. A serenissima regina Elizabetha ad decanatum Winton. annum jam agens trigesimum sextum promotus, hujus episcopatus ultimo locum et sedem obtinuit. Consecratus Feb. 3. anno Dom. MDXCIX. Per decem annos plus minus tam pie, tam publice, tam munifice hic se gessit in cathedra, ut

Qui communi voluntatum consensu, et amores et officia erga se excitasset, non sine dolore, non sine duplici damno abreptus esse videatur.

Obiit Julii 14. ann. Dom. MDCIX. ætatis LVII.

ANNO 1599.

352

Number CCLX.

Sir Robert Cotton's writings in Emanuel Demetrius the historian his album, remaining in the registers of the Dutch church in St. Augustin's Friars, London.

ABOVE is placed sir Robert's coat of arms in colours.

Libertatis amor, stultum cur decipis orbem?

Homines inquieti et turbulenti, nec ipsi quiescere possunt, nec alios quiescere sinunt. Et impliciti fœderibus coguntur sequi alienos furores.

Nulla salus bello, pacem te poscimus omnes.

Then his coat of arms. And then follow these words:

Ornatissimo viro et amico integerrimo D. Emanueli Demetrio, Robertus Cotton hæc insignia sua gentilitia et nomen induraturæ amicitiæ monumentum L. M. P. Londini, 8 Decemb. 1599.

Number CCLXI.

The queen's council to the lord mayor of London. In behalf of the strangers, Dutch and French, forbidden to exercise their trades in the city. Upon their petition to the queen.

AFTER our hearty commendations to your lordship. An humble petition hath been exhibited unto her majesty by divers poor strangers and handicraftsmen of the Dutch and French congregation in the city of London. Whereby they give her majesty to understand, that your lordship will enforce them either to enter into bond to forbear to work at all within the city, or else to commit them to prison. Her majesty therefore, understanding the course you mean to take with them, hath willed us to signify unto you, that her pleasure is, you should forbear to go forward in this your intention. And if there be any further matter known to your lordship, wherewith as yet we are unacquainted, that doth make you to take this strict course, then we pray you to certify the same hither unto us, that we may con-

sider of the same. And in the mean season to suffer them to use that favourable liberty, which hitherto they have enjoyed. And so we bid your lordship farewell. From the court at Greenwich, the 29th of April, 1599. ANNO 1599.

Signed by the archbishop of Canterbury, the lord keeper, the lord admiral, lord North, lord Buckhurst, Mr. Comptroller, Mr. Secretary, and Mr. Chancellor of the Exchequer.

Directed to sir Stephen Some, knt. lord mayor of the city of London.

Number CCLXII. 353

To which letter is subjoined another, being of the same subject, though writ a year or two after.

Lord Buckhurst, lord high treasurer, to Mr. Attorney-general; in behalf of the strangers.

AFTER my hearty commendations. Whereas I lately, according to her majesty's good pleasure then signified unto me, directed my letters unto you, for the staying of all suits and informations, until this term, as were then depending in any of her majesty's courts at Westminster, against certain poor candlemakers and others of the Dutch and French congregations, for using of their several trades; whose names were mentioned in a writing, then sent enclosed unto you, under the hand of sir Noel de Caron, kt. who then was a suitor unto her majesty in their behalf. Forasmuch as the said Noel hath again very lately renewed his former suit to her highness for the said strangers, humbly desiring that all suits and informations commenced against them by certain informers upon penal statutes, for exercising their several trades within the said city of London, might be stayed; and no further proceeding to be had therein, until the true state of their grievances might be heard and understood by such of her highness' privy-council as she shall be pleased to appoint to examine the same; to the intent that upon

ANNO 1599. their report, to be thereof made unto her majesty, such order may be taken in that behalf, as in her princely wisdom shall be thought just and reasonable.

Whereupon her highness hath again given direction unto me to take order for the present stay of all suits now depending against the said strangers accordingly. These are therefore to pray you to take such a course, as all suits and informations, now depending in any of her majesty's courts at Westminster against the said strangers, or any of them, for using of their several trades within the said city, be forthwith stayed, and not to suffer any further proceedings to be had therein, until her majesty's pleasure may be further known. And so I commit you to the Almighty. From Sackvile house, the 31st of October, 1601.

Your very loving friend,
T. Buckhurst.

354 Number CCLXIII.

Penned by Mr. Francis (afterwards lord) Bacon. *Anno* 1600. *This was the year of the earl of Essex his plot. Which gave occasion to the setting forth a book, by public authority, called,*

A Declaration of the practices and treasons attempted and committed by Robert late earl of Essex, and his complices, against her majesty and her kingdoms; and of the proceedings as well at the arraignment and conviction of the said earl and his adherents, as after. Together with their confessions. Printed at London, by Robert Barker, &c. 4to. 1601.

Anno 1600. THE end of this declaration was to stop divers seditious and most wicked libels thrown abroad, as the dregs of these treasons. Which the late earl of Essex himself, in a letter a little before his death, termed a *leprosy*, that had infected far and near, and did yet remain in the hearts and tongues of some disaffected persons.

Number CCLXIV.

ANNO 1600.

After the rebellion under the earl of Essex were certain prayers, fit for the time, set forth by authority, to be used thrice a week on the prayer days in the churches. Five in number. Occasioned by a great deliverance of the queen and kingdom from a dangerous rebellion. Composed upon her entrance upon a new century, viz. 1600.

The first prayer followeth.

ALMIGHTY God, and most merciful Father, who of thy infinite goodness towards all countries and nations, for the avoiding of confusion, hast appointed kings and princes, as thine angels and lieutenants, and the seals of thy similitude, full of wisdom and beauty, to rule and govern in thy name the people on the earth, committed to their charge, commanding all their subjects to honour, and in no sort to resist them, but to obey them in thy fear even for conscience sake; and likewise to offer unto thee for them all supplications, prayers, intercessions, and thanksgivings, as being the lights, the preservation and means, under thy divine majesty, of the peace, the health, prosperity, and glory of all their subjects and kingdoms; we thy humble servants, bowing down the knees of our hearts, and prostrating ourselves before thy glorious throne, do render unto thee all praise, power, honour, and thanksgiving, for thy most gracious favour and merciful deliverance of our most dread sove- 355
reign lady, thy vicegerent in her dominions, queen Elizabeth, as ever heretofore, so at this time, from the traitorous attempts and desperate designments of sundry most unkind and disloyal-like persons, who forgetting their duty both to thee, O Lord, and towards thine anointed, have in the height of their pride, after a popular sort, with divers false pretences, and many slanderous calumniations, sought in open rebellion, not only the destruction and extinguish- Earl of Es-
ing of thy servant, our comfort, our health, and our glory, sex.
but the utter ruin also and tragical overthrow of this our native country, her majesty's (through thy manifold mercies) so worthy, so happy, and so renowned a kingdom.

ANNO 1600.

This year beginning a new century.

This thy most mighty and fatherly protection, O Lord God of hosts, we entirely beseech thee, with penitent hearts, for our former offences, to continue over us from age to age, by defending still the sacred person of our sovereign lady from all such dangerous designments, her kingdoms and countries from all treacherous practices, and us her subjects from the deceitful baits and crafty allurements of all popular and ambitious dissembling Absaloms. And that so our hearts being still replenished with the joy of thy salvation, we may daily present, in all thankfulness, before thy fatherly goodness, the freewill offerings and sacrifices of our lips; always praising and magnifying thy blessed name, through Jesus Christ our Lord. To whom, with thee and the Holy Ghost, three Persons and one God, be all honour and glory, from this time forth for evermore.

Number CCLXV.

The second prayer on the same deliverance follows.

O ETERNAL and gracious God, father of peace, and protector of government, who with a special eye of providence watchest over the heads of princes, upon whose safety the lives of many thousands do depend, we, thy humble servants, do bow down the knees of our hearts, and pour forth our souls in thankfulness before thee, for thy so gracious and merciful deliverance of our dread sovereign, thy handmaid, from the treacherous intent and desperate conspiracy of disloyal subjects, who have risen up against thine anointed, and, like unnatural children, have rebelled against the mother of their own lives, that took them up from their cradles, and cherished them in her own bosom [a], and laded them with honours and preferments; to the great dishonour of thy name, to the slander of thy gospel, to the danger of confusion to their own native country.

[a] As she did the earl of Essex.

But thou, O Lord of hosts, our deliverer, didst overthrow them in their own imaginations, and by thy instruments hast declared them enemies to thine own majesty:

thou didst put obedience into the hearts of thy faithful people, and, without shedding of their innocent blood, didst miraculously beat down the forces of all those that rose up against thine ordinance. ANNO 1600.

For which thy unspeakable goodness towards us, vouch- 356
safe, we beseech thee, to receive the freewill offerings of our hearts, and calves of our lips, in praises to thy glorious name; who, notwithstanding our manifold sins and transgressions, hast not yet forgot to be gracious, but heapest mercy upon mercy, and causest blessings to follow and overtake blessing as the waves of the sea. To thee, therefore, our saviour and defender, our watch-tower and our rock, we will sing the songs of thankfulness, and call upon thy blessed name for evermore: beseeching thee so to continue the favour of thy countenance toward thine own anointed magistrate and us her faithful people, that our light may never go out, and our song may never cease in this land; but that thy glorious acts may sound in every congregation, ever praise and honour and glory to thee that sittest upon the throne, for ever and ever. *Amen.*

Imprinted at London by Robert Barker, printer to the queen's majesty, ann. Dom. 1600. 4to.

Number CCLXVI.

A private letter of Mr. Francis Bacon (afterwards sir Francis Bacon, lord Verulam) to Robert earl of Essex: upon that earl's motion to come into his party, as the means to rise.

My lord,

NO man can better expound my doings than your lordship. Which maketh me need to say the less. Only I humbly pray you to believe, that I aspire to the conscience and commendation, first of *bonus civis;* which with us is a good and true servant to the queen; and next of *bonus vir*, that is, an honest man. I desire your lordship also to think, that though I confess I love some things much better

ANNO 1600. than I love your lordship; as the queen's service, her quiet and contentment, her honour, her favour, and the good of my country, and the like; yet I love few persons better than yourself, both for gratitude's sake, and for your own virtues; which cannot hurt, but by accident or abuse. Of which good affection I was ever, and am ready, to yield testimony by any good offers; but with such reserves as yourself cannot but allow.

For as I was over-sorry that your lordship should fly with waxen wings, doubting Icarus' fortune; so for the growing up of your feathers, especially ostriches, or any other, save of a bird of prey, no man shall be more glad. And this is the axle-tree whereupon I have turned, and shall turn with; to signify to you that I think you are of yourself persuaded as much, is the cause of my writing. And so I commend your lordship to God's goodness. From Gray's Inn, this 20th of July, 1600.

Your lordship's most bounden,

Fr. Bacon.

357 Number CCLXVII.

James king of Scotland to lord Hambleton, one of his servants now in England; to assure the English of his steadiness in religion. The writing of which letter was occasioned, as it seems, from two breves sent from the pope this year to the popish priests and people, to admit none to succeed to the crown of England, but such as were Roman Catholics. From the Harleian library.

Mr. Hambleton,

ALTHOUGH I never doubted, and was ever sufficiently informed, of the good-will borne towards me in all lawful sort, (for otherwise I never did nor shall require them,) by all the honest subjects of England, that I sincerely make the profession of the only true religion professed, and by law established in both these countries; (the band of conscience being the only sure band for tying of

men's affections to them, to whom they owe a natural duty;) yet, having the same renewed and confirmed unto me by your late advertisements, I have thought good by this present, all written with mine own hand, to set you down a meeting for them in this point, that is, that ye shall in my name assure all the honest men ye can meet with, that are affected that way, and that in the princely word of a Christian king, that as I have ever, without swerving, professed and maintained the same religion within all the bounds of my kingdom; so may they assure themselves, that how soon it shall please God lawfully to possess me with the crown of that kingdom, wherein they are subjects, I shall not only maintain and continue the profession of the gospel there, but withal not suffer or permit any other religion to be professed and avowed within the bounds of that kingdom. ANNO 1600.

But because you have been, at your last being with me, particularly acquainted with my intentions in this point, as also that yourself is so well known and approved unto them there, you shall by tongue more particularly inform them of my mind herein; resolving them of such malicious calumnies and injust imputations, as have from time to time by my undeserved enemies been contrived against me. And thus I bid you heartily farewell.

James R.

Number CCLXVIII. 358

Ann. regin. 43. *The preamble of a grant of the clergy in a convocation, to the queen. Which was four subsidies of 4s. in the pound.*

ILLUSTRISS. et sereniss. in Christo principi et dnæ. Anno 1601. *&c. Joannes divina providentia Cant. archiepiscopus..... omnimodam obedientiam, et subjectionem, ac felicitatem et salutem, vestræ sereniss. regiæ sublimitati per præsens publicum instrumentum.....significamus, et notum facimus. Quod prælati et clerus,* &c. Then after in English

ANNO 1601. followeth the tenour of their grant to the queen: beginning,

Most excellent and most gracious sovereign, your majesty's most humble subjects, your prelates and clergy of the province of Canterbury, called together by your highness' authority, and now lawfully assembled and met together in a convocation or synod, acknowledging themselves of all others your loyal subjects most bounden, and yet of all others least able to do your majesty that excellent service which they are willing to do; have nevertheless, by your gracious favour, entered into a due consideration by what means, in this general inclination of all sorts of your loving subjects, they might best declare their devotion and duties to your highness. Wherein, though they find no better means in themselves to further and advance your royal estate, than by the diligent discharge of their function, that is, by their earnest prayers unto God for your majesty's peaceable and prosperous reign, with long and happy life, and by their faithful instruction of your people in their subjection and allegiance, yet remembering on the one side the number and importance of those benefits which your majesty's wise and godly government hath yielded to all degrees and sorts, and in a special manner unto them: (for who hath or should have a livelier sense or better remembrance of your majesty's princely courage and constancy, in advancing and protecting the free profession of the gospel within and without your majesty's dominions, against so many and so mighty adversaries thereof, and of your most Christian care to maintain peace within your kingdom and among your people, than your clergy?) And on the other side, that for the procuring and continuing of these inestimable benefits unto us, your majesty's most sacred person hath been often in hazard and danger, your crown and dignity maliciously envied and undermined, your kingdoms and dominions troubled and invaded, your royal treasure much wasted, the revenues of your crown greatly diminished, your subjects (saving in cases of extreme necessity) graciously spared and forborne; and that at this pre-

sent an army of Spaniards, that implacable enemy of your realm, have with violence entered into some parts of your majesty's kingdom of Ireland, whence, without great and excessive charge, they will not be expelled. ANNO 1601.

Wherefore your said prelates and clergy have thought it 359
their duty, besides their continual intercession to God for your highness' prosperity and safety, to offer unto your majesty some such aid and contribution of money toward the support of your charges, as they are persuaded the present expelling of this proud attempt of the Spaniard, and other your majesty's most weighty and princely affairs, do necessarily and speedily require. May it therefore please your most excellent majesty, &c.

Number CCLXIX.

The conclusion of this year concluded the last year of queen Elizabeth's life. I add some short account of her life and reign from a few words of George Abbot, D. D. (afterwards archbishop of Canterbury) in his book against Hill, a Jesuit.

WHAT may be imagined of the life and reign of our late blessed sovereign, who after so many dangers came to the crown, and that, under so many difficulties of subjects at home, and foreign princes abroad, yea, and of the Devil every where, did promise to maintain the truth of God, and to deface superstition? And with this beginning she with uniformity continued; yielding her land as a sanctuary to all the world, groaning for liberty of their religion; flourishing in wealth, honour, estimation every way; admired by all the monarchs, whither the fame of her did come, and leaving there for such a story, as no prince hath left the like. This queen, after the defeating of the *invincible navy* in the year 1588, after many renowned prosperities, notwithstanding the frequent conspiracies of ungodly persons against her, by the favour of the Highest, under the shadow of whose wings she was ever safely guarded, died Anno 1602.

ANNO 1602. in peace in a full and glorious age: so beloved, honoured, and esteemed of her subjects, as never any prince more.

And God, to testify his own work, left at her death no noted calamity or misery in the kingdom, no wars. And even Ireland then calmed. No famine, nor apparent pestilence. No inundation of water; but plenty and abundance, with unexpected tranquillity. Yea, to the end that he might crown her with blessings, he put unity and agreement into the nobles, clergy, and commons of the land. That readily they submitted themselves to her lawful and royal successor. Under whom we doubt not but to enjoy religion and all earthly happiness.

360 Number CCLXX.

The mighty esteem and value had of this queen and prosperous government, will appear further, from part of the sermon preached at St. Paul's Cross by Jos. Hall, D. D. dean of Worcester, (afterwards bishop of Norwich,) March 24, 1613, being the anniversary solemnity of king James's access to the crown.

O BLESSED queen, the mother of this nation, the nurse of this church, the glory of womanhood, the envy and example of foreign nations, the wonder of times; how sweet and sacred shall thy memory be to all posterities! .....And though the foul mouths of our adversaries stick not to call her *miseram fœminam*, [miserable woman,] as pope Clement did, not to say of her.....and those that durst bring her on the stage living, being now dead, (as I have heard by those that have seen it,) into their procession like a tormented ghost, with fiends and firebrands, to the terror of their ignorant beholders, yet, as we say, she never prospered so well, as when she was most cursed by their Pius V. .....How excellent were her masculine graces of learning, valour, wisdom; by which she might justly challenge to be the queen of men! So learned was she, that she could give present answer to ambassadors in their own tongues.....so

valiant, that like Zisca's drum, made the proudest Romanist to quake: so wise, that whatever fell out happily against the common adversary in France, Netherland, Ireland, it was by themselves ascribed to her policy. ANNO 1602.

What should I speak of her long and successful government, of her miraculous preservations, of her famous victories, wherein the waters, winds, fire, and earth fought for us, as if they had been in pay under her: of her excellent laws, and of her careful execution. Many daughters have done worthily, but thou surmountedst them all. Such was the sweetness of her government, and such the fear of misery in her loss, that many worthy Christians desired their eyes might be closed before hers; and how many thousands therefore willed their own deaths, because it prevented hers. Every one pointed to her white hairs, and said with that peaceable Leontius, "When this snow melteth, there will be a flood." Soz. lib. iii. cap. 29.

Never day, except always the fifth of November, was like to be so bloody as this; not for any doubt of title, (which never any loyal heart could question, nor any disloyal ever did, besides Dolman,) but for that our executors comforted themselves against us, and said, The devil, one morning, will come shortly for our mother, then will we slay our brethren. What should I say more? Lots were cast upon our land, and that honest politician, (which wanted nothing but a gibbet to have made him a saint,) father Parsons, took pains to set down an order how all English affairs should be marshalled, when they should come to be theirs. Dangers surely expected at her decease.

Consider now the great things that the Lord hath done for us. Behold! this day, which should have been most dismal to the whole Christian world, he turned to the most happy day that ever shone forth to this island: that now we may justly insult with those Christians of Antioch, Ποῦ σοῦ τὰ μαντεῖα; *Where are your prophecies,* O! ye fond papists? Our snow lies here melted: where are those floods of blood that you threatened? Yea, as that blessed soul of hers gained by this change of an immortal crown for a cor- 361 Theol. 3. 15.

ANNO 1602. ruptible, so, blessed be the name of our God, this land of ours hath not lost by that loss.

The virtue and abilities of king James, this queen's successor; displayed in the proceeding of this preacher's sermon.

Surely a new and golden world began this day to us, and promiseth continuance, if our sins interrupt it not, to our posterity..... If we see not the worth of our king, how shall we be thankful to God that gave him?

His learning.

Let me begin with his *learning* and *knowledge*, wherein, I may safely say, he exceedeth all his 105 predecessors, &c. Never had England more learned bishops and doctors: which of them ever returned from his majesty's discourse without admiration? What king christened hath written so learned volumes? To omit the rest, his last in this kingdom, wherein he hath so held up cardinal Bellarmine, and his master pope Pius, is such, that Plessis and Moulin (the two great lights of France) profess to receive their light in this discourse from his beams. And the learned Jesuit Salkeld could not but be converted with the necessity of those demonstrations. And I may boldly say, popery (since it was) never received so deep a wound from any work as from that of his. What king ever moderated so solemn acts of an university in all professions, and had so many hands clapped in the applause of his acute and learned determinations? Briefly, such is his entire acquaintance with all sciences, and with the queen of all, Divinity, that he might well dispute with the infallible pope Paul V. for the triple crown. And I would all Christian quarrels lay upon this duel.

His justice.

His justice in governing matcheth his knowledge, how to govern, &c. He hath ever endeavoured to frame the proceedings of his government to the laws, not the laws to them. Witness that memorable example, whereof your

eyes were witnesses; I mean the impartial execution of the ancientest barons of those parts for the murdering of a mean subject. Wherein not the favour of the block might be yielded; that the dishonour of the death might be no less than the pain of the death. ANNO 1602.

His mercy.

Yet who will not grant his mercy to be eminent among his virtues, when Parsons [the noted Jesuit] himself yieldeth it? And if a virtue so continuing could be capable of excess, this might seem so in him. I pray God the measure of this virtue may never hurt himself. I am sure the want of it shall never give cause of complaint to his adversaries. 362

His religion.

Among all his heroical graces which commend him as a man, as a Christian, as a king, piety and firmness in religion calls me to it..... With what zeal did his majesty fly upon the blasphemous novelties of Vorstius! How many solicitations, threats, promises, proffers, hath he trampled under his feet in former times, for but a promise of an indifferent connivance of the Romish religion! Was it not an answer worthy of a king, worthy of mervail, and brave, that he made unto their agent for this purpose in the times of the greatest peril of resistance, That all the crowns and kingdoms of this world should not induce him to change one jot of his profession? Hath he not so engaged himself in this holy quarrel, that the world confesseth Rome hath never such an adversary, and all Christian princes rejoice to follow him, as their worthy leader, in all the battles of God? And all Christian churches, in their prayers and acclamations, style him, in a double right, *defender of the faith*, more by desert than inheritance. [Thus far the dean in his sermon upon the character of the present excellent princess and her immediate successor.] Watson, B. Barlow's Answer to Parsons, p. 115. e com. Northampt. Lib.

Amongst the virtuous qualifications of queen Elizabeth, one was, that she was addicted to learning, and oftentimes retired to her studies. And many learned tracts by learned men were presented to her reading in manuscript. It may

ANNO 1602. not be amiss here to mention two: the one by Dr. Richard Masters, the queen's physician, concerning diseases, and the causes of them, written upon occasion of her inquiry upon that subject. The other by Charnock, a great philosopher, concerning the philosopher's stone, and the right course and method of attaining it. The sum of both books may appear by the dedications that follow.

Number CCLXXI.

Richard Master, M. D. physician in ordinary to the queen: concerning the causes of diseases: upon her question to him on that subject.

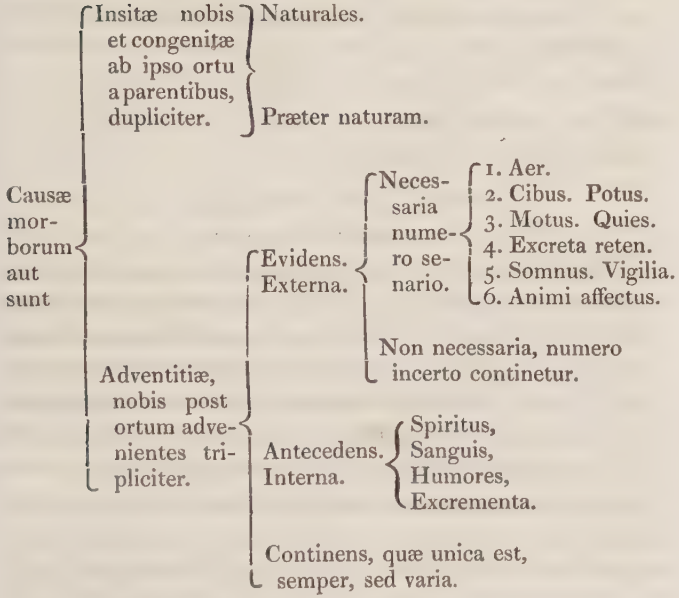
Serenissimæ principi, ac dominæ suæ, Elizabetæ, Dei gratia Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ reginæ, &c.

ANTE paucos menses accitus ad summam tuam majestatem, ut certior fierem de quibusdam affectibus, qui tunc temporis sacrum tuum corpus male cruciabant, inter cætera
363 in eum forte sermonem incidisti, qui de causis illorum morborum egit, quibuscum visa est tua majestas molestari. Hinc data et accepta occasione, ad meam fidem et officium pertinere putavi, brevem aliquam epitomen per methodum explicatam de morborum causis contexere, eamque tuæ majestati exhibere. Qua instructa et munita, possit facile et eas præcavere, si quandocunque occurrant, et admonere nos qui tibi sumus a medicinis, ut eisdem pro viribus resistamus. Hoc munus ut inchoarem, effecit, tum pietas, observantia et officium erga tuam majestatem meum, tum dominus Cicilius ob animi et ingenii ornamenta secretarius tuus dignissimus, qui id ut perficerem adhortatus est. Nam ut homo est ad rempublicam promovendam natus, ita omnem suam operam, studium, industriam in eandem collocat, ut salvam præcipue velit tuam majestatem. Dedi itaque operam, ut minimo cum fastidio promissi muneris pensum absolverem. Idcirco brevi tanquam in tabella, quemadmodum fere solent, qui urbium et provinciarum situs depin-

gunt, morborum causas collegi, easque dextræ tuæ, septris tenendis insigni, libellisque supplicibus recipiendis promptæ, supplex et exosculans offero. ANNO 1602.

Tuæ majestati addict.
Richardus Masterus.

De morborum causis.



ANNO 1602.

Number CCLXXII.

364 *Charnock, a great philosopher, presented her majesty with a book, richly gilt, of the* philosopher's stone, *and of the true way and art to obtain it. All written (as it seems) with his own hand. The title it bore was:*

A book dedicated unto the queen's majesty by master Thomas Charnocke, student in the most worthy sciences of astronomy, physic, and philosophy: concerning the work of natural philosophy.

Nihil est opertum, quod non reveletur, et occultum, quod non sciatur. Matth. x.

Anno a Virgineo partu 1565.

Then follows the epistle.

To the most high and vertuous princesse ELIZABETH, *by the grace off God, queene of England, Fraunce, and Irelande, defender off the faith, her highness most humble and obedient subject Thomas Charnocke, studient in the most worthy sciencis off astronomie, phisicke, and naturall philosophie, wysheth loung to raigne over us, in health, princely wealth, roiall honour and felicitie.*

I HAVE been often mynded, most noble princesse, ever since the first yere of your graces prosperous raigne over this your imperiall realme of England, to fynd summe meanes whereby I might present unto your highnes in writtings, the effect of this epistell, wherein should be contayned the hole summ of mymynde, whereby your majestie myght understande what I your graces humble subject am able to do in length of tyme in that most worthie science of naturall philosophie, as to the true and perfect makeing of the philosophers stone; a most precyous pearle for princes, a jouell above all jouells of this worlde, which manye thousands do dayly seek, and scarce v. in xv. kyngdoumes doth fynde:

The cause is, most myghtie princesse, that for the excellencie of this science, and for the hiding of the same, the philosophers have written off too sciencis, a false and a true,

the false is written as a meane whereby the true should not be founde, and is named *alchimie*, written in liquid and doultious wordes easye to be understood, with *recipe et accipe*, which commen practitioners do follow, thinkinge thereby to make both sylver and golde, and to multiplie the same in a short tyme to a numerable summe, woorkinge with sulphure, arsenicke, quickesylver, sal armoniacke, and other salts and bodies calcined: menginge them togyther, dissolveinge them, vapouringe them, congiling them, and other operations manyefolde: ANNO 1602.

365

But when the tyme shall come that their woorke shall be brought to his examination what for the more and what for the lesse, there wyll be well fixed nether good golde, good silver, ne it good brasse:

And thus a number, not only in this your highness realme, but also thorowout all Europa, do desire to put in practice this false science off alchimie for luker sake, whereby they be deceived, and yerely great ryches consumed:

But the true science is the makeinge of the philosophers stone, which they have hyd under darke and mistie tearmes, as by parables, similitudes, and allegores, because it should not be understanded but off verye philosophers, and that covetous ne wycked men should not attayne unto this science, for therewith they would be more redye to maynteine wycked woorkes then to doe good dedes:

And although that which the philosophers have written is so misticallie written, that no mans witt is sufficient to conceve their meaning off this most secret science, and have written hereoff hole liberares off bookes, yet the secret have they left out, and conclude with this like sentence sayinge:

Now we have revelyd unto you all things saving the secret off the science, which we ought to revele unto no man, but have ylde it upp into the hands off God, unto whom it pleaseth him to gyve it, and from whom it shall please him to take it awaye:

And another philosopher sayeth, We have not sayde all things which are necessarie unto this woorke, for ther are

ANNO 1602.

some things which ought not to be written ne tolde to no man, and it is impossible this secret to knowe except it be gyven him from God, or of a master which shall teache him, which hie and great secret your majestie shall understande that it was reveled unto mee in the iiiith and vth yere off the raigne off Phillip and Marye, under a most sacred and dreadful othe by a spiritual man some tyme religious, who seinge he could not lyve lounge for age, as indeed he died shortly after, and knowinge that I had not only studied this science above xx yeres, but also that I had gyven my selfe to a continuall travell thorow out all Englyshe grownde for the obtayninge of the same, he made me his heier in that great secret.

It for all this your highness must conceave, that I, nor it no man ells which hath this rare and syldome secret, is ever the neere off this most riche and precyous stone, without great grace and patience in lounge continuance of tyme, which the work wyll aske from his begynning, or that it be endyed, and brought to the thyrde degree of his perfection:

And this is the principal cause, most myghtie princess, the secrets once knowen, why they cannot attayne unto the true and perfect making of the same, because they are ever desierous and hastie to se a shorte ende, and wyll not suffer nature at her own leasure to make her operation, for they do chaunge their myndes from their woorke some in a yere, some in a quarter, ye and some in a mounth, because they cannot se that at the fyrst, which wyll appear at the
366 last, such mutable mynded men, sayeth the philosophers, shall never perfectly fynishe our science, for where such fooles do leve, there wise men begyn.

Thus, most excellent princess, I have brefflye revealed unto your roiall maiestie the great errour which so great a number of practytioners do follow, which take the false science of alchimie to be the true woorke to the obtaininge of the philosophers stone:

Secondarely, I have opened unto your majestie, that the science off natural philosophie is a science most true, by the

which maye be wrought in length off tyme that precious and ryche jouell named the philosophers stone, which being fynished in his thirde degree, it is more worthe and precious for a princes dignitie, then yff he had iii or six ships come from Hispaniola, the coste of Guinea, or the islands off Molucca, laden with golde, precious stones, pearle, ivorye, pepper, and all kinde off spices, not for the hope of the attayneing to so many hunderith pounde wayghts of goolde, but that it is the greattest cordiall in the worlde: ANNO 1602.

Thirdely, Your highness may now perseve why it is so syldome found, that scarce v. in xv. kyngdomes can attayne unto the true perfection of the same, as for lacke of the secrets which never was written, nor it never shall be.

Forthly, That when it shall please God for anye one man to attayne unto that hie secret and gyft of God, ether taught him by some master or gyven him of God by grace and good liveinge, it cannot such a one as sone as he wolde desire, accomplyshe the ende of this miraculous loung and tedious woorke, without he be a man given to great solyteryness, and can be patient, and not to hastie to fynyshe his woorke, but suffer nature a lyttel and lyttel, at her owne leasure, to make generation passinge the substance off embrion.

And to suche a one God hath not onely ylded to him the secrets, but also the accomplysheinge of the most precious stone off the worlde at the laste to his great joye and comfort, and allso to his perpetuall fame and memorie:

Now, most excellent princess, this my unletteryd epistell being fynyshed, I was in a great muse by what meanes it myght be presentyd unto your highness, and hath troubled my hedd as mouche as the studie in makeing of the sole booke; yet hopeing to the best, I determined with myselfe, to request some worshippful or honourable retayeninge to your maiesties most roiall courte, that yf it were possible to have so muche frendeshipp that this my epistell with the confabulation followinge myght be presentyd unto your roial maiestie, trusteinge that it shall come fortunately unto your graces hands, which when it is perused either by

ANNO 1602. your highness, or anye off your honourable counsell, then I commyt this my enterpryse unto your maiesties high dyscretion:

And thus not knowinge how your maiestie wyll delyght the redeinge of this science, I wyll seasse my pen to eschue prolixities:

And now I do mych blame myselfe for that I have not in this my epistell used my pen in eache poynte and sentence, with suche high names off dignitie as it becometh to so noble and roiall a princess as ye are, consideringe that the Tourke and infidell doth mageniffie his prince with all
367 regall honour and earthly dignitie above the sterrie skye or viii sphere:

This consyderyd I wyll not be abashed to write to save your maiestie in such royall reputation, as to be the most hight myghtie, and Christian princess off the world, which I beseeche God to mayntayne in your most royall estate, and lounge to raigne over us in much honour, joye, and felicitie.

Number CCLXXIII.

To which may be added a third book in manuscript of the subject of divinity, (*as the two former were of* physic *and* philosophy,) *viz. concerning the doctrine of* justification, *by Richard Beard, some learned divine; writ, perhaps, for the queen's satisfaction in that great disputed point in those times. The title whereof and the writer's dedication follow.*

De vera Justificatione Christiani hominis coram Deo, præcipuæ doctorum et patrum sententiæ;
Et etiam
Harmoniæ evangelicæ.....

Illustrissimæ reginæ, Elizabethæ, Dei gratia, Angliæ, Franciæ, et Hiberniæ reginæ, fidei defensori, &c.

Gratiam et pacem per Jesum Christum.

QUUM ego, in messe et vinea Domini, in prædicatione verbi ejus, operarius et minister constitutus essem: et as-

sidua meditatione mecum in animo volverem, quanta ministris ecclesiæ cura (juxta illud, Pasce, pasce, pasce oves meas: et, Pascite, quantum in vobis est, gregem Christi) commissa sit; officii mei esse existimavi, ut non solum prædicando, verum etiam scribendo, pro viribus meis, populum Dei doctrina salutifera ædificarem. Qua quidem in re, inter meas lucubrationes, volumina doctorum et patrum volvendo, præcipuas eorum sententias, quæ de rebus illis, circa quas, jam diu inter sancti evangelii professores et degenerem Romæ (ut vocant) ecclesiam, permagna disceptatio et controversia pugnax extiterit pro nobis, contra papistas, maxime faciunt, industria magna collegi, et in medium proferre desideravi. ANNO 1602.

Non ut super homines, quamvis pios et doctos, fundandam Christianam fidem censeam. Sola enim sancta scriptura statera est, per quam omnis doctrina, ad salutem necessaria, est probanda: secundum illud apostoli Pauli; "Si "quis vobis evangelizaverit præter id quod accepistis, ana- "thema sit." Gal. i.

"Et (ut ait Augustinus) afferamus divinam stateram de "scripturis sanctis, tanquam de thesauris dominicis, et in "illa quid gravius sit appendamus." Lib. de Baptismo contra Donatistas, lib. ii. cap. 6.

"Neque enim (ut ille alibi habet) quorumlibet disputa- "tiones quamvis catholicorum et laudatorum hominum vel- "ut scripturas canonicas habere debemus, ut nobis non li- "ceat salva honorificentia quæ illis debetur hominibus ali- "quid in eorum scriptis improbare atque respuere, si forte "invenerimus quod aliter senserit quam veritas habet." 368 Ad Fortunat. Epist. iii.

"Et ergo (ut in alio loco dicit) cedamus et consentia- "mus autoritati scripturæ sanctæ, quæ nescit falli nec "fallere." De peccatorum meritis, lib. i. cap. 22.

"Nam (ut ait Cyrillus) necessarium nobis est divinas se- "qui literas, et in nullo ab earum præscripto discedere." Ad reginas de recta fide.

Sed eas sententias in lucem proferendas esse concupivi, ut inde Christi fideles clare videant, antiquos et sanctos ecclesiæ patres non aliter credidisse et docuisse, quam nos modo credimus, et docemus populum: et eosdem veritatis

ANNO 1602. nobiscum fuisse testes; et etiam nos injuste quidem ab illis accusatos esse, qui affirmant nos longe aliter plebem Christi nunc instituere, quam olim patres illos catholicos: et rursum ut nostri inimici, et qui a divina veritate deviarunt, per eos, quorum autoritatem, pro se, tam diu fateri falso jactitarunt (et ergo sine magno pudore eorum judicia improbare nullo modo possunt) aut satisfacti nobiscum in Dei veritate consentiant, aut saltem ad decipiendum Christi plebem verbum ullum proloqui in posterum erubescant.

Et harum, quantum me tempus nunc sineret, de vera justificatione Christiani hominis, hoc est, de fidei Christianæ fundamento, hic descripsi..... In quibus aperte videri poterit, si nos non aliam doctrinam, quam omnes isti catholici patres, doceamus; adversarios nostros in vitio quidem esse, quod illos sanctos et fidei Christi columnas, et nos hæreticos pro illorum doctrina vocant. Nam aut illos nobiscum condemnare, aut nos cum illis consentientes, absque ulla controversia, probare debent.

Sed hic eorum malitia et perfidia detegitur, et ab omnibus contemplanda proponitur.

Porro quia sancti evangelistæ de evangelio Jesu Christi omnes scribunt, et eorum quidam, plura de rebus quibusdam, et minus de rebus aliis scripserunt, quidam exacta diligentia notarunt quæ alii prætermittant, et eorum sæpe duo vel tres vel omnes de re una et eadem conscribendo consentiunt, et etiam eorum unusquisque, cæteris omnibus eo multo melius intelligendis (qui nisi inter se collati sint perfecte quidem nequeunt intelligi) lumen magnum præbet:

Et quoniam tam difficile est tot sanctorum evangelistarum verba, in tam diversis locis quærenda, semper inter sese conferre, quod plurimi qui legunt ea nunquam fere præ tædio simul conferant:

Igitur putavi me, laterem (ut dicitur) non lauturum, nec operam meam perditurum, si ita sanctorum evangelistarum opera conscriberem, ut lector, eorum alicujus evangelium intuens, eodem aspectu, cum omnibus cæteris de eadem re

loquentibus, sine ulla difficultate et indagatione applicaret et conferret: et quid, et quo ordine, de eadem re loquerentur, intelligeret. ANNO 1602.

Hoc feci, et eidem libro nomen indidi harmoniam evangelicam: eo quod in musices harmonia, aliquando unus solus, et aliquando duo, vel tres, vel plures, simul dulce canentes, suavi melodia concordant.

Multi antehac de hac re scripserunt, ut Gerson, Diony- 369
sius, Osiander, Calvinus, et alii: sed nullus eorum hoc certo modo et ordine, quo ego nunc, perscripsit.

Et, ni fallor, hæc ratio conferendi evangelistas, majorem fructum et utilitatem, quam ulla quæ hactenus impressa est, lectori studioso ministrabit.

Nam in Gersonis *Monotessaro, et Pandectis legis evangelicæ*, et etiam Osiandri *Harmonia*, nemo facile, imo ne vix quidem ullius evangelistæ verba sigillatim et seorsum legere potest. Et in Calvini Harmonia, Joannis Evangelium non inseritur: et etiam ubi cæteros conferre simul studet, eorum sententias concordantes sæpe non conjungit.

Sed hic, historiam, historico ordine, quo singula et facta et dicta sunt, et etiam quatuor evangelia, eo semper ordine conservato, quo eorum unusquisque separate scripsit, invenies.

Ubi aliquis sanctorum evangelistarum rem aliquam ab aliis tractatam prætermittit; columnam suam, quousque ea pars ab illo omissa sese proferat, vacuam habet.

Et cum de aliqua re concordent, eorum singula verba congruentia, sunt conjuncta.

Ut lector, aliquam partem alicujus evangelistæ aspiciens, facillime eodem ipso aspectu, utrum ullus præter eum de eadem re conscripserit intueri, et cum duo vel plures eorum consentiunt, sine ulla difficultate, inter se conferre, possit.

Et ad eam collationem et applicationem, iste liber lectorem plurimum incitabit.

Nam quis evangelistam aliquem hic legens, et alium concordantem ob oculos aspiciens, quid ille quoque dicit, et plus vel minus habet, et in quibus pariter consentiunt, et

ANNO 1602. quid eorum unus uno modo, et alius alio, recte scribit, perspiciendi studio non ardebit?

Et hujus etiam operis, illustrissima regina, librum primum, qui historiam evangelii, usque ad finem tentationis in deserto, continet, donec mihi tempus residuum describendi a Deo Opt. Max. concedi poterit, ad tuam celsitudinem defero.

Confidens pro tuæ majestatis benignitate, (in qua quidem omnes regiæ virtutes, ex dono Regis regum, splendide uberrimeque micant,) si Christus viduæ illius pauperculæ, quæ in gazophylacium minuta duo misit, magis quam omnium divitum munera, eo quod ex sua penuria miserat, donum commendavit; quod tua celsitudo, hanc partem exiguam, tanquam operis majoris specimen, et quasi gustum, in qua totius forma et ordo plene demonstratur, donec inde reliqua transcribere potero, in bonam partem et mente benigna accipiet.

Mar. xii. Luc. xxi.

Quod me vehementissime quidem incitabit, in rebus ejusmodi fructuosis, dies noctesque, laborare.

Et ego (necessitate officii mei ductus) pro tuæ majestatis incolumitate et felicitate perpetua, Dominum, bonorum omnium largitorem, assiduis precationibus, orare, quoad vixero, nunquam desinam.

Tuæ majestati devinctissimus,
Richardus Beard.

370 Number CCLXXIV.

A proclamation by the nobles of England, upon the death of queen Elizabeth, of the succession of king James. March 24, 1602.

FORASMUCH as it hath pleased Almighty God to call to his mercy out of this transitory life our sovereign lady, the high and mighty prince Elizabeth, late queen of England, France, and Ireland; by whose death and dissolution the imperial crown of these realms aforesaid are now absolutely, wholly, and solely come to the high and

mighty prince James the Sixth, king of Scotland; who is lineally and lawfully descended from the body of Margaret, daughter to the high and renowned prince Henry VII. king of England, France, and Ireland, his great-grandfather, the said lady Margaret being lawfully begotten of the body of Elizabeth, daughter to king Edward IV. By which happy conjunction both the houses of York and Lancaster were united to the joy unspeakable of this kingdom, formerly rent and torn by the long dissension of bloody and civil wars; the said lady Margaret being also the eldest sister of Henry VIII. of famous memory, king of England, as aforesaid: ANNO 1602.

We therefore, the lords spiritual and temporal of this kingdom, being here assembled, united, and assisted with those of her late majesty's privy-council, and with great numbers of other principal gentlemen of quality in the kingdom, with the lord mayor, aldermen, and citizens of London, and a multitude of other good subjects and commons of this realm; thirsting now after nothing so much as to make it known to all persons, who it is that by law, by lineal succession and undoubted right, is now become the only sovereign lord and king of these imperial crowns, (to the intent that by virtue of his power, wisdom, and godly courage, all things may be provided for and executed which may prevent or resist either foreign attempts, or popular disorder, tending to the breach of the present peace, or to the prejudice of his majesty's full quiet,) do now hereby, with one voice and consent of tongue and heart, publish and proclaim, that the high and mighty prince James the Sixth of Scotland is now, by the death of our late sovereign queen of England, of famous memory, become also our only lawful, lineal, and rightful liege lord James the First, king of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith. To whom, as to our only just prince, adorned (besides his undoubted right) with all the rarest gifts of mind and body, to the infinite comfort of all his people and subjects that shall live under him, we do acknowledge all faith and constant obedience, with all hearty

ANNO 1602. and humble affection, both during our natural lives, for ourselves, and in the behalf of our posterity. Hereby protesting and denouncing to all persons whatsoever, that in this just and lawful act of ours, we are resolved, by the fa-
371 vour of God's holy assistance, and in the zeal of our own conscience, (warranted by certain knowledge of his manifest and undoubted right, as hath been said before,) to maintain and uphold his majesty's person and estate, as our only undoubted sovereign lord and king, with the sacrifice of our lives, lands, goods, friends, and adherents, against all power, force, or practice, that shall go about, by word or deed, to interrupt, contradict, or impugn his just claims, his entry into this kingdom, or any part thereof at his good pleasure, or disobey such royal directions as shall come from him. To all which we are resolved to yield ourselves, until the last drop of our blood be spent for his service. Hereby willing and commanding, in the name of our sovereign lord James the First, king of the aforesaid kingdoms, all the late lieutenants, deputy-lieutenants, sheriffs, justices, and all mayors, bailiffs, constables, headboroughs, and all other officers and ministers whatsoever, that they be aiding and assisting from time to time, in all things that are or shall be necessary for the preventing rising, and suppressing any disorderly assemblies, or other unlawful act or attempt, either in word or deed, against the public peace of the realm, or any way prejudicial to the right, honour, state, or person of our only undoubted and dear lord and sovereign that now is, James the First, king of all the said kingdoms; as they will avoid the peril of his majesty's heavy indignation, and their own utter ruin and confusion. Beseeching God to bless his majesty and his royal posterity with long and happy years over us. *God save king James.*

Rob. Lec, mayor,	Clanrickard,	Tho. Buckhurst,
Jo. Cantuar.	Ri. London,	E. Oxford,
Tho. Egerton,	Rob. Heref.	Nottingham,
Pembroke,	Jo. Norwich,	Northumberland,
H. Lincoln,	Tho. La Warre,	Gilb. Shrewsb.

W. Derby,
E. Worcest.
E. Cumberland,
R. Sussex,
Morley,
H. Cobham,
Gray Wilts,
Scroope,
Lomley,
Ed. Cromwel,
Rob. Rich,
Geo. Hunsdon,
G. Chandoys,
W. Compton,
Norreys,
L. Howard of
Walden,
W. Knollys,
Ed. Wotton,
Jo. Stanhop,
Rob. Cecill,
Joh. Fortescue,
Jo. Popham.

Number CCLXXV. 372

The valuable apprehension had of king James of Scotland, upon his first coming into this kingdom; in an address to him by Will. Covell, D. D. in his answer to a book that now came forth, called, A pleasure for the innocent; *written in behalf of the puritans.*

SURELY, if ever nation of the world had cause to hope for happiness to this church and commonwealth, or to give thanks unto the Lord, and to that end to fall low upon our knees before his footstool, it is we, to have a king; but, which is greater happiness, of the same blood, nay, more than that, of the same religion; but most of all, without bloodshed; and especially *then*, when all the politics of the world had set our period, and rung our passing-bell. Even then, by your highness's means, the Lord himself (for we must acknowledge that it was his work) *delivered our soul from death, our eyes from tears, and our feet from falling.* Our soul from bodily and spiritual death; our eyes from tears, arising from our danger; nay, from our holy tears for our late sovereign; and our feet from falling into troubles, which then were present: into sin, which then was likely; into blindness, which then we feared; into shame, which we all deserved; into misery, which many hoped: but we say again, *The Lord* hath done great things for us already; and greater, and far greater shall do, if we be not unthankful: and therefore, whosoever thou art, either Jesuit or priest, anabaptist, protestant, or atheist, which sayest in thy heart, *Let us make havock of them altogether*, thou

ANNO 1602. shalt suddenly consume and perish, and come to a fearful end; and the church shall continually entreat, at the hands of the Lord of heaven, and humbly before the throne of your gracious majesty, for protection against her and all your adversaries.

And the learned bishops and divines employed in the last translation of the Holy Bible thus addressed themselves to the king in the dedication thereof. Which will shew the sense the clergy had of the happiness accruing to the land by that king's entrance upon the government, and the seasonable prevention of many and great miseries foreseen to ensue, upon the expiration of the former princess's decease, in these words:

"Great and manifold were the blessings, most dread "sovereign, which Almighty God, the father of all mercies, "bestowed upon the people of England, when first he sent "your majesty's royal person to rule and reign over us. "For whereas it was the expectation of many, who wished "not well to our Sion, that upon the setting of that bright "occidental star, queen Elizabeth of most happy memory,
373 "some thick and palpable clouds of darkness would so "have overshadowed the land, that men should have been "in doubt which way they were to walk; and that it should "hardly be known who was to direct the unsettled state; "the appearance of your majesty, as of the sun in his "strength, instantly dispelled those supposed and surmised "mists, and gave unto all that were well affected exceeding "cause of comfort; especially when we beheld the govern-"ment established in your highness, and your hopeful seed, "by an undoubted title, and this also accompanied with "peace and tranquillity at home and abroad. But amongst "all our joys, there was none that more filled our hearts, "than the blessed continuance of the preaching of God's "sacred word amongst us; which is that inestimable trea-"sure, which excelleth all the riches of the earth, &c.

"Then not to suffer this to fall to the ground, but rather "to take it up, and to continue in that state, wherein the

" famous predecessor of your highness did leave it: nay, to ANNO
" forward with the confidence and resolution of a man in 1603.
" maintaining the truth of Christ, and propagating it far
" and near, is that which hath so bound and firmly knit the
" hearts of all your majesty's loyal and religious people
" unto you, that your very name is precious among them:
" their eye doth behold you with comfort, and they bless
" you in their hearts, as that sanctified person, who, under
" God, is the immediate author of their true happiness."

This was the satisfaction the people of this land now took in their new king, and in some of the first years of his government.

Number CCLXXVI.

Anonymus (the queen's physician, as it seems) to Edmund Lambard; a letter writ the day after the queen's death, concerning her sickness and departure.

REGINA cum jam per tres fere hebdomadas morbo melancholico, stuporem quendam, non sine læsæ phantasiæ indiciis inferente, laborasset, nec per totum id tempus ullis vel rationibus, vel precibus, vel fallaciis, induci potuisset, ut aliquid artis medicæ auxilium experiretur, ac difficulter persuaderi sibi passa sit, ut alimentum naturæ sustinendæ debitum sumeret: somnum autem quam minimum; eumque non in lecto, sed inter pulvinaria, ubi totus dies, et insomnis, et immota sedere consueverat, caperet. Intelligendi autem vim ad extremum usque spiritum retineret. Linguæ vero facultate tribus ante obitum diebus fuisset privata.

Postquam est omnibus et felicissimæ principis et Christianissimæ fœminæ officiis functa, die hesterno, scil. 24 Martii, hora tertia matutina, naturæ cessit.

Convenerunt statim, qui illi erant a conciliis omnes, adjunctis sibi a nobilitate et episcopis quam plurimis, qui eodem ipso die sub horam decimam antemeridianam, in- 374
gressi hanc civitatem, in multis et famosissimis ejusdem locis publico fecialis præconio, prælegente domino secretario,

ANNO 1602. Jacobum sextum Scotiæ, nunc ejus nominis primum Angliæ regem, et proclamante universo populo, denuntiarunt.

Et sic adhuc res nostræ habent, ut quietæ magis quam compositæ esse videantur, donec adventus regis, et solidius eis fundamentum subjiciat, et pulchrius ædificium superextruat.

Sub cujus adventum cum certo certius sit, conventum ordinum ad magna comitia fore, ut, quæso, effice, ut..... mihi sit locus in eis comitiis assignatus.

Number CCLXXVII.

The university of Cambridge to the vice-chancellor and others of the university of Oxford, concerning that university's answer to the petition of the thousand ministers. October, 1603.

Anno 1603. CUM nuperrime et quidem sero admodum ad aures nostras pervenisset fama de libello regiæ majestati pro reformanda scilicet ecclesia, a ministris mille, ut perhibetur, exhibito, etsi nihil in eo novi reperiretur, cui non plus millies antehac responsum sit, tamen quoniam numerum jactant, ut intelligerunt millenarii isti, si Saulo mille adstent, Davidi in hac causa decies mille nunquam defuturos, nihil prius habuimus, aut antiquius quam ut operi omni responsione indignissimo aliquod jam responsum pararemus. Quod dum meditamur, defertur ad nos academiæ Oxoniensis apologia, certe disertissima quæ rationum momentis brevissime refutaret quicquid ab istis tanto labore confectum esset, aut confictum. Qua conspecta nihil nobis reliqui videbatur, quos ita anteverteret fratrum nostrorum in causa optima zelus et industria prompta satis et parata ad hominum levissimorum ictus omnes, vel extempore refellendos. Quod cum illi pondere certassent argumentorum, non numero, quo illi maxime gloriantur, et prævidimus, et providimus. Cum enim defuncta Elizabetha, regina optima, et in causa optima (quod in muliere prope singulare est et inauditum) semper constantissima, semper eadem, non tam principis reli-

giosissimæ interitum, et religionis, si non intereuntis, at summe certe periclitantis casum deplorare, quam in adventum regis novi novas res meditari isti cepissent, et indies moliri, per opportunum succurrendum, censuit academia; et convocato senatu, frequenti admodum et celebri decernendum: "Ut quicunque ecclesiæ Anglicanæ doctrinam, vel disci- "plinam, vel ejus partem aliquam, legibus publicis stabili- "tam, scriptis vel dictis, vel quocunque modo, in academia "Cantabrigiensi publice oppugnaverit, ab omni gradu sus- "cipiendo excludatur, et a suscepto suspendatur ipso facto." ANNO 1603.

Quod quidem decretum, consensu prope unanimi comprobatum, et tabulis publicis Junii 9, 1603, consignatum. Nunc demum testatum cupimus universis, ut intelligant 375
omnes de disciplina nostra, non imposita sed suscepta libere, et retenta, quid existiment in angulis opiniastri nonnulli, sed in aperto senatu Cantabrigiensi prope universi. Quorum consensus, cum tam fraterne concinet et conspiret cum apologia Oxoniensi, cum scripturis, patribus, conciliis, principum nostrorum decretis, legibus, parliamentis; eant nunc mille isti, et libris nostris fere mille in hunc finem editis et conscriptis, cum erit otium et facultas, respondeant priusquam crambon toties decoctam, regi, tam prudenti, tam literato, tam imprudenter obtrudant. Aut si numerari malint, quam ponderari suffragia, cogitent homunciones miseri, ab academiis musisque relicti, quam nullius numeri sint, quam plane nihili. Valete, fratres in Christo charissimi, et nos nostramque academiam, summa vobis et studiorum et morum similitudine conjunctissimam, ut facitis, amate. Octob. 7, 1603.

Subscribed by the vice-chancellor and other the heads of that university of Cambridge.

Number CCLXXVIII.

A proclamation for the king's coming from Barwick. April 10, 1603.

FORASMUCH as the king's most excellent majesty is

ANNO 1603. graciously minded to make his speedy repair from Barwick to his highness' city of London, in which his journey he is to pass from thence through divers shires of this realm; it is notified to all sheriffs of the several counties through which his majesty shall pass, that each of them respectively, attended with the justices of the peace, and other gentlemen of the said several counties, fail not to wait on his majesty, to receive him at his first entry into the same county, whereof they are sheriffs, and to continue their attendance, until such time as he shall come to the uttermost bounds of that county; where the sheriff of the next county is in like manner to attend and receive him. And this to be so done from county to county, until he shall come to his city of London, &c. Given at the king's palace at Whitehall, the 10th of April, in the first year of his majesty's reign.

Care was also to be taken by the sheriffs, that plentiful provision be made in all counties and places, where his highness shall lodge or rest by the way, for his majesty, and such noble personages as should attend him, and also the whole company.

376 Number CCLXXIX.

A proclamation for all magistrates and officers under the late queen, to keep their places. April 5, 1603.

FORASMUCH as it cannot be doubted, but as the king's most excellent majesty hath taken great contentment in the most dutiful and devoted affection of his subjects of this realm, testified by the universal and joyful consent, in publishing his right, and acknowledgment of his highness for their sovereign, so on the other side his majesty's subjects will find much joy and comfort by receiving knowledge of his gracious and loving acceptance of their most humble and most affectionate service and duty. It was therefore very meet, that his majesty, having of late by his several letters of the 28th and of the last of March, unto such of us, the nobility of this realm, and others that were

of the late queen's privy-council, as are here at his highness' palace of Whitehall assembled for the service of his majesty and the state, signified his gracious acceptance, and princely thankfulness unto all his subjects of whatsoever degree or condition, for such and so extraordinary demonstration of their good-will; and commanding the same to be further notified to all parts, we should publish and declare the same by this proclamation in his name: and withal that we should declare and make known his majesty's pleasure, delivered likewise in the same letters, touching the necessary continuation, during his absence, until it shall please his highness to give other commandment and direction, (of such orders and proceedings for the preservation of peace, administration of justice, and government of the state, as were formerly established, and stood in force immediately before the said queen's decease;) which chiefly and in effect is this.

The king's letters to Q. Elizabeth's privy-council.

That whereas, upon the decease of the late queen's majesty, the authority of the most part of the offices and places of jurisdiction and government within this realm, and in the realm of Ireland, did cease and fail, the sovereign person failing from whom the same were derived: and thereupon, through doubtfulness, and want of authority for execution in such persons as were invested in the said offices and places, the settled and ordinary course of the affairs of the state (if remedy were not provided) might receive disturbance and prejudice, by discontinuance and interruption; his majesty, in his princely wisdom and care of the state, (reserving unto his own judgment hereafter his reformation and redress of any abuses in misgovernment, upon better knowledge taken there in due time,) is pleased, and hath so expressly signified, that all persons, that at the time of the late queen's majesty's decease were duly and lawfully possessed of any place or office of authority, jurisdiction, or government, either civil or martial, within this realm, or in the realm of Ireland, as namely, all lieutenants, sheriffs, deputy-lieutenants, commissioners of musters, justices of the peace, &c. shall be, and shall so hold themselves, continued

ANNO 1603. in the same places and offices, until his majesty's pleasure be further known.——

377 And albeit the earnest and longing desire in all his majesty's subjects to enjoy the sight of his royal person and presence, (which hath moved very many of good degree and quality, and some of them having place of charge in the countries where they dwell, to hasten and take their journeys at this time unto his highness,) be for itself comfortable in them, and acceptable to his majesty, being an argument of their abundant joy and gladness; nevertheless, because the over-much and too frequent resort and concourse of people unto those parts where his majesty as yet remaineth, or which are far distant from the heart of this realm, is at this present inconvenient, and may prove more dangerous, both in respect that the country whither such extraordinary resort is made shall be overcharged with multitude, and thereof scarcity and dearth is like enough to proceed; and also because these more inward parts of the realm shall in the mean time be impaired in hospitality, being destitute of such assistance as is needful, it may be doubted to what danger or disturbance, foreign or domestic, they may be exposed: his majesty therefore, in his wisdom, both graciously accepting the good-will of his subjects, and withal regarding what is convenient for his service, and for security of the state at this time, is pleased and doth require, that such concourse and resort into those parts be forborne; and above all others, of those persons that have a place of charge or office, either on the seacoast or the inland; or any of good degree and quality in their country: and that such orderly course be hereafter holden (in the discretion of all such persons aforesaid) for repair and resort to his highness's presence at his coming further into this realm, as may conveniently stand and agree with his honour and service necessarily belonging; and to be performed in all parts of the realm to his highness and the state, his majesty being no less graciously disposed, and willing in all convenient sort to give contentment and pleasure to his own

Resort to him forbid.

eyes and mind by the sight of his most loyal and loving subjects, than they are infinitely desirous to enjoy the happiness of his majesty's person and presence: who, we doubt not, long before this time, is already safe in this his realm of England; though his majesty forbear to come presently to his city of London, until those things can be set in readiness, which are fit and honourable for the reception of so great and mighty a king. Given at his majesty's palace of Whitehall, the 10th of April, in the first year of his majesty's reign. ANNO 1603.

God save the king.

Number CCLXXX. 378

A proclamation for uniting both kingdoms, May 19, 1603.

..... THAT it had pleased God in his great blessing to this whole island, by his majesty's lawful succession to the imperial crown of England, not only to remove this difference, [viz. of the borders, English and Scottish,] but also to furnish his highness with power and force, sufficient to prosecute his majesty's royal and worthy resolution, as his highness hath already begun; intending that the bounds, possessed by those rebellious people, [upon the borders of these realms, causing slaughters, spoils, robberies, &c.] being in fertility and all other benefits nothing inferior to many of the best parts of the whole isle, shall be no more the extremity, but the middle; and the inhabitants thereof reduced to perfect obedience, &c.

His majesty, for the better satisfaction of all his good subjects, who may stand in any doubt of the said union, and to take away all pretence of excuse from wicked and turbulent persons, hath hereby thought good to publish and make known to all those to whose knowledge these presents shall come, that as his majesty hath found in the hearts of all the best disposed subjects of the realms, of all qualities, a most earnest desire, that the said happy union should be perfected, the memory of all preterite discontentments abolished, and the inhabitants of both the realms to be the

ANNO 1603. subjects of one kingdom; so his highness will, with all convenient diligence, with the advice of the estates and parliament of both the kingdoms, make the same to be perfected. And in the mean time, till the said union be established with the due solemnity aforesaid, his majesty doth hereby repute, hold, and esteem, and command all his highness's subjects to repute, hold, and esteem both the two realms as presently united, and as one realm and kingdom, and the subjects of both the realms as brethren and members of one body. And in regard thereof that every one of them abstain and forbear to commit any kind of robbery, bloodshed, or any other insolence or disorder, or to receive and harbour the persons, wives, children, or goods of the fugitives and outlaws of either of the realms; but to contain themselves in peace and quietness, and all such dutiful behaviour as becometh good and loyal subjects; certifying all and every person which shall do, practise, or attempt any thing to the violating of these presents, that they shall incur the punishment due to the said rebels; and that the same shall be executed against them with all rigour and extremity, to the terror of others. Given under our signet, at our manor of Greenwich, the 19th of May, 1603.

379 Number CCLXXXI.

Proclamation against monopolies and protections.

THE zeal and great affection which we have found in all sorts of people of this our kingdom toward our person, and that right which we had to the succession of this crown, hath been so many ways expressed, as we cannot choose but make it manifest to them by some public declaration, how great a desire it hath wrought in our hearts to shew our gracious acceptation of their devotion towards us, whensoever there shall be offered either occasion or subject, that may concern their universal good. For though it be true, that our right was so assured, that whatsoever testimony could thereof be uttered was but the duty of subjects, ac-

knowledging that faith and loyalty, whereunto, by the laws of God and nature, they were bound, yet do we confess, that there is in the true rules of justice from the sovereign to his subject a reciprocal office and respect which they are bound in honour and conscience to observe. ANNO 1603. The king's title.

The consideration whereof hath moved us to think of such ways as for the present did occur unto us, wherein we might make manifest to our people, how willing we are now, and will be ready hereafter, to be as forward in requiting their love, as they have been in expressing it. In which consideration while we were busied, we were informed, that the queen our sister, deceased, finding, some few years before her death, that some things had passed her hands, at the importunity of her servants, whom she was willing to reward with little burden to her estate, (otherwise by necessary occasions exhausted,) which, though they had and might have foundation in princely prerogative, yet, either by too large extending thereof, or for the most part in respect that they were of such a nature as could hardly be put in use without hinderance to multitudes of people, or else committed to inferior persons, who, in the execution thereof, did so exceedingly abuse the same, as they became intolerable, had purposed to revoke all grants of that nature, and did begin with some, which were heard most unjust; putting the rest to the examination of her laws, to stand or fall, as in construction of law they might consist or not. Reflection upon the queen. Prerogative.

We, who though we had never had such an example, were ever opposite in our own nature to any thing that had colour of oppression, hold it our part, not only carefully to perfect all her good intentions, but to study further, by all good means, and with all expedition, to put in practice all other courses, whereby a people so loving, so dutiful, and so dear unto us, may know and feel, that we are as desirous to make them happy by our justice and grace toward them in all reasonable things, as they have been ready to increase our comfort and contentment, in yielding their loyalty and obedience towards our establishment in those rights, which under God we do enjoy.—— The king's nature.

ANNO 1603. Therefore he expressly charged and commanded, that all persons henceforth desist and forbear to use or execute any manner of charter or grant made by the late queen deceased, of any kind of monopolies, or of any power or licence to dispense with, or discharge any manner of penal laws, (except such grants only as had been made to any corporation or company of any art or mystery, or for the maintenance or enlargement of any trade or merchandise,) until such time as his said charter or grant shall be examined and allowed of by us, with the advice of our council, to be fit to be put in execution without any prejudice to our loving subjects.

380 Monopolies.

And whereas heretofore many had been greatly prejudiced and delayed in suing for their debts and other duties, by sundry kinds of protections, or by pretence of other privileges and exemptions, he charged and commanded, that no protections, privileges, or exemptions, to delay any person's suit or action, should be from henceforth received or allowed in any of his courts, or elsewhere, which are or shall be contrary or repugnant to the laws of the realm.

Protections.

Assignment of debts. And that no assignments of debts or actions be made unto us by any that is or intendeth to be in debt to us, who is otherwise able and sufficient by himself, or by his sureties, readily to pay the same debt.

That he was informed, that many and great disorders and abuses, to the great grief of the subject, as well by saltpetre men, or such as had or intended to have commission and authority to make saltpetre, and also by sundry purveyors and takers of carts, and other provision for the king's use and service; he did expressly charge, that the said saltpetre men, purveyors, and takers, should have especial care to execute their offices and authority without any manner of oppression, grievance, or wrong to be done to his subjects.

Saltpetre men.

Purveyors.

Lawyers. Also express charge was given to all lawyers, attorneys, officers, and clerks of and in any of the king's courts of justice, ecclesiastical or temporal, that none of them extort or take any undue or excessive fees, but only such as are allowed to be had and taken in the same courts.——

These graces above specified we do presently extend to our people; and do intend other hereafter, when we shall understand more particularly wherein we may yield them comfort. ANNO 1603. Graces.

But because things well meant may in the manner of them be abused, &c. we have thought good to admonish our subjects, that if they should have cause to seek any thing at the king's hands, to forbear all assembling and flocking together in multitudes; by lawful and decent manner, without numbers, without clamour, or any other kind of disorder, resort to us, or our council, by way of humble petition: from whom they shall receive such answer, as shall make manifest, that as we have regard to the observation of justice and maintenance of their welfare, if their complaints be just; and on the other side, if we shall perceive that their petition shall savour of humour, and tend only to slander and calumniation; and in pretence of seeking public redresses, to utter private malice, we should have 381
them understand hereby, that they shall not only displease us herein, but find that we hold it no less the office of a prince to protect their magistrates and officers and all public persons, in their just, than to give redress to the vulgar sort, when they have indeed cause to complain against all persons, how great soever they be in rule or dignity under us, &c. reserving to ourselves the right justly appertaining to our prerogative. For that we would not have it conceived, that in doing these things out of our grace, we do intend to renounce those ancient duties and privileges, which have descended upon us with the succession of our kingdoms.

And for that we are informed, that there hath been heretofore great neglect in this kingdom, of keeping the sabbath-day, for better observing of the same, and avoiding of all impious profanation of it, we do straitly charge and command, that no bear-baiting, bull-baiting, in their lewd common plays, or other like disordered and unlawful exercises and pastimes, be frequented, kept, or used at any time hereafter upon the sabbath-day. Sabbath-day to be kept.

Given at our court at Theobald's, the 7th day of May, in the first year of our reign.

ANNO 1603.

Number CCLXXXII.

Proclamation commanding all Jesuits and seminary priests to avoid the realm before the 19*th day of March following. Dated Feb.* 22.

By the king.

SHEWING how he had spent time in settling the politic affairs of the realm, and of late bestowed no small labour in composing certain differences he found among his clergy, about rites and ceremonies, heretofore established in this church of England; and reduced the same to such an order and form, as he doubted not but every spirit, that was led only with piety, and not with humour, should be therein satisfied. That it appeared unto him, in debating those matters, that a greater contagion to our religion than could proceed from those light differences, was imminent by persons, common enemies to them both; namely, the great number of priests, both seminaries and Jesuits, abounding in this realm; as well such as were here before his coming to the crown, as such as resorted hither since: using their functions and professions with greater liberty than heretofore they durst have done: partly upon a vain confidence of some innovation in matters of religion to be done by him, which we never intended, nor gave any man cause to expect; and partly upon the assurance of our general pardon, granted, according to the custom of our progenitors, at our coronation, for offences past in the days of the late queen. Which pardons many of the said priests have procured under our great seal; and holding themselves free from the danger of the laws, do with great audacity exercise offices of their profession; both saying masses, persuading our subjects from the religion established, and reconciling them to the church of Rome; and by consequence seducing them from the true persuasion, which all subjects ought to have of their duty and obedience to us, &c.

Priests and Jesuits abound.

382

Wherefore, by way of providence, to preserve the people from being corrupt in religion, piety and obedience is not the least part of royal duty, we hold ourselves obliged, both in conscience and in wisdom, to use all good means to

keep our subjects from being infected with superstitious opinions in matters of religion, which are not only pernicious to our own souls, but the ready way and means to corrupt their duty and allegiance, which cannot be any way so surely performed, as by keeping from them the ministers and instruments of that infection; which are the priests of all sorts ordained in foreign parts, by authority prohibited by the laws of this land. ANNO 1603.

Concerning which also he published this open declaration of his pleasure, that where there were of priests at this present within our kingdom, be they regular or without rule, divers sorts, some in prison, some at liberty; and of both, some having obtained our pardon under our great seal, and some having no such pardon; and again, some that were here before our coming into this realm, and some comen hither since: for all as are in prison, we have taken order, that they shall be shipped at some convenient port, and sent out of our realm, as soon as may be, with commandment not to return again into any part of our dominions without our licence obtained, upon pain and peril of the laws, being here in force against them. And for all others who are at liberty, whether having sued out our pardon, or not, (which we do advertise them, and all our subjects,) that extending only to matters done before the death of the late queen, doth not exempt any priest from the danger of the law for his abode here, since our succession to the crown above the time by the statute limited. Priests in prison. At liberty.

And all manner of Jesuits, seminaries, and other priests whatsoever, having ordination from any authority by the laws of this realm forbid, to take notice, that our pleasure is, that they do, before the 19th day of March next ensuing the date hereof, depart forth of all our realm and dominions. And for that purpose it shall be lawful to all officers of our ports to suffer the said priests to depart from thence into any foreign part betwixt this and the said 19th day of March. And after the said 19th day, such as should be taken within the realm, or should after return into the realm, to be left to the penalty of the law here in force

ANNO 1603. concerning them, without hope of any favour or remission from us.

We will and command all archbishops, bishops, lieutenants, justices of peace, &c. to be vigilant and careful after the said 19th day, to do their duties and diligence, in discovering and apprehending of all priests that shall remain here, contrary to this declaration.

The reason of this order. It may seem to some to presage a greater severity towards that sort of subjects, who call themselves catholics, than by our proceedings with them hitherto we have given cause to
383 expect: yet doubt we not, but that when it shall be considered with indifferent judgment what causes have moved us to use this providence against the said Jesuits and priests, all men will justify us therein. For to whom is it unknown, into what peril our person was like to be drawn, and our realm unto confusion, not many months since, by a con-
Conspiracy. spiracy first conceived by persons of that sort? Who having prevailed with some, had undertaken to draw multitudes of others to assist the same by the authority of their persuasion and motive, grounded chiefly upon matter of conscience and religion. Which when other princes shall duly observe, we assure ourselves they will no way conceive that this alteration groweth from any change of disposition, no more exasperate than heretofore; but out of necessary providence to prevent perils, otherwise inevitable. Considering, that their absolute submission to foreign jurisdiction, at their first taking of orders, doth leave so conditional an authority to kings over their subjects, as the same power by which they were made may dispense at pleasure with the strictest band of loyalty and love betwixt a king and his people.

Beholden to the pope, as secular prince. Among which foreign powers, although we acknowledge ourselves personally so much beholden to the now bishop of Rome for his kind offices and private temporal carriage towards us in many things, as we shall be ever ready to requite the same toward him, (as bishop of Rome in state and condition, as a secular prince,) yet when we consider and observe the course and claim of that see, we have no reason

to imagine that princes of our religion and profession can expect any assurance long to continue; unless it might be assented by the mediation of other princes Christian, that some good might be taken by a general council, free and lawfully called, to pluck up those roots of dangers and jealousies, which arise for cause of religion, as well between princes and princes, as between them and their subjects; and to make it manifest, that no state or potentate either hath or can challenge power to dispose of earthly kingdoms and monarchies, or to dispense with subjects' obedience to their natural sovereigns. In which charitable action there is no prince living that will be readier than we shall be to concur, even to the uttermost of our power; not only out of particular disposition to live peaceably with all states and princes of Christendom, but because such a settled amity might (by an union in religion) be established among Christian princes, as might enable us all to resist the common enemy. ANNO 1603. General council.

Given at our palace of Westminster, the 22d day of February, in the first year of our reign over England, &c. and of Scotland the thirty-seventh.

Number CCLXXXIII. 384

Proclamation declaring at what values certain monies of Scotland shall be current within England. April 8.

..... HIS majesty knowing in his princely wisdom how necessary it is for commerce and trade between his loving subjects of both kingdoms, that the true value, at which certain pieces of his majesty's coin of Scotland should be current within his kingdom of England, should be certainly known and published to all his loving subjects; and finding upon trial, from certificate from his majesty's officers of the mint within his Tower of London, (upon commandment given unto them in that behalf,) that the coin of Scotland, called the *sixpound-piece* of gold, is of the finest of 22 caracts, and that six of those pieces do make an ounce: and also that the coin of Scotland, called the *mark-piece* of silver, is of

ANNO 1603. the value of 13*d. ob.* sterling; hath therefore published and declared, that the said coin of gold, called *sixpound-piece*, shall be from henceforth current within his majesty's kingdom of England, at the value of 10*s.* sterling; and that the said coin of silver, called the *mark-piece*, shall be from henceforth current within the kingdom of England, at the value of 13*d. ob.*

Given at his majesty's palace of Whitehall, the 8th of April, in the first year of his reign, &c.

Number CCLXXXIV.

A proclamation touching a meeting for the hearing and determining things pretended to be amiss in the church.

GIVEN under our hand at Wilton, the 24th of October, 1603.

This may be read in the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, book iv. chap. 31. *Which proclamation produced the conference at Hampton-court.*

Number CCLXXXV.

Proclamation for calling a parliament. Jan. 11, 1603.

THAT it was his desire to have summoned them long since, if the infection, reigning in the city of London and other places of the kingdom, would have permitted the con-
385 course of so great a multitude into one place.....Which contagion being abated, and shortly, we hope, quite extinct, resolved to hold a parliament, as soon as he should find the same might be done without peril. In which, as God doth know, we have nothing to propound for satisfaction of any private desire, or particular profit of our own, but merely and only to consult and resolve with our loving subjects, of all those things which may best establish the public good, with the general safety and tranquillity of this realm.—

ANNO 1603.

And as it is the first in our reign, so that it may be a precedent hereafter for the true use of parliaments, we have bethought ourselves of as many ways and means as may be, to prevent those inconveniencies which daily arise and multiply by the perverting of those ancient good orders, which were devised by the wisdom of former times, to be observed in calling of parliaments. Among which, because there is no one point of greater consequence than the well choosing of knights and burgesses, who, as they do present the body of the third estate, so, being eligible by multitude, there are often unfit persons appointed for that service.....He did therefore straitly charge and admonish all persons interest in the choice of knights for the shire, first, that knights for the county be selected out of the principal knights or gentlemen of sufficient ability within that county. And for the burgesses, the choice to be made of men of sufficiency and discretion, without any partial respects or factious combination.....And that seeing the dealing in causes of parliament requireth convenience of years and experience, great heed be taken, by all those that would be accounted lovers of their country, that knights and burgesses be chosen accordingly, without desire in any particular man to please parents or friends, that often speak for their children or kin, though they be very young, and little able to discern what laws are fit to bind a commonwealth.....Those persons to be selected principally, of whose gravity and modest conversation men are likest to conceive best opinion.....

And considering that one of the main pillars of the state is the preservation of unity in the profession of sincere religion, he did admonish great care to be taken to avoid the choice of any person, either noted for their superstitious blindness one way, or for their turbulent humour the other way.....

Further, express care to be taken, that there be not chosen any person bankrupts or outlawed; but men of known good behaviour and sufficient livelihood.....Sheriffs to be charged that they do not direct any precepts for electing and returning any burgesses to or for any ancient

ANNO 1603. borough-town within their counties, being so utterly ruined and defaced, that there are not sufficient resient to make such choice, and of whom lawful election may be made..... No city or borough to sell any blanks, referring the leaving to any others to insert the names of any citizens or burgesses to serve for any city or borough; but that the inhabitants do make open and free election according to the law, and set down the names of the persons whom they choose before they seal the certificate.

Given at our honour of Hampton-Court, the 11th of January, the first year of our reign of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the 37th.

386 Number CCLXXXVI.

King James his answer in French to the members of the Dutch church in London; upon their address to him at his first coming to the crown. Ex minore MSto archivorum eccles. Belgic. *Anno* 1603.

Messieurs,

ENCORES que vous ne m'ayez veu jusques a present, si estre que je ne vous suis point estranger, ni incognu. Vous scavez quant a ma religion, quel je suis, non seulement par le bruit que vous avez peu entendre de moi, mais aussi par mes escrits, esquels j'ay veritablement exprimé quel est l'affection de mon ame. Cest par quoy je n'ay besoign d'user de beaucoup de paroles pour vous representer ma bonne volonté envers vous, qui estes ici refugiez pour la religion.

Je recognoy, que deux choses ont rendu la royne ma sœur defuncte renommée par tout le monde, l'une est le desire que elle a tousjours eu d'entretenir et fomenter le service de Dieu en ce royaume. Et l'autre est son hospitalité envers les estrangers; a la louange de laquelle je veus heriter.

Je scay bien par le tesmoinage des seigneurs de ce royaume (comme vous m'avez dit) que vous avez tousjours

prié Dieu pour elle, et que n'avez outrepassé votre devoir. ANNO 1604.
Je scay aussi, que vous avez enrichi ce royaume de plusieurs artifices, manufactures, et sciences politiques.

Si l'occasion se fut presentée, lors que j'estois encores esloigné comme en un coin du monde, je vous eusse fais paroistre ma bonne affection. Mais comme je n'ay jamais taché, ne voulu empieter sur le bien d'aucun prince, aussi puis que maintenant il a pleu a Dieu me faire roy de ce pais, je vous jure, que si quelcun vous moleste en vos eglises, vous adressant a moi, je vous vengeray. Et encores que vous ne soiez pas de mes propres sujets, si est, ce que je vous maintiendray, et fomenteray autant que prince qui soit au monde.

The same in English.

Gentlemen,

Although you have never seen me before now, yet I cannot be wholly a stranger, nor unknown to you. As to religion, you must needs know how I stand affected, not only from the report you may have heard of me, but also from my writings, wherein I have truly expressed what the affection of my soul is. And therefore I need not use many words to declare my good-will towards you, who have taken refuge here for the sake of religion.

I am sensible that two things have made the queen my deceased sister famous throughout the world; the one was the desire she always had of keeping up and maintaining the service of God in this kingdom; and the other was her 387
hospitality towards strangers; which excellent qualities of hers I would inherit.

I am very well assured from the testimony which the lords of the kingdom bear of you of the truth of what you told me, viz. that you always prayed for her, [the queen,] and have in nothing transgressed the bounds of your duty. I am sensible likewise that you have enriched this kingdom with several arts, manufactures, and political sciences.

Had opportunity offered, when I lived at a great distance off, and as it were in a corner of the world, I had given

ANNO 1609. you some token of my good affection towards you. But as I never did endeavour, nor had an inclination, to encroach upon the property of any prince, so now, since it has pleased God to make me king of this country, I swear to you, that if any one should give you disturbance in your churches, upon your application to me, I will revenge your cause. And although you be none of my proper subjects, yet will I maintain and cherish you, as much as any prince in the world can.

Number CCLXXXVII.

A proclamation, authorizing commissioners concerning the union of both kingdoms.

Anno 1604. WHERE at the last session of our parliament of this our realm of England, one act is made authorizing certain persons of both houses to assemble and meet thereupon, to treat and consult with certain select commissioners to be nominated and authorized by authority of the parliament of our realm of Scotland, for the weal of both kingdoms, at any time before the next sessions of this parliament. And a like act is passed in our parliament for our realm of Scotland, to give authority to commissioners, nominated for that nation. For the performance whereof it is necessary that a certain time be prefixed. We do therefore hereby make known and publish to all our loving subjects, who are commissioners for the act appointed for that treaty, as well of one nation as of the other, that we have found it expedient for the commissioners of both realms, to appoint the first day of the said meeting to be on the 20th day of October, next ensuing the date hereof: at our city of Westminster, in the chamber of our palace there, called the *painted chamber*. Whereof we require them all, and all others whom it may concern, to take knowledge; and to keep the day and place accordingly.

Given at our castle of Windsor, the 15th day of September, in the second year of our reign.

Number CCLXXXVIII.

ANNO 1604.

388

Proclamation for coins.

.....WE have always been of opinion, that just princes should not use the liberty of their power in abasing or enhancing the prices of monies, without all respect to the common benefits of their subjects. In which consideration it is evident to all men, that since our entry into this realm, we have been so far from changing the ancient and honourable standard of the sterling money of this our realm of England, as we have, on the contrary, restored to our realm of Ireland monies of pure silver, in lieu of the base coin, with which the necessity of the time, by the accident of the wars, constrained our sister, the late queen of happy memory, to pay the armies.

Nevertheless it falling out at our first coming out of Scotland (where we had coins of gold and silver, not then current in this realm) to be impossible for our nobility, and other servants and subjects, attending us in our journey hither, to be provided of current monies of this realm, for their expenses, so soon as our speed required; we did then give valuation to coin of gold of Scotland, called the 6 lib. piece, to be current here for 10*s*. of silver, and to be equal with the English angel, or sovereign of gold. The authorizing whereof coming lately into consideration, among other points recommended by us to be treated, for the weal of both kingdoms, by some of our council of each of them, it hath appeared, that the inconvenience is fit to be removed. Which groweth by our authorizing it to be equal to the gold coins of England; and that it is not worth, in the value, 10*s*. of our silver money of England; but because that the English coins of gold are not in regard of the silver coins of the true proportions betwixt gold and silver, accustomed in all nations.

Whereupon our council, having occasion to enter into further consideration of the money of this realm, with the assistance of the officers of the mint, it appeareth very visibly, that this error in the proportion of the gold monies

ANNO 1604. of England to the silver, hath been a great cause of the transportation of gold out of this realm into foreign countries in such quantity as of late years hath been used. Because the said gold monies are more worth in their true value, than here they were allowed. To which inconvenience long endured, being now resolved to give remedy, we have cast new coins, both of gold and silver, to be made of several stamps, weights, and values; but of one uniform standard and allay, to be current within this our kingdom of Great Britain. That is to say,

1. One piece of gold of the value of 20*s.* sterling, to be called the *unite;* stamped on the one side with our picture formerly used, with this our style, *Jacob. D'. G'. Mag'. Brit'. Fran'. & Hib'. Rex.* And on the other side, our arms crowned, and with this word, *Faciam eos in gentem unam.*

389 2. One other gold money of 10*s.* to be called *the double crown.*

3. And one other gold money of 5*s.* to be called *the Britain crown.* On the one side with our picture accustomed, and the style as aforesaid. And on the other side our arms, and this word, *Henricus Rosas, Regna Jacobus.* [That is, *unit,* or *jungit.*]

4. One other piece of 4*s.* to be called *the thistle crown;* having on the one side a rose crowned, and our title, *Ja'. D'. G'. Mag'. Br'. F'. & H'. Rex.* And on the other side, a thistle flower crowned, with this word, *Tueatur unita Deus.*

5. Also pieces of 2*s.* 6*d.* to be called *half crowns,* with our picture accustomed, and this word, *J'. D'. G'. Rosa sine Spina.* And on the other side our arms, and this word, *Tueatur unita Deus.*

And for silver monies.

1. Pieces of 5*s.* and of 2*s.* 6*d.* Having on the one side our picture on horseback, and our style aforesaid.

2. Pieces of 12*d.*—6*d.* Having our picture formerly used, and our style as aforesaid. And on the other side our arms, and this word, *Quæ Deus conjunxit, nemo separet.*

3. Also pieces of 2*d.* Having on the one side a rose crowned; and about it, *J'. D'. G'. Rosa sine Spina.* And on the other side, a thistle flower crowned. And about it, *Tueatur unita Deus.* ANNO 1604.

And one penny. Having on the one side a rose, and on the other side a thistle flower: and about it, *J'. D'. G'. Rosa sine Spina.* And on the other side a thistle flower: and about it, *Tueatur unita Deus.*

5. And the halfpenny, having on the one side a rose, and on the other side a thistle flower .....

And with this proclamation was a printed table, expressing the true values and weights of the coins, according to the accounts of the mint-men of both nations.

Number CCLXXXIX.

Upon the remove of bishop Bancroft from London to Canterbury, ann. 1604, *the Dutch and French congregations made, to Dr. Vaughan, his successor, the address following.* E MSS. eccl. Belgic. London.

Reverendissime et doctissime præsul,

ECCLESIARUM peregrinarum hujus emporii fert consuetudo, ut quotiescunque episcopus ad hujus diocesios gubernaculum constituitur, pium et debitum congratulationis officium ejus dignitati persolvamus. In hunc itaque finem ab ecclesiis nostris, Belgica videlicet et Gallica deputati venimus, et nobis dicentibus, animum benevolum auresque benignas præberi etiam atque etiam rogamus.

Tria autem, quam poterimus, brevissime dignitati vestræ exponere decrevimus. Non quod viro amplissimo, rerumque expertissimo, quicquam, quod non probe ipsi ante sit perspectum, declarare possimus, sed ut gratitudinis et benevo- 390
lentiæ testimonium aliquod apud ipsum relinquamus.

Primum itaque tribus verbis, ecclesiæ nostræ statum dicemus. Secundo, episcoporum præcedentium de eis curam. Tertio, addemus nostrum votum.

ANNO 1604.

1. Ecclesiæ nostræ, clarissime præsul, ab anno 1550, in celebri hoc emporio, Edwardi Sexti, summæ spei principis, diplomate, verum pietatis cultum sermone sibi vernaculo, exercuerunt; donec triennio vix expleto, persecutione Mariana (quæ piis omnibus erat luctuosa) alio sese conferrent. Anno autem 1558. rebus in Anglia per successionem Elizabethæ, religionis reformatæ amantissimæ, restitutis, iterum paulatim huc, tanquam ad asylum, confugere cœperunt. Illa miseros, et patria ab Hispano, Albano, Guisianis, Parmensi, ejectos, gremio suo (vera in Israele mater) suavissime excepit et fovit, loco et privilegiis ab Edwardo datis nobis in integrum restitutis. Quam libertatem intactam nobis relictam voluit magnus ejus et toto orbe celeberrimus successor Jacobus. Habuerunt toto hoc temporis decursu viros pietate et eruditione insignes ecclesiam sibi commissam bene, fideliter invigilantes, pacem et fraternitatem cum ecclesiis Anglicanis colentes, quorum memoria apud nos adhuc est, semperque erit, in benedictione. Habent etiam nunc fidei pastores, antecessorum vestigiis insistentes.

2. Venio ad hujus diocesios rev. episcopos, et eorum de nobis curam, et in nos beneficentiam. Constat ex archivis nostris, quam nos amanter exceperit in restitutione nostra piissimus ille Grindallus; quid ad componendas controversias quasdam intempestivas, egerit prudentissimus ille Edwinus Sandes: denique quam fraterne omnes nobis suam obtulerint operam. Idem a rev. tua dignitate certo nobis pollicemur; multis pietate, eruditione, rerum experientia, et humanitate singulari excellentior. Celebris est tua eruditio, pietas, et eloquentia, in aula, in academia, in hac civitate, totoque regno. Non potuit itaque non corda nostra singulari gaudio adficere, quod vir tantus et talis ecclesiis hujus diocesios præficiatur. Hoc ergo munus in se dignum et excellens personæ condignæ et excellenti congratulamur: addito voto.

3. Cum divina id acciderit providentia, Deo Opt. Max. pro singulari sua misericordia gratiose placeat tuam dignitatem Sancti sui Spiritus virtute ita adornare et corroborare,

ut, ut gloria Dei per eam promoveatur, ecclesia Dei ædificetur, hostes ecclesiæ confundantur, omnes difficultates, tantæ vocationis comites, superentur, et magna certaque merces a Jesu Christo ἀρχιποιμένι aliquando concedatur. ANNO 1604.

Number CCXC. 391

Cecil lord Cranborn, secretary of state to Hutton, archbishop of York, concerning orders sent from the privy-council, for putting in execution the laws against puritans.

In answer to the said archbishop's letter, dated Dec. 18, 1604. *Writing concerning the state of religion in those parts, with respect to the popish or puritan factions; and of their great apprehensions chiefly of the papists at that time, and of their resort to London; and that it was high time to look to them. Putting the said lord Cranborn in mind, that he was born and brought up in true religion, and his worthy father a worthy instrument to banish superstition, and to advance the gospel. The archbishop added, that he loved and honoured his most excellent majesty, but wished less waste in the treasure of the realm, and more moderation in the lawful exercise of hunting, both that poor men's corn might be less spoiled, and his majesty's subjects more spared. That the papists gave forth, that the ecclesiastical commission should not be renewed: praying his honour to further it, and that indeed it had stayed very long.* This whole letter may be found in the Appendix to the Life of Archbishop Whitgift, Number L. The lord Cranborn's answer is as follows.

May it please your grace,

ALTHO' your letter lately written unto me, conteyned rather an acknowledgment of your receipt of my lords of the counsell's letters, then any other subject, requiringe present answere for myself, yet when I considered the several partes of the same, I resolved no longer to adventure your lordship's censure of my silence. First, because your

ANNO 1604. place and yeares deserve too great a respect and reverence to be forgotten by my father's sonne, whome I have heard soe often speake of your zealous care and industry to free the church of God from superstition and idolatry, even in tyme of greatest difficulty, to effect soe religious a worke. Of which, although I have cause to speake by former tradition, then by any late particular knowledge, because the greatest harvest of your labours were in a manner inned, before my springe tyme; yet it is comfortable to me, *fuisse*
392 *natum evangelio renato*, and shal be greivous for me to enjoye any state of life, which I should be unwillinge to laye down for the same.

Secondly, I would be loath, that your lordship, who have ever loved the truth, should live in such a darknes, through want of better instruction, as might obscure to you, either his majesties owne cleare, zealous, and constant resolution, for the preservation of true religion, or the serious cares of my lords of his privy-counsell, to have his godlye and just lawes executed.

For your lordships opinion concerninge the differences in our church, I do subscribe *ex animo* to your grave and learned judgment in that and all things else of that nature, havinge alwayes held it for a certaine rule (since I had any knowledge) that the papiste was carryed on the left hand with superstitious blyndnes, that the puritane (as your lordship termes them) was transported on the right, with unadvised zeale and *outre enviance*. The first punishable for matters essential; the second necessary to be corrected for disobedience to the lawful ceremonies of the church, wherein although many religious men of moderate spirites might be borne with, yet such are the turbulent humors of some, that dreame of nothinge but of a new hyrarchye, directly opposite to the state of monarchy, as the dispensation with such men were the high waye to breake al bonds of unity, to nourishe schisme in the church, and finally to destroy both church and commonwealth. It is wel said of a learned man, that there are schismes in habite, as well as in opinion; *et non servatur unitas in credendo, nisi adsit in colendo:*

and therefore where your lordship seemeth to speake fearfully, as if in labouringe to reform the one, there were some purpose to tollerate the other. I must crave pardon of your lordship to reply thus much, 'til I heare you touch particulars, that it is not a sure foundation to builde upon bruites; *nam linguæ magister populus.* And all their phrases of, They say, are the common mothers and nurses of slaunder. Neither can I be perswaded otherwise, forasmuch as I have observed in the place I have held, within compas whereof, some more then vulgar bruites do fal, but that whosoever shal behold the papistes with puritane spectacles, or the puritan with papistical, shal see no other certeyntye, than the multiplication of false images. ANNO 1604.

Besydes, my lord, yf that shold be true which your lordship reportes, (which God forbid,) that popery and papistes should increase in those quarters, geve me leave to tel your lordship that you must either provide to defend your owne challenge against yourself, and blame your owne subordinates, if they have dispensed, or els make knowne who they are which geve impediment to that tymelye worke of reformation, for which you are soe wel authorized by our religious sovereigne. And therein, my lord, I doubt not but your lordship shal alwayes find a discreet and dilligent conductor, of the L. President, a noble man, of whome his majestie and the state have reason to expect al good and religious indeavors: so let me take the boldnes to assure thus much, that your lordship shal never want any further ampliation of your authoritie, whensoever you shall desire it of his majestie or his privy-counsell, for any matter tendinge to the suppressinge of the Romish superstition. And, my lord, it wil be hard for them, though 393
they had the eyes of Argus, to worke any great effect in any place, where the hands of execution wil discover feares, before there be cause of doubts.

And now for that which concerns myself, to whome your lordship hath geven a freindly caveate, under the tytle of a great counseller, not to procure or yeild to any tolleration, a matter which I wel knewe noe creature livinge dare pro-

ANNO 1604. pound to our religious sovereigne; although I am farr from the vanytye to esteme my fortune worthy the style of greatnes, yet dare I confidently professe, that I wil be much lesse then I am, or rather nothinge at al, before I shal ever become an instrument of such a miserable change. For the rest, which is the moral parte of your letter, wherein you observe some extraordinary proportion of his majesties guifts and expences, I acknowledge that memorial to be worthy your lordship's yeares and experience; and yet I must say, that bounty is a kinges qualitie, that it hath ever bene held, *regum ditare, et non ditescere;* that al great princes at their first entryes are tyed partly for their owne humors, partly out of merite, and often in the true rules of pollicye, to be less sparinge of liberality, *in primis auspiciis, quam in imperio firmato:* wherein as his majestie doth dayly use convenient moderation, accordinge to the change of tymes and occasion, so hath he left a monument beyond example of his natural care and princely providence, by passing lately an intaile to the value of one hundred thousand marks sterlinge per annum; wherein he hath absolutely concluded himselfe from al power of any after separation from his royal yssue.

For the last point in your letter concerninge huntinge, seeinge I perceive you have soe undiscreet clarkes, as they are like to make my letters as common as they have made your owne, my ende beinge only now in serious thinges to shew you in private what I am to you, as wel as to myselfe, I think it impertinent to spend any tyme in discourse of that, least men that see the passages betwene us may thinke that you and I doe both of us forget our accompts for other tallents, which we have in keeping. Onely this shal be my conclusion, that as it was a prayse in the good emperour Trajan to be disposed to such manlike and active recreations, so ought it to be joy to us to behold our kinge of so hable a constitution, promisinge so long life, and blessed with so plentiful a posteritie, as hath freed our minds from all those feares, which did beseige this potent monarchy, for lack of publick declaration of his lyneal and lawful

succession to the same, whilst it pleased God to continue to the fulnes of dayes our late sovereigne of famous memory. And so for this tyme I commit, &c. ANNO 1604.

[*There is no date, but the whole is truly copied from a MS. entitled,* Registrum Vagum, *formerly belonging to Dr. Jegon, bishop of Norwich, since to Dr. More, late bishop of* [*Norwich*] *and Ely, and now in the royal library at Cambridge.*] T. B. S. T. B.

Number CCXCI. 340

The address of the Dutch church in London to Bancroft, bishop of London, upon his remove to Canterbury, ann. 1604, *when monsieur de la Fontain, preacher of the French church, made this speech to him.*

Reverendissime pater, observande Domine;

QUOD jam pridem moris fuit, et instituti nostri, quos divina Providentia, et regis voluntas ad archiepiscopatus functionem evexerit, eos ecclesiarum nostrarum nomine, quam officiosissime salutaremus; id nunc in dignitatis vestræ gratiam præstamus, ei fausta omnia precamur; et a Deo suppliciter petimus, ut ad tanti muneris functionem Spiritum illum suum veræ sapientiæ et prudentiæ, pietatis et moderationis vestræ dignitati largiatur, ad sui nominis gloriam, et ecclesiæ ædificationem. Hoc illud est quod primum volumus. Cæterum cum amplissimi viri antecessores vestri in hac eadem sede constituti, summa nos semper humanitate exceperunt, benevolentiaque et favore ecclesias nostras foverint, et adhuc sunt prosecuti, eandem nos humanitatem et benevolentiam a vestra dignitate obnixe petimus, et speramus. Quemadmodum et nos mutuam gratitudinem erga vos perpetuamque spondemus.

Hæc pauca, ne plusquam par est, dignitati vestræ molesti simus, dicenda habuimus.

This salutation was friendly taken.

ANNO 1604.

Number CCXCII.

The speech of monsieur de la Fontain to Dr. Vaughan, now the succeeding bishop of London, anno 1604.

Reverende pater, observande Domine,

QUO primum tempore lux veritatis in hoc amplissimo regno effulsit, quum Josiæ illius Britannici Edwardi Sexti, piissimæ memoriæ regis gratia et auspiciis, annuentibus totis parliamenti comitiis, ecclesiæ nostræ, id est, exterorum constituerentur eis quoque designatus est inspector, *superintendentis titulo*, Johannes a Lasco, Polonus; ut et restitutis ecclesiis, benevolentia et auctoritate Elizabethæ, nunquam satis pro meritis laudatæ reginæ, Johannes Utenhovius, et ipse multis virtutibus insignis, natione Flander, hoc idem munus inter nos sortitus obivit: quum deinde reverendus pater, Edmundus Grindallus, episcopatum Londinensem obtineret, eum sibi patronum et superintendentem ecclesiæ exterorum exoptarunt: quod munus ex augustissimæ reginæ voluntate in se susceptum, cum summa sane humanitate,
395 et erga nos propensione, est executus. Ab eo tempore reverend. patres, Londinenses episcopos, quamprimum ad hoc munus capessendum accesserunt, officiose salutavimus, nobis patronos benevolos, et nostri studiosos experti sumus.

Hac eadem de causa dignitatem vestram interpellamus, officiosissime salutamus, precibus nostris Deo Opt. Max. commendamus, ut donis Spiritus sancti eximiis, et ad tantum munus idoneis instructus, bonorum omnium expectationem, in promovenda Dei gloria, et ædificanda Christi ecclesia, non modo sustinere, sed etiam superare possit.

Nobis autem ut eam benevolentiam, et auctoritatis præsidium, quale ab antecessoribus vestris experti sumus, exhibere digneris, obnixe rogamus. Ac postremo ut de nobis omnibus eadem polliceamur, et expectetis officia, quæ nos deceant, et quibus sinceram gratitudinem nostram testemur.

Hæc pauca honoris causa, Flandricæ et Gallicæ ecclesiæ nomine, dignitati vestræ dicenda habuimus.

ANNO 1604.

Number CCXCIII.

The bishop of London's answer.

AGO vobis gratias maximas, fratres charissimi, quod me tam humaniter salutaveritis. Scio Johannem a Lasco fuiss. virum præstantissimum, ornatum multis dotibus animi et ingenii, et reliqui mei antecessores fuerunt sane viri præclari. Quare dubium non est, quin patrocinio suo tutati sunt vestras ecclesias cum quibus idem in doctrina esset consensus. Quod ad petitionem vestram attinet, ei libenter subscribo. Novi ecclesias vestras annos jam viginti quinque. Scio hoc regnum beneficia ab eis percepisse. Scio eas pacificas esse, et quietas, et nostris ecclesiis posse esse utiles; in quibus Diabolus, dissidii autor dissentionis ignem accendere cæpit. Cui ne oleum adfundetis, peto: sed potius vestris consiliis et precibus restinguere conamini.

Ego siqua in re vobis usui esse potero, non deero, sed quemadmodum antecessores mei fecerunt, vos defendam. Hæc dixi subito: et dicendi desuetudine, forte non ita Latine.

Number CCXCIV.

De la Fountain's present reply to the bishop's speech.

NOS nec in sermone, nec in reipsa aliquid deprehendimus, quod sit tanto viro indignum. Quare summas pro summa humanitate ac benevolentia dignitati tuæ debemus gratias. Quod ad dissidium attinet, quod jam ecclesias Anglicanas turbat, fieri non potest, ut id ignoremus, et ut animos nostros non pungeret ingenti dolore; sed memores sumus nos esse peregrinos, qui rebus alienis nequaquam nos immiscere debeamus. Si tamen nostris consiliis aut opera ecclesiæ 396
pacem promovere possimus, et ignem hunc restinguere, non modo omni studio libenter id faceremus, sed etiam vitam nostram ad pacem hanc redimendam, profunderemus.

ANNO 1604.

Number CCXCV.

A convocation, ann. primo Jacobi regis, 1603. *collected and taken from the register.*

SEDE archiepiscopi vacante. Begun at St. Paul's the 20th of March, 1603.

The writ of summons first issued to archbp. Whitgift.

The king's second writ (the archbishop being dead before the meeting) was, to the dean and chapter of Canterbury (reciting the former) to proceed in the assembling of the convocation.

The dean and chapter of Canterbury's first commission to the bishop of London, *ad interessend. et præsidend.* Dated the 12th of March, 1603.

The dean and chapter's second commission, upon the king's writ to them of summons to be to the bishop of London, to be present, and preside. Dated the 17th of March, 1603.

Sess. 2. 23d of March, 1603, at St. Paul's. The prolocutor presented, viz. Dr. Ravis, and approved.

Sess. 3. March 30, 1604. The king's letters to hasten a collection for the town of Geneva.

Sess. 5. April 13, 1604. The bishop of London, president, bringeth in the king's licence to make canons. Dated April 12, 1604. Entered at large. Appointeth a committee of bishops to confer with the speaker, and others of the house of commons, about complaints before them brought against the clergy. And that the bishops should also tell the said speaker and commons of grievances put upon the clergy by the laity.

The bishop of London, president, maketh a substitution of the bishops of Winton, Lincoln, Wigorn, Bath, Chichester, Exon, Ely, Peterburgh, Hereford, Norwich, Overal, dean of St. Paul's, and Dr. Stanhope, vicar-general, to preside in his place.

Sess. 7. April 8. [18.] The bishop of London tells the lower house, that the speaker and commons refuse their consultation, and have made their complaints to the lords.

The king's second licence to make canons. Dated June 25, 1604. ANNO 1604.

Sess. 11. May 2. The bishop of London delivereth the prolocutor a book of canons; desiring him to a commission of eight or ten, to consider of them.

A petition by Egerton, Fleetwood, Wootton, Clark, and others, for reformation of the Book of Common Prayer; imparted to the lower house, in presence of the petitioners.

The bishop of London and bishops admonish the petitioners to be obedient, and conform, together with their adherents, before St. John Baptist's next.

Sess. 13. A commission of both houses to conclude the 397
book of canons, and despatch it.

Sess. 16. May 18. The king's letter with the articles, 1562, to be by the convocation approved and allowed.

The articles read and subscribed by both houses: and the book so subscribed to be kept by the bishop of London and president.

Sess. 17. May 23. A debate about the cross in baptism.

Sess. 19. May 30. The prolocutor complaineth to the bishop, that he had two subpœnas served upon him by Harrington and Walker, notwithstanding the privilege. The president's answer, that the king was acquainted with it, and that Walker was arrested for it by a sergeant at mace; and a warrant gone for Harrington.

Sess. 21. Walker abovesaid convented before the bishops, and sent to the lower house to beg pardon of the prolocutor and house. Which he did, and was dismissed *pro tempore*.

Sess. 24. June 13. Complaint of a book printed, called *Limbomastix*, railing against the ecclesiastical function. Committed.

Sess. 32. June 24. Harrington brought upon his knees, for serving a subpœna upon the prolocutor.

Sess. 34, 35, 36. Conference about some canons.

Sess. 37. The king's writ to prorogue the convocation to the 8th of February, 1604. The dean and chapter's com-

ANNO 1604. mission to the bishop of London to execute it. Prorogued accordingly to St. Paul's.

After this the canons of 1603 were printed and published.

Sess. 38. Feb. 8, 1604. Archbishop Bancroft being then made. The king's writ, reciting all his former writs of holding and proroguing. Prorogueth to the 4th of Oct. 1605.

Sess. 39. Oct. 4. The convocation again prorogued by commission of the archbishop, (in pursuance of the king's writ, inserted in the body of the commission, to the bishop of London,) to the 6th of November, 1605.

The convocation 1603. *tertio Jacobi, Nov.* 6, *continued by prorogation to that date.*

Sess. 1. Nov. 6. Archbishop Bancroft recommendeth Dr. Overal, dean of St. Paul's, to be chosen prolocutor, in the room of Dr. Ravis, made bishop of Gloucester. Adjourned to Westminster-abbey.

Sess. 3. Dr. Overal presented prolocutor. Jan. 24, 1605.

Sess. 4. Jan. 24. The archbishop delivereth a book, drawn up, concerning the state of the church. Desireth both houses to take copies, and consult about it. [This may be seen at large in the consultation of the members, and their approbation, in Bishop Overal's *Convocation Book*, MDCVI. *concerning the government of the church.* At the end whereof are these words written: *Hæc omnia superscripta ter lecta sunt in domo inferiori convocationis, in frequenti synodo cleri, et unanimi consensu comprobata. Ita testor,*

April 16, 1606. *Johannes Overal, prolocutor.*]

This convocation book was afterwards printed in the year 1690.

Sess. 5. Jan. 29. The archbishop bringeth in the king's
398 licence to make canons.

Sess. 12. Feb. 21. The lower house called up. One Cartwright appeareth: who having killed a clergyman, and obtained the king's pardon, beggeth pardon, and absolution of the bishops. But not having the king's pardon there, he was dismissed to a further consideration of his petition.

ANNO 1604.

Sess. 19. March 19. Agreement by both houses to grant four subsidies. The draught of it committed to the bishops of Winton, Exon, Ely.

Sess. 21, 22, 23, 24. Suspension of contumacious, non-comparents: and absolution of some.

Sess. 25. April 2, 1606. The subsidy granted brought in, engrossed, for four subsidies of 4*sh.* at eleven payments half yearly, 18*d.* for ten payments, and the eleventh 12*d.* The first payment to be October 2, 1606: the last payment October 2, 1611. [that is, for five years.]

Sess. 26, 27, 28. Absolution of Dr. Tooker, dean of Litchfield, and another from suspension, as non-comparents: and the suspension of Dr. Sterne, suffragan bishop of Colchester, for not appearing.

Sess. 38. May 28, 1606. The prolocutor desireth the archbishop, that whereas by reason of the long continuance of the convocation, the clerks of the convocation had been at extraordinary expenses, a competent sum might be allowed towards their great charges by the parsons and vicars, over and above the usual and accustomed allowance towards their great charges. The archbishop and bishops thereupon ordered, that for the first sessions they should have the old and ordinary allowance, and for the other sessions after, the moiety of the first old allowance.

The king's writ for prorogation to the 19th of November, 1606, was read. Prorogued to Westminster.

Convocation continued by prorogation, and re-begun 5to Jacobi at St. Paul's.

Sess. 3. Nov. 21. The archbishop telleth the lower house, that the king hath consented to put a restraint upon prohibitions.

Sess. 11. Feb. 18, 1606. The archbishop declareth to both houses the king's pleasure to singing and organ-service.

Sess. 4. Feb. 27. The archbishop proposeth a book writ in folio; [of what subject not written:] causeth his secretary to read some leaves.

ANNO 1604.

The convocation continued by prorogation to Feb. 10, 1609.

Sess. 3,—4,—19. In the 11th and 18th sessions, some chapters of the written book brought in by archbishop Bancroft (mentioned before) were read.

Sess. 20. May 9, 1610. Conference with the lower house, of the modern estate of the church: value and polity of benefices; smallness of some benefices; tithes received by lay hands, and enjoyed. Of the number of prebends, and their values. But no particulars.

Sess. 36. Crosham, clerk, convented for publishing an erroneous book. He confesseth, and is ready to retract: the archbishop accepteth his submission, and ordereth him
399 to retract, and dismisseth him. The subject of the book not mentioned.

Sess. 22. May 16, 1610. The lower house bringeth to the archbishop some notes of the numbers and values of prebends. [Nothing of particulars mentioned.]

Sess. 40. July 16, 1610. Grant for one subsidy of six shillings in two years. The first payment October 2, 1610. Half yearly.

Sess. 43. Prorogued July 24, to the 17th of October, 1610.

The convocation continued by prorogation. Held by archbishop Bancroft.

Sess. 1. October 31. The archbishop being dead, the dean and chapter of Canterbury give commission to the bishop of London.

Sess. 14. October 7, 1610. The bishop of London prorogueth to Feb. 11, 1610.

Sess. 15. The bishop of London, upon the king's writ, dissolveth the convocation.

A convocation 12° *reg. Jacobi* began at St. Paul's by archbishop Abbot, *anno* 3^io^ *translationis*, the 6th of April, 1614.

Number CCXCVI.

ANNO 1606.

A proclamation for Jesuits, &c. to depart the realm: upon a second warning given, after the gunpowder plot.

WE do not doubt, but that all our subjects embracing the true religion, professed in this church of England, and by law established within this realm, are truly persuaded of our constant resolution for the maintenance and defence of the same; not only because we found it here for so many years settled and blessed of God, in the long peace and prosperity of our people, wherewith it hath been accompanied since the first setting the same free from the Romish servitude, but also chiefly because our own knowledge and understanding (illuminated by the Spirit of God) doth assure us, that the same is agreeable to the divine word, and to the doctrine of the primitive church. Of which our purpose and determination, besides all other our former proceedings (since our entry into this kingdom) we have given a new and certain demonstration by our consent to such two acts as have been passed in this sessions of parliament, both tending to prevent the danger and diminish the number of those who, adhering to the profession of the church of Rome, are blindly led, (together with the superstition of their religion,) both into some points of doctrine, which cannot consist with the loyalty of subjects toward their prince, and oftentimes into direct actions of conspiracies and conjurations against the state wherein they live; as hath most notoriously appeared by the late most horrible and almost incredible conjuration, to blow up us, our children, and all the three estates in parliament assembled. All which notwithstanding, and although by these last treasons abovementioned, contrived and pursued (as they have been) with the privity and warrant of so many of the principal priests of that profession, and grounded upon points of doctrine, (in that church held and maintained,) there is sufficient cause (if there had not been any other enterprise upon the same ground) to justify the proceeding of us and

Powder plot.

400

ANNO 1606. our said parliament in the making and execution of these last, and all other former statutes, tending to the same end.

Nevertheless seeing the sovereign care appertaineth to us, who have the sovereign power of justice in our hand, and the supreme dispensation of clemency and moderation of the severity of our laws is likewise proper to us to use, when we shall find it reasonable; the same deserving to be no less allowed in us, (being in our dominions God's lieutenant,) than it is praised in him, among whose titles it is, that his mercy is above all his works. Although both nature's just offence might be—if we suffered ourselves to be transported with such passion, as so vile and barbarous provocations do excite in human sense. And our providence would be also commended, if we did with all violence endeavour to extirpate out of our realms, not only such as were guilty of the attempt, but all others that gave any cause to be suspected of bearing favour to it, or of whom there is any just occasion to conceive that they may be corrupt with the like poison. Yet as in any provocation, or other respect, extinguished in us so utterly the exercise of that clemency, whereunto nature hath so far inclined us, as we can be withholden from renewing some course of lenity against some particulars so far forth as it may be without the peril of our religious and loyal people, that concur with us in the profession of the gospel.

And therefore, to the end we might not have any further subject ministered unto us, whereby we must be provoked to execute justice upon those, who being called religious persons, and professed devotoes of their church, (as priests, Jesuits, seminaries, and such like,) have not only declared themselves to be the stirrers up of our people to disobedience, but when we were pleased formerly, out of our mere grace, to signify our royal pleasure for their departure out of the realm unpunished, have few or none of them taken hold of our gracious favour, have wilfully, and as it were in scorn of the penalty, which our just laws could impose, have still continued in their former practices, and contempt in their

returns, as we do purpose to send away out of our realm even those of that condition, whose lives are in our hands to take every hour, if we were so disposed, (excepting only those that are guilty of that horrible treason,) so we have once again resolved, and for the last warning do denounce it by these presents, (according to the intent of our laws, and our former proclamation,) that they shall all of them, that is to say, Jesuits, seminaries, friars, or any other priests whatsoever, regular or secular, being made by the authority of the church of Rome, depart out of this realm of England and Wales, before the first day of August next ensuing, upon pain to incur the uttermost danger of our laws. ANNO 1606.

And for their better means to depart according to this our pleasure, we do hereby signify to them, that if at any time before the said first of August they, or any of them, excepting Gerrard or Greenwel, shall resort to any port town of our realm, and there declare himself to the magistrate of the said town, or other officers of our port, that he is a priest of any sort whatsoever, and that he is there to take shipping for his passage, they shall suffer him or them quietly to depart, and shall see them shipped and sent away, and give them their licences for their departure. 401

And because there may be some priests in hold in divers ports in our realm, not yet known to us, we do will and command all sheriffs, bailiffs, and keepers of prisons, within twenty days after the publishing of this proclamation, to advertise our privy-council, or some of them, of the names of all such priests, Jesuits, seminaries, or of any other sort that are in their custody, and by whom and for what cause they were committed: to the end that thereupon we may give order for their transportation.

And now, lest happily this unexpected course of our so oftentimes reiterated clemency, after such an example, should either serve to encourage the priests themselves to affront our justice, or discourage those good and dear subjects of ours, whose danger and destruction we know shall never be severed from our own, whensoever such projects shall be in motion; we do hereto protest, that this is done for

ANNO 1606. no other purpose, but to avoid the effusion of blood, and by banishing them presently out of our dominions, to remove all cause of such severity, as we shall otherwise be constrained to use toward the other sort of our people, as long as those seducers shall have opportunity to betray their consciences and corrupt their loyalty; towards whom our affections do vary with the object. As we confess, that we desire still to make it appear in the whole course of our government, we are far from accounting all those subjects disloyal that are that way affected; and that we do distinguish of such as be carried only of blind zeal, and such as sin out of presumption, and under pretext of zeal make it their only occupy to persuade disobedience, and to practise the ruin of this church and commonwealth. And therefore, as after-times must give us trial of all men's behaviours, so must all men expect, that their own deserts must be the only measure of their own fortunes at our hands, either one way or other.

Given at our manor of Greenwich, the 10th day of July, in the fourth year of our reign over Great Britain, &c. 1606.

Number CCXCVII.

King James's letter to the lords; desiring their advice, in order to the better improving his revenue.

Anno 1607. My lords,

THE only disease and consumption, which I can ever apprehend as likeliest to endanger me, is this eating canker of want, which being removed, I could think myself as happie in all other respects as any other king or monarch that ever was since the birth of Christ: in this disease I am the patient, and yee have promised to be the physicians, and to use the best care uppon me, that your witte, faithfulnes, and diligence can reach unto. As for my part, you may assure yourselves that I shall facilitate the cure, by all the means possible for a poor patient, both by observing as
402 strait a dyett as ye can in honour and reason prescribe unto

me; as also by using seasonablie, and in the right forme, such remedies and antidotes, as ye are to applie to my disease: and as for your part, I know it is the chief, and in a manner the onlie subject whereupon you embarrass your brayns all this tyme of my absence. ANNO 1607.

And first for your labour of borrowing money..... I onlie wish you better success therein than I dare hope for, 'till I hear of your conclusion: in the meane tyme I doubt not ye will not omytt to think of all meanes of addition and encrease of rent, as well by some newe and lawful inventions, without the unjust burthen of the people, as also by your frequent sittings uppon your ordynarie commissions of asserts, leases, concealments, and such like. And on the other part that ye will also be thinking uppon the best meanes of substraction and decrease of charges, as well by reformation of corruptions and abuses, as by cutting off nedeles superfluities. (The honor, greatnes, and safetie of the king and kingdom being allways respected.)

Some more general matters I also remember you of in addition to those which at my parting I recommended unto you concerning this errand.

First, That none of you, either joyntlie or in particular, shall either recommend to me, or allowe of any such indefinite or vast sute, whereof none of your selves can guess what the vallew may prove, which is the most thankles and ignorante prodigallitie that any prince can use; but whatsoever nature the sute be of, I may first be informed of the true vallew, and then is it my part onlie to consider what out of the measure of my liberalitie I will bestowe uppon the sutor. I meane, either of any new invention found out by a sutor, or of any concealed, unknown debt: (as was the nature of sir Jeames Sandiland's sute, that recusant's unknown debt:) so shall I nede never to repente me of any liberalitie, nor the sutors have cause to thank their own wytts, but my free favour only.

Secondlie, I would have you to help my memorye, when men come with their sutes, that have already been largely rewarded: for synce there are so many gapers, and so little

ANNO 1607. to be spared, I must nedes answer those that are so diseased with the.....or *caninus appetitus*, as a king of France did long agoe anwer one: *Cecy cera pour on aultre.*

Thirdlie, if any sutes come for unseasonable renewing of leases, or farms of customes or imposts, I know how greatlie that concerns my proffit, and that that is almost the sure hope that is left for encrease of my rent.

Now having touched three poynts as helps to staye this continual hemorogie of outletting, I will onlie remember you of two restoratives agayne for nourishment, whereof I have oftentymes spoken unto you. The one, that it be no longer forgotten to make my proffit as well of the lands of those that are attaynted of treason, as of the fynes of those noble men that were fyned for little better deserts. I mean with that moderation, as I ever intended it, and wherein you are allready sufficientlie acquainted with my mynd. The other thing is, that there be some straight and diligent order taken, as well for the through recoverye of my sper-
403 able debts, as for the seasonable payment and inbringing as well of my ordinary rents as subsidies. And thus assuring you of as counselable and pliable a patient as I assure myself you will prove faithfull, dilligent, and I hope fortunate phisicians, I bidd you heartilie farewell; praying God to bless you with a happie success.

JAMES R.

N. B. *This and the following letter were transcribed by sir M. Hicks, some time secretary to the lord treasurer Burghley, from the original letters.*

Number CCXCVIII.

An address to king James from certain of his subjects.

Most gracious soveraigne,

WHEN we that knowe and feele the strength of our inward affections compare the best of all our external services

with that gracious acceptation, whereof your royall letter hath yielded so clear and perfect demonstration; we most plainly confess to your majestie, that your goodness shews itself to us in such a shape of royall, or rather divine perfection, as when we have most consulted of an answere, we find ourselves more apt to look one uppon another with comfort and admiration, then to resolve of any uniforme dyrection what shall be our replye, or who shall undertake to put his pen to paper. For as it is true, your majestie should much undervallew our zeale and duties, which are infinite, if you should judge them to be no greater then they do or can appear by our words, though we se how highly it hath pleased you to esteeme them, (the thoughts of men being always of larger dimension then their woords or outward shewes can express,) so we think it were both a weakness in us, and derogatorie from your goodnes, if we should rack our wytts for woords to make your majestie truly understand how unhappy we take ourselves, even in this fulness of our comfort, till we have made your majestie more happy in our faithful and fruitful services in this kingdom, who have vouchsafed to make our meritt so great a part of your happiness, for whom we shall be ready, when we have done all you shall command of men in our places, to laye downe life and fortune for the service and safetie of you and yours, whose days we beseech God to multiplye upon the earth, with all your royall olive branches beyond any that ever ware a crowne, and to make the first houre of our deviation from this resolution to be the last houre of the lives of

ANNO 1607.

Your majesties most humble and affectionate subjects and servants.

This letter was written in answer of his majesty's two letters, dated the 25th of Oct. 1607.

ANNO 1612.

Number CCXCIX.

404 *Abbot, lord archbishop of Canterbury, to king James; informing his majesty of secret treasonable practices of Sunega, the Spanish ambassador, anno* 1612.

May it please your most excellent majesty,

I DO not forget what your highness gave me in charge concerning don Pedro de Sunega: whose stay in England may very well give cause of jealousy. When he came from Spain he had in his company Spinola, one Balthazar Sunega, his kinsman, and a third person of quality. All which came through France, and stayed at Paris about fourteen days. About which time they had oft speech with Villeroy. It is given colourably, that Villeroy demanding of them the reason of their negociation, could learn nothing thereof, but such ordinary matter as Sunega represented to your majesty. Spinola and that other are gone to Colein, under pretence to work down the fort which the protestants have raised near to the city. But I am verily persuaded, that the stay of this ambassador here is for no good purpose. I am certainly advertised, and that more ways than one, that he brought over with him thirteen or fourteen thousand pounds in gold, whereof a good parcel is secretly dispersed already. I further understand, that he expecteth a greater sum before his departure.

Besides, I have been informed, that in the night-time many things pass between him and the ledger,
of France: which, if it be true, intendeth the more harm, because the French ambassador being tasted that way, both, one, who may well do it, maketh great semblance to the contrary; I will be as useful as I can to understand the truth thereof. Lastly, if I be not deceived, when the powder-treason should have been acted, Sunega was the man who lay here for the king of Spain; and what finger he had in that business, God knows. But I trust, the Almighty, who sitteth in heaven, and laugheth wicked men to

scorn, will turn all the counsels of Achitophel to foolishness. So beseeching God evermore to bless your majesty, with remembrance of my most humble duty, I rest ANNO 1612.

Your majesty's servant and chaplain, most bound,

Croyden, July 22, 1612. G. Cant.

A

SUPPLEMENT

OF

RECORDS AND ORIGINAL PAPERS,

TO THE

FORMER VOLUMES OF THE ANNALS.

SERVING TO THE FURTHER IMPROVING AND ILLUSTRATING
OF THE HISTORY.

SUPPLEMENT

OF

RECORDS AND ORIGINAL PAPERS.

Number I.

Strangers in London, anno 1568.

Appointed by the lords of the council to sir Tho. Row, lord mayor, to be searched out in each ward; and a certificate thereof sent in to them: which accordingly was taken by him at large, and entered in a great book: with his letter as follows.

To the right honourable the lords and others of the queen's majesty's most honourable privy-council.

The answer and certificate of sir Thomas Row, knt. mayor of the city of London.

As to the number of strangers, as well within the city of London, as in certain other liberties and exempt jurisdictions adjoining nigh unto the same, both of men, women, and children of every nation, as well denisons as not denisons, with their names, surnames, and occupations; and what houses be pestered with greater numbers of strangers than hath of late been accustomed; and to whom they pay their rents for the same; and how many of them do resort to any of the strangers' churches; according to certain instructions and letters from your honours to me for that purpose addressed, as nigh as I can collect the same, by reason of certain incertain certificates; as well by the officers of the said liberties and exempt places, as of others to me returned and certified. ANNO 1568. MSS. Burg.

ANNO 1568. It began with the ward of Cripplegate: wherein first is mentioned John Clayse, girdler; Collyer and Remys; one of them of Artois, the other of Henauld; both silkworkers. In this ward is Anthonie Coran, [Coranus,] preacher in the 2 Italian church, born in Spain, tenant to the duchess of Suffolk; Mary his wife, John and James their children..... They go to the Italian church. In this ward there were many silkworkers, besides those before mentioned, to the number of fifteen. Likewise an embroiderer, silk-weaver, two parchment lacemakers, and a fringemaker.

S. Thomas of Acon.

In the foresaid book several Venetians and some Dutch are said to go to church to S. Thomas of Acon, [which is the same with Mercers' chapel.] Gabriel Petroche, Venetian, a chirurgeon, Barbara his wife, and their children. Jerome Venalia, merchant, and a Venetian; Lombard Venalia, and others, go to Thomas of Acons; Matt. de Guester, notary-public, a Dutchman and a denison, and Cornelis his wife, and his children, Paul Typoets, and Cornel. de Hare, his servant, go to S. Thomas of Acon to service. So that here was a religious assembly for preaching and prayers; and some Dutch also resorted hither.

Ministers strangers.

In the parish of S. Edmund's, Anthonie Rodulphs, professor of the gospel in the house of Mr. Sherington. And these did adjoin themselves with him, when he came first to the said house; viz. Vincent Bassens, Frenchman, minister of the gospel; and by that name put in exile by the commandment of the French king. Laur. Bourghinomus, minister of the gospel, of the household of cardinal Castilion; James Machevillens, minister of the gospel, and put in exile; Antonius Lixens, of the same profession; and John Aubries of the church of Bolloyne, exiled with others of the gospel.

Fernando Almarez, Spaniard, a buttonmaker, goeth to the Italian church; John Pharasie and his wife, born in Bruxells; Cornelius Fisher, born in Holland; Tho. Suffeit, Florentine captain, go to the Italian church.

Strangers that go to the English church. ANNO 1568.

A great many of these went to the English, or their parish churches.

Nicolas Taffyn, Guy Bernard, and Pietro de Metre, Frenchmen, students; and be of the French church.

Francis de Farias, Spaniard, and Jocamina his wife, his children, and Nicolas Duprey, his servants, silk-weavers, go to the Italian church. Anthony Brusket, merchant, of Jeane, [Genoa;] he hath three merchants dwelling with him. Baptist Fortune, and Tho. Fortune, Florentines; and they go to the English church.

Benedict Spinola, denison, merchant of Jeane: he goeth to the English church. Three clerks of Jeane, Jasper Voltabis, Ascanius Spinola, and Aug. Grassigne: they go sometimes to the English church, and sometime to the Italian.

Mr. Anthonie, preacher of the city of Jeane; Stephen de Grasse, an old French preacher, and his wife, go to the French church.

Claude Tyton, merchant, and his wife; Mary Petsokin, his daughter, and Mary his servant, all Dutch, in Barkin parish.

S. Olyffe and Alhallows Staining. 3

In this parish were a great many Italians, Dr. Ector and Anno 1607. his wife, and Frier, her daughter; Nic. de Goles, merchant; Bastion Rice, merchant; Aserbo Delutelo, Alex. Mentaly, merchants; Epolito Beaumont, Shepion Vilatel, Arasio Vilatel, Aschamo Bramount, servants; all Italians. Anthon. Basam, [Bassani,] Italian, and his wife and five children; all born here: [he was musician to the queen.] James Deroche, preacher, Frenchman, and Mary his wife.

Anthony Coran, [Coranus,] in Cripplegate ward, preacher in the Italian church; born in Spain; tenant to the duchess of Suffolk; Mary his wife; John and James, their children; David de Dieu, and Joan Leveresse, their servants; and they go to the Italian church. [He preached also in Spanish.]

Dr. Cæsar, physician, set down under the strangers in-

ANNO 1607. habiting in the parish of S. Helen's; Mr. Cavecant, Italian, one of the queen's servants, and lived in Katharine Coleman parish; in which parish lived divers Dutch and French merchants; and Mr. Gasperin, a Spaniard, one of the queen's servants.

Eastcheap.

Several of the strangers that were placed here were basketmakers, but denisons, and of the Dutch church.

Ward of Bridge Without: divers joiners, Dutch; some born in Cleveland: a great number of strangers in this ward.

In S. George's, Southwark: Garret Strip, [Stryp,] leather-dresser, denison, born in Brabant; his wife, a child, a maid, and three men-servants; all go to the Dutch church.

Vintrie Ward: Jane Esquier, widow, Katharine, her daughter, Mary and Anne, her cousins; all born in Valentia, shepsters; Lisken Nullent, widow; she is a shepster.

S. Tho. Apostles: Margaret Houseman, widow, and Martha her daughter, born in Flanders, shepster.

Portsoken Ward: Peter Loup, musician in Italy, and Katharine, his wife, born in Flanders; they go to the Italian church: Peter Hayes, born in Rone, [Roan]: goes to the French church; and dwelleth with his son the minister of S. Buttolph, [Aldgate.]

Westminster: the French cardinal, living in Hans Hunter's house, hath to the number of forty servants.

Bridge Ward: Ambrose Hewbrick, physician, born in Lowin, [Lovain,] Katharine his wife, born in Antwerp, several children; Robert Randulphus, merchant, born in Florence; Robert Meron, merchant, born in Florence; Polito Swant, born in Brisse, [Brissels;] divers more, born in Florence, went to the Spanish ambassador's to hear mass.

S. Magnus.

Some houses mightily pestered with numbers of foreigners; as in one house in S. Magnus parish were twenty-four Dutch people: and herein one was a merchant, with his wife and children; another, a shereman; another, a ta-

pestry-maker; another, a dyer; another, a linen-weaver: the house belonged to Michael Griffen, merchant, a denison, born at Rostar in Flanders; and he lived himself in the same house. ANNO 1607.

S. Swithin's parish in Walbroke ward: Giles Vanhil, 4 selleth cloth made in Sandwich, called bayes; Peter Apple, denison, and James his brother, born in Flanders, sell cloth, made in Sandwich and Norwich, called bayes: another here was a botcher, and mended apparel; and many more, said to be botchers by trade; another was a musician, servant to the lord marquis Northampton: another, named John Quarry, born in Arras in Flanders, had a licence to make glass in Sussex, went to the French church; another was a worker of here, [hair,] for great hosen; another, a tapestry-worker; another, named John Baloar, born in Bilbow in Spain.

Woolchurch parish: Balthazar Sanchie, denison, born in Spain, hath an English woman to his wife; John Lewis his servant, born in Valentian de Aragon, and is a comfit-maker; they both go to the French church, as they say; hath two tenements; the one he bought, and the other he payeth rent for: here some were menders of old apparel; another, a maker of tennis-balls; another woman was a maker of loops for buttons.

Walbrook parish: several joiners by trade; a painter; a tailor.

Abchurch parish: one dwelling there that sold cloth made in Sandwich and Norwich, called bayes; named John Godskalk, denison.

S. Peter's parish, in Queenhithe ward; John Gillambiskn, Italian, a perfumer, and for most part at the court.

Tower ward, in S. Dunstan's parish in the east: nineteen Dutch in one house; one was Antosin Poumel, merchant, with his wife and children, and servants; John Vouche, John Marni, John Bowthand, and Robert Philip, all ministers, being Frenchmen; Stephen Marvey, minister, and his wife; and divers others that lived by their money, [viz. without trade:] in the same parish, Andrew de Loo, deni-

ANNO 1607. son, a merchant; Hans Vanderel, his servant; two maid-servants; all Dutch; and go to their own parish church; Emanuel Demetrius, a Dutch merchant, and Hester his wife; Agnes and Sarah, their children; Bastian Speidek, merchant, and Zuzanne his wife, Dutch merchant, and go to their parish church; John de Pesscrowe, Venetian merchant; Sacary Moundy, Jasper Laiet, and another, his servants, and Joseph Lowntney, all Venetians, go to S. Thomas of Acres church; Innocent Conney, Italian, one of the queen's musicians.

S. Alhallows Barkin parish: John Howgabert, denison, hatband-maker; Balthazar Pierse, merchant, his wife and divers children, Portugals, go to no church; some here hatmakers; some buttonmakers; Augustin Lovelone, Venetian, denison, shipwright, wife, children, all born here, go to the parish church; several women, styled needle-women; Peter Miller, a brewer; several beer-brewers here; Claude Tyson, and Mary his wife, merchant; Peterkin, his daughter, and Mary his servant, all Dutch folks in Barkin parish; as also Anthon. Basam, [Bassani,] Italian, and Helyn his wife, and five children, born all here; he is a musician to the queen.

S. Olyff, and Alhallows Staining: divers Italian merchants in these parishes; among the rest Accrbo Velatelo; Gillan de Vache, Frenchman, musician; another Frenchman, named Laryel, musician; James de Raché, preacher, and Mary his wife; ——— embroiderer; ——— bookbinder; John Veric, broker, Dutchman; several lay at his house; among the rest, Michael Fever, minister, Mr. Dr. Roman, and John Lowen his servant, in the house of Edw. Touche; James Cornel, a cutter of pearls, a Frenchman; Adrian Redlegg, Dutchman, minister, and his wife, a denison.

Coleman-street ward: Godfrey Wincour, [seems to be Wynge,] a Dutch preacher; Christian, his wife; Jeronomo, the Italian preacher, and Loweraie, his wife, with her maiden, and a boy, all go to the Italian church.

Liberties of Christ's Church within Algate: there lived

in one house forty-four persons, being all Dutch: and John Van Leur, merchant, payeth the rent for the same, to sir Lewis Mordaunt, knt.: in this liberty lived the widow of Utenhove, [Dutch minister,] with three children, boarders with her, and divers others, to the number of fourteen; they are tenants to the duke's grace, [duke of Norfolk.] [This was Dukes-place, I suppose.] ANNO 1607.

Black Friers: Mr. Cossyn, Frenchman, minister, and Breugen his wife, come for religion, with three boys, with two wenches, which go to school, and are of the French church; Tho. Vantrolly, Frenchman, denison and stationer, with his wife and one child, born in England; they are of the French church: and there live in the same house two Frenchmen, that came for religion, and be of the French church; Angel Victorys, Sardinian, denison, schoolmaster, and his wife, came for religion, and are of the French church; John Victorys, Sardinian, came for religion; he is said to be Dutch, and of no church: many here in Black Friers are said to come for religion.

S. Botulph without Bishopsgate: many houses pestered with numbers of strangers: here were skinners, silk-weavers, sackcloth-weavers.

Minories: Philip Garse, minister, Dutchman; Bartholomew Williamson, preacher of the Dutch church, and Elizabeth his wife, born in England; Cornel. Jacob, a minister of the Dutch church, born in Holland.

The number of strangers in Cripplegate ward 277. Whereof

Dutchmen - -	213	Spaniards - - -	6
French - - -	41	Denisons - - -	12

The number of strangers in Lime-street ward 31.

In Cornhill ward 28.

In Dowgate ward 166.

In Farringdon ward without 176. Within 81.

In S. Martins le Grand 269.

Among these, Peter Banks and Ursin, ministers of the French church; and Olyver Rowland and Bustein, mini-

ANNO 1607. sters of the French church; and Nove Banet, Frenchman, minister.

In the liberty of S. Katharine's 425. Whereof

Dutch	328	Danes	8
French	69	Scots	12
Spaniards	2	Poles	5
Italian	1		

6 The whole number of strangers, as well denisons as not denisons, dwelling and remaining within the exempt jurisdiction and liberties adjoining to the city, together with the city of Westminster, 2598. Whereof

Dutch	1937	Danes	9
French	552	Polonians	5
Scots	41	German	1
Spaniards	24	Barbarian	1
Italians	28		

Whereof of the English church	835
Of the Dutch church	510
Of which number the denisons were	415
Of the French church	81
Of the Italian church	29
Of no church	423

The whole number of strangers, as well within the city of London, as within the exempt liberties, and places aforesaid, near adjoining to the same, was 6704. Whereof

Dutch persons	5225	Portugueze	22
French	1119	Danes	10
Venetians and Italians	83	Florentines	19
Spaniards	95	Janwayes	8
Germans	22	Neapolitans	2
Polonians	10	Scots	88

Whereof of the English church	1815
Of the Dutch church	1910
Of the French church	1810
Of the Italian church	161
Of no church	1008

		ANNO 1607.
Of which number of strangers, there are denisons -	880	

The numbers of houses pestered within the said city and liberties is 37. The number aforesaid is besides the Spaniards in Bridewell, and all others that are in any other prisons.

Number II.

A proclamation against retainers.

THE queen's majesty understanding as well by her own careful observation of her policy, as by report of such as have the administration of justice in her realm, how universally the unleeful the retaining of multitudes of unordinary servants by liveries, badges, and other ensigns and tokens, contrary to the good and ancient statutes and laws of this realm, doth manifestly withdraw from her majesty's crown the due services of her officers, tenants, and subjects, and doth plainly hinder justice, and disorder the good policy of the realm by maintenance of unleeful suits and titles, and by stirring up and nourishing of factions, riots, and unleeful assemblies, the mothers of rebellion; besides such other great inconveniences, that already are seen, and more likely daily to follow, if speedy remedy be not provided for this purpose: Anno 1571. Evil of retaining.

Is moved with a most earnest intention to procure a most speedy remedy thereof: and because her majesty in present is rather to have generally her laws duely observed, and the debates quietly reformed, than the great forfeitures to be levied, which are due to her majesty, and might greatly by justice enrich her treasure, especially by the execution of the said laws, as well by the persons that have and do unleefully retain others, as also by them that are unleefully retained against the laws: therefore her majesty, of her special grace, doth by this her proclamation notify to all persons, of what state or degree soever the same be, who shall, after the 20th day of February next following, unleefully retain, or be retained, in any service by livery, badge, A day appointed to redress.

ANNO 1571. or other token, contrary to the statutes and laws of this realm therefore provided, the same shall not have a manner of favour or grace of her majesty for any such offence committed against the said laws, before nor after the said 20th of February. And contrariwise, whosoever shall upon this admonition forbear to offend herein from and after the said 20th of February next, shall not be in any wise impeached at her majesty's suit, nor shall forfeit any thing to her majesty for the same. And so her majesty's pleasure is, that all her justices and officers before whom any such suit is or shall be commenced for any offence committed or to be committed before the said 20th of February, to have regard to these her majesty's gracious dispensations.

And for the better execution of the laws and statutes remaining in force against such unleeful retainers, her majesty chargeth all manner of her justices and officers, to whom the execution of the same is prescribed, to cause in-
Inquisition. quisition, or examination, according to the said laws, to be made in all places of the realm immediately, or as soon as conveniently they may, after the said 20th day of February. And that all justices of assize, and gaol-deliveries, as well in towns corporate and franchises, as in any counties, shall at their next sessions have due regard, by good examina-
8 tion and trial, that no person be empanelled in any jury before them that is unleefully retained without due reformation, and punishment of the same, for the better example thereof in their open sessions.

And further, they shall cause a sufficient new jury to be charged at the same sessions diligently to that only purpose, to inquire of the points and articles of all the statutes being in force; and especially of the statute made in the third year of her majesty's noble grandfather, king Henry the Seventh, against unleeful retainers; and give also some order, that (as the truth may be therein understande) some good evidence may be given to the said jury in that behalf.
Sessions. And that also other things by the care of the said justices may be done, both at their next sessions, and at all other their sessions following; whereby the inconveniences above

mentioned may be the more speedily reformed, and the laws in this behalf hereafter better kept, &c. ANNO 1571.

She willed, that her justices of assize, after their next sessions, at some convenient time, make report to her of their doings, and of their opinions, for the better [redressing] hereof, as cause shall require: and

Further, she charged all manner of persons unleefully retained by liveries, badges, or by any other compact, who shall require to be discharged for any offence punished before the said 20th of February, that they shall before the said 20th day discharge their said servants, so unleefully retained, of their services, in respect of the danger of the law, and thereupon the servants shall accept the same discharge, and shall cease to wear the badges or other tokens whereby they were accustomed to be retained: upon pain, that if the said servants shall continue to be retained unleefully .....they shall not in any wise be forborne from punishment for their default, committed against the law, before the said 20th day, &c. Servants retained.

Given at her palace of Westminster, the 3d day of January 1571, in the 14th year of her reign.

Number III.

Minutes of a letter from the privy-council to the queen's officers at Chester, to stop all ships immediately, May 1571, upon apprehension of some treacherous or seditious persons passing that way.

AFTER our commendations; you shall immediately upon the receipt hereof give strait order, and see to it yourselves, that if any ship or craier shall come into your haven, although it be in pretence of merchandise, ye shall take the sails and tackling thereof into your custody, and not suffer it to depart, having aboard any other person than merchant or person known to you, and for whom ye will answer at your peril. And the same charge ye shall give to all ships and vessels which be with you already in the haven or creek of your jurisdiction; lest peradventure

ANNO 1571. some treacherous or seditious persons should, as it is thought, to the danger of the queen's majesty, and trouble of the realm, by any colour pass by you.

Wherefore fail you not, as true subjects, to have an eye to the same, as ye will answer, not unwarned. Fare ye well. From Westminster, the 17th of May, 1571.

Your loving friends,

N. Bacon,	R. Leycester,	F. Bedford,
E. Clynton,	W. Burghley,	F. Knowley,
		T. Smyth.

Postscript. This order ye must carefully observe, till you be otherwise directed by us.

To our loving friends the mayor of West-Chester, the customer and comptroller there, and to every of them.

The reason of the former letter was the apprehension of some imminent danger to the queen and kingdom, from advertisements of money privately conveyed from Scotland by the pope and Spain to the Scots queen. See Annals, vol. ii. chap. v. ann. 1571.

Number IV.

Upon the massacre at Paris, protestants fly into England: whereof a brief account was sent up, of those that fled to Rye from Roan and Diep.

Anno 1572. SOON after that massacre, came over from Roan and Diep to Rye 641 persons, men, women, and children: families 85. They came over at several times in the months of August and September, and some few in October: but some few came over in August, somewhat before the massacre. [Perhaps having some inkling or intelligence of it.]

Besides, in the beginning of November, the 4th, 7th, and 9th days, 58 persons more: most of them for religion: several, monsieur de Vidam's of Chartres servants.

The view was taken of these French and other strangers, within this town of Rye, by the appointment of Henry Seymer, mayor of the same town, and the jurats there.

And John Donning, custos of Rye, sent up the catalogue, Nov. the 22d, to the lord treasurer, according to order sent to him. ANNO 1572.

In this catalogue are the names of divers, entitled ministers, clerks, schoolmasters, many merchants, mariners, and of all trades, and some gentlemen; with their children, wives, and servants.

Number V.

The chaplains and fellows of the Savoy to the lord Burghley, lord treasurer, to help them in the miserable condition of their hospital; and that Mr. James of Oxford might be appointed by the queen to be their master. 1573.

WE, the poor chaplains and fellows of the queen's majesty's hospital of the Savoy, do humbly pray your honour to help us in this our so great need. We will not recite the miserable state of this our poor, decayed, and indebted house, which is happened unto us by the misgovernment and disorder by the late deprived master Thurland, for that we think ye are not ignorant thereof: sithence which deprivation, for want of a master, divers of our tenants withhold from us, and deny to pay our rents; they make waste and spoil our woods, and do commit other forfeitures; so that thereby we shall shortly want wherewith to provide sustenance, either for the poor or for ourselves, or any not able to redress any wrongs that do oppress us. Anno 1573.

May it therefore please your good lordship, there is one Mr. James, B.D. and reader of the divinity lecture in Oxon: his living, learning, and zeal in religion is so well known, that the same needs not our commendation. His wisdom and policy in restoring and bringing to happy quietness the late wasted, spoiled, and indebted University college in Oxon, whereof he is now master, doth not only give us hopes of great good that he shall be able to do us, but also do make us the more bold humbly to pray your honour to be the means, that her majesty may be moved for the said

ANNO 1573. Mr. James that he may be our master. The which if it shall please her highness to grant, we, with the poor of this house, shall be most happy; and will not forget, as our most bounden duty is, to pray for her long and prosperous reign, and for the continuance and preservation of your honour, with increase of the same.

Your honour's most humble orators,
Your poor chaplains and fellows of the Savoy,
William Neale, John Hodgeson,
John Parke, Tho. Chambers.

11

Number VI.

To which address of the fellows may be added a more particular relation of the state of the Savoy, as represented Nov. 29, 1575, *bearing this title:* A brief declaration of the state of the hospital of the Savoy, as it was found by her majesty's visitors, anno Dom. 1570.

Anno 1575. WHEREAS upon complaint made to the queen's majesty of the manifold disorders, spoils, and dilapidations of the said hospital, committed briefly by Thomas Thurland, late master there, he was, by her highness's visitors thereunto appointed, upon due proof, found culpable, and deprived from his office of master there, the said visitors, before his deprivation, caused an inventory to be taken of all his moveable goods remaining at that time in the said hospital, as well of that which appertained to his household, as of the beds and furniture there appertaining to the [poor] that are daily lodged there: and the same forthwith, upon the said master's deprivation, was committed to William Nele and John Hodgeson, two of the perpetual chaplains there during the vacation of the said mastership, and have had the governance of the said house, and the receipt of lands thereof, ever sithence, until the said Thurland was, by the queen's majesty's clemency, restored to the said office again.

Which said Nele and Hodgeson, being now dead, did

yearly, during their lives, make account of their office to the auditor of the said house: by whose books the states of the same are to be understood and known. ANNO 1575.

And as touching the state of the lands and revenues of the said house at that time of the deprivation of the said Thurland, presented and found before the said visitors, that the said Tho. Thurland, the space of eleven years together, continued master, and received the whole revenues of the said house, and kept the statutes of the same from the perpetual chaplains, and gat into his hands the common seal, and kept it to his own private use, contrary to the statutes; and therewithal, of his own private authority, made and granted divers unprofitable leases of the lands of the said hospital for excessive number of years, as for 30, 40, 50, 60, 80, and above, the certainty whereof cannot yet be known: and namely, made one lease to Mr. Fanshaw of the manor of Dengey, for 600 years; another to one Mr. Anderton, of lands in Yorkshire and Lancashire, for 1000 years: and now of late it is declared, that the said Anderton had no lease, but a plain sale thereof. Mr. Fanshaw. Mr. Anderton.

Also, that the said Thurland, being fallen into great debts for his own private affairs, bound the said hospital under the common seal aforesaid for payment of his own private debts, and with the revenues of the said house paid them; and did suffer certain extents to be served forth upon the said lands for his own debts. 12

So that by one way and other the said hospital is charged for his private debts, as by the auditor's book appeareth, which he shewed to the visitors, to the sum of I^M.IX^C.XXXVIII*l.* XVI*s.* VIII*d.* 1938*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.*

Item, He sold away of his own head the fee-simple of a house and land at Mile-end, of the yearly value of v*l.*; converting the money thereof to his own private use. 100*l.*

Also, he bound the hospital, by their common seal, to pay lx*l.* for advowson of the benefice of Denbigh; and hath sold the same again to his own use. 60*l.*

Also, he sold away the jewels, copes, vestments, and other ornaments of the said hospital: also a chalice with a

ANNO 1575. cover, double gilt: also very fair plates, given to the said house by Mr. Feckenham, then dean of Paul's; for which the hospital is bound yearly to pay XLs. to the petty canons of Powles for evermore.

The visitors.

Edmund bishop of London; Gabriel Goodman, dean of Westminster; Tho. Huycke, LL.D.; Will. Constantine, LL.D., surrogate, deputed by Tho. Watts, S.T.D., archdeacon of Middlesex: together with Matthew archbishop of Canterbury; sir Will. Cecill, principal secretary; sir Ralph Sadleir, chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster; and divers others.

By these he was solemnly deprived, for the devastation and dilapidation, and great wrong done to the hospital, in a formal writing, dated the 29th of July, 1570.

Number VII.

But by Thurland's petition to the queen, and her clemency, he was (as it seems) admitted again to be master of the Savoy, ann. 1574, *subscribing to certain rules and orders for the governing of the said hospital: together with his oath for performance.*

I, THOMAS THURLAND, do faithfully promise, that I shall, to the utmost of my power, hereafter, at all times, well and truly observe and perform all and singular the rules and orders before written, and by me subscribed, and the contents of every of them; and shall continually from henceforth demean and conform myself according to the same.

Th. Thurland.

And further, I do here, taking a corporal oath upon the holy evangelists, swear by the contents of the same, that if I shall hereafter at any time, contrary to my said profession, offend in not observing and performing the said rules

and orders, and any the contents of every of them, according to the true meaning, I shall account myself no master of that hospital of the Savoy; neither shall receive or take any profit or commodity thereof; neither make any claim or demand to any thing by any right, title, or colour thereof; but shall alway after, from time to time, yield myself to be deprived, destituted, and by all ways and means to be verily for ever removed from the said mastership, and all the rights and pertinences thereof, and my claim, title, and interest thereto, by any that shall be authorized, deputed, or appointed to proceed therein: and that no appeal or contradiction touching any proceeding therein to be had shall be by me had, or used, to impeach, let, or by any means to delay the same, or any execution thereof to be made. ANNO 1575.

Number VIII.

Dr. Whitgift, master of Trinity college in Cambridge, and the senior fellows, to the lord Burghley; in behalf of one of their society: he and the lord Bacon being their only patrons.

Honoratiss. dno. dno. Gulielmo Cecillio dno. Burghleio, summo totius Angliæ thesaurario, et almæ universitatis Cantabrig. cancellario dignissimo: anno 1573.

QUANTAM et quam certam spem bonitatis et clementiæ tuæ erga nos semper concepimus, (honoratissime domine,) speramus quidem longa ulla attestatione aut argumentis pluribus quibus id tibi concmur ostendere, etiamnum non egere. Quoniam in omnibus causis et sæpius emersuris de jure controversiis nostris tanquam patrono atque advocato singulari nostro uteremur præter te et honoratissimum tibique amicissimum dom. Nicolaum Baconem elegimus fere neminem. Qua de re veremur certe ne nimis cum benevolentiæ isti tuæ singulari erga nos, tum clementiæ erga omnes interdum importuni fuerimus. Non enim unquam veriti, ne arbitrere nos aut acceptorum beneficiorum multitudine Anno 1573.

ANNO 1573. placatos, aut saltem satiatos magnitudine aliquando esse oportere. Effecit enim toties illa in maximis gravissimisque negotiis nostris testata animi tui voluntas, ut non modo de nobis in posterum valde solliciti, sed etiam pro aliis interdum amplitudinem tuam audeamus interpellare.

Quanquam revera (honoratissime domine) alienum recte illum non dixerimus, atque nunc intercedimus, sed unum e nobis, cui si in ea petitione quam habet ad dominationem tuam quicquam poterimus prodesse, libentissime sane hanc operam nostram ei impendimus. Quæ sit aut ratio petitione ejus (speramus sane fere æquissimam) tute ex ipso melius cognosces. Ille vero in eadem si nostra gratia senserit se quicquam profecisse, nos quidem non modo illi congratula-
14 bimur (utpote quem indignum vel majori hoc nostro officio non judicamus) sed et tuo etiam honori deinceps, cum tantas gratias agemus, tum tali ac tanta præterea observantiæ nostræ memoria prosequemur, ut facillime intelligas, cum hunc unum contubernalem nostrum hoc uno beneficio affeceris, te apud nos omnes alumnos tuos, gratissimos sane homines, maximum beneficium reposuisse. Deus Optimus Maximus Amplitudinem tuam in diuturna fælicitate nobis reique publicæ incolumem tueatur.

Honori, virtutique tuæ deditissimi,

Johannes Whitgift.

Nicolaus Browne, Osmundus David,
Joannes Cooke, Jacobus Bill,
Lucas Gilpin, Guilielmus Redman,
Guilielmus Farrand, Johannes Handson.

Cantabrigiæ, tertio calendas Julii, 1573.

Number IX.

Dr. Gabriel Goodman, dean of Westminster, to the lord treasurer, ann. 1577. *for Westminster college; there being then thoughts of reforming some things therein.*

Sir,

Anno 1577. MY duty most humbly remembered; I am bold to send

unto your honour a brief declaration of the orders used in the college by Dr. Bill and me, since the last election. May it please you to confer the same with the statutes, to consider thereof, as you shall think good. I pray God that may be done which may be to God's glory, the queen's honour, and the good example of the church. I could wish a convenient residence of both dean and prebendaries: first, that every one might sometimes preach in their persons; 2. that one may be present in the church to pray, as our most bounden duty is, for her majesty, being our founder; 3. for the better order and government of the church. Unless there be daily commodity for residence, as it is at Windsor, or such like place, I fear me, which I am sorry to speak, the residence will not be so well kept. ANNO 1577.

I beseech your honour 'that there may be that moderation used which shall be most convenient for all in respect. Hitherto I and the company, I thank God, have agreed very brotherly, with great quietness, as any such company, I hope. I would be sorry, if by seeking to better things, dissension should grow to unquietness. My special trust is in God, that as he hath provided her majesty with motherly care for the church, and your honour with godly zeal to virtue and learning, so he will work some good effect of this travail. Thus, with my continual prayer for you and all yours, I humbly take my leave.....From Westminster college, this 14th of November, 1577.

Your honour's most bound,
Gabriel Goodman.

See another account of the state of this college and the prebendaries in the year 1586, *given by Dr. Goodman, the dean, in the Annals,* vol. iii. *Appendix to the second book,* num. 10. p. 149.

ANNO 1580.

Number X.

Mr. Robert Bertie to the lord Burghley, lord treasurer, 1580: concerning his son Peregrine's title of lord Willoughby, and right thereto by his mother, the duchess of Suffolk.

Pleaseth it your lordship,

FOR that yesternight, in return from your lordship, I found Mr. Clarencieux unable to maintain his assertion of grace, fearing the same may have more credit with you than he deserveth, I am bold to impart to your lordship two of many reasons, why I rendered to him again his opinion. The first is, that I am able to prove by many examples, but namely, in this house, that Rich. Wells, immediately upon the death of the lord Robert Wells, used the style of lord Willoughby in the right of his wife, as a thing lawful, without scruple, or other mediation. Also it cannot be denied, in the question between Reginald lord Grey of Ruthen, and Edward Hastings, for the style and arms of lord Hastings, but that the judgment given with the lord Grey, claiming from the woman, sufficed, without any other special grace: for what is done by law is intended done by the prince's will and commandment.

William, Conqueror, used none other creation than by donation of *baroness*, and to *dame*, not only temporal but ecclesiastical persons, (otherwise incapable,) without any other ceremony, transmitted the dignity to their heirs and successors (which the abbots held in the right of their abbeys) as tenant by courtesy in right of his wife. Neither is there any use of petition in such cases in Flanders, Brabant, Spain, or France, whose apes we are in customs of chivalry; having besides a more special privilege by the courtesy of England. But this much is to be confessed, that in Mr. Wymbishe's case, examined before king Henry VIII., bishop Gardiner, and the two chief justices present, and Garter that then was, affirming, that by ancient custom every husband must use the style of his wife's dignity of inheritance, it was then concluded, that from thenceforth none

should so do without special grace, unless he have issue by his wife; in which case the law yieldeth him a special grace to enjoy the barony for term of his life, and the dignity, as incident to the same. There is no good subject that gladly would enjoy any thing contrary to the good grace of the prince: livery seems a kind of grace, yet such as by law the prince is to yield to the subject. ANNO 1580. 16

For my part, I value nothing comparable to her majesty's favour: and so I end; most humbly beseeching your lordship to pardon my earnestness in defence of my son's inheritance.

Your lordship's humbly at command,

R. Bertie.

Number XI.

To which letter may be added one to the same lord from Peregrine Bertie, son and heir of the abovesaid Robert; claiming the title of lord Willoughby, March 1575. *a man well known in the queen's reign for his courage, and valour, and wit. Writ March* — 1575. *Who was now going into Lincolnshire, to his estate there.*

My lord,

..... I WOULD more gladly have come myself to have done this my duty to your lordship, than to send my letters, being bound so many ways to honour you[a], but that the earl of Kent and his servants offer so many occasions of quarrel, with their contumelious speeches and behaviours, as with much pain I refrain my servants from seeking revenge. Of the earl's choler, uttered to myself and the duchess [of Suffolk, his mother,] at our last meeting, I suppose report is made to your lordship by my lord chief justice. I contained, to wear out my lord's malice with patience; but if that we fail in, I must prepare a rough wedge for a rough knot: for I cannot perceive, (beside your lordship and another,) that many others have regard to small fire-sparks, until they grow out into dangerous flames. The

[a] He was bred up under this lord, who was master of the wards and liveries.

ANNO 1580. Almighty God be your director and protector.....The 3d of March, 1575.

Your lordship's assured and humble at command,

P. Bertie.

17 Number XII.

A letter of sir Walter Raleigh to the lord treasurer, ann. 1583. concerning the earl of Oxford, under a cloud at court; for whom he had spoken favourably to the queen; being desired so to do by the said lord, whose beloved daughter Anne that earl had married. Occasioned by some quarrel between the earl and some other noblemen.

Anno 1583. THE evening after the receipt of your lordship's letter, I spake with her majesty; and ministering some occasion touching the earl of Oxford, I told her majesty how grievously your lordship received her late discomfortable answer. Her majesty, as your lordship had written, (I know not, lately and strangely persuaded,) purposed to have no repetition between the lord Howard, Arundel, and others, and the earl; and said, it was a matter not so slightly to be passed over. I answered, that being assured her majesty would never permit any thing to be prosecuted to the earl's danger, if any such possibly; and therefore it were to small purpose, after so long absence and so many disgraces, to call his honour and name again in question: whereby he might appear the less fit either for her favour or presence. In conclusion, her majesty confessed, that she meant it only thereby to give the earl warning; and that, as it seemed to me, being acquainted with his offences, her grace might seem the more in remitting the revenge or punishment of the same.

I delivered her your lordship's letter: and what I said further, how honourable and profitable it were for her majesty to have regard of your lordship's health and quiet, I refer to the witness of God, and good report of her high-

ness: and the more to witness how desirous I am of your lordship's favour and good opinion, I am content for your sake to lay the serpent before the fire, as much as in me lieth, that, having recovered strength, myself may be most in danger of his poison and sting. For answer, her majesty would give me no other, but that she would satisfy your lordship; of whom she ever had, and would ever have special regard. Thus being unfeignedly willing to deserve your lordship's good favour, I humbly take my leave. Greenwich, this present Friday, May 12, 1583. ANNO 1583.

Your lordship's most willing to be commanded,

W. Rauley.

Number XIII. 18

Francis Bacon, son to sir Nicolas Bacon, lord keeper, his letter, written in the year 1580, *to the lord treasurer Burghley, who had recommended him to the queen's favour for some place under her; and her majesty's gracious answer in that behalf.*

This F. B. was sir Francis Bacon, after lord Verulam, viscount St. Albans, and lord chancellor of England.

My singular good lord,

YOUR lordship's comfortable relation of her majesties gracious opinion and meaning towards me, though at that tyme your leisure gave me not leave to shewe howe I was affected therewith, yet uppon everie representation thereof it entreth and striketh so much more deeplie into me, as both my nature and dutie presseth me to return some speache of thankfulness. It must be an exceeding comfort and encoradgment unto me, setting fourth and putting my self in waye towards her majesties service, to enconter with an example so private and domestical of her majesties gracious goodness and benignitie being made good, and verefied in my father so farr fourth as it extendeth unto his posteritie, accepting them as amended by his service during the nonage, as I may term it, of their own desartes. I, for Anno 1580.

ANNO 1580. my part, am well content that I take least part either of his abilities of mind, or of his worldlie advancement, both which he held and received, the one of the gift of God immediate, the other of her majesties gifte. In the loyall and earnest affection which he bare to her majesties service, I trust my portion shall not be with the least, nor in proportion to my youngest birthe: for methinks his president should be a silent charge uppon his blessing unto us all in our degrees to follow him afarr off, and to dedicate unto her majesties service both the use and spending of our lyves. True it is, that I must nedes acknowledg myself prepared and furnished thereunto with nothing but a multitude of lacks and imperfections. But calling to mind how diverslie, and in what particular providence God hath declared himself to tender the estate of her majesties affairs, I conceive and gather hope, that those whom he hath in a manner prest for her majesties service, by working and imprinting in them a single and zelous mynde to bestowe their daies therein, he will see them accordinglie appointed of sufficiencie convenient for the rank and standing where they shall be employed; so as, under this her majesties blessing, I trust to receive a longer allowance of God's graces. As I may hope for that, so I can assure and promise for my endeavour, that it shall not be in fault, but what diligence can intitle me unto, that I doubt not to recover. And now seeing it hath pleased her majestie to take knowledge of this my mynde, and to vouchsafe to appropriate me unto her service, preventing any desart of myne with her princelie liberalitie; first, I am humblie to beseach your lordship, to present to her majestie my more than most humble thanks therefore, and withall having regard to myne owne unworthiness to receive such favour, and in the small pos-
19 sibilitie in me to satisfie and answear what her majestie conceiveth, I am moved to become a most humble suitor unto her majestie, that this benefit also may be affixed to the other, which is, that if there appear not in me suche towardnes of service, as it may be her majestie doth beninglie value me and assesse me at, by reason of my sundrie

wantes, and the disadvantage of my nature, being unapt to laye fourth the simple store of these inferior giftes, which God hath allotted unto me, most to vieu, yet that it would please her excellent majestie not to accomt my thankfulness lesse, for that my disabilitie is great to shew it, but to susteyne me in her majesties gracious opinion, wheruppon I onlie rest, and not uppon expectation of anie desart to procede from myself towards the entertainment therof. But if it shall please God to send fourthe an occasion wherbie my thankful affection may be tried, I trust I shall save no labor for ever making more protestation of it after. In the mean tyme, howsoever it be not made known to her majestie, yet God knoweth it through the daily solicitations wherwith I address myself unto him in unfained prayer for the multiplying of her majesties prosperities. To your lordship, whose recommendation I know right well hath been material to advaunce her majesties good opynion of me, I can be but a bounden servant. So much can I safely promise and purpose to be, seing publick and private bands varie not, but that my service to God, her majestie, and your lordship drawe in a lyne. I wishe therefore to shew it with as good proofe as I said it with good faith. From G. this 18th of Oct. 1580.

ANNO 1580.

Your most dutiful and bounden nephew,

Fran. Bacon.

Number XIV.

The bishop of Ross's letter to Mary queen of Scots, abbreviated in the Annals, vol. iii. *thus went on at large, being the continuation of it.*

Anno 1583.

"WHEREFORE, although I do not see why we should Pag. 164.
" hope, if we weigh all things in a human balance, yet when
" I turn my mind and thought to God, I am induced to
" think there is no cause why we should entertain despair
" of very great good notwithstanding to befall the state,
" who cheerfully bear all things for God's sake and yours;

ANNO 1583. " or that you, most serene queen, should sink under those " greatest evils: for the same God that had delivered David " from the most grievous vexations of Saul, and Manasses, " almost destroyed with the filthiness of a prison, and the " apostle St. Paul, exposed to the most raging fury of Nero, " like a lion, can restore you also to the state, and the state " to you, and the church, and great liberty in the church, " and the greatest pleasure in the greatest liberty. For why " should you be discouraged, and broken in your mind? " Did not the same God restore to liberty Malcolme, Ro- " bert, and David Bruce, your great-grandfather James, " [*tritavum tuum*,] and others your ancestors, kept in strait " prison in England, and bestowed on them more ample " honours than they had before?

20 " Go on therefore courageously, most pious queen, and " hope for better things, more peaceable, more ample, by " their examples.....Almighty God, being so often en- " treated by the prayers of many in the humility of their " hearts, will snatch you out of these dangers, and adorn you " with far greatest honours; will set before you a most " ample reward of these your labours and cares; will in- " crease the sweetness of your liberty; will enlarge the " borders of your kingdom; and, lastly, will never leave off " to be a father to you, if you will continue to be a daugh- " ter to him....."

Then he exhorted her to perseverance. " Therefore se- " riously and constantly ever do that which with the great- " est praise you now do; as I have very often conferred " with you, both absent by letter, and present by word of " mouth. To which purpose, when I thought the reading " of history would be of great moment, I sent to you the " history of the affairs of former kings, which none before " had touched, writ in English, when I was sent ambassador " to England. But when the calamities of our time had ex- " cluded me from the public offices of the state, I was un- " willing in this my leisure to lie idle, and no profit from " my labour might seem to flow to our commonweal: " wherefore, lest this my leisure should be thought to pe-

" rish without any profit to the state, I have not only put ANNO
" into Latin what I hastily wrote in English, but have 1583.
" more straitly digested, for the benefit of our people,
" the whole history of the age past into one volume: which
" on that account I now send to you; that thence you may
" select examples, whereby you may more and more inflame
" yourself to the studies of piety and religion; and the vir-
" tues, wherein you much flourish, you may admire in
" others your ancestors, and love in yourself: that profit
" also may flow from this our labour, that he, your son, a
" prince of the best hope and parts, (which we humbly, in
" our daily prayers, beg of God may be safe to our state,
" and salutary to the church of Christ,) may draw hence
" most remarkable examples of vices for him to shun, and
" of virtues for him to follow." He exhorted her, "that
" since she could not do the office of a parent to him, not be-
" ing present with him, she should procure diligently that
" he would walk according to the steps of his parents in his
" studies of religion and virtue; and stir him by letters and
" writing, if he were slack; and if he ran, to excite him
" more and more."

Number XV.

A letter of Edwin Sandys, archbishop of York, May 22, 1586, to the lord treasurer, lord Burghley: justifying himself against certain accusations made against him, and complained of to the queen by the dean of York, for leasing out the church lands by reversion; which had brought him up to court to vindicate himself. Anno 1586.

MY honourable good lord. The dean spitteth out his venom still, and hath used means to infect the very court. There is no end of his malice. He hath by his patron made her majesty to be informed, that before the lords were appointed to hear our cause, there was no more matter but my yea and his nay; neither had he said any thing in the consistory which was not convenient and al- 21

ANNO 1586. lowable, neither could any thing be proved against him. How true this is, your lordship and others appointed for that cause can well tell: to whose report in that behalf I refer me.

Further, her majesty is informed, that I have given divers leases unto my children in reversion, and no fine reserved thereof unto the use of the church. This as impudent. For I hold no land of the church; neither ever had the church any thing of the bishopric of York for the use thereof. In truth, they have the church lands, and should keep a stop in their common chest for the defence thereof: but the overplus of the revenue they put not in that treasy chest for the church, but, like good fellows, divide it among themselves; and that is the cause of their protestation, that I may not see into their reckonings in my visitations. There was, not many years since, 200*l.* in their chest, for the use of their church: but my lord president's men brake in, and robbed St. Peter of every penny; and yet they escaped punishment, although it was burglary. But to avoid the like, they put it in their private purses, and buy land with it for themselves, which can hardly be robbed from them.

I grant that I gave (as I lawfully might) to my six sons, every one two leases in reversion: for the confirmation whereof, the dean and chapter had of me for every lease 4*l.*; in the whole 48*l.* I am bound in conscience to take care of my family. I have no land to leave them, as the dean hath a great deal: and as fit for me to bestow these upon my children, who, I trust, shall not be found unworthy of such help, as upon my servants, or strangers. The bishopric loseth nothing by it; neither is it a whit in worse case. This complaint smelleth of mere malice towards me and mine. The dean will not remember, how that my predecessor, within two months that he was translated to Canterbury, gave unto his kinsmen and servants, and for round sums of money to himself, six score leases and patents; and even then when they were thought not to be good in law: and the dean and chapter confirmed four-

score of them, and that without stop or mislike; and that, I suppose, *gratis*. He might do any thing; and you see my case, I may do nothing, but it shall be complained of even unto her majesty. ANNO 1586.

A third thing I was charged withal, that I would needs give the patent of the *chancellorship* to a boy of nine years of age. O! *os impudens!* My lord, I have a son at Oxford, a master of arts, of three or four years standing; and the dean himself will confess, that he is well learned; and hath been a student in the law, as I take it, now two years, and will in one year following be fit to proceed doctor. I must confess, that having nothing else to leave him, I was content to bestow this upon him; and drawn thereunto by my learned and wise friends. It was he who made report unto your lordship of sir Robert Stapleton's frivolous submission. Your lordship then liked well of him; and since, he hath profited in learning with the best. He is almost 25 years of age, and a great deal elder in discretion, so- 22
briety, and learning: yet I was content that a doctor of laws should execute the office two years next to come, even such a man as the dean liketh right well of. My last secretary, Simon Hill, had an office of the registership of the official, and my eldest son was joined with him in it, who hath supervived him. He would surrender his interest to two of his brethren, which have nothing to live on: the one, being at Cambridge, of 19 years of age, a good student; the other, a scholar in the grammar-school at York, of 13 years of age; both in law capable of such a petty office: and no other cause why the dean denieth to confirm them, but that they are my children. Seeing he denieth to confirm them, neither do I urge him unto it: what cause hath he to complain of me?

The lord president [of the north] told the queen, that he [the dean] would justify himself: and so doubtless he will, if he may be heard, and believed. He is a man that hath no great regard what he saith, nor what he sweareth. For nothing is so manifestly true, which he will not deny with these most untrue tales. Some had so wrought with

ANNO 1866.

her majesty, that hardly I could have access: the way, by many means, was stopped belike by some lady. All this cunning dealing her majesty accepted well from me; gave me good leave to answer these reports, still remaining most gracious towards me: saying, that if she heard any thing of me, she would make my best friend, my lord treasurer, acquainted with it; and so with good favour gave me leave to return to my charge, and prayed God to send me a good journey.

He that durst do this when I was present, what dare he not do when I am absent? Now my chief refuge must be unto your lordship: as you have ever stand with me in my just causes, so do I know that you will not leave me in this. I shall humbly and most heartily pray you to declare unto her majesty, how the matter fell out, and in what sort I proved the speech uttered by the dean in the consistory: as also let her majesty understand, how untrue these his accusations be. His speech, testified, I send unto you by Dr. Aubrey. I trust your lordships will not send him home to triumph over me: for you know what wrong he hath done me; ever an enemy, ever since the first time I knew him. Marry, set on, and well holden up, and made the very instrument, by crossing all my proceedings, to deface me. Other things that I charged him withal may be easily proved.

Thus am I bold to trouble your lordship with a long letter, referring me and my causes to your honourable favour and constant friendship. Even so I commend your good lordship to the good direction of God's holy Spirit. Huntingdon, this Whitsunday in the morning.

Your lordship's most bound,

E. Ebor.

The following manuscript notes are inserted in a copy of the Annals presented to the rev. Thomas Baker, (ejected fellow of St. John's, Cambridge,) by his friend, the Author, and now preserved in the library of the Dean and Chapter at Durham.

STRYPE'S ANNALS,

VOL. I. PART I.

On the blank sheet fronting the title-page.

THIS book contains several original papers, that are wanting in the common editions.

The last Appendix, rarely to be met with, I had from Mr. Strype. THO. BAKER.

See Appendix to the second volume of Annals.

Joh. Stryp Aul. Cath. art. bac. ad Baptist, 1665. Regr. Acad.

Ego Joh. Stryp, art. bac. S. Katharinæ aulæ sive coll. admittendus ad sacrum diaconatus ordinem—Subscribo (viz. Articulis) 10. Junii 1666. Joh. Stryp, Regr. Epi. Linc. So he writes his name, though afterwards Strype.

Joh'es Stryp, coll. Jes. admissus in matriculam acad. Cant. Jul. 5. a°. 1662. Regr. Acad. He was first of Jesus, as he told me.

Joh. Strype, aul. Cath. art. mag. a°. 1669. Regr. Acad.

Page xi. of preface, marg. note. Sir Edward Coke's Reports.] add p. 363, 364, &c. of the answer.

Page 8. l. 8. earl of Arundel, lord chamberlain.] Quere, whether he were not absent at the treaty at Cambray, v. p. 4. Not sent till January, p. 25. 33. hujus voluminis.

P. 11. l. 29. pretences to the crown of England.] Nam apud nos regina Scotorum, se statim pro hærede gessit, ac titulos et insignia regum Angliæ, in supellectile, et omni instrumento domestico apponenda curavit, &c. Vide Thuani Hist. sui temporis, p. 703. edit. Buckley.

P. 106. l. 25. the answerer to the English Justice,] p. 45, 46.

Ibid. l. 29. four priors, or superiors of religious convents;] with three whole convents put out of their possessions, ibid. p. 46. This book was published about the year 1584, the three elects being then dead.

P. 109. in margin. Intit. Synodal.] Melius inquirend.

P. 128. l. 25. that there were nine and nine on a side.] Res revocata est ad disputationem, ut novem ex nostris Scoræus, Coxus, Withedus, Sandus, Grindallus, Hornus, Elmer, Ghestus quidam Cantabrigiensis, et ego, cum quinque episcopis, abbate Westmon. Colo, Cheadsæo, Harpesfeldo de his rebus coram senatu colloquamur. See Jewel's letter to P. Martyr, in the third vol. of the History of the Reform. Collection, num. 47. p. 267.

P. 129. l. 2. Harpsfield.] Nicholas Harpsfield was archdeacon of Canterbury. This was John Harpsfield, as appears p. 95, who was archdeacon of London, chaplain to bishop Boner, and brother of Nich.

P. 165. l. 36. A consultation held at Greenwich, whether it were for the good of the commonwealth to grant, that the abbot of Martinego, [or Martinengo,] the pope's nuncio, should come into England.] See a note of the consultation had at Greenwich, on May-day, 1561, by the qu. majties commandment, upon a request made to her majestie by the K. of Spaines emb. that the abbot of Martinego, being a nuncio from the pope, and arriving at Bruxels, might come into the realm, with letters from the pope, and other princes, to the queen's majestie. See my MS. Collect. vol. xxxviii. p. 27. which I met with since this book was printed.

P. 199. l. 14. This Allen, the diary writer notes to have a wife and eight children. And Guest was consecrated

bishop of that see.] Edm. Allen elected bishop of Rochester, ann. 1559. Vide Antiq. Brit. Guest was first archdeacon of Canterbury, and not consecrated bishop of Rochester till at least half a year after this. So I suppose there is no mistake in Allen.

P. 201. marg. note. Int. MSS. D. Joh. D. Episc. Ely. Num. 206.] Now in the royal library, but a dry thing.

P. 273. marg. note. Art of Rhetoric by Wyls.] by Wylson.

P. 308. l. 33. the one dated March 13, 1560; the other April 18, 1561.] Vide Rymer, vol. xv. p. 607, 8.

P. 369. l. 10. Horn, bishop of Durham.] Winton.

P. 370. l. penult. as he had mentioned this matter in his Latin History, so he would leave it out in his English.] And yet it stands in the first English edition, anno 1563, whilst Yong was archbishop, and is an argument of honest Mr. Fox's integrity and impartiality.

P. 374. l. 3. from the bottom. About this year did the laborious John Fox set forth the first edition.] The first edition of Fox's Martyrology was anno 1563. Imprinted at London by John Day, dwelling over Aldersgate beneth St. Martin's, anno 1563, the 20th of March, cum gratia et priv. regiæ majestatis.

P. 404. l. 11. queen's chief almoner.] He was then master of Trinity, in Cambridge.

P. 414. l. 1. Anthony Sabryn.] Salvin.

P. 500. l. 24. to the number of thirty-three.] The names of these thirty-three see in Mr. Strype's second volume of Annals, in the additions to this first, p. 15.

P. 503. l. 28. such of the house as were against the six articles before mentioned.] The names of those that approved or not approved of these six articles; see Mr. Strype's Annals, vol. 2d, in the additions to this first volume, p. 15, with the names of absent members.

P. 512. l. 12. Johannes Calfehyll.] Or James Calfehyll, who was proctor of the clergy of London and Oxon.

P. 527. l. 19. it was printed.] Printed anno MDLXX. penes me; and again anno MDLXXI.

VOL. I. PART II.

P. 43. in the margin. He goes out Dr. of divinity.] At Cambridge, anno 1563.

P. 70. l. 2. This choice letter remaineth among Haddon's Lucubrations.] P. 210, &c. inter Haddoni Lucubrationes, and printed separately in 8vo, without date of time, or place.

P. 84. l. 5. Osorius—(being now become bishop of Sylva or Arcoburge) gave a reply to it in three books.] Hieronymi Osorii episcopi Sylvensis, in Gualterum Haddonum, &c. libri tres. *Olissipone, anno* 1567, 4to.

P. 86. marginal note. Fox continues Haddon's answer.] Printed at London by Joh. Day, 1577, 4to.

P. 168. l. 38. Near about this time, another book, proceeding from the same discontent, came forth.] May 10, 1566.

P. 169. l. 9. *Also are collected, as in a short table* [no less than] *one hundred and twenty particular corruptions.*] An hundred pointes of poperie yet remaining, which deforme the English Reformation.

Ibid. l. 13. To—Mr. Crowley, and others, that laboured to gather out the weeds of popery.] To—Mr. Crowley, and others, that laboured to roote out the weeds of popery, grace and peace.

Ibid. l. 15. Dr. Humfrey, Mr. Lever.] Mr. Humfrey, Mr. Leaver.

Ibid. l. 18. in greater rooms.] to greater roomes.

Ibid. l. 24. to strive for God's grace.] to strive for God's glory.

Ibid. l. 25. against the Romish relics and rags of popery.] against the Romish relics and rags of Antichrist.

P. 174. l. 12.] I shall end this habit-controversy at present, with the mention of a book, that, as it seems, about this time was set forth.] This book must have been published the year after, or later; for Bullinger's letter (there printed) is dated anno MDLXVI.

P. 175. l. 11. In the same volume follows a treatise, entitled, *A brief and lamentable consideration of the apparel*, &c.] This seems to have been a distinct treatise. It is not in my copy.

P. 223. last line. Adrian Saravia.] Theologiam profiteri cœpit in academia Lugdun. an. 1582. Anno autem LXXXVII. quoniam negotiis Leycestrianis sese imprudentius innexuisset, subito hinc discedens, fixis postmodum in Anglia sedibus, ibidem reliquæ istæ suæ tempus infunctione ecclesiastica exegit—Vide elogia professorum Lugdun. Signatur. A. III.

Page 241. l. 28. The duke of Norfolk——to be a papist.] In a pamphlet printed about this time, the following reasons are alledged to prove him a papist. (1.) His education of his sonne under the government of a papist. (2.) The corruption of his house, his chief men of trust bebeing papists. (3.) The confidence and reposed trust hee has in the chiefest papists in the realme. (4.) His last marriage with a papist. And lastly this pretended match; [viz. with the Scotch queen.] See the book, class 9, 14, 37. Bibl. pub. Cant. with two others.

Page 266. l. 30. write another letter of her own hand to the archbishop.] This letter, I presume, was wrote to cardinal Wolsey. See second Appendix, G.

P. 269. l. 17. And those in the Netherlands persecuted.] See Dr. Harris's History of Kent, page 63, 64.

P. 328. l. penult. and p. 329. l. 12. That in the rebellion was directed, *To the queen's poor deceived subjects of the north country, drawn into rebellion by the earls of Northumberland and Westmorland*:—which—seems to be composed by the head and pen of sir Thomas Smith.] Bibl. coll. Joh. Cant. class v. 21, 52. written by Tho. Norton. Imprinted at London, by Henrie Bynneman, for Lucas Harrison, anno Domini, 1569. Seen and allowed, &c. 12mo.

In the same volume or collection are several other little things concerning this rebellion; class v. 21, 52.

And one other pamphlet, viz. *The Pope's Bull to Dr. Harding*, wrote by Tho. Norton.

Mr. Strype had either not observed the author's name, [Tho. Norton,] or took it to be feigned, which, I think, there can be no reason for, since Tho. Norton was a noted

translater and author, and a zealous protestant. Of him see more in Mannsell's Catalogue.

One of the same name, [Tho. Norton a zealous papist,] having been taken in the northern rebellion, was executed at Tiburne, May 27, 1570. Mr. Strype might possibly suspect his the feigned name.

P. 344. l. 20. earl of Westmorland.] See a different character of this earl, given by cardinal Allen, in his Answer to English Justice, p. 48.

P. 346. l. 5. and should have assembled at Becklesworth fair.] Of a conspiracy at Harlestone fair in Norfolk, see Watch-woord, fol. 33.

Page 354. l. 21. This was done on the 17th day of November.] Of the institution of this day, viz. the 17th of November, see a sermon printed at Oxford anno 1601, and preached at Paul's in London the 17th of November, anno Domini 1599, by Thomas Holland, D. D. and regius professor at Oxford.

Ibid. l. 30. As for the pope's bull, that received a complete and learned answer by the wise and grave divine Henry Bullinger.] Anno 1570. Confutationem scripsit [viz. Bullingerus,] bullæ pontificiæ, qua regina Angliæ damnata omnesque a fide ei data liberati fuerant per papam. Liber iste in Anglia editus, atque in Anglicam etiam linguam est translatus, &c. Melch. Adams in vitâ Bullingeri, pag. 500.

Anno 1570, Scripsit [Bullingerus] Confutationem bullæ papisticæ, et defensionem orthodoxæ reginæ, et universi regni Angliæ.—Liber hic in Anglia editus, et in Anglorum etiam linguam conversus est. Semler in vita Bullingeri; fol. 42. k.

P. 376. l. 31. Sherwood.] Reuben Sherwood.

P. 399. l. 6. unto your honours.] unto your wisedomes. (Compared with a MS. in coll. Eman. which was found in Mr. Tho. Moor's study, when he was apprehended, April 13, 1582, together with Sir Thomas Moor's Life, MS. ibid.)

P. 400. l. 25. *Chalcidonense.*] Chalcidonense, MS. C.C.C.

P. 401. l. 9. Therefore to deny the sea apostolike.] Therefore to deny the authority of the sea apostolike. MS. Eman. et MS. C. C. C.

Ibid. l. 13. confessed our obedience.] professed our obedience, MS. Eman. et MS. C. C. C.

P. 402. l. 9. proposition.] *Position*, MS. Eman. and MS. C. C. C.

P. 403. l. 5. Ozias.] Ozia, MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. 20. Now it may please your honours, which of bothe these kinges examples.] Now it may please your honours to consider which of both these kinges examples, MS. coll. Eman. et C. C. C.

P. 404. l. antepenult. to receyve the very self same faithe.] to revive the very self same faith, MS. coll. Eman.

P. 406. l. 7. you may be well assured, and perswade your selves, that.] Not in MS. Eman.

Ibid. l. 12. 21st chapter.] 20. MS. Eman. 21. MS. C.C.C.

P. 407. l. 25. conscience.] poor conscience, MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. 30. so rash an example.] so rare an example, MS. coll. Eman. et coll. C. C. C.

P. 431. l. 8. realme.] Besides these speeches of Heath and Scot, and this discourse of the supremacie, there is another discourse at Bene't college, under this title: *A Discourse of certaine Romanists exhibited to the queen's councill, immediately upon queen Elizabeth's coming in: amongst which was thought Dr. Heath to be the penner of the said discourse*, MS. C. C. C. which had been worth the printing. v. MS.

Ibid. after the marginal note is added, P. 77. MS. col. Cai. Gonv. num. 1183, 119; compared with a MS. in Emanuel college, copied out in my MS. Collections, vol. xxxiii. pages 317, 318, &c.

P. 432. l. 3. Dele forth.

Ibid. l. 30. th'inhabytaunce.] th'inhabitants, MS. coll. Eman.

P. 433. l. 4. stayed religion, and allwayes forthe one, and

agreeable with itself.] stedfast religion, and alwayes one and agreable with it selfe.

P. 433. l. 6. nor allwayes forth one, nor agreeable with it selfe.] nor alwayes one, neyther agreable with it selfe. MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. 21. lofe bread.] loafe breade, MS. col. Eman.

Ibid. l. 23. every booke.] either booke.

Ibid. l. 25. not one of them.] neither of them.

Ibid. l. 31. these novelties.] these their doings, MS.

P. 436. l. 20. scotchinge.] scratching, scraching, MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. penult. vertuous chastity and straight livinge denyed.] vertuous, chaste, and straite living denyed, MS. coll. Eman.

P. 437. l. 11. in me lyethe.] in you lyethe.

Ibid. l. 23. *Catholici.*] *Catholicæ*, MS. coll. Eman.

Ibid. l. 27. your hartes.] your honors, MS.

P. 438. Add to marginal note, P. 78. MSS. coll. Caj. Gon. num. — compared with a MS. in Emanuel college. MSS. num. 74.

P. 439. l. 12. *quin de adeptis.*] *quam de acceptis.*

P. 440. l. 5. in derogation of the parliament.] in derogation of the authority of parliament.

Ibid. l. 24. practysses of the churche.] prelates of the church.

P. 441. l. 11. considerence.] conscience.

Ibid. l. 21. It is very great: for it is no money matter, but a matter of inheritaunce; yea, a matter towchinge liffe and deathe, and damnation dependethe upon it.] It is very great: for it is no money matter, nor a matter of inheritaunce; but a matter towchinge liffe and death, our health and salvation, our death and damnation dependethe upon it.

P. 443. l. 24. adornynge.] ordering.

P. 444. l. 5. additions of the fathers.] traditions of the fathers.

P. 445. l. 33. *his bones and fleshe.*] bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh.

P. 449. l. 2. under Martin.] under Marcian.

Ibid. l. 12. in the tyme of Ricaredus beinge ther.] in the tyme of Ricaredus, king there.

P. 450. l. 18. *Illicitum est enim qui non sit.*] *Illicitum est ei, qui non sit.*

Page 504. After the marginal note—Sir John Cheek.]

Ad D. Gulielmum Seisillium

——Candidus erudiit noster te Chæcus amicus,
Chæcus Cecropii gloria prima gregis—

v. Lelandi encomia de pag. 106.

P. 552. l. 2. *Sandys, bishop of London.*] Grindall, bishop of London.

P. 578. num. G.] This letter, I presume, was wrote to cardinal Wolsey; and so Dr. Fiddes placeth it in that cardinal's Life; Collect. pages 255, 6. Cranmer was hardly yet archbishop; or, if he were, the letter is in too humble a strain to be wrote to him.

VOL. II. PART I.

On the blank page at the beginning of the volume.

Of Dr. Cole, Dr. Young, Dr. [Bp.] Watson, John and Nic. Harpsfield, Dr. Feckenham, then in England, anno 1573, 4.; see MS. vol. xx. pag. 384, 385, 386, &c. Ibid, Heyward, Heywood, Dolman, p. 386; and the family of John Cawode, late printer to the queen's majestie. Ibid, p. 384; S. Thomas Fitzherbert. Ibid, p. 387; Anthony Tyrrell.

But anno 1580, Watson, late bishop, and Feckenam, late abbot, were in Wisbech castle; see lib. ii. chap. 22. pag. 640, 641, of this volume.

Anno 1579, Tho. Watson, bishop of Lincoln, in the custody of the bishop of Roff. Joh. Feckenam with the bishop of Ely, ibid. numb. xxi.

P. 5. marg. note, after R. Greenham.] R. Greenham was of Pembroke-hall, fellow of that college, died of the plague 1592. Pref. to Downham's Ser. p. 2.

Profess all substantial points of divinity, as soundly as any church in the world.] Pref. p. vi.

P. 8. after marginal note, add p. 12.

P. 322. l. 1. Besides all this, in this Bible is each chapter divided into verses.] The Bible printed in folio, anno 1568, is with distinction of verses.

P. 439. l. 23. Cumberland.] Northumberland.

P. 564. l. 22. Yet I find two anabaptists were burnt in Smithfield not long after, viz. July 22; namely, John Wielmacker and Hendrick Ter Woort.] Joh. Peeters and Henr. Turwert, apud Rymer. See the queen's commission to sir Nic. Bacon, lord keeper, and *Breve de executione judicii versus Johannem Peeters, et Henricum Turwert hæreticos combustos*, apud Rymer, tom. xv. pag. 740, 741.

P. 580. l. 25. may well deserve a place here.] A letter whearin part of the entertainment untoo the queens majesty at Killingwoorth castle, in Warwick sheer, in this soomers progress 1575. is signified: from a freend, officer attendant in the court, unto his friend, a citisen and merchaunt of London. 8vo. No date of place, or printer's name.

Ibid. l. ult. Ichingham.] Ichington.

Page 581. l. 1. within three miles of Killingworth.] within a seaven myle of Killingworth.

Ibid. l. 17. stark of countenance.] stearn of countenance.

Page 584. l. 13. *tantantia.*] *tutantia.*

P. 585. l. 24. till July 27.] This letter is dated at the citee of Worceter, the xx. of August 1575. When or where printed, is not said, but I presume, the same year.

Ibid. l. 25. While she was here.] On Munday the eyghteenth of this July.

VOL. II. PART II.

P. 65. marginal note. The prayer.] v. class S. 5, 38. Bib. coll. Jo. Cant.

P. 66. marg. note. Increase this number according to the years of her majesty's reign.] Of the rise and institution of this day, viz. 17th of November, see Dr. Holland's Sermon, printed at Oxford 1601. 4to.

P. 69. l. 9. whereby it is provided, that in every lease to be made, the third part of the rent shall be paid in corn.] In a commemoration sermon of Dr. Andr. Pern, preached by Mr. J. Clerk, fellow of Peter-house, and printed at Cambridge, anno 1655. Dr. Pern is said to have been the contriver and procurer of the statute, 18. of Eliz. to turn the third part of our rents into corn-money, &c.: see Sermon, p. 29. I think sir Tho. Smith has the fairest plea, for reasons noted elsewhere.

P. 86. l. 22. sir Anthony Cook, one of the executors of king Henry the Eighth's last will.] He is not named as an executor in Henry the Eighth's will.

P. 119. l. 17. But concerning this Caldwel.] That this John Caldwell was not the same with John Coldwell sometime bishop of Sarum, appears from the Appendix, num. 39, where this Caldwell is styled M. A. whereas Jo. Coldwell proceeded M. D. at Cambridge an. 1564.

P. 278. l. 1. done perhaps out of respect to the bishop, whose son, or relation at least, he was; (his name being Edmund Coortess.)] The bishop's son he could not be, by the bishop's standing (as fellow) of St. John's college.

P. 309. l. 1. Dr. Hatcher, of King's college in Cambridge, came on vice-chancellor this year.] This Dr. Hatcher was fellow of St. John's college, father of Tho. Hatcher of King's college, (of the year 1555;) which Tho. Hatcher was the author or collector of that Catalogue. See that Catalogue ad an. 1555.

P. 334. l. 30. keeping such a fast.] But it seems this fast was held with sermons, &c. of which see F. Parsons' Brief Discourse, under the name of J. Howlet, in the Epistle to the Queen, 1580. See John Field's Caveat for Parsons, Howlet, &c. printed anno 1581. 8vo.

P. 336. l. 33. they removed most of them to Scotland.] Quere, whether not Rhemes.

P. 337. l. 17. *two English colleges.*] Add, *the one in Rome, the other now resident in Rhemes, against certain sinister informations given up against the same. Printed at Mounts in Henault*, 1581. 8vo.

P. 358. l. 1. Among the papers I have conversed with, I find one containing his confession of the persons with whom he was entertained.] This confutes Bombinus's account in vita Campiani, cap. 44. *Falsos de se rumores, et admota iterum ac tertio tormenta superat.*

P. 377. After marginal note add, A copy of this will I have from sir H. St. George.

P. 403. l. 30. the bishop of Rosse, the Scottish queen's agent, &c.] De titulo et jure sereniss. principis Mariæ Scotorum reginæ, quo regni Angliæ successionem sibi juste vindicat, libellus, opera Jo. Leslæi Scoti. Rhemis excudebat Jo. Fognæus, 4to.

De illustrium fœminarum, in repub. administranda, ac ferendis legibus authoritate, libellus, opera Jo. Leslæi e'pi Rossensis Scoti. Rhemis excud. Jo. Fognæus, cum privilegio, 4to. Liber rarus, penes me: which Mr. Strype seems not to have seen. Inscriptus est D. Catharinæ de Medicis Gal. reginæ, &c.

P. 405. marginal note. Life of Archbishop Whitgift, b. iii. c. 19.] The Answer to E. Digby was wrote by W. Temple, then only bachelor of arts of King's college, afterwards provost of Trinity college, Dublin, a noted man; Quære. Temple has wrote against Piscator in defence of Ramus. Cantabrig. anno 1584, penes me.

P. 491. l. 21. your dearest just wife, and most vertuous princess, queen Jane.] Queen Anne, in some copies, and yet probably the same edition, but the dedication altered.

P. 547. l. penult. Mr. Caldwel.] John Coldwell, afterwards bishop of Sarum, was M. D. and proceeded at Cambridge anno 1564, viz. M. D. One John Goldwell, art. m'r Cant. 1541.

P. 619. Numb. xii.] This is printed in the preface to the last edition of Buchanan's works, anno 1725, said there to be received from Mr. Thoresby, who possibly might have it from Mr. Strype.

On the two blank sheets at the end of the book.

Anno Domini 1504, 6 Augusti, litera G.

Matthæus Parker, natus Norwici in parochia Sancti Salvatoris, et in parochia omnium Sanctorum pro Fibrig Gates enutritus et educatus in parochia sub S. Clement, juxta Fibrig.

Gulielmo patre, qui vixit ad an. D'ni 1553, et ad an. æt. suæ 48.

Alvisia matre, quæ vixit ad an. D'ni 1553, et ad an. æt. suæ 83.

Edoctus
1. In legendo, Thoma Bovis, theol. bac. rectore St. Clement, et partim Richardo Pope presbytero, (1).
2. In scribendo, Willmo. Priour, cl'ico eccl'iæ S'ti Benedicti (2).
3. In cantando, Willo. Love, presbytero, Si. Manthorp, cl'ico S. Stephani duris præceptoribus, (3).
4. In gram[a]. Will'o Neve, commodo et benevolo pædagogo, (4).

Anno 1552. 8. Septembr. circa an. æt. meæ 17. missus Cantabrigiam in coll. Corporis Christi, sub tutore Rd. Cowper, art. m'ro, sed parum docto edoctus in dialectica et physica, partim in hospitio divæ Mariæ, partim in collegio Christi, opera m'ri Banx paroch. S. Gregorii, sed sumptibus matris.

1552. Mense Martis, electus bibliotista coll. Corporis Xti.

1525. Admissus bacchal. in artibus.

1526. 22. Decemb. factus subdiaconus sub titulo Barnwelli et Sacelli in campis Norwici.

1527. 20. Aprilis, factus diaconus.

1527. 15. Junii, factus presbyter.

1527. 6. Septembr. electus in socium collegii Corp. Xti.

1527. Creatus magister in artibus.

1533. Dominica prima Adventus incœpi officium prædi-

candi (1) Grancestr, (2) Beche, (3) Eccl'ia Benedicti, (4) Madingley, et (5) Barton.

1535. 30. Martii, vocatus in aulam Annæ reginæ.

1535. 14. Julii, factus bac. theologiæ.

1535. 4. Novembr. promotus ad decanat. Stoke Clare, per Annam reginam, an. Hen. 8vi. 27.

1537. 1. Martii, vocatus ad aulam regis, et factus capellanus Hen. 8vi.

1538. 1. Julii, creatus professor theologiæ.

1542. 27. Maii, præsentatus ad rectoriam de Asben in Essex.

1542. 18. Octob. installatus 2. præbenda in ecclesia Elien. per collationem Hen. 8vi.

1544. 4. Decemb. electus in magistrum coll. Corp. Xti. l'ra commendatitia Hen. 8vi.

1544. 10. April. resignavi rectoriam de Asben.

1544. 1. Maii, præsentatus ad rectoriam de Berling, Norf.

1544. 25. Januar. primo electus ad officium vicecan. Cantab.

1545. 22. Septembr. præsentatus ad rectoriam de Landbech.

1547. 1. Aprilis deposui decanatum de Stoke, ex vi statuti parliamenti.

1548. 7. Febr. secundo electus ad officium vicecan. Cant.

1550. 1. Oct. resignavi rectoriam de Birling S. Andreæ.

1552. 1. Junii, præsentatus ad præbendam de Coringham, per illustrem principem Edwardum Sextum.

1552. 8. Junii, nominatus ad decanatum de Lincoln, per illustrem principem Edwardum Sextum.

1552. 9. Julii, installatus in præbenda prædicta.

1552. 30. Julii, electus in decanum Lincoln.

1552. 7. Octob. installatus in decanatum in propria persona.

1553. Decemb. resignavi officium magisterii coll. Corp. Xti. Laurentio Maptyd, quem ipse necessitate quadam delegeram successorem meum.

1554. 2. April. privatus præbenda mea, in eccl'ia Elien. et privatus rectoria mea de Landbech, ad quam eccl'iam

præsentandum procuravi Will'mum Whalley, canon. Lincoln. quem elegi successorem meum, et institutus fuit 30. Septemb.

1554. 21. Maii, spoliatus fui decanatu meo de Lincoln. Sic eodem die, præbenda mea de Coringh. in eadem eccl'ia ad quam præsentatus fuit Mr. Georgius Perpoynt, vi advocationis ejusdem ei concessæ, per ep'um Lincoln. Jo. Taylour.

Decanatus conferebatur Franc. Mallet, D. theol. per M. reginam.

Postea privatus vixi, ita coram Deo lætus in conscientia mea, adeoque nec pudefactus nec dejectus, ut dulcissimum otium literarum, ad quod Dei bona providentia me revocavit, multo majores et solidiores voluptates mihi pepererit, quam negotiorum illud et periculosum vivendi genus unquam placuit. Quid postea obventurum sit, nescio, sed Deo, cui cura est de omnibus, qui olim revelabit occulta cordium, meipsum totum, piamque et pudicissimam uxorem meam, cum duobus charissimis filiolis meis commendo: eundemque Deum Opt. Maximum precor, ut ita in posterum infractis animis portemus probrum Christi, quo semper meminerimus, hîc non esse nobis civitatem manentem, sed inquiramus futura, gra. et m'ia D'ni nostri Jesu Christi, cui cum Patre et Spiritu sancto sit omnis honor et imperium. Amen.

1554. 26. Octobr. anno D'ni 1554, et adhuc hoc 6. Aug. anno D'ni 1557. porto eadem conscientia suffultus, gra. et benignitate D'ni mei et Servatoris Jesu Xti. quo inspirante absolvi psalterium versum metrice lingua vulgari, et scripsi defensionem conjugii sacerdotum, contra Tho. Martin.

30. Feb. anno D'ni 1552 [forte 1555].

1552. [5] Hactenus coram Deo, ita lætus sorte mea contentus vixi, ut nec superioribus inviderem, nec inferiores despexerim, huc omnes conatus meos dirigens, ut Deo, in pura conscientia, servirem, utque nec major me despiceret, nec timeret minor.

14. Octob. anno D'ni 1556.

1556. Et adhuc lætus sorte mea contentus, testimonio concientiæ meæ in Domino confisus et fretus, verbo ejus

vivo expectans redemptionem corporis mei, per Christum Servatorem meum.

Conciones.

1534. Coram ep'o Eliensi in sua visitatione Balshamiæ.

1535. Coram d'na Elizabetha Hundeston.

1535. Coram rege Hen. 8vo. in aula, Dominica 3. in Quadrages.

1539. Coram Edvardo principe.

1540. Coram d'na Elizabetha apud Hatefield.

1548. Coram Edvardo rege in aula West. in Quadrages. D'nica 3. de evangelio.

1551. Coram illustri rege Edvardo in Quadragesima, scil't alternis diebus, Mercurii, viz. 9, 23, 25 diebus Martii, collega meo m'to Harlao, episcopo Hereford.

1559. Coram d'na Elizabetha regina bis in Quadragesima.

A°. ætat. meæ 43. } A°. D'ni 1547. 24. Junii, conju-
A°. ætat. suæ 28. } gatus sum cum Margareta, filia Roberti Hareston de Matsal in com. Norf. gentleman, quæ nata est a°. Domini 1519, l'ra Dominic. B. 23. Junii, quo anno dies Corp. Xti. fuit in Vigilia S'ti Johannis Baptistæ.

1570. Hæc Margareta uxor mihi charissima et castissima mecum vixit annos plus minus 26. et obiit christianissime 17. Aug'ti anno 1570. circa undecimam ante meridiem, et sepulta est in sacello d'ni Norf. apud Lambeth.

Ex qua suscepi filium Joh'em a°. D'ni 1548. 5. Maii, l'ra Dominic. G. mane hora sexta, qui conjugatus est cum Joanna filia ep'i Elien. 28. Januarii.

A°. D'ni 1550. 2. Aug. l'ra Dominic. D. circa horam 11am. suscepi alterum filium Matthæum, qui vita discessit 8. Januarii 1550.

A°. D'ni 1551. 1. Septemb. inter horam 2dam et 3tiam post meridiem, l'ra Dominic. D. suscepi tertium filium Matthæum, qui conjugatus est cum Francisca filia ep'i Cicestrien. 29. Decemb. a°. D'ni 1556. 12. Septr. inter 7. et 8. pomeridian. suscepi quartum filium Joseph. et decessit eodem anno.

17. Decemb. 1559. consecratus sum in archiepiscopatum Cantuar. Heu, heu, Domine Deus, in quæ tempora reservasti me. Jam veni in profundum aquarum, et tempestas demersit me. O D'ne, vim patior, responde pro me, et spiritu tuo principali confirma me, homo enim sum et exigui temporis, et minor, &c. Da mihi fidem, &c.

[Joh'es Parker natus 5. Maii 1548. duxit Joannam Cox, natam 1. April. 1551, ex qua genuit

Margaretam natam Lambethi 21. Martii 1568.
Matthæum primogenitum Cant. 19. Maii a°. 1570.
Janam nat. Lambethi 13. Martii a°. 1571.
Richard. natam Cantab. 20. Maii a°. 1577.
Jacobum nat. 20. Maii. a°. 1580.
Johannem nat. J'na Eliensi 4. Junii a°. 1589.
Elizabeth et Johanna obierunt parvuli.]

Quæ uncis includuntur, addita videntur a Johanne Parker.

This seems to be what Mr. Strype could not meet with, but quotes it from John Parker, esq. viz. *A roll of my father's birth and pedigree.* See Mr. Strype's Life of Archbp. Parker, pag. 4.

VOL. III.

On the blank sheet at the beginning of the book.

Ad annum 1588, see the king of Scots' letter, dat. Aug. 4, 1588, to queen Eliz. The queen's answere, apud Rymer, tom. xvi. p. 18. Vide Exemplar Libelli Supplicis ad Sereniss. Angliæ Reginam, dat. anno 1587, inter Epistolas Ecclesiasticas, num. iv. pag. 12, 13.

The tryal, execution, &c. of several (popish) traytors in the years 1583, 1585, 1588. See Collection of Tryals, &c. class. V. 20, 3. Bibl. Coll. Jo.

Preface, p. vii. l. 19. The reverend Mr. T. B. S. Th. B.] Thomas Baker, coll. Joh. socius eject.

P. 37. l. 31. These following to be paid within one year from the 22d of July, 1581, [the day of his death, or the day his will bore date.] Bp. Cox died Jul. 22, 1581. MS. d'ris Eden, cancellarii Elien.

Ibid. l. 34. To the poor in Downton *53l.*] Downham, I presume, where the bishop had a house.

P. 38. l. 3. of Nash, in the parish of Whaddon 10*l.*;] where he was probably born.

Ibid. l. 5. To the poor scholars of Peter-house, and of another college in the university, 5*l.* each.] Probably King's college, where he was fellow, or Jesus, where he was founder, as he was at Peter-house.

P. 68. l. 18. Lawrence Chaderton, B. D. fellow of a college there.] Fellow of Christ's college; soon after master of Emanuel.

P. 93. marg. note. add p. 45, 46.

Ibid. l. 27. *English Justice:* a book set forth by cardinal Allen.] A true, sincere, and modest defence of English catholiques that suffer for their faith, both at home and abrode: against a false, seditious, and slaunderous libel, intituled, *The Execution of Justice in England*, 8vo. [but there is no date of time or place.] From the contents of the book, it must have been printed at or after the year 1583. *The Execution of Justice*, &c. to which it is an answer, was printed 1583. 4to. It is mentioned under the year 1583.

P. 95. l. 24. *The Discovery of Campion, the Jesuit.*] and ann. 1582, *a particular Declaration of the undutifull and traiterous affection borne against her Majestie, by Edmond Campion, Jesuite*, &c. Lond. 1582. 4to. published by authoritie. Class. F. 7, 24. coll. Jo. Cant.

P. 109. l. 33. There was another edition of this book in the forty-fourth year of queen Elizabeth, 1602. revised, corrected, and enlarged.] It was revised, corrected, and enlarged, and reprinted an. D'ni 1588. 8vo.

P. 292. marginal note. A Defence against the Poison of Prophecies. By lord H. Howard.] This book was reprinted in folio an. 1620. being revised and divided into heads and chapters.

P. 296. marginal note. Execution of Justice.] Imprinted at London 1583. 4to.

P. 408. marginal note. A book called Execution of Justice.] Justitia Britannica. Londini, excudebat Tho. Vautroullerius, anno D'ni MDLXXXIIII. 8vo. which seems to be the original, and the English a translation.

P. 413. l. 19. Now to shew some account of this book; because it was highly esteemed by many, and printed first in the year 1574, in Latin, and now reprinted in English.] *A brief and plaine Declaration of Discipline* was printed this year by Rob. Waldegrave, 8vo. But the book here described is a different book, and bears a different title, viz. *A full and plaine Declaration of ecclesiasticall Discipline owt of the word of God, and off the declininge off the Church of England from the same.* Imprinted MDLXXIIII. in a black letter, 4to. and in Latin 8vo. the same year, Rupellæ.

P. 498. l. 23. which shall go about to impugn the same.] See my MSS. Collections, vol. xxix. pages 344, 345.

P. 512. l. 3. *A true and summary report of the declaration of some part of the earl of Northumberland's treason.*] Printed in ædibus C. Barker, 4to. Bibl. coll. Jo. class. F. 7. 24.

P. 513. l. 3. *The state of the English fugitives under the king of Spain.*] London, printed for John Drawater, 1595, 4to. penes me. The author probably had not seen it.

P. 537. l. 13. two earnest addresses to her, ——which cost her majesty two several long and most eloquent speeches, which she made *verbally.*] These addresses, &c. with the queen's answeres, are printed by Chr. Barker, printer to the qu. maj'tie. London. 1586. 4to. Bibl. coll. Jo. Cant. class. F. 7, 24.

P. 543. marginal note. Character of him by Camden. Eliz. p. 392, 465.

P. 565. l. 23. I concluded it was done after that archbishop was departed from Lambeth, under the late king James.] King James was departed from England before the archbp. departed from Lambeth.

P. 612. l. 35. " some praised Arderus' behaviour."] Arden, whose words were, wishing the queen in heaven.

Ibid. l. penult. " for saying at his arraignment, that Somerfield."] Somerfeld, distract of his witts, as all men say, &c. See answer to English Justice, pag. 49.

P. 712. l. 17. living in king Henry's and queen Mary's reigns.] Not in qu. Maries reign, he died an. 1544. An.

1606, Sept. 5. Mr. John Edmonds, mayor, bury'd. Reg'r S. Botulphi, Cant. Anno 1560, Apr. 4, Jo. Edmundes, son of Jo. Edmundes, als. Meares, was baptized. Reg'r S. Mariæ Majoris.

So there seems to have been a son and grandson of the same name.

P. 742. marginal note. Dr. Simeon Fox.] Simeon Fox admitted at King's coll. Cambr. anno 1583; see Hatcher's Catalogue.

VOL. III. PART II.

P. 33. line 3. *Advices from London, &c.*] This is printed, *with an Answer to the untruthes published and printed in Spaine, in glorie of their supposed victorie atchieved against our English navie*, &c. Dedicated to the lord admirall, by James Lea, the translator. London, printed by John Jackson, 1589. 4to. Bibl. coll. Jo. Cant. class. F. 7, 24.

P. 78. marginal note. Some account of them, p. 215.] Mr. James Laborne protested that her majestie was not his lawfull queen for two respects, one for her birth, the other for the excommunication, having neither sought dispensation for the first, nor absolution for the second. Allen's Answere to English Justice, p. 29.

P. 102. marginal note. R. T. Baker, S. Th. B.] MSS. Puckering, modo Harley.

P. 113. l. 14. This Everard Digby is supposed to be the father of sir Everard Digby.] He was probably married whilst fellow of the college.

P. 138. l. 27. Another book bare this title; *An answer to the untruths published and printed in Spain, in glory of their supposed victory*, &c.] London, printed by John Jackson, for Tho. Cadman, 1589. 4to. See Bibl. coll. Jo. class. F. 7, 24. Ibid. The Spanish Masquerado, by Rob. Green, A. M. London, 1589. 4to.

P. 154. l. 22. The author of it was the learned and right reverend Cooper, bishop of Winchester.] Imprinted at London, by the deputies of Chr. Barker, anno 1589. 4to.

without name of the author; but the Epistle is subscribed by T. C.

P. 512. l. ult. [Londini, Maii 24, [1562.] Not in the original.

P. 556. l. 36. a material government.] A martial government.

P. 602. marginal note. Sergeant Puckring's MSS.] modo Harley.

VOL. IV.

At the beginning.

Only 250 copies of this book were printed. So, though it be a thin volume, it will be scarce.

On the first blank sheet.

N. B. All the Puckering MSS. cited in this volume are now in the lord Oxford's library, and should have been quoted, *MSS. Harley*. This I can say with assurance, for copies were sent up to Mr. Strype, (from me,) who was desired to do right to his lordship's library, and that oftener than once. The omission is no fault of mine; nor indeed of Mr. Strype, but of his age and infirmities.

P. 19. l. 32. Immediately after the decease of Dr. Dale.] Dr. Dale obiit 17. Nov. 1589. See Wood's Fasti Oxon. col. 707.

P. 22. l. 18. Harb. Hereford.] Herbert Westphaling.

P. 28. l. 23. tryal, at the assizes held at Surrey.] MSS. Harley.

P. 57. l. 10. Aug. 21, 1590.] See MS. vol. 40. in quarto, p. 10.

P. 148. l. 4. *MSS. lord keeper Puckr.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 254. l. 13. *as the lord keeper Puckring collected.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 264. l. 9. *Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 265. l. 15. *So endorsed by the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 267. l. 3. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 268. l. 5. *Whitfield, a spy. To the lord keeper Puckring, &c.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 271. l. 22. *An examination of Joh. Whitfield.*] MS. Harley.

P. 272. l. 2. Another examination of J. Whitfield, November 8, 1593.] MSS. Harley.

Ibid. l. 26. *Lord keeper's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 273. l. 24. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 275. l. 8. *Lord keeper Puckring's MSS.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 276. l. 12. *MSS. D. Puckr.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 336. l. 21. *Dr. James, dean of Christ Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 337. l. 13. *The dean and prebendaries of Christ's Church, Oxon, to the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 339. l. 2. *Then follows an original paper, &c.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 340. l. 29. *Robert earl of Essex to lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 341. l. 17. *The earl of Essex to the lord keeper Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

Ibid. l. 29. *The earl to the lord keeper.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 342. l. 10. *In the behalf of both the above mentioned clergymen, his chaplains, the earl had writ.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 343. l. 25. *MSS. D. Puckring.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 345. l. 2. *Another discourse of the said lord.*] MSS. Harley.

P. 348 l. 6. *dishonourable practices by him committed.*] *contrived.* London, printed for John Drawater, and are to be sold at his shop in Canon Lane, neere Powles. 1595. penes me.

P. 438. l. 2. *Charisma.*] Charisma sive Donum Sanationis. Auctore Guil. Tookero, S. T. D. Londini, 1597. 4to.

Præclarum Testimonium (a Tookero omissum) de Dono Sanationis, ab eo, qui fuit regi (viz. Edvardo 3.) a confessionibus, et postea archiep'us Cantuar. Vide Bradwardinum, de causa Dei, &c. p. 39.

P. 440. l. 17. Oh God! almaker, keeper, and guider.] See this prayer printed in Mr. Hearne's Appendix to Titus Livius, pag. 164.

Page 441. l. 4. *Imprinted, &c.* 1597. 4*to.*] Bibl. coll. Jo. Cant. class. S. 5, 38.

Ibid. l. 9. *prefixed.*] So it is in the printed copy.

P. 475. l. 12. *This is printed, but from a vicious copy, but is corrected from an original.*] The printed copy penes me, with lord Burghley's picture prefixt.

P. 480. l. 21. *Matthew bishop of Durham.*] Tobie.

Page 481. l. 12. Grenecroft.] Grenecroft was lately in the possession of the Halls, now Claverings, as the manor-house is, or lately was in Hodgsons, [or Hotchins.] Both places are in the parish of Lanchester, where I was born, and could be willing to dye, and be bury'd with my nearest relations. Sed aliter visum est Deo; and his will be done.

Ibid. l. 36. Brancepeth.] Brancepeth lately belonged to sir Nicholas Cole, [my godfather,] after him to his son, sir Ralph, now in the family of Bellasis, filii nat.....

P. 482. l. 2. standing towards the fells, [hills.] Wasts.

P. 490. l. 5. *printed.*] First printed Londini, anno D'ni 1597. [penes me.] So there must be a mistake in the date, an. 1598. Capitula sive constitutiones ecclesiasticæ per archiep'um, episcopos, et reliquum clerum Cantuar. provinciæ in synodo inchoata Londini 25. die mensis Octobris a°. D'ni MDXCVII. Londini. Excudebant deputati Chr. Barker, regiæ majestatis typographi, anno D'ni 1599. 4to. [penes me.] et anno D'ni 1597. [penes me.] Sequuntur capitula, quorum tituli [ex MSS. Joh'is Ep'i Elien.] non satis accurate exhibentur.

P. 494. l. 26. *by Robert Barker.* &c. 4to. 1601.] penes me.

P. 519. l. 13. *A pleasure.*] A plea.

P. 562. l. 29. *the original letters.*] N. B. Sir Mic. Hicks, living an. 1607.

P. 591. l. 14. *his letter, written in the year* 1580, *to the lord treasurer Burghley.*] N. B. Sir Nic. Bacon died in April, 1579. His son Fran. was born Jan. 22, 1560.

THE END.